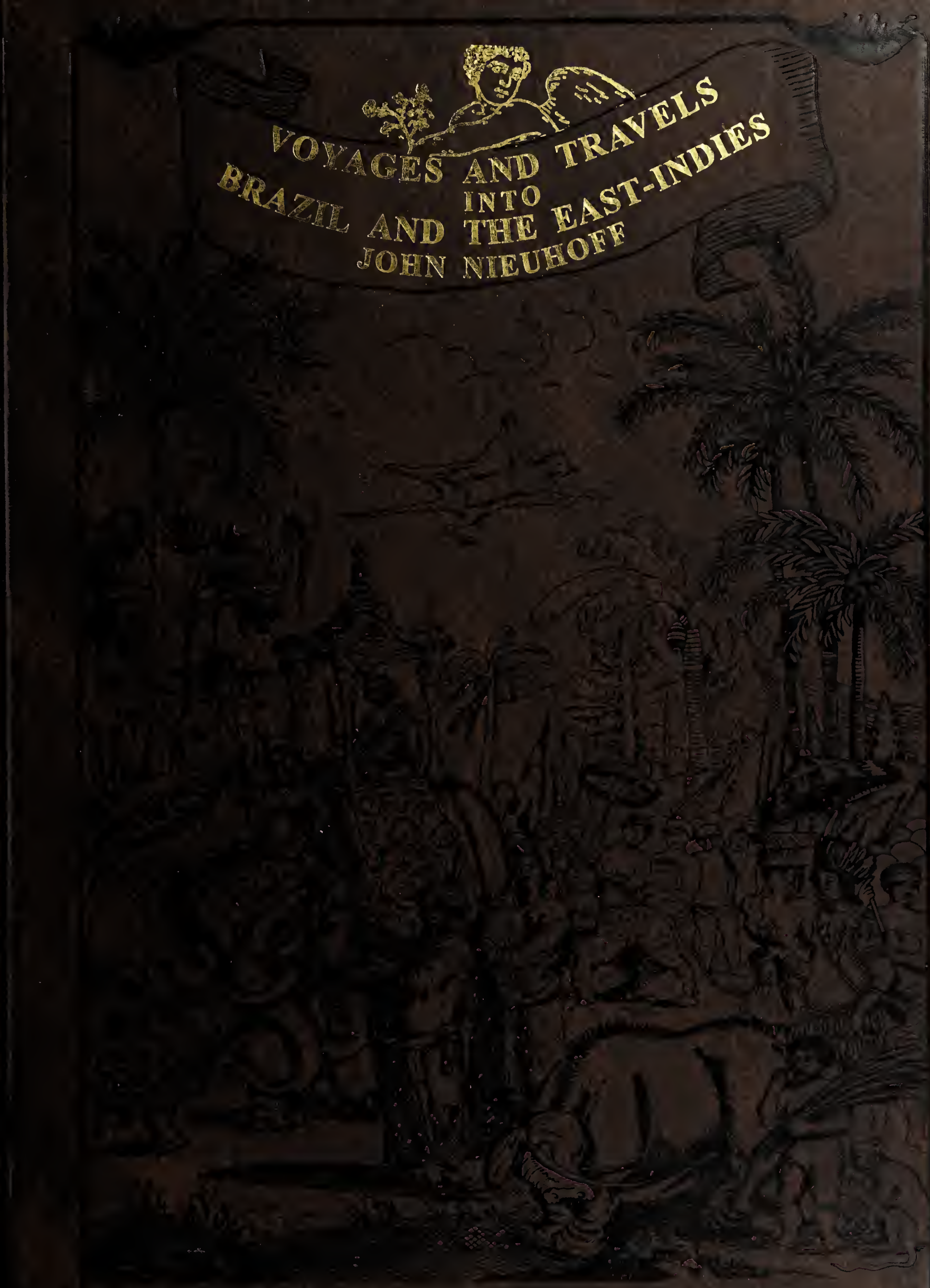
VOYAGES AND TRAVELS INTO BRAZIL AND THE EAST-INDIES

JOHN NIEUHOFF



AWNSHAM & JOHN CHURCHILL

A COLLECTION OF VOYAGES AND TRAVELS



Digitized by the Internet Archive
in 2019 with funding from
Public.Resource.Org

https://archive.org/details/voyagetravelsint02john

V.II.



The Effigies of Mr. Jn. Vieuhoff.

M.r John Nieuhoff's Remarkable VOYAGES & TRAVELLS into y.e best Provinces of y.e West and East Indies.



VOL. II.

VOYAGES AND TRAVELS
INTO
BRAZIL AND THE EAST-INDIES
1640 - 1649

VOYAGES AND TRAVELS
INTO
BRAZIL AND THE EAST-INDIES
1640 - 1649

CONTAINING

THE EXACT DESCRIPTION OF THE DUTCH BRAZIL
AND DIVERS PARTS OF THE EAST-INDIES
THEIR PROVINCES, CITIES, LIVING CREATURES AND PRODUCT;
THE MANNERS, CUSTOMS, HABITS AND RELIGION OF THE INHABITANTS

WITH

A PARTICULAR ACCOUNT OF ALL THE REMARKABLE PASSAGES
THAT HAPPENED DURING THE AUTHOR'S STAY OF NINE
YEARS IN BRAZIL, ESPECIALLY IN RELATION TO THE
REVOLT OF THE PORTUGUESE AND THE INTESTINE WAR
CARRIED ON THERE FROM 1640 TO 1649

ALSO

A MOST AMPLE DESCRIPTION OF THE MOST
FAMOUS CITY OF BATAVIA IN THE EAST-INDIES
WITH COPPER PLATES

JOHN NIEUHOFF

ASIAN EDUCATIONAL SERVICES
NEW DELHI ★ CHENNAI ★ 2003

ASIAN EDUCATIONAL SERVICES

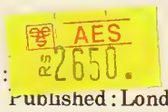
* 6A SHAHPUR JAT, NEW DELHI - 110 049
Tel. : +91-11- 26491586, 26494059 Fax : 011- 26494946
email : aes@aes.ind.in

* 2/15, 2nd FLOOR, ANSARI ROAD,
DARYAGANJ, NEW DELHI - 1100 02
Tel : +91- 11- 23262044
email : aesdg@aes.ind.in

* 19, (NEW NO. 40), BALAJI NAGAR FIRST STREET,
ROYAPETTAH, CHENNAI - 600 014
Tel. : +91- 44 - 28133040 / 28131391 Fax : 044 - 28131391
email : asianeds@md3.vsnl.net.in

www.aes.ind.in

Printed and Hand-Bound in India



Price:
First Published : London, 1732
AES Reprint : New Delhi, 2003

ISBN: 8120616456

Published by Gautam Jetley
For ASIAN EDUCATIONAL SERVICES
6A, Shahpur Jat, New Delhi - 110 049.
Processed by AES Publications Pvt. Ltd., New Delhi-110049
Printed at Chaudhary Offset Process, Delhi - 110051.

A

COLLECTION

OF

Voyages and Travels,

SOME

Now firſt Printed from *Original Manuſcripts*,

OTHERS

Now firſt Publiſhed in ENGLISH.

In Six VOLUMES.

With a General PREFACE, giving an Account of the Progreſs of NAVIGATION, from its firſt Beginning.

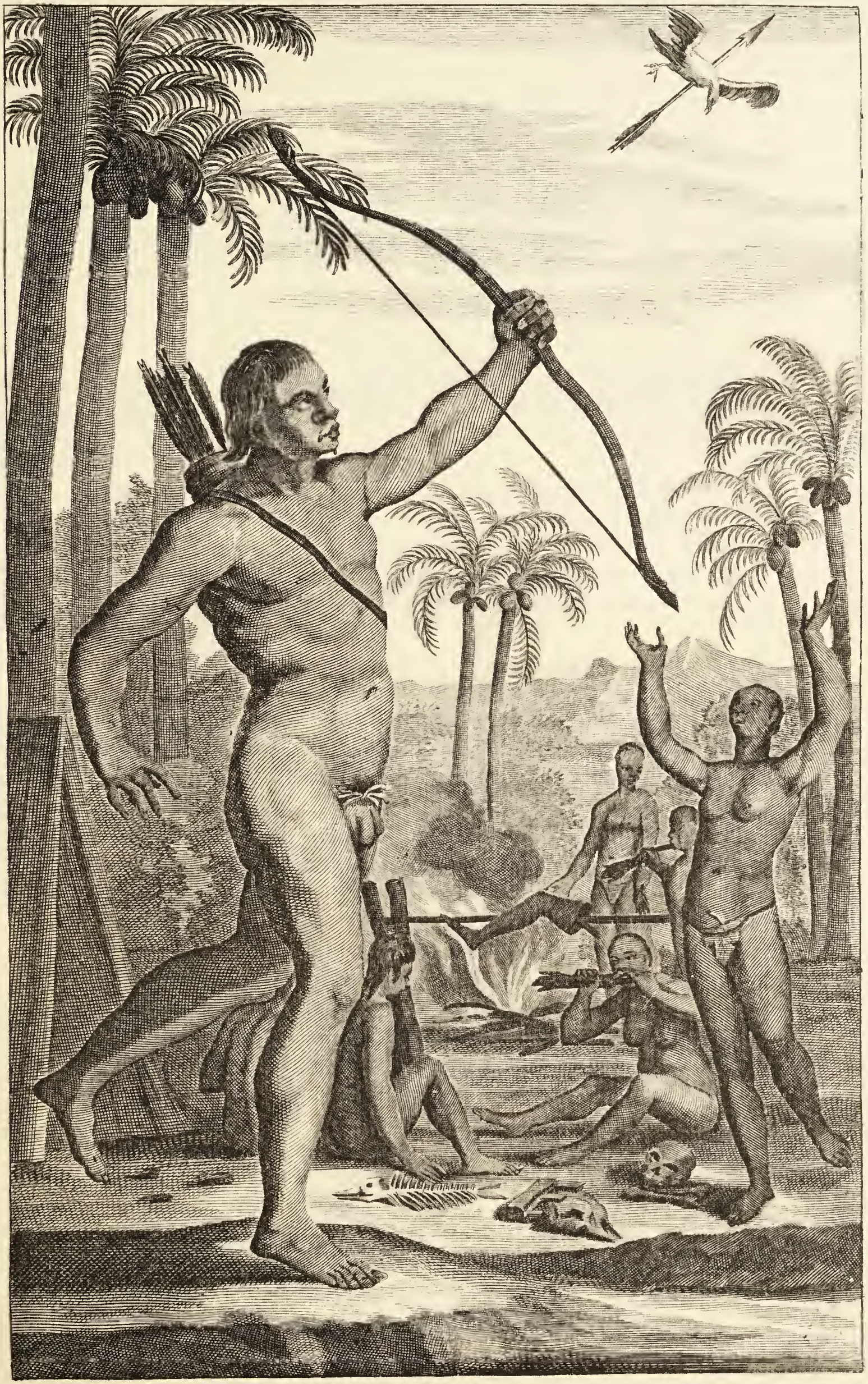
Illuſtrated with a great Number of uſeful Maps and Cuts, Curiouſly Engraven.

VOL. II.

LONDON:

Printed by Aſſignment from Meſſrs. CHURCHILL,

For JOHN WALTHOE, over-againſt the *Royal-Exchange*, in *Cornhill*; THO. WOTTON, at the *Queen's-Head* and *Three Daggers* over-againſt St. *Dunſtan's* Church, in *Fleet-ſtreet*; SAMUEL BIRT, in *Ave-Mary-Lane*, *Ludgate ſtreet*; DANIEL BROWNE, at the *Black-Swan*, without *Temple-Bar*; THOMAS OSBORN, in *Gray's-Inn*; JOHN SHUCKBURGH, at the *Sun*, next the *Inner-Temple-Gate*, in *Fleetſtreet*; and HENRY LINTOT, at the *Croſs-Keys*, againſt St. *Dunſtan's* Church, in *Fleetſtreet*. M DCC XXXII.



A Braſilian

THE CONTENTS OF THE SECOND VOLUME.

MR. John Nieuhoff's *remarkable voyages and travels into* Brazil, *and the beſt parts of the* Eaſt-Indies. *Tranſlated out of* Dutch. Page 1

The true travels and adventures of captin John Smith, *into* Europe, Aſia, Africa, *and* America, *from the year* 1592, *to* 1629. 329

Two journals: The firſt kept by ſeven ſailors, in the iſle of S. Maurice *in* Greenland, *in the years* 1633, *and* 1634, *who paſs'd the winter, and all died in the ſaid iſland. The ſecond, kept by ſeven other ſailors, who in the years* 1633, *and* 1634, *winter'd at* Spitzbergen. *Done out of* Low Dutch. 369

A true and ſhort account of forty two perſons, who periſh'd by ſhipwreck near Spitzbergen, *in the year* 1646. *Out of* Low Dutch. 381

An account of Iſeland, *ſent to monſieur* de la Mothe de Vayer, *by* la Peyrere. *Done out of* French. 383

An account of Greenland, *to monſieur* de la Mothe de Vayer, *by* la Peyrere. *Done out of* French. 399

Captain Thomas James's *ſtrange and dangerous voyage in his intended diſcovery of the north-weſt paſſage into the* South-Sea, *in the years* 1631, *and* 1632, *with many curious Obſervations.* 429

An account of two voyages: The firſt of Feodor Iskowitz Backhoff, *the* Muſcovite *envoy, into* China: *The ſecond, of Mr.* Zachary Wagener, *through a great part of the world into* China. *Tranſlated from the* High Dutch. 489

The life of Chriſtopher Columbus, *and the hiſtory of his diſcovery of the* Weſt-Indies; *written by his own ſon,* D. Ferdinand Columbus. *Tranſlated from the* Italian. 501

Pyrami-

The CONTENTS.

Pyramidographia: *Or, A deſcription of the* Pyramids *in* Egypt: *By* John Greaves, *profeſſor of* Aſtronomy *at* Oxford; *with additions of his own.* Page 625

A diſcourſe of the Roman Foot *and* Denarius, *from whence, as from two principles, the meaſures and weights uſed by the ancients, may be deduced. By the ſame* John Greaves. 675

An account of Cochin-China; *in two parts: The firſt treats of the* temporal ſtate *of that kingdom: The ſecond, of what concerns the* ſpiritual. *By the R. F.* Chriſtopher Borri, *of the* ſociety *of* Jeſus. *Tranſlated from the* Italian. 721

VOYAGES

VOYAGES
AND
TRAVELS
INTO
BRASIL
AND THE
EAST-INDIES.

CONTAINING,

An exact Deſcription of the *DUTCH BRASIL*, and divers Parts of the *EAST-INDIES*; their PROVINCES, CITIES, LIVING CREATURES, and PRODUCTS; the MANNERS, CUSTOMS, HABITS, and RELIGION of the INHABITANTS:

WITH

A particular ACCOUNT of all the remarkable Paſſages that happened during the Author's ſtay of nine Years in *BRASIL*; eſpecially in Relation to the REVOLT of the *Portugueſe*, and the inteſtine War carried on there from 1640, to 1649.

AS ALSO

A moſt ample Deſcription of the moſt famous City of *BATAVIA* in the *Eaſt-Indies*. By Mr. *JOHN NIEUHOFF.*

Both adorned with COPPER PLATES, done after the Life. Tranſlated from the *Dutch* Original.

ADVERTISEMENT to the READER.

IT is about nineteen years ſince my brother, John Nieuhoff, *juſt before his ſecond voyage into the* Indies, *preſented me with his deſcription of* China, *and certain draughts he had made during his embaſſy in that empire, which being afterwards publiſhed, were ſoon after tranſlated into ſix ſeveral languages.*

My brother had, before that time, not only been in Braſil, *and ſeveral other places in thoſe parts, but alſo ſince that time, has had the opportunity of travelling through a great part of* Aſia, *till* 1671. *when returning into* Holland, *he brought along with him all his papers, obſervations, and draughts, he had collected during his voyages; which, though much coveted by all curious perſons, yet, for ſome reaſons beſt known to himſelf, he did not think fit to commit to publick view.*

But, after his deceaſe, conſidering with myſelf, that ſuch uſeful collections ought not to be buried in oblivion, I thought fit to publiſh them for the publick good.

As thoſe things which he relates of the revolt of the Portugueſe *in* Braſil, *are extracted* verbatim *out of the records kept during my brother's abode of nine years in* Braſil, *under the government of the lords,* Henry Hamel, Peter Bas, *and* Adrian Bulleſtrate, *and authentick letters; ſo the truth thereof admits not of the leaſt doubt from unbiaſs'd perſons.*

The vaſt countries through which my brother travell'd in his life-time, as Braſil, *part of* Perſia, Malabar, Madura, Coromandel, Amboyna, Ceylon, Malacca, Sumatra, Java, Tagowan, *and part of* China, *beſides many iſlands, could not in the leaſt infect him with that diſeaſe, ſo incident to travellers, to relate fables inſtead of hiſtories, it having been his conſtant practice, to adhere moſt religiouſly in all his treatiſes, to the naked truth, without the leaſt diſguiſe.*

His laſt voyage to the iſle of Madagaſcar, *where he was loſt, I have taken partly out of his own letters, partly out of the journal of captain* Reinard Claeſon, *which he brought along with him from thence.*

As to his perſon, I will only add thus much. He was born at Uſſen, *in the earldom of* Benthem, *(where his father, brother, and brother-in-law, were all three Burgomaſters) of a good family, the* 22[d] *of* July 1618. *He was a comely perſon, of a good underſtanding, good humour'd, and agreeable in converſation; a great admirer of poeſy, drawing, and muſick: As he delighted in travelling, ſo he was thereby become maſter of divers languages: In what ſtation he lived during his abode in* Braſil, *and the* Eaſt-Indies, *will beſt appear by the two following treatiſes.*

HENRY NIEUHOFF.

Mr. *JOHN NIEUHOFF's*

REMARKABLE

VOYAGES

AND

TRAVELS

TO

BRASIL.

1640. IN the year 1640, I entred into the ſervice of the *Weſt-India* company, and on the 24th of *October*, went in the quality of merchant ſupercargo, aboard the ſhip called the *Roebuck*, of 28 guns and 130 men, commanded by *Nicholas Selles* of *Durkendam*. We ſet ſail out of the *Texel* the ſame day, in company of ſeveral other veſſels bound for *France*, *Spain* and the *Streights*; and purſued our voyage the 28th with a favourable gale through the channel betwixt *France* and *England*.

His departure out of Holland.

A violent ſtorm.

On the 29th we were overtaken with a moſt violent tempeſt, which obliged us to take in all our great ſails: It continued from morning to night, when the fury of the winds being ſomewhat allay'd, we found that we had eſcaped without any conſiderable damage; but the ſea continued very turbulent all that night. The next day following our ſeamen catch'd a wood ſnipe, a wild pidgeon, and ſeveral other ſmall birds; which were forc'd into the ſea by the violence of the ſtorm.

On the 31st we found ourſelves under the 45th degree of northern latitude. The next morning being the firſt of *November*, ſome of our ſeamen catch'd a ſea-hog by the means of a harpeon: It was ſo big, that four men could ſcarce lift it into the ſhip. It's taſte was not very agreeable, but rankiſh, which was the reaſon our men did not catch any more of them, though they ſwam in vaſt numbers round about our veſſel. By ſun-ſet the wind beginning to encreaſe, we parted from the other ſhips, bound for *Spain* and the *Streights*, which were not ſeparated from us in the laſt ſtorm, ſteering our courſe ſouth-weſt. The 2d and 3d it blew very hard, with thunder and lightning, ſo that we were forc'd to take in all our great ſails, and the ſhip being very leaky ever ſince the laſt tempeſt, to ply the pump with all our might.

Another moſt violent ſtorm.

The 4th we found ourſelves under the 40 deg. 30 min. when about midnight the wind encreaſed with ſo much violence, that the air which ſurrounded us, appearing no otherwiſe than one continual fire, occaſion'd by the lightning, which ſcarce ever ceas'd all that night. During this calamity we perceived certain ſmall fires or lights fix'd to the maſt: They are called *Peaceable's fires* by the ſeamen. Theſe fires are ſuppos'd to be certain ſulphureous vapours, forc'd by the violence of the winds from the ſhore into the ſea, where being lightned by the violent agitation of the air, they burn till their oily ſubſtance be conſumed. The ſeamen look upon them as a good omen, that the ſtorm is going to abate; which prov'd true in effect, the fury of the winds beginning to allay from

Wild-fire.

that

that time; and we had the good fortune to diſcover two leaks near our forecaſtle, which elſe might have prov'd of dangerous conſequence.

They paſs the Barrels.

The 5th we paſs'd the *Barrels*, under the 39th degree; where according to an antient cuſtom, every one, of what quality or degree ſoever, that has not paſſed there before, is obliged to be baptized, or redeem himſelf from it. He that is to be baptized, has a rope tied round his middle, wherewith he is drawn up to the very top of the bowſprit, and from thence three times ſucceſſively tumbled into the water. There were ſome who look'd very blank upon the Matter, but others went cheerfully about it, and for a meaſure of *Spaniſh* wine, ſuffered themſelves to be rebaptized for the maſter and the merchant. But this cuſtom is aboliſhed of late years, by ſpecial orders from the governors of the company, to avoid broils and quarrels, which uſed often to ariſe upon this occaſion.

They diſcover two Turkiſh *veſſels.*

The 6th, as we were ſteering our courſe *S. S. W.* with a freſh gale, we deſcried two veſſels, making all the ſail they could towards us, whom we ſuppoſed to be *Turkiſh* pirates (as indeed they proved afterwards) it was reſolved to defend us till the utmoſt extremity. Accordingly orders were given to clear every thing upon the deck, and to furniſh the ſeamen with muſquets, hangers, pikes, and other ſuch like weapons. Every one having taken his ſtation, we put up the bloody flag, and expected their coming under the ſound of our trumpets. The maſter of the ſhip, being all that time very ill of ſome wounds he had received formerly, which were now broken up afreſh; and the commiſſary *Francis Zweers*, not being in a condition, by reaſon of his great age, to remain upon deck; I was fain to undertake the whole management of the ſhip, and encouraged them to fight bravely for their lives and liberty, ordering them not to fire at all, till they were in their full reach, they being much better mann'd than we.

Prepare for an engagement.

About noon we ſaw the *Turks* make up towards us with orange-colour'd flags, which however they ſoon after changed for the bloody flags, and the biggeſt of them ſaluted us with two cannon ſhot out of his forecaſtle, without doing us the leaſt harm, but the ſecond time almoſt ſhot our foremaſt in pieces. In the mean while we were come ſo near to one another, that we ſent them a good broadſide into their ſhip, which the *Turks* repay'd us immediately; but it was not long before we obſerv'd the biggeſt of the two had received a ſhot betwixt wind and water, which made her keep at ſome farther diſtance, till ſhe had repaired her damage, which gave me opportunity to encourage our people with words, and a good proportion of wine; which they mix'd with ſome gunpowder, and I, to pleaſe them, followed their example.

An engagement with two Turkiſh *rovers.*

By this time they returned both to the charge, and ſaluted us ſo fiercely with their cannon and ſmall ſhot, that they took away the roof of our great cabin, and did us ſome damage in our rigging. I then changed my ſcimeter for a muſquet, and diſcharged continually upon the enemy, and I found myſelf ſore ſeveral weeks after, by the hurt I received from a muſquet of one that ſtood hard by me, which being by a cannon ball forced out of his hands againſt my body, I fell down ſtretch'd all along upon the deck, without ſenſe or motion; but having after ſome time recovered myſelf, I returned to my poſt. I then perceived the captain of the biggeſt *Turkiſh* ſhip with a turbant on his head, in the ſtern, encouraging his men, which made me order thoſe about me, to aim at him with their ſmall ſhot, which, as I ſuppoſe, ſucceeded according to our hopes, it being not long before we loſt ſight of him. Notwithſtanding this, the heat of the fight encreaſed on both ſides, many broadſides paſſing betwixt us, accompanied with moſt dreadful outcries and lamentations of the wounded on both ſides. However, the *Turks* durſt not attempt to board us; whether it were that they thought us better mann'd than really we were, or that they feared we would ſet fire to the ſhip, which we threatned we would, ſhewing them a match ready for that purpoſe. They anſwered us in *Dutch*, that they would not part with us upon thoſe terms; yet was it not long before we ſaw them make away from us, having received many ſhots thro' their ſhips; and we with a briſk gale, made all the ſail we could to be rid of theſe unwelcome gueſts, ſteering a quite different courſe, which with the advantage of the darkneſs of the night, brought us quite out of ſight of them by next morning.

The Turks *leave the fight.*

We gave thanks to God for his having delivered us from the danger of ſlavery, and crowning our endeavours with ſucceſs againſt an enemy much ſtronger than us, the biggeſt of them carrying twenty-four guns, and the other two; whereas we had no more than eighteen, beſides that they were much better mann'd than we. After having taken a view of our ſhip, and found it ſound under water, we betook ourſelves to repair the damage we had received during the fight; but whilſt we were buſy in this work, we were on the 7th ſurprized by ſo violent a ſtorm, that we were forced to take

1640. take in all our ſails. This put us to a great nonplus, but by good fortune the ſtorm blew ſoon over, when orders were given to give an Allowance of three pounds and a half of biſket *per* week to the ſeamen, all our other bread being become muſty by that time. The 10th we found ourſelves under the 39th deg. and 30 min. about 20 leagues off of the *Canary Iſlands*; here we diſcovered the pike of *Tenariff*, being two leagues and a half high, and accounted the higheſt mountain in the world. It may be diſcovered at 60 leagues diſtance from the ſhore. Thus we continued our voyage till the 14th, without any memorable accident, when we paſſed the tropick of *Cancer*. About noon we were overtaken by another ſtorm, which made us take in moſt of our great ſails, for fear of the worſt, but it laſted not long.

This tract of the ſea is called by the *Dutch*, the *Kroos Sea*; by the *Portugueſe*, *Mar del Aragaco* (or *Largaco*, or *Suargaco*) i. e. *The Sea of Ducks-meat*, becauſe hereabouts, *viz.* from the 18th to the 30th degree, or as ſome will have it, from the 20th to the 22d and 23d degree of northern latitude, it is found in great quantity, and carried along with the ſtream: Its leaves are of a pale green colour, like that of parrots, ſmall, thin and carved at the end. It bears berries of the ſame colour, about the bigneſs of a pepper corn, that are quite hollow, without any ſeed within or taſte. It is ſometimes ſo cloſely twiſted together, that it ſtops a ſhip in its full courſe; tho' we had the good fortune to paſs thro' it without much difficulty, being then about 400 leagues from the coaſt of *Africk*, where are no iſlands nor anchorage. It may be pickled with ſalt and pepper, and uſed like as we do capers, being accounted a good remedy againſt the gravel. It is generally found without roots, having only a few thin ſprouts, which, as it is ſuppoſed, take root in the ſandy grounds of the ſea; tho' others are of opinion, that it is carried by the violence of the ſtream from the iſlands into the ſea.

The 18th, one of our ſhips crew died, who was the next day thrown overboard, at which time I obſerved, what indeed I had heard often before, that the dead carcaſſes always float with their heads to the eaſt at ſea.

Travado, *what.*

The 22d we were overtaken by another tempeſt, called *Travado*, which with horrible thunder and lightning ſurprizes the ſhips ſo ſuddenly, that they have ſcarce leiſure to take in their ſails, and ſometimes returns three times in an hour. We catch'd here abundance of fiſh, ſuch as *Bonytes* of ten foot long, and *Korets*, and a great lamprey, which we had enough to do to bring aboard; we only took out the brains, being look'd upon as a ſovereign remedy againſt the ſtone in the bladder, the fleſh being of an oily taſte. 1640.

They catch abundance of fiſh.

The 24th we ſaw great quantities of ſmall birds about our veſſel, and catch'd one not unlike a crane, but ſomewhat ſmaller, it being a very fair day.

The 26th, being under the fifth degree, 47 minutes, we were ſo becalmed that we could not perceive the ſhip to move, and ſpent our time in catching of fiſh, of which we had ſuch plenty, that we choſe only the beſt for our eating; among the reſt we met with a fiſh called the *king's-fiſh:* For by reaſon of the impenetrable depth of the ſea in this place, the waters are ſo clear and tranſparent in ſtill weather, that you may ſee the fiſh in vaſt numbers ſwimming near two feet deep; ſo that you need but faſten a crooked nail or any thing elſe like a hook to a ſtring, and hanging it in the ſea, you may catch as many fiſh as you pleaſe. This calm was followed by a moſt violent ſtorm of rain.

The 30th we found ourſelves under the fourth degree, 41 minutes, where we ſaw abundance of *flying fiſh*.

The 3d of *December* we came under the firſt degree, 30 minutes, where we met with millions of fiſh, and did catch as many as we thought fit: Some we put in ſalt, others we rubbed in the belly with pepper and ſalt, and hung them up by the tail in the ſun.

The 4th, by break of day, being very clear weather, we ſaw the iſland of *St. Paulo*, as it is called by the *Portugueſe*, which at a diſtance repreſents a ſail, which as you approach nearer to it, proves five high rocks. About noon we found ourſelves at 53 minutes of northern latitude, taking our courſe five leagues to the weſt. Here at ſeveral times we catch'd ſome ſea-gulls; thoſe birds make a ſhew as if they would bite you, but remain unmoveable in the place, till they are caught or kill'd.

They diſcover the iſland of St. Paulo.

The 5th, about eleven a clock we paſſed the equinoctial line, ſo that in the afternoon we found ourſelves at five minutes ſouthern latitude, where we had but little reaſon to complain of cold; it being often ſo calm here, that ſhips are forced to ſpend a conſiderable time in paſſing this tract. It is extreamly hot here, and great ſcarcity of good and ſweet water, the rain water being not wholeſome, but cauſing the ſcurvy, by reaſon of its being corrupted by the violent heat of ſun.

About three years after my arrival in *Braſil*, a certan *Portugueſe* ſhip was found adrift under the equinoctial line, without

1643. any living creature in it, which according to the journal, had been ſix whole weeks under the line. We had a very good paſſage, and catched abundance of fiſh, and among the reſt a certain fiſh called the *Blower*, which ſwallow a conſiderable quantity of water in their guts, and then at once ſpout it forth again. They will follow the ſhips for a long time.

They paſs the Equinoctial Line.

The 8th we paſſed by the iſle called *Ilha Ferdinando* of *Neronha*; it being very ſerene weather, we ſaw vaſt numbers of birds, and whole ſhoals of flying fiſh, which were followed by the *Bonytes* and *Korets*.

The Iſle of Ferdinando.

The iſland of *Ferdinando* of *Neronha*, ſituate under the fourth degree of ſouthern latitude, about fifty leagues from the coaſt of *Braſil*, was about the year 1630. inhabited by the *Dutch*, but by reaſon of the vaſt numbers of rats, which conſumed all the fruits of the earth, deſerted by them a few years after; it being otherwiſe a very fruitful iſland, and abounding with fiſh, the inhabitants of *Reeief* being uſed to ſend their fiſherboats thither, which return commonly well freighted with fiſh. The council of *Braſil* did afterwards ſend a certain number of negroes thither, under the conduct of one *Gellis Vepant*, to cultivate the ground for their ſubſiſtence, who likewiſe ſtayed there for ſome time. About a year and a half after, the council of juſtice baniſhed ſeveral malefactors into that iſland, who being furniſhed with neceſſary inſtruments for cultivating the ground, were forced to ſeek for their ſuſtenance there.

The 11th at night we found ourſelves under the ſeventh degree, over againſt the province of *Goyana*, about twenty leagues on this ſide of *Olinda*; with break of day we ſaw the ſhore of *Braſil*, but kept out at ſea till it was broad day.

The 12th it was very foggy, and we kept our courſe with fair wind and water all along the coaſt, and arrived before noon ſafely near the *Recief*, where we caſt our anchor at ſeveral fathoms depth, after we had ſpent ſeven weeks and one day in the voyage.

Their Arrival in Braſil.

After we had returned our thanks to God for his deliverance from the dangers of the ſea, and ſlavery of the *Turks*; I went aſhore the ſame night with the maſter and commiſſary in a boat, to notify our happy arrival, and to deliver a letter to count *Maurice*, and the governor of the council. I continued aſhore that night, but returned aboard the next day. And,

The 15th the pilots conducted our veſſel into the harbour of the *Recief*, where we found twenty-eight veſſels and two yachts lying behind the *Water Caſtel*.

1643. Towards the latter end of *Auguſt* 1643, I received orders from the council to ſail with the yacht called the *Sea-Hog*, loaden with fullers-earth to the iſle of St. *Thomas*, to exchange it for black ſugar, this being the chief commodity tranſported from thence. My voyage proved fortunate enough, not meeting with any ſiniſter accident, except with a violent tempeſt of thunder, lightning, and rains, and came the 9th of *September* at an anchor there; the cargoe did bear no good price, yet after a ſtay of fourteen days, I returned with a cargoe of black ſugar to *Braſil*, where I arrived the 3d of *October* before the *Recief*, after a voyage of near three months. 1643.

The Iſland of St. Thomas.

The iſle of St. *Thomas* is of a circular figure, about thirty-ſix leagues in compaſs; the high mountains in the midſt of that iſland are always covered with ſnow, notwithſtanding that in the low grounds, by reaſon of its ſituation under the line, it is exceſſive hot. It is very fertile in black ſugar and ginger; the ſugar-fields being continually moiſtned by the melted ſnow that falls down from the mountains. There were at that time above ſixty ſugar mills there, but the air is the moſt unwholſome in the world, no foreigner daring to ſtay ſo much as one night aſhore, without running the hazard of his life; becauſe by the heat of the ſun beams ſuch venomous vapours are drawn from the earth, as are unſupportable to ſtrangers. This fog continues till about ten a clock in the morning, when the ſame is diſperſed, and the air cleared, which made us always ſtay aboard till after that time. This miſt is not obſerved at ſea.

The air here is very hot and moiſt throughout the year, except in the ſummer about *June*, when the ſouth-eaſt and ſouth-weſt winds abate much of the heat of the climate. The vapours drawn up by the ſun, occaſion certain epidemical intermittent fevers, which carry off the patient in a few days, with exceſſive pains in the head, and violent torments in the bowels; though ſome attribute it to the immoderate uſe of women, and of the juice of *Coco*'s. Certain is it, that among a hundred foreigners, ſcarce ten eſcape with life, and thoſe ſeldom live till fifty years of age; though ſome of the inhabitants, as likewiſe the negroes (who are all louſy here) live to a great age. Its firſt inhabitants were *Jews*, baniſhed out of *Portugal*; they are of a very odd complexion. Among the mountains dwell abundance of negroes, who are run away from the *Portugueſe*, and make ſometimes excurſions to the very gates of the city of *Pavaoſa*. It is almoſt next to a miracle, that any people ſhould inhabit ſo unwholſome a climate; but that the hopes of lucre makes all danger eaſy.

The city of *Pavaoſa*, belonging to this iſland

Betwixt pag. 6. & 7.

BRASILIA

Quirandies

Paraquaria

GVARANIES

Carios

TERRA DOS PATOS

Pernacapaba

BRASIL

Tupinambas

Tapuyas

Tupinambazes

Epuremei

Arowaccas pop

Tisnada

Harrytiahans

Parime

Muchileri

Caribes Iaios

Aruvaca

Rio de la plata

Puerto de los Reyes

R. de las Amazones

R. de los Topayes

Maragnan

Cap d'Sirra o. Ciara

Baxos de St Roque

Fernand de Noronha

Aguada

TROPICVS CAPRICORNI

LINEA AEQVINOCTIALES

Caput Boreale

Caput Australe

Miramn

CAP DE S. VINCENT

CAP DE RIO DE IANEIRO

CAP DE SPIRITV SANTO

CAPITANIA DE PORTO SEGVO

Guaymures

CAP DE LOS ISLOS

CAP DE BAHIA DE TODOS SANCTOS

Rais

Durassche Mylen is in een graet

Spaensche legoas is 3 in graede

Engelsche Franssche Leagues 20 in one degree

1642. iſland, is ſituate upon a rivulet; it contains about eight hundred houſes, and three churches. This city, as well as the whole iſland, was 1641, *October* 16, conquered by the admiral *Cornelius Tol*, after a ſiege of forty days, without any conſiderable loſs; but both he and his lieutenant, as well as ſeveral other commanders and many ſeamen, were ſwept away by this peſtilential air; and of three hundred *Braſilians*, not above ſixty eſcaped with life.

But, before I proceed to give you an account of all the remarkable paſſages that happened in *Braſil*, ſince the revolt of the *Portugueſe*, and during my ſtay of eight years there; it will not be amiſs to inſert a ſhort deſcription of this countrey.

A deſcription of Braſil.

America (or the *Weſt-Indies*) is divided into the *northern* and *ſouthern America*. *Braſil* is part of the laſt.

The *northern America* borders to the *North* upon the *Terra incognita*, or rather upon *Hudſon's Streights*; to the *South* and *Weſt* upon the *South-Sea*, and to the *Eaſt* upon the ſtreights of *Panama*, the bay of *Mexico*, or *Nieu Spain*, and the *North-Sea*.

It comprehends the following provinces, *Eſtotiland* and *Labrador*, *Nieu France*, *Canada*, *Bakalaos*, *Nieu England*, *Virginia*, *Florida*, *Nieu Spain*, the provinces of *Mexico*, *Nieu Mexico*, *Tlaſkalla*, *Guaxaka*, *Mechoakana*, *Zakatula*, *Kolim*, *Yukatan*, *Tabaſko*, *Nieu Gallicia*, *Nieu Biſcay*, *Chiametla*, *Kuliaka*, *Cimalon*, *Nieu Granada*, *Kalifornia*, *Anian*, *Quivira* or *Nieu Albion*, *Konibas*, *Guatemala*, *Sokonuſko*, *Chiapa*, *Vera pas*, *Honduras*, *Nikaragua*, *Koſtarika*, and *Veragua*.

The *ſouthern America* is a demi-iſland in form of a pyramid; the baſis of which lies to the *North*, the point extends to the ſtreights of *Magellan*, under the 53d degree of ſouthern latitude; bordering to the eaſt upon the *Atlantick Ocean*, or *North-Sea*, and to the weſt upon the *South-Sea*, its whole circuit being of about four thouſand *Italian* or one thouſand *German* miles. It contains the provinces of *Kaſtilla d'Or*, *Tierra fierma*, called by the *Portugueſe*, *Paria*, *Kumana*, *Karibana*, *Braſil*, *Chika* to the eaſt, to the weſt *Popayan*, *Peru*, *Chili*, beſides ſeveral inland provinces.

First Diſcovery of Braſil. *Braſil* was firſt diſcovered by *Pedro Alvaro Kapralis*, a *Portugueſe*, ſometime before *Americus Veſputius*, viz. in the year 1500. He gave it the name of *Santa Cruz*, which was afterwards by the *Portugueſe* changed into that of *Braſil*, from the wood of the ſame name, which is found there in great quantity, and from thence tranſported into all parts of *Europe*, for the uſe of the dyers. 1643.

Its Situation. It is ſituate in the midſt of the *Torrid Zone*, extending to the *Tropick* of *Cancer* and the *Temperate Zone*.

Extent. Concerning its extent from *north to ſouth*, there is no ſmall difference among the geographers; but according to the beſt computations, its beginning may be fixed under the ſecond degree and a half of northern latitude, near the river *Para*, and its end under the twenty-fourth degree and a half of ſouthern latitude, to the river *Capibari*, two leagues above the city of St. *Vincent*; ſo that its whole extent from north to ſouth, comprehends twenty-five degrees, or three hundred ſeventy-five leagues; ſome place *Braſil* betwixt the river of *Maranhaen* and *Rio de la Plata*. The extent of *Braſil* from the eaſt (where it borders upon the *North-Sea*) to the weſt, is not determined hitherto, there being very few who have penetrated ſo deep into the countrey; tho' its bigneſs from eaſt to weſt may be computed to be ſeven hundred forty-two leagues; there are however ſome who extend its limits farther to the eaſt, and to the weſt as far as *Peru* or *Guiana*, which makes an addition of one hundred eighty-eight leagues. Some make the boundaries of *Braſil* to the north the river of the *Amazons*; to the ſouth *Rio de la Plata*; to the eaſt the *North-Sea*, and to the weſt the mountains of *Peru* or *Guiana*.

Its Diviſion. *Braſil* thus limited, is divided by the *Portugueſe* into fourteen diſtricts, called by them *Kapitanias*, or Captainſhips; *viz. Paria*, the firſt of all towards the north; *Maranhaon*, *Siara*, *Potigi* or *Rio Grande*, *Paraiba*, *Parnambuko*, *Tarmarika* or *Itamarika*, *Seregippo del Rey*, *Quirimune* or *Bahia dos todos los Santos*, *Nhoe-Kombe*, or *os Ilhos*, *Pakata*, or *Porto Securo*, *Rio de Janeiro* or *Nheteroya*, *St. Vincent* and *Eſpiritu St.*

Whilſt part of *Braſil* was in our poſſeſſion, it might conveniently be divided into the *Dutch* and *Portugueſe Braſil*. Each of theſe captainſhips is watered by ſome conſiderable river or other, beſides ſeveral others of leſs note; moſt of theſe have very rapid currents in the rainy months, and overflow the adjacent countrey.

The River of St. Francis. The river of St. *Francis*, the largeſt and moſt conſiderable in thoſe parts, is the common boundary of the captainſhip of *Parnambuko* and *Bahia dos todos los Santos*, or the *Bay of all Saints*. In ſome places it is ſo broad, that a ſix-pounder can ſcarce reach over it, and its depth is eight, twelve, and ſometimes fifteen yards; but it admits of no Ships of burthen, becauſe its Entrance is choak'd up with ſands.

Its firſt ſpring is ſaid to ariſe out of a certain

1643. certain lake, which being augmented by many rivelets out of the mountains of *Peru*, but eſpecially by the rivers of *Rio de la Plata* and *Maranhaon* exonerates it ſelf into the ſea. Some of our people went in a ſhallop near forty leagues up the river, and found it of a good depth and pretty broad. If we may believe the *Portugueſe*, there are about fifty leagues from the ſea, certain impaſſable cataracts or water-falls, called by them *Kakocras*; beyond thoſe the river winds to the north, 'till you come to its ſource in the lake, in which are many pleaſant iſlands, inhabited by the barbarians; as is likewiſe the ſhore round about it. They find good ſtore of gold-duſt in this lake, but it is none of the beſt, being carried thither by the many rivulets, which waſh the gold-bearing rocks of *Peru*; here is alſo moſt excellent ſalt-petre.

It is obſervable, that in the ſummer and and thoſe winter months, when it rains but ſeldom, this river has more water than in the rain ſeaſon: The reaſon alledged for it is, the vaſt diſtance from its firſt ſource, whether the rains that fall from the mountains muſt firſt be convey'd by many rivulets: All the other rivers near the *Receif*, are ſo empty of water during the ſummer ſeaſon, that they are rendred quite unnavigable. But the ridges of mountains which lie not far from the ſea-ſhore, exonerate their waters as well here as in *Peru*, backward to the weſt, and dividing themſelves into two branches; the firſt runs into the north, and joins with the large and moſt rapid rivers of *Maranhaon*, and of the *Amazons*; the other with the rivers of St. *Francis de la Plata*, and *Janeiro*. The waters of theſe rivers being conſiderably encreaſed by many rivulets, they exonerate themſelves with ſo much violence into the ſea, that the ſeamen meet often with freſh water at a conſiderable diſtance at ſea.

The increaſe of the waters in this river, during the dry ſeaſon, may likewiſe be attributed to the vaſt quantity of ſnow among the mountains, which being melted by the heat of the ſun, occaſions the river to tranſgreſs its ordinary bounds; which in this point is quite different from other rivers, which commonly in the winter time over-flow their banks.

The Dutch Braſil. Six of thoſe *captainſhips* were under the juriſdiction of the *Weſt-India* company, before the *Portugueſe* revolted from the *Dutch*, which they had conquer'd with their Swords, *viz.* The *captainſhip*, (it begins on the ſouth-ſide) *Seregippe del Rey* of *Parnambuko*, *Itamarika*, unto which belongs *Gauiana*, *Paraiba*, *Potigi* or *Rio Grande* and *Siara* or *Ciara*. The *captainſhip* of *Maranhaon* was 1644, by ſpecial command of the company, left by the *Dutch*. This part of *Braſil* uſed to be called by the *Portugueſe*, the *Northern-Braſil*, as the other remaining in their poſſeſſion went by the name of *South-Braſil*. 1643.

The ſix *Dutch captainſhips* did extend all along the ſea coaſt from north to ſouth, in length about a hundred and ſixty or a hundred and eighty leagues; for from *Rio Grande*, to the northern border of *Seregippe del Rey*, is a hundred leagues: The two others, *viz.* that of *Siara* to the north, and *Seregippe del Rey* to the ſouth, make up the reſt. Each of theſe *captainſhips* contain ſeveral other leſſer diſtricts, call'd by the *Portugueſe Fregeſias*, and by us *Fregeſien*; as for inſtance, in *Seregippe del Rey*, are *Pojuka*, *Kameragibi*, *Porto Calvo*, *Serinhaim*, and ſeveral others. *Fregaſie*, comprehends a certract of ground, compoſed of divers villages, rivers, hills and vallies, betwixt each of which is commonly a tract of barren hills, of about three or four leagues in length. Moſt of the *Dutch captainſhips*, are but indifferently cultivated, becauſe the *Portugueſe* uſed not to manure the ground in thoſe parts, beyond three or four, or at fartheſt, five leagues diſtant from the Sea.

The *captainſhip* of *Seregippe del Rey* is likewiſe called *Carigi*, from a certain ſmall lake of that name; it is ſituate in the ſouthern part of *Braſil*, extending about thirty two leagues along the ſea coaſt, bordering on the north ſide, upon the river of St. *Francis*, by which it is divided from *Parnambuko*; as on the ſouth ſide it is ſeparated by *Rio Real*, from *Bahia dos todos los Santos*. *Seregippe del Rey*, has among others, a certain *Fregaſie*, called *Porto Calvo*, ſituated betwixt the 9th and the 10th degree of ſouthern latitude; being encompaſſed on the north-weſt ſide by the *Fregaſie* of *Serinhaim*, and the ſmall river of *Piraſenunga*, extending to the ſouth as far as the river *Parepuera*, by which it is divided from the *Fregaſie* of *Alagoaſi*, containing in all about twelve leagues in length near the ſea ſhore, its bounds on the land ſide reaching to the unpaſſable woods. *Seregippe del Rey*

In this *Fregaſie*, is a village call'd by the *Portugueſe*, *Villa de bon ſucceſſo de Porto Calo*, but was formerly called *Portocano Dos quatros Rios*, it being ſituate at the confluence of the four rivers, *Maleita*, *Tapamunde*, *Commentabunda* and *Monguaba*. It is built upon a riſing ground, about four leagues from the ſea ſhore, and by the *Dutch* ſtrengthened with two forts; the biggeſt of which was called *Bon Succeſſo*, being built all of ſtone, ſurrounded with a good counterſcarp, with a large baſon for freſh water within. The other fort was called by us, the *New-Church*, being created out of the *The village of* Bon Succeſſo de Porto Cal

ruins

1643. ruins of an old church, called by the *Portugueſe*, *Noſſa Senhora de Preſentacao*. Betwixt both theſe forts, a third was ordered to be erected by count *Maurice*, upon the banks of the river, but it lying within the reach of musket-ſhot from the mountains, was not brought to perfection.

The village has two ſtreets, the chief of which runs parallel with the river, from one fort to the other, and is call'd *St. Joſeph's-ſtreet*; it contain'd no more than three houſes of one ſtory high, and about thirty ſix others cover'd with pantiles, being only built upon the ground. The *Portugueſe* have in lieu of their churches, which are demoliſhed, when the fortifications were erected, built themſelves another on the other ſide of the river, where they ſometimes hear maſs. The village is ſituate in a moſt pleaſant and wholeſome air, being cooled by the continual breezes from the ſea, which are not ſtopp'd by any hills, betwixt them and the ſhore. In the night time they enjoy the benefit of the land wind, which drives the cool vapours ariſing from the neighbouring rivers thither: Formerly there was a certain town called *Seregippe del Rey*, ſomewhat higher up the river, in a very barren place, of a conſiderable bigneſs, and well built, with three goodly churches, and a monaſtery belonging to the *Franciſcans*, but without any fortifications. Above this town you ſee a chapel dedicated to St. *Chriſtopher*, whether the *Roman Catholicks* come on pilgrimage.

This *captainſhip* was firſt of all reduced under the obedience of the *Portugueſe* or *Spaniards*, by *Chriſtovan de Barros*; who for this his good ſervice, had all the lands betwixt the ſmall lake of *Seregippe* and *St. Franciſco*, granted to him, with full power to ſettle colonies there within a limited time. This drew many of the inhabitants of the *Bay of all Saints* thither; who within a few years after laid the foundations of this town, by erecting four ſugar-mills, and building about a hundred houſes, with four hundred ſtables for their cattle. But this town, with all the circumjacent houſes, was 1637, the 24th of *December*, laid deſolate by our people, the inhabitants retiring to the *Bay of all Saints*. For the *Spaniſh* general *Benjola* being, 1637, poſted with a body of two thouſand men near that place, did with ravaging and burning, conſiderable damage to our colonies, which oblig'd count *Maurice* to diſlodge him from thence; but being then ſick of an ague, he committed this expedition to the charge of colonel *Schoppe*; for which purpoſe having gather'd a body of two thouſand three hundred men, beſides four hundred *Braſilians*, and two hundred and fifty ſeamen out of the the adjacent Places, near the river of *St. Francis*, *Alagoas*, the *Cape of St. Auſtin*, out of the *Receif* and *Moribeka*, and given him for his aſſiſtant Mr. *John van Gieſſelen*, a member of the great council, he commanded the *Dutch* admiral *Lichthart*, to cruiſe with his fleet near the *Bay of all Saints*, thereby to draw the enemy out of his advantageous poſt to the ſea-ſhoar. The *Spaniſh* general had no ſooner notice of our paſſing the river, but fearing to be encloſed betwixt us and the fleet, march'd with his body to *Torre Garcie de Avila*, a place about fourteen leagues to the north of the city of *St. Salvador*. 1643.

The *Dutch* general *Schoppe*, hearing of his removal, immediately attack'd the place, which he laid deſolate, and returned with incredible ſwiftneſs to the ſouth ſide of the river of *St. Francis*.

Here he intrench'd himſelf, with an intention to annoy the enemy, by cutting off his proviſions, and driving away his cattle; which ſucceeded ſo well, that we kill'd above three thouſand of their horned beaſts, beſides what was carried away on the other ſide of the river; ſo that what was left by the ſoldiers, was by the inhabitants carried to the *Bay of all Saints*; from whence it is evident, what vaſt numbers of cattle this countrey did produce at that time.

The great council took once a reſolution to re-people that part of the countrey, and agreed for this purpoſe with *Nunno Olferdi*, councellor of juſtice in the *Receif*, who found means to ſettle ſeveral families there: But the council of nineteen diſapproving the matter, it was laid aſide.

In the year 1641, count *Maurice* reduced this place under the obedience of the *Weſt-India* company, erected a fort there, and ſurrounded the town *Seregippe del Rey* with a ditch. It lies upon a ſmall river, betwixt *St. Franciſco* and *Real*, which however at ſpring-tide has fourteen foot water or thereabouts. Within the juriſdiction of this *captainſhip*, is the mountain of *Tabayna*; from whence ſeveral ſorts of valuable oar was preſented to the council of nineteen; but upon proof was found not worth farther looking after.

The captainſhip *of* Parnambuko.

The *captainſhip* of *Parnambuko*, is one of the chiefeſt and biggeſt of the *Dutch-Braſil*. It extends above ſixty leagues along the coaſt, betwixt the river of *St. Francis*, and the captainſhip of *Tamarika*. *Parnambuko* properly denotes the entrance of the harbour, which by reaſon of the many rocks and ſhelves hidden under water, was called by the *Portugueſe*, *Inferno Bokko*, and broken

1643. broken *Parnambuko*, or the *Mouth of Hell*. It is ſubdivided into eleven leſſer diſtricts, inhabited by the *Portugueſe*, *viz.* the city of *Olinda*, *Garazu*, *Receif*, *Moribeka*, *St. Anthony*, *Poyuka*, *Serinhaim*, *Conſalvi d'Una*, *Porto Calvo*, the *Northern Alagoa*, and the *Southern Alagoa*. Among which *Olinda* and *Garazu* were the chiefeſt.

Eleven towns and villages of Parnambuko.

Garazu. The town, or rather the village of *Garazu*, lies at ſome diſtance from the ſhoar, over againſt the Iſland of *Tamarika*, upon a river of the ſame name, about five leagues from *Olinda*. It was formerly inhabited by *Portugueſe* handicrafts men, but ſince our taking of *Olinda*, ſeveral rich Families ſettled there; we became maſters of the place 1633, in *May*.

Moribeka. *Moribeka* lies deeper into the countrey, more to the ſouth, about five leagues off of the *Receif*.

St. Anthony. *St. Anthony* is about ſeven or eight leagues diſtant from the *Receif* to the ſouth, near the *Cape of St. Auſtin*.

Poyuka. The city of *St. Michael de Poyuka*, lies about ten leagues to the ſouth of the *Receif* upon a river of the ſame name, which diſembogues in the ſea, on the ſouth ſide of the *Cape of St. Auſtin*. It was formerly a very populous place; and had thirteen ſugar-mills.

Serinhaim. The village *Serinhaim*, much about the ſame diſtance thence with the former, is a very pleaſant place, has twelve ſugar-mills, each of which produces ſix or ſeven hundred *Aroba's*, an *Aroba* making about twenty ſeven or twenty eight pound weight.

Gonſalvi d'Una. The village of *Gonſalvi d'Una*, lies twenty leagues from the *Receif*; it has five ſugar-mills.

Porto Calvo. The village called *Porto Calvo*, is twenty leagues diſtant from the *Receif*; it has ſeven or eight ſugar-mills. Here is the caſtle of *Porocano*, which was not conquer'd by us, till under the government of count *Maurice*.

The towns of the northern and ſouthern *Alagoa's*, are forty leagues from the *Receif*.

Within the diſtrict of *Parnambuko*, are two woods, called by the *Portugueſes* the *greater* and *leſſer Palmairas*, or *Palmtree-Woods*.

The two Palmairas. The *Leſſer Palmairas*, which is inhabited by ſix thouſand negroes, lies about twenty leagues above the *Alagoas*, being encloſed with woods near the ſmall lake of *Guagohuhi*, which exonerates it ſelf into the great lake of *Parayba*, ſix leagues from thence to the north, about four leagues from the lake *Meridai*, to the ſouth of the *Northern Alagoa*, being near that point of land commonly called *Jaragoa*. The village conſiſts of three ſtreets, each near half a league in length. Their huts are made of ſtraw twiſted together, one near another, their plantations being behind. They retain ſomething of the religious worſhip of the *Portugueſe*, but have their peculiar prieſts and judges. Their buſineſs is to rob the *Portugueſe* of their ſlaves, who remain in ſlavery among them, 'till they have redeemed themſelves by ſtealing another: But ſuch ſlaves as run over to them, are as free as the reſt. Their food is dates, beans, meal, barley, ſugar-canes, tame-fowl, (of which they have great plenty) and fiſh, which the lake furniſhes them withal. They have twice a year a harveſt of barley, which being over, they make merry for a whole Week together. Before ſowing time, they light great fires for fourteen days, which may be ſeen at a great diſtance. The ſhorteſt way from the *Receif* to this *Palmairas*, is along the lake of the *Northern Alago*. 1643.

The greater *Palmairas* is betwixt twenty and thirty leagues diſtant behind the village of St. *Amar*, near the mountain of *Behe*, being ſurrounded with a double encloſure. About eight thouſand Negroes are ſaid to inhabit the Vallies near the mountains, beſides many others, who dwell in leſſer numbers of fifty or a hundred, in other places. Their houſes lie ſtraggling, they ſow and reap among the woods, and have certain caves whither they retreat in caſe of neceſſity. They dreſs their victuals in the day time, and at night tell over their whole number, to ſee whether any be wanting; if not, they conclude the evening with dancing and beating the drum, which may be heard at a great diſtance. Then they go to ſleep 'till nine or ten a clock the next day. During the dry ſeaſon, they detach a certain number among them, to ſteal ſlaves from the *Portugueſe*. The ſhorteſt cut to their habitations, is from the *Alagoas* through St. *Amar*, and ſo croſs the plains of *Nhumahu* and *Kororipe*, towards the backſide of the mountain of *Warrakaka*, 'till you come to the lake *Paraiba*; along which you paſs 'till you reach the mountain *Behe*, from whence you go directly into the vallies. Under the Government of Count *Maurice*, the negroes of this *Palmairas* did conſiderable miſchief, eſpecially to the country people about the *Alagoas*; to repreſs which, he ſent three hundred firelocks, a hundred *Mamelukes*, and ſeven hundred *Braſilians*.

The Receif, Maurice's *town, and* Anthony Vaez.

The Re-

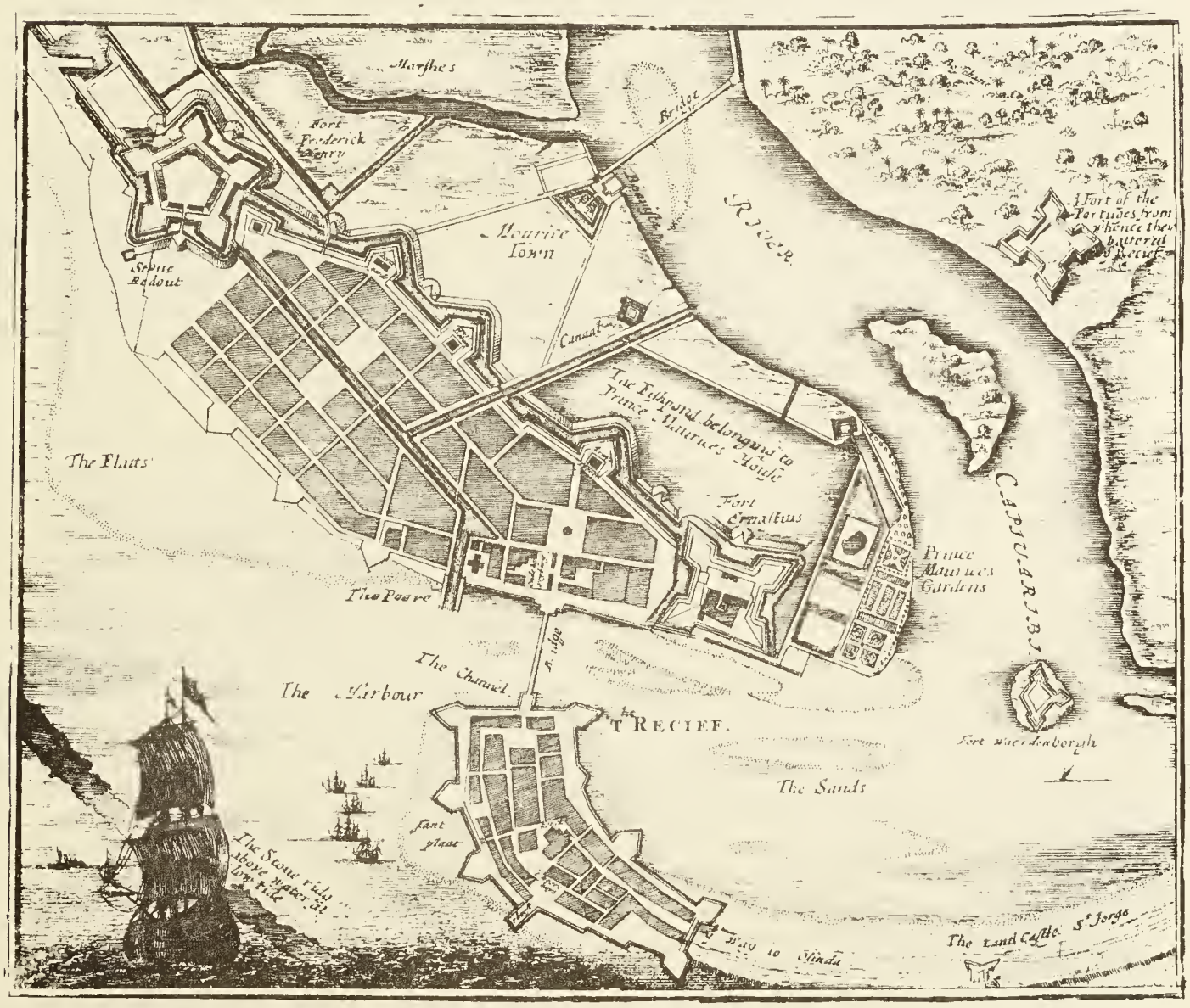
The *Receif* is, by reaſon of its commodious and advantagious ſituation the ſtrong- *ceif*,

eſt

1643. eſt place of all *Braſil*; beſides that, it is ſtrengthened and defended by ſeveral adjacent Forts: But to give you the moſt commodious view both of the *Receif*, and the ſituation of *Maurice*'s town, it is to be obſerved, that the whole coaſt of *Braſil*, is from one end to the other ſurrounded with a long, thick, and flat ridge of rocks, which in ſome Places is twenty, and in others thirty paces broad: However, there are certain paſſages in this ridge, through which the ſhips approach the ſhoar, and ſome few places, where this ridge is not found at all. Thus a league on this ſide *Rio dolee*, two leagues on the northſide of the city of *Olinda*, there is nothing of this ridge to be found; but begins again near *Poumarelle* or *Soxamardo*, and extends to the iſle of *Itamarika*. Betwixt the ridge and the continent, you may paſs in boats at high water; for at low-tide moſt of thoſe rocks appear above water; tho' the tide never fails to cover the ſame. The rock over-againſt the *Receif* of *Parnambuko*, is between twenty and thirty paces broad, being not only at ſpring-tides, but at all other tides overflown by the ſea; it is there-abouts very flat, without any prominencies, and extends for a league from ſouth to north. On the north point is an open Paſſage for ſhips to approach the ſhoar, lying five hundred paces further to the north, than the *Receif* it ſelf. It is but narrow, and at ſpring-tide not above twenty two foot deep. 1643.

The ſtone ridge round the coaſt of Braſil.

Betwixt this rocky ridge and the continent, there is a ſandy ridge, or ſmall iſland extended to the ſouth from *Olinda*, a league in length, and about two hundred paces broad. This is by our people commonly called, *The Sandy Receif*, to diſtinguiſh it from *The Stony Receif*.



The ſandy Receif.

On the ſouthern point of this little iſland, a league off *Olinda*, the *Portugueſe* had built a village, called *Povoacano*, which ſignifies *peopling*, or elſe *Reciffo*; it was very populous for a conſiderable time, 'till the building of *Maurice*'s town, in the iſland of *Anthony Vaez*. For after *Olinda* was forſaken by its inhabitants, and deſtroy'd by us, many of them, but eſpecially the merchants, ſettled in this *Reciffo*, or the village of *Povoacano*, where they erected magnificent ſtructures. At our firſt arrival, we found

no

1643. no more than two hundred houſes there, which were afterwards increaſed to above two thouſand, ſome of which are very goodly edifices. We ſurrounded it with Palliſadoes on the ſide of the river *Biberibi*, which at low-water is fordable; and for its better ſecurity fortified it with three bulwarks, one towards *Olinda*, the other to the harbour, and the third towards the *Salt River*; upon each of which was raiſed a good battery with three great cannon. This *Receif* is ſituate under the 8th degree 20 minutes ſouthern latitude. 1643.

The derivation of the word Receif.

Some derive the word *Reciffo* from the *Latin*, *recipere* and *receptus* to receive, which after was turned into *Reciffo*, becauſe the ſhips uſed to be received betwixt the ſtony and ſandy *Receifs*, to load and unload their goods. Before the building of *Maurice*'s town, we kept here our factories, and all buſineſs both of peace and war, was tranſacted in this place. In the time of the *Portugueſe*, all the ſhips coming out of the ſea, did unload on the village of *Povoacano*, or the *Receif*, and the goods were from thence in boats and lighters conveyed up the river *Biberibi*, to the ſuburbs of *Olinda*.

Before the building of *Maurice*'s town, moſt of the traffick was in the *Receif*, where all the great merchants had their habitations, and from hence the Sugar was tranſported into *Holland*. To prevent the frauds in the cuſtoms, it was ſurrounded with palliſadoes, and a goodly hoſpital was erected for the convenʳ ncy of the ſick and wounded, and the education of orphans, under the tuition of four governors, and as many governeſſes.

Upon the uttermoſt point of the ſtony *Receif*, on the left ſide as you enter the harbour out of the ſea, is a ſtrong and large caſtle, built of free-ſtone, ſurrounded with a very high wall, upon which are mounted many heavy cannon, with ſuitable artillery and other proviſions. When we took the place, we found nine braſs, and twenty two iron pieces of cannon within it; ſo that it ſeems both by art and nature impregnable; there being no coming near it on foot, at high-water.

About five leagues higher, upon a branch of the great river, lies a ſmall town of little conſequence, called by our people, *The New City*; and upon another branch of the ſame river, oppoſite to the former, a village called *Atapuepe*.

The iſland of Anthony Vaez, *and* Maurice's Town.

The iſle of Anthony Vaez.

To the ſouth of the *Receif*, oppoſite to it, lies the iſle of *Anthony Vaez*, ſo called by our People, from its ancient poſſeſſor. It is about half a league in circuit, being divided from the *Receif*, by the *Salt-River*, or *Biberibi*. 1643.

On the eaſt-ſide of this iſland, count *Maurice* laid the foundation of a city, which, after his own Name, he called *Maurice*'s town or city; the ruines of the churches or monaſteries of the city of *Olinda*, furniſh'd the materials for the building of it, which were from thence carried to the *Receif*, and ſo tranſported to this place. *Maurice's* Town.

On the weſt-ſide it is environ'd with a moraſs; and on the eaſt-ſide waſh'd by the ſea, which paſſes the ſtony ridge. Beſides which, it is on the land-ſide ſtrengthen'd with an earthen wall, four bulwarks and a large moat.

On that ſide where the fort of *Erneſtus* was, the town lay open, and the houſes took up a larger compaſs than thoſe in the *Receif*; but after the revolt of the *Portugueſe*, moſt of thoſe houſes were pulled down, and the place drawn into a more narrow compaſs, to render it more defenſible: Yet was the place well ſtocked with inhabitants, as well merchants as handicrafts men.

Maurice's town was on each ſide guarded by a fort. On the ſouth ſide by the fort called *Frederick Henry*, or the quinquangular fort, from its five bulwarks. This fort was beſides this, ſurrounded by a large ditch and palliſadoes, and ſtrengthened by two hornworks, ſo that it commanded the whole plain, which at ſpring-tides uſed to be overflown by the ſea. *The Fort* Frederick Henry.

The ſecond fort *Erneſtus*, thus called after *John Erneſt*, the brother of count *Maurice*, was four-ſquare, with four bulwarks, with a very large ditch; it commanded the river, the plains, and *Maurice*'s town. Near this laſt fort was the garden of count *Maurice*, ſtored with all ſorts of trees, brought thither from *Europe* and both the *Indies*. *The Fort* Erneſtus.

Upon the north point of the *Stony Receif*, juſt over againſt the *Sandy Receif*, lies the beforenamed fort, built all of ſtone, being about a hundred paces in circumference, provided with a good garriſon and twenty pieces of great cannon, though in ſtormy weather the water flies over it on all ſides. It commands the harbour, the land fort, the *Bruin Fort*, and the *Receif*. *The Fort of Stone.*

As the iſle of *Antony Vaez* was joined to the continent by a bridge, ſo it was thought neceſſary to join the *Receif* with another bridge to the ſaid iſland, for the conveniency of carriage; the ſugar cheſts being before that time never to be tranſported to the *Receif*, except at low water, unleſs the owners would run the hazard of expoſing them to the danger of the ſea in ſmall boats. Accordingly *The Bridge betwixt the* Receif *and the Iſland.*

1643. cordingly the great council, with conſent of the governor count *Maurice*, agreed with a certain architect for the building of a bridge with ſtone arches, for the ſum of two hundred fifty thouſand florins. But after the architect had conſumed a prodigious quantity of ſtone, and raiſed the ſtructure near to the height of the banks of the river, finding that at low-water there was ſtill eleven foot water, and deſpairing to be able to accompliſh it, left it unfiniſhed. But the council being unwilling to deſiſt, renewed the work, which had already coſt a hundred thouſand florins; and by means of many trees of forty and fifty foot long, ſtopped the current till the bridge was brought to perfection, which was done in two months time, and a certain toll impoſed upon all paſſengers, *viz.* for an inhabitant two pence, for a ſoldier and negroe one penny, for a horſe four pence, and a waggon drawn by oxen ſeven pence.

The harbour. The ſpace betwixt the *Sandy* and *Stony Receif*, is properly the harbour, which at high-water has about thirteen or fourteen foot depth, where the ſhips ride very ſafe, being defended from the ſea by the ſtony *Receif*. The paſſage betwixt the *Sandy Receif* and the continent, is called the *Salt-River*, to diſtinguiſh it from the river *Kapivaribi*, which carries ſweet water.

The river Kapivaribi. The river *Kapivaribi* has derived its name from a certain kind of river or ſea hogs, which uſed to be found there, and were by the *Braſilians* called *Kapivaribi*. This river ariſes ſome leagues to the weſt, paſſing by the *Matta*, or the *Wood of Braſil*, *Maſyaſti*, St. *Lorenzo* and *Real*, where joining with the river *Affogados*, near another river of the ſame name, diſembogues in the ſea, near the *Receif*. The river *Kapivaribi* divides itſelf into two branches; one turns to the ſouth, and paſſes by the fort *William*, and is called *Affogados*; the other running to the north, retains its former name, continuing its courſe betwixt the continent and *Maurice*'s town, or the iſle of *Anthony Vaez* (into which you may paſs over it by a bridge) and ſo to *Waerdenburgh*, where it joins with the river *Biberibi*, or *Salt-River*, both which are afterwards mixed with the ſea. The two branches of this river, ſurround the river *Biberibi* on the weſt-ſide, and to the eaſt the iſle of *Anthony Vaez*. Upon that branch of the river called *Affogados*, are abundance of ſugar-mills, from whence the *Portugueſe* uſed to convey their ſugar-cheſts, either in boats by the way of the river, or in carts to *Baretta*, and from thence in flat bottomed boats to the *Receif*, and to *Olinda*.

A league to the ſouth of *Maurice*'s Town upon the branch called *Affogados*, is a four-ſquare fort of the ſame name, otherwiſe called fort *William*; from whence you may paſs along a dike to the fort *Frederick Henry*, or *Maurice*'s Town. It was a noble ſtructure, ſurrounded with high and ſtrong walls, a large ditch and palliſadoes, with ſix braſs cannon: It defended the avenues to the plains. 1633. *The fort* William.

About half a league from thence, and at the ſame diſtance from the continent, lies another fort on the ſea ſhore, called *Baretta:* This commands the avenues both by ſea and land to the cape of *St. Auſtin*, and the *Receif*. *The fort* Baretta.

Upon that part of the iſland which lies betwixt the rivers *Kapivaribi*, and *Biberibi*, and betwixt the forts of *Erneſtus* and the triangular fort of *Waerdenburg*, were the before mentioned gardens of count *Maurice*, ſtored with all kinds of trees, fruits, flowers and greens, which either *Europe*, *Africk*, or both the *Indies* could afford. There were near ſeven hundred cocoa-trees of all ſizes, ſome of which were thirty, forty, and fifty foot high; which being tranſplanted thither, out of the circumjacent countries, bore abundance of fruit the very firſt year: Above fifty lemon-trees, and eighteen citron-trees, eighty pomgranate-trees, and ſixty-ſix fig-trees, were alſo to be ſeen in theſe gardens. *The garden of count* Maurice.

In the midſt of it ſtood the ſeat itſelf, called *Vryburgh*, a noble ſtructure indeed, which as is reported, coſt ſix hundred thouſand florins: It had a moſt admirable proſpect, both to the ſea and land ſide, and its two towers were of ſuch a height, that they might be ſeen ſix or ſeven leagues off at ſea, and ſerved the ſeamen for a beacon. In the front of the houſe was a battery of marble, riſing by degrees from the river-ſide, upon which were mounted ten pieces of cannon for the defence of the river. About two or three rods from the river, were ſeveral large baſons in the garden, containing very ſweet water, notwithſtanding the river all round about afforded nothing but ſalt-water; beſides this, there were divers fiſh-ponds, ſtocked with all ſorts of fiſh. *The palace of count* Maurice.

At the very foot of the bridge which is built over the river *Kapivaribi*, from *Maurice*'s town to the continent, count *Maurice* had built a very pleaſant ſummer ſeat, called by the *Portugueſe*, *Baaviſta*, i. e. *A fair Proſpect*. It was not only ſurrounded with very pleaſant gardens and fiſh-ponds, but ſerved likewiſe as a fort for the defence of the iſle of *Anthony Vaez*, and *Maurice*'s Town. *His ſummer ſeat.*

Upon the *Sandy Receif*, oppoſite to the *Sea*, or *Water Fort*, was a ſtrong fort built of ſtone, called by the *Portugueſe*, St. *Toris*, our people uſed to call it the *Land Fort*, to diſtinguiſh it from the beforementioned *Water Fort*; it defends the entrance of the harbour *The land fort.*

1643. bour with thirteen iron pieces of cannon.

About a muſket ſhot thence to the north, lies upon the ſame ſandy *Receif*, a ſmall fort with four baſtions, called the fort of *Bruin*; and about a muſket ſhot further to the north, a redoubt, called *Madame de Bruin*: Both theſe forts were built by the *Dutch*.

The fort Bruin.

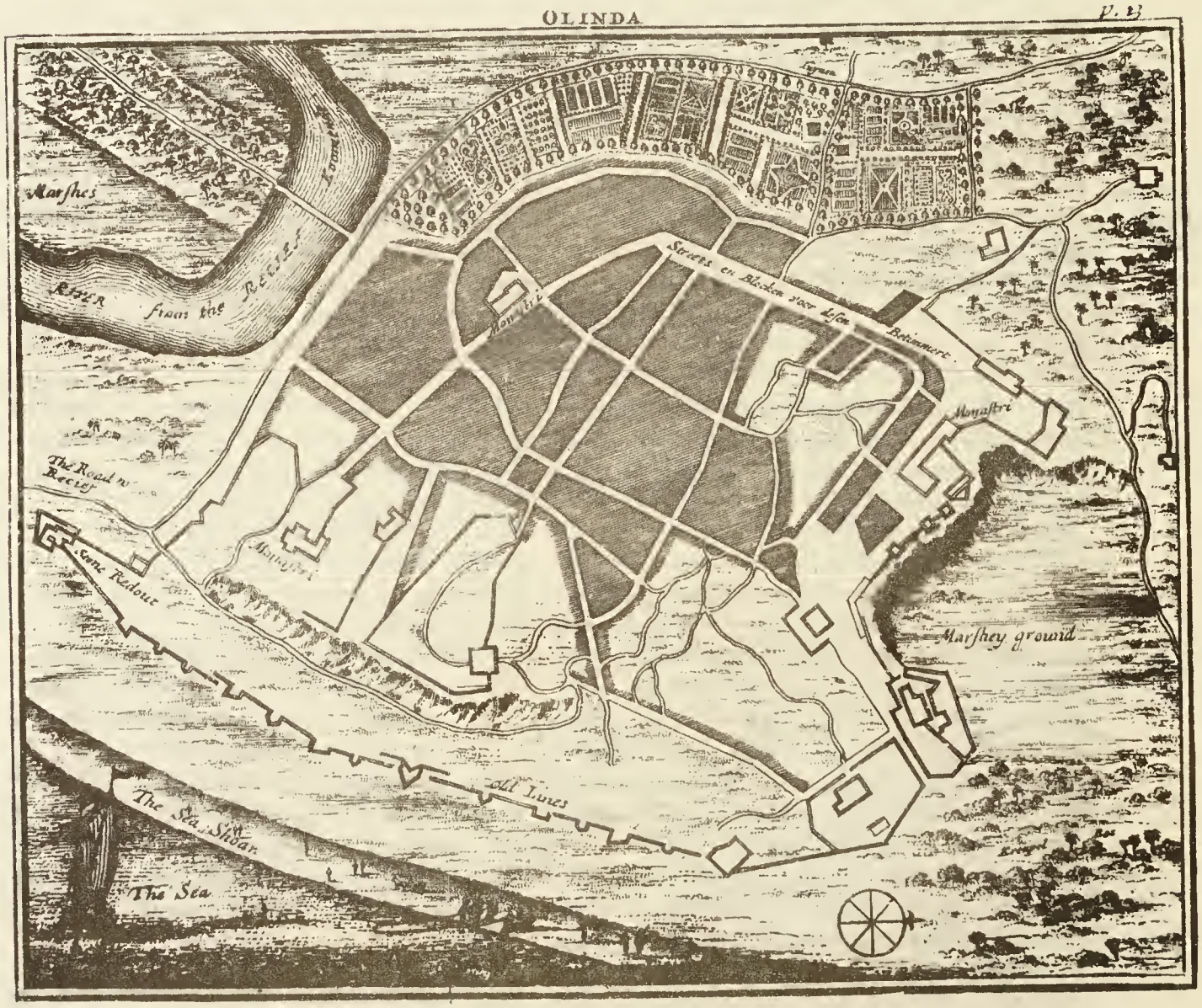
Near the continent, not far from the ſalt-pits, betwixt the *Sandy Receif*, and the iſle of *Anthony Vaez*, was a triangular fort called *Waerdenburgh*. It was at firſt a four-ſquare, but afterwards turned by the *Dutch* into a triangular fort, the fourth bulwark being not defenſible, by reaſon of the ground: Thoſe three bulwarks were afterwards changed into as many redoubts, and provided with ſome braſs guns: At high tide it is ſurrounded on all ſides with water.

The fort of Waerdenburgh.

The City of Olinda.

At a ſmall diſtance from the *Receif*, or *Maurice*'s Town, to the north, is the ruinated city of *Olinda*, once a famous place among the *Portugueſe*; the whole product of *Braſil*, being from thence tranſported by ſea into *Europe*. The beſt part of the city was built upon divers hill; towards the ſea, on the ſouth ſide, theſe hills were pretty plain, extending to the ſea-ſhore, which has a very white ſand all along that coaſt: Towards the land ſide, or the north, thoſe hills are more ſteep and craggy, full of thorn-buſhes, intermixed with a few orange-trees. Theſe hills are an additional ſtrength to the place, which beſides this, was guarded by ſeveral baſtions to the land ſide, though by reaſon of the great variety of hills contained in its circuit, it was a difficult taſk to bring the fortifications into a regular form. There is a very fair proſpect from the higher part of the town, both to the ſouth and north, or to the ſea and land ſide, by reaſon of the great quantity of circumjacent trees, which continue green all the year round. You may alſo from thence ſee the iſle of *Anthony Vaez*, and *Maurice*'s town. The point of land near *Olinda*, is called *Tipo* by the inhabitants. 1643.

Olinda.



Upon

1643. Upon the higheſt hill within the place, ſtood formerly a convent belonging to the *Jeſuits*, being a magnificent ſtructure, founded by *Sebaſtian* king of *Portugal*, who endowed it with conſiderable revenues. It had a very fair proſpect, and might be ſeen at a good diſtance at ſea. Not far from thence was another Monaſtery belonging to the *Capucines*; and near the ſea-ſhore, another of the *Dominican* fryars: Beſides which, it had two churches, the one called St. *Salvador*, the other St. *Peter*.

It contained above two thouſand inhabitants, beſides the clergymen and ſlaves, among whom were two hundred that were accounted very rich. On the foot of the mountain upon which the city of *Olinda* was built, a ſtrong redoubt was erected, which in the year 1645, was by a ſerjeant betrayed to the *Portugueſe* for a ſum of money. About a league from the city, near the water-ſide, were the ſuburbs, well ſtored with inhabitants and packhouſes; but deſtitute of freſh water, which they were fain to fetch from beyond the river.

The whole diſtrict of *Parnambuko* abounds in divers kinds of fruits and cattle. The vallies afford good paſturage, and the lower grounds near the rivers, great ſtore of ſugar reeds, which are much cultivated hereabouts. The mountains produce richer mineralls here, than in the other captainſhips. During the rainy ſeaſon the heat is more tolerable here in the day time than the cold nights.

The Cameleon, *or* Indian Salamander, *otherwiſe called* Gekko.

This creature, which is not only found in *Braſil*, but alſo in the iſle of *Java*, belonging to the *Eaſt-Indies*, and which, by our people is called *Gekko*, from its conſtant cry (like among us that of the *Cuckoe*) is properly an *Indian Salamander*. It is about a foot long, its ſkin of a pale or ſea-green colour, with red ſpots. The head is not unlike that of a tortoiſe, with a ſtreight mouth. The eyes are very large, ſtarting out of the head, with long and ſmall eye-apples. The tail is diſtinguiſhed by ſeveral white rings: Its teeth are ſo ſharp as to make an impreſſion even upon ſteel. Each of its four legs had five crooked claws armed on the end with nails. Its gait is very ſlow, but wherever it faſtens it is not eaſily removed. It dwells commonly upon rotten trees, or among the ruines of old houſes and churches; it oftentimes ſettles near the bedſteds, which makes ſometimes the moors pull down their huts.

Its conſtant cry is *Gekko*, but before it begins it makes a kind of hiſſing noiſe. The ſting of this creature is ſo venomous, that the wound proves mortal, unleſs it be immediately burnt with a red hot iron, or cut off. The blood is of a paliſh colour, reſembling poiſon itſelf. 1643.

The *Javaneſe* uſe to dip their arrows in the blood of this creature; and thoſe who deal in poiſons among them (an art much eſteemed in the iſland of *Java*, by both ſexes) hang it up with a ſtring tied to the tail on the cieling, by which means it being exaſperated to the higheſt pitch, ſends forth a yellow liquor out of its mouth, which they gather in ſmall pots ſet underneath, and afterwards coagulate into a body in the ſun. This they continue for ſeveral months together, by giving daily food to the creature. It is unqueſtionably the ſtrongeſt poiſon in the world; its urine being of ſo corroſive a quality, that it not only raiſes bliſters, wherever it touches the ſkin, but turns the fleſh black, and cauſes a gangrene. The inhabitants of the *Eaſt-Indies* ſay, that the beſt remedy againſt this poiſon is the *Curcumic* root. Such a *Gekko* was got within the body of the wall of the church in the *Receif*, which obliged us to have a great hole made in the ſaid wall, to diſlodge it from thence. *The ſtrongeſt poiſon in the World.*

There are alſo ſeveral ſorts of *Serpents* in *Braſil*, ſuch as *Rattle Serpents*, *Double-headed Serpents*, and ſuch like; of which the *Braſilians* enumerate twenty-three, *viz. Boigvacu*, or *Liboya*, *Arabo*, *Bioby*, *Boicininga*, *Boitrapo*, *Boykupekanga*, *Bapoba*, *Kukuruku*, *Kaninana*, *Kurukakitinga*, *Grinipaijaguara*, *Ibiara*, *Jakapekoaja Ibiboboca*, *Jararaka*, *Manima*, *Vona*, *Tarc[illegible]*, *Kakaboya*, *Amorepinima*. *Serpents in* Braſil.

We will give you an account of thoſe only that dwell in the houſes and woods of *Parnambuko*, paſſing by the reſt, as not ſo well known among us; and it is obſervable that though ſome of the *American* or *Braſilians* ſerpents exceed thoſe of *Europe* in bigneſs, they are nevertheleſs not ſo poiſonous.

The ſerpent of *Boicininga*, or *Boicinininga*, likewiſe called *Boiquira* by the *Braſilians*, is by the *Portugueſe* called *Kaſkeveda* and *Tangedor*, i. e. *a Rattle*, and by our people a *Rattle Serpent*, becauſe it makes a noiſe with its tail, not unlike a rattle: This ſerpent is found both upon the highway and in deſolate places; it moves with ſuch ſwiftneſs, as if it had wings, and is extremely venomous. In the midſt it is about the thickneſs of a man's arm near the elbow, but grows thinner by degrees towards the head and tail. The belly and head is flattiſh, the laſt being of the length and breadth of a finger and a half, with very ſmall eyes. It has four peculiar teeth longer than all the reſt, white and ſharp like a thorn, which it hides *The Rattle Serpent.*

ſometimes

1643. ſometimes within the gums. The ſkin is covered with thick ſcales, thoſe upon the back being ſomewhat higher than the reſt, and of a pale yellowiſh colour, with black edges. The ſides of the body are likewiſe yellowiſh with black ſcales on each ſide; but thoſe upon the belly are larger, four-ſquare, and of a yellow colour. It is three, four, and ſometimes five foot long; has a round tongue ſplit in the middle, with long and ſharp teeth. The tail is compoſed of ſeveral looſe and bony joints, which make ſuch a noiſe that it may be heard at a diſtance. Or rather at the end of the tail, is a long piece conſiſting of ſeveral joints, joined within one another in a moſt peculiar manner, not unlike a chain. Every year there is an addition of one of theſe joints, ſo that you may know the exact age of the ſerpent by their number; nature ſeeming in this point to have favoured mankind, as a warning to avoid this poiſonous creature by this noiſe. One of theſe joints put in the fundament cauſes immediate death; but the ſting of this creature proceeds much ſlower in its operation, for in the beginning a bloody matter iſſues from the wound, afterwards the fleſh turns blue, and the ulcer corrodes the adjacent parts by degrees. 1643.



The moſt ſovereign remedy uſed by the *Braſilians* againſt the poiſon of this and other ſerpents, is the head of the ſame ſerpent that has given the wound, which they bruiſe in a mortar, and in form of a plaiſter apply it to the affected part. They mix it commonly with faſting ſpittle, wherewith they alſo frequently moiſten the wound. If they find the poiſon begins to ſeize the nobler parts, they uſe the *Tiproka* as a cordial, and afterwards give ſtrong ſudorificks. They alſo lay open the wound, and apply cupping-glaſſes, to draw the venom from thence. Or elſe they burn it with a red hot iron.

The ſerpent *Kukuruku* is of an aſh colour, with yellow ſpots within and black ſpeckles without, and has juſt ſuch ſcales as the *Rattle Serpent*. Kukuruku.

The ſerpent *Guaku*, or *Liboya*, is queſtionleſs the biggeſt of all ſerpents; ſome being 18, 24, nay 30 foot long, and of the thickneſs of a man in the middle. The *Portugueſe* call it *Kobre dehado*, or the

1643. *The* Roebuck *ſerpent.*

Roebuck ſerpent, becauſe it will ſwallow a whole roebuck or any other deer it meets with; and this is performed by ſucking it through the throat, which is pretty narrow, but the belly vaſtly big. After they have ſwallowed ſuch a deer, they fall aſleep, and ſo are catch'd. Such a one I ſaw near *Paraiba*, which was 30 foot long, and as big as a barrel. Some negroes ſaw it accidentally ſwallow a roebuck, whereupon thirteen muſqueteers were ſent out, who ſhot it, and cut the roebuck out of its belly. It was of a greviſh colour, though others are inclining more to the brown. It is not ſo venomous as the other ſerpents. The *Negroes* and *Portugueſe*, nay even ſome of the *Dutch* eat the fleſh; neither are its ſtings look'd upon as very infectious, the wound healing often up without any application of remedies; ſo that it ought not to be reckoned among the number of poiſonous ſerpents, no more than the *Kaninana*, *Mavina* and *Vocia*. This ſerpent being a very devouring creature, greedy of prey, leaps from amongſt the hedges and woods, and ſtanding upright upon its tail, wreſtles both with men and wild beaſts; ſometimes it leaps from the trees upon the traveller, which it faſtens upon, and beats the breath out of his body with its tail.

Jararaka.

The ſerpent *Jararaka* is ſhort, ſeldom exceeding the length of an arm to the elbow. It has certain protuberant veins on the head like the adder, and makes much ſuch a noiſe. The ſkin is covered with red and black ſpots, the reſt being of an earth colour. The ſtings of this creature are as dangerous, and attended with the ſame ſymptoms, as thoſe of other ſerpents. Its body, the head, tail and ſkin, being before taken away together with the entrails, boil'd in the water of the root of *Jurepeba*, with ſalt, dill, and ſuch like, is look'd upon as a very good remedy.

Boitrapo.

The ſerpent *Boitrapo*, call'd by the *Portugueze*, *Cobre de Cibo*, is about ſeven foot in length, of the thickneſs of a man's arm, feeds upon frogs, and is of an olive colour. It is very venomous, and when it ſtings, occaſions the ſame ſymptoms as the ſerpent *Kukuruku*; nay, the wound is accounted paſt curing, unleſs you apply the hot iron.

Ibiara.

The adder *Ibiara*, by the *Portugueſe* called *Cobra Vega*, or *Cobra de das Cabecas*, i. e. *The Doubleheaded Serpent*, becauſe it appears to have two heads, which however is not ſo. They are found in great numbers, lurking in holes under ground. They feed upon piſmires, are of the thickneſs of the length of a finger, and a foot and a half long, of a ſilver colour; nothing is more poiſonous than the ſtings of theſe creatures, tho' not beyond all hopes of cure, provided the before-mentioned remedies be applied in time. 1643.

Ibiboboka.

The ſerpent by the *Braſilians* called *Ibiboboka*, the *Portugueſe* call *Cobra de Corais*. It is very beautiful, of a ſnow white colour, ſpeckled with black and red ſpots, and about two foot long: Its ſting is mortal, but kills by degrees.

Biobi.

The ſerpent *Biobi*, called by the *Portugueſe Cabro Verde*, or the *Green Serpent*, about three quarters of a yard long, and the thickneſs of a thumb; of a ſhining green colour. It lives among houſes, and hurts no body, unleſs when provoked. Its ſting is however full of poiſon, and ſcarce curable. A certain ſoldier being wounded by one of theſe creatures, which lay hidden in a hedge, in his thigh, did for want of proper remedies, die in few hours after: His body ſwell'd, and turn'd pale blue.

Kaninana.

The ſerpent *Kaninana* is yellow on the belly and green on the back; its length is about eight hands, and is look'd upon as the leaſt venomous of all. It feeds upon eggs and birds, and the *Negroes* and *Braſilians* eat the body, after they have cut off the head and tail.

Ibirakoa.

The ſerpent call'd by the *Braſilians Ibirakoa*, is of ſeveral colours, with white, black, and red ſpots. The ſting of this creature is very poiſonous, attended with the ſame ſymptom as that of *Kukuruku*; for it kills infallibly, unleſs proper remedies be applied immediately. If the poiſon has not ſeiſed the heart, they boil the fleſh of the ſame ſerpent with certain roots, and give it the patient in wine.

The ſerpent *Tarciboya* and *Kakaboya*, are amphibious creatures. The firſt is of a blackiſh colour, very large, and ſtings when provoked, but is not very difficult to be cured. The *Kakaboya* is of a yellowiſh colour, ſix hands long, and feeds upon tame fowl.

Of the Senembi *or the* Leguan.

Not only in the *Captainſhip* of *Parnambuko*, but alſo all over *Braſil* and *America*; as likewiſe in the Iſle of *Java* in the *Eaſt-Indies*, are a certain kind of *Land Crocodile*, call'd by the *Braſilians Senembi*, by our people *Leguan:* Some are larger than others, ſome being three, others four foot long, but ſeldom exceed five: They are all over covered with ſcales, which are ſomewhat bigger on the back, legs, and beginning of the tail, than on the other parts: The neck is about a finger and a half long, the eyes are black and bright, and the noſtrils in the hindermoſt part of the head. Each jawbone is full of ſmall,

1643. black, and ſhort teeth; the tongue is very thick: All along the back from the neck to the tail, are ſmall ſharp teeth of a greeniſh colour; they are biggeſt on the neck, and grow ſmaller and ſmaller towards the tail: Under the throat are likewiſe many of the ſame kind. The whole ſkin is of a delicate green, with black and white ſpots. It has four legs and feet, with five claws armed with very ſharp nails: It can live two or three months without food. Its fleſh is as white as that of a rabbit, and of as good a taſte as that of fowls or rabbits, if it be boil'd or well fry'd with butter. In the head of this creature are certain ſtones, which are an infallible remedy to break and drive the gravel out of the kidneys, given to the quantity of two drams at a time, or carried on ſome part of the body.

There are in *Brazil* lizards both great and ſmall; ſome are green, others greyiſh, and ſome four foot long, with ſparkling eyes. The *Negroes* feed upon ſome of them, whom they kill with blunt arrows; they broil them, after they have ſkin'd them, and eat them without the leaſt harm. Among all thoſe that are found among the thorns and briars, or the ruins of houſes, there is but one kind venomous, which is called *Bibora*. They are like the others, but leſſer, not exceeding the bigneſs of a thumb: they are of an aſh colour, inclining to white; the body and limbs thick and ſwell'd with the poiſon, but the tail ſhort and broad. The wounds given by them are full of a thin ſtinking matter, with blue ſwellings, with a pain near the heart, and in the bowels.

There are alſo certain creatures, called *Thouſand Legs*, as likewiſe *Hundred Legs*, by the natives called *Ambua*, who bend as they crawl along, and are accounted very poiſonous. The firſt are commonly found in the Houſes, and the laſt among the woods, where they not only ſpoil the fruits of the Earth, but alſo plague men and beaſts.

Scorpions. Scorpions, by the *Braſilians* called *Jaaciaiira*, are found here in great numbers, being in ſhape like the *European* ſcorpions, but not ſo peſtiferous, and conſequently the wounds given by them are eaſily cured. They lurk in houſes, behind old ſtools, benches and cheſts. They are exceeding big, no bigger being to be found in any other parts, ſome being five or ſix foot long, and of a conſiderable thickneſs.

Piſmires. There are ſuch prodigious quantities of piſmires in *Braſil*, that for this reaſon, they are called by the *Portugueſe*, *Rey de Braſil*, *i. e.* King of *Braſil*. They eat all that lights in their way, as fruit, fleſh, fiſh, and inſects without any harm. There is alſo a certain flying piſmire of a fingers length, with a triangular head, the body being ſeparated into two parts, and faſtned together by a ſmall ſtring. On the head are two ſmall and long horns, their eyes being very ſmall. On the foremoſt part of the body are ſix legs, three joints each, and four thin and tranſparent wings; to wit, two without, and two within; the hindermoſt part is of a bright colour and round, which is eaten by the *Negroes*. They dig into the ground like the moles, and conſume the ſeed. 1643.

There is another kind of great piſmires, reſembling a great fly; the whole body of which is about the length of half a finger, and ſeparated into three ſeveral parts. The laſt part reſembling in ſhape and bigneſs a barley corn; the middlemoſt of an oblong figure, with ſix legs, half a finger long, each of which has four joints: The foremoſt part, or the head, is pretty thick, in the ſhape of a heart, with two horns, and as many black crooked teeth: The white of the eyes is inclining to black, the whole compoſition of the head being the two eyes, placed oppoſite to one another, reſembling the figure of a heart. The fore and hindermoſt parts are of a bright red colour.

There is another kind of piſmire, of a bright black colour, with black and rough legs. It is about the length of a finger, with a large fourſquare head, ſtarting black eyes and teeth, and two horns, half a finger longer. The body is alſo ſeparated into three parts. The foremoſt of an oblong figure, not very thick, with ſix legs, each of the length of half a finger; the middlemoſt very ſmall and ſquare, not exceeding the bigneſs of a louſe; the hindermoſt is the biggeſt of the three, of an oval figure, and ſharp on the end. Theſe three parts are faſtned together with a ſingle ſtring, the *Braſilians* call it *Tapijai*.

There is beſides this another piſmire, call'd by the *Braſilians Kupia*, of a cheſnut brown colour; its head being as big as another piſmire, with black eyes, two horns, and two tuſks inſtead of teeth. The whole body is covered with hair; it is divided into two parts; The foremoſt with ſix legs, being ſomewhat leſs than the hindermoſt; at certain ſeaſons it gets four wings, the foremoſt being a little bigger than the hindermoſt, which it loſes again at a certain time.

The *Iron-pig* of *Braſil*, called by the *Braſilians Kuanda*; and by the *Portugueſe Ourico Kachiero*, is of the bigneſs of a large ape, its whole body being covered with

ſharp

1643. ſharp ſpikes of three or four fingers long, without any hair. Towards the body thoſe ſpikes are halfways yellowiſh, the remaining part is black, except the points, which are whitiſh, and as ſharp as an awl. When they are vexed, they are able, by a certain contraction of the ſkin, to throw or dart them with ſuch violence, that they wound, nay, ſometimes kill men or beaſts. Their whole body to meaſure from the hindermoſt part of the head to the beginning of the tail, is a foot long, and the tail a foot and five inches in length, which likewiſe has always ſharp ſpikes, the reſt being covered with briſtles like other hogs. The eyes are round, ſtarting and gliſtering like a Carbuncle; about the mouth and noſe are hair of four fingers length, reſembling thoſe of our cats or hares: The feet are like thoſe of apes, but with four fingers only without a thumb, inſtead of which you ſee a place vacant, as if it had been cut away. The four legs are leſs than the hindermoſt, they are likewiſe armed with ſpikes, but not the feet. 1643.



This creature commonly ſleeps in the day time, and roves about by night; it breaths through the noſtrils, is a great lover of fowl, and climbs up the trees, tho' very ſlowly. The fleſh is of no ungrateful taſte, but roaſted and eaten by the Inhabitants. It makes a noiſe *Jii*, like the *Luyaert*.

That four-legg'd creature, by the *Braſilians* called *Ai*, by the *Portugueſe Priguiza*, and by the *Dutch Luyaert* (lazy-back) from its lazy and ſlow pace, becauſe in fifteen days time it ſcarce walks above a ſtones throw. It is about the bigneſs of a middle-ſized fox, its length being a little above a foot, to meaſure from the neck (which is ſcarce three fingers long) to the tail. The fore-legs are ſeven fingers long to the feet, but the hindermoſt about ſix; the head round of three fingers in length: its mouth, which never is without a foam, is round and ſmall, its teeth neither large nor ſharp. The noſe is black, high, and glib, and the eyes ſmall, black and heavy. The body is covered all over with aſh-coloured hair, about two fingers long; which are more inclining to the white towards the back. Round about the neck the

1643. the hair is ſomewhat longer than the reſt. It is a very lazy creature, unable to undergo any fatigues, by reaſon its legs are as it were disjointed in the middle; yet it keeps upon the trees, but moves, or rather creeps along very ſlowly. Its food is the leaves of the trees, it never drinks, and when it rains, hides itſelf. Whereever it faſtens with its paws, it is not eaſily removed; it makes, tho' ſeldom, a noiſe like our cats.

The *Piſmire-Eater*, is thus called, becauſe he feeds upon nothing but piſmires; there are two ſorts, the great and the ſmall: The *Braſilians* call the firſt *Tamanduaï*, and the laſt *Tamanduai-Guacu*. It is a four-legg'd creature, of the bigneſs of a dog, with a round head, long ſnout, ſmall mouth, and no teeth. The tongue is roundiſh, but ſometimes twenty-five inches, nay two foot and a half long. When it feeds, it ſtretches out its tongue upon the dunghills, till the piſmires have ſettled upon it, and then ſwallows them. It has round ears, and a rough tail; is not nimble, but may be taken with the hand in the field. The ſmall one, called *Tamanduai-Guacu*, is of the bigneſs of a *Braſilian* fox, about a foot in length. On the fore-feet it has four crooked claws, two big ones in the midſt, and the two leſſer on the ſides. The head is round, yet pointed at one end, a little bent below; with a little black mouth without teeth. The eyes are very ſmall, the ears ſtand upright about a fingers length. Two broad black liſts run along on both ſides of the back; the hairs on the tail are longer than thoſe on the back, the extremity of the tail is without hair, wherewith it faſtens to the branches of the trees. The hairs all over the body are of a pale yellow, hard and bright. Its tongue is round, and about eight fingers long. It is a very ſavage creature, graſps every thing with its paws, and if you hit it with a ſtick, ſits upright like a bear, and takes hold of it with its mouth. It ſleeps all day long, with its head and fore-feet under the neck, and roves about in the night time. As often as it drinks, the water ſpouts forth immediately through the noſtrils. 1643.

They have alſo a kind of ſerpents of about two fathoms long, without legs, with a ſkin of various colours, and four teeth. The tongue is ſplit in the middle, reſembling two arrows, and the poiſon is hid in a bladder in its tail.

The four legg'd creature, called by the *Braſilians*, *Tatu* and *Tatupera*, by the *Spaniards*, *Armadillo*, by the *Portugueſe*, *Encuberto*, and by the *Dutch*, *Schilt-Verken*, (Shield-Hog) becauſe it is defended with ſcales like as with an armour, reſembles in bigneſs and ſhape our hogs; there are ſeveral ſorts of them. The uppermoſt part of the body, as well as the head and tail, is covered with bony ſhields, compoſed of very fine ſcales. It has on the back ſeven partitions, betwixt each of which appears a dark brown ſkin. The head is altogether like that of a hog, with a ſharp noſe, wherewith they grub under ground; ſmall eyes, which lie deep in the head; a little, but ſharp tongue; dark brown and ſhort ears, without hair or ſcales: The colour of the whole body inclining to red; the tail in its beginning is about four fingers thick, but grows by degrees ſharp and round to the end, like thoſe of our pigs: But the belly, the breaſt, and legs are without any ſcales; but covered with a ſkin not unlike that of a gooſe, and whitiſh hair of a fingers length. It is generally very bulky and fat, living upon maleons and roots, and does conſiderable miſchief in the plantations. It loves to rout under ground, eats rabbets, and the dead carcaſſes of birds, or any other carrion: It drinks much, lives for the moſt part upon the land, yet loves the water and marſhy places. Its fleſh is fit to be eaten. It is catch'd like the doe in *Holland* with the rabbits, by ſending a ſmall dog abroad, who by his barking, gives notice where it lurks under ground, and ſo by digging up the ground it is found and catch'd. Shield-Hogs.

The

1643. 1643.



Batts. The batts in *Braſil*, called by the inhabitants *Andirika*, are of the bigneſs of our crows; they are very fierce, and bite moſt violently with their ſharp teeth. They build their neſts in hollow trees and holes.

Wild-geeſe. The bird called by the *Braſilians*, *Ipekati Apoa*, by the *Portugueſe*, *Pata*, is no more than a gooſe; and for that reaſon by the *Dutch* called a wild gooſe. It is of the bigneſs of one of our geeſe of about nine months old, and in all other reſpects reſembles them. The belly and under part of the tail, as likewiſe the neck, is covered with white feathers; but on the back to the neck, on the wings and head, the feathers are black intermixed with ſome green. There are alſo ſome black feathers intermixed with the white ones on the neck and belly. They differ from our geeſe in this, that they are ſomewhat bigger; their bills reſemble rather thoſe of our ducks, but are black, and turned at the end, and on the top of it grows a broad, round, and black piece of fleſh, with white ſpeckles. They are commonly found near the river-ſide, are very fleſhy and well-taſted.

The bird Toukan. The bird by the *Braſilians* called *Toukan*, or large bill, is about the bigneſs of a wood pigeon. It has a crop about the breaſt of three or four fingers in compaſs, of a ſaffron colour, with high red coloured feathers round the edges, which are yellow on the breaſt, but black on the back and all the other parts of the body. Its bill is very large, of the length of a palm of a hand, yellow without and red within. It is almoſt incredible how ſo ſmall a bird is able to manage ſo large a bill, but that it is very thin and light.

The bird Kokoi. The bird called by the *Braſilians*, *Kokoi*, is a kind of a crane, very pleaſing to the ſight, as big as our ſtorks. Their bills are ſtreight and ſharp, about ſix fingers in length, of a yellowiſh colour inclining to green. The neck is fifteen fingers long, the body ten, the tail five: Their legs are half-ways covered with feathers, about eight fingers in length, the remaining part being ſix and an half. The neck and throat is white, both ſides of the head black, mixt with aſh-colour. On the fair and undermoſt part of the neck are moſt delicious, white, long, and thin feathers, fit for plumes: The wings and tail are of an aſh-colour, yet mixt with ſome white feathers. All along the back you ſee long and light feathers, like thoſe

1643. on the necks, but are of an aſh-colour: Their flesh is very good, and of a grateful taſte. There is another kind of theſe birds, which is ſomewhat bigger than a tame duck. Its bill is ſtreight, and ſharp at the end, of the length of four fingers and a half, with a double ſet of teeth both above and below: The head and neck (which is two foot long) reſembles the crane, with black eyes encloſed in a gold coloured circle. The body is two foot and a half in length; the tail, which ſtands even with the extremity of the wings, four fingers. The bill is of an aſh colour towards the head, the reſt yellow, inclining to green. The head and upper part of the neck are covered with long pale yellowiſh feathers, intermixt with black. On the back and wings it hath aſh coloured feathers inclining to yellow: but the legs and feet are dark grey: The fleſh of this bird is eatable, and taſtes like that of a crane.

Jabiru-guaku. The bird called by the *Braſilians*, *Jabiru Guaku*, and by the *Dutch*, *Schuur Vogel*, or barn-bird, has no tongue, but a very large bill, near ſeven foot and a half long; round and crooked towards the end, of a grey colour. On the top of the head is a crown of white and green feathers. The eyes are black, behind each of which are two great concavities inſtead of ears. The neck is ten fingers in length, one half part of which as well as the head, is not covered with feathers, but with an aſh-coloured, whitiſh, rugged ſkin. This bird is of the bigneſs of a Stork, with a ſhort black tail, which ſtands even with the extremities of the wings. The other part of the neck, and the whole body, is covered with white feathers, and thoſe on the neck very long ones: The wings are likewiſe white, but mixt with ſome red. The fleſh if boiled, after the ſkin is taken of, is good food, being very white, but ſomewhat dry.

Braſil produces incredible quantities of other wild fowl of all ſorts, both great and ſmall, ſome of which live among the woods, others in the water, but are very good food.

Of the beſt kind are the thruſhes, called by them *Bamodi*; Pheaſants of divers kinds, called by the *Barbarians*, *Magnagu*, *Jaku*, and *Arakua*.

Mouton is a bird of the bigneſs of a peacock, but has black feathers, the fleſh is very good and tender. Becauſe this countrey is full of fruit trees and woody places, it produces abundance of ſparrow-hawks, and other hawks, called by the *Portugueſe*, *Guavilon*, and by the *Braſilians*, *Teguata* and *Inage*, which are always at enmity with the chickens and pidgeons.

Among thoſe that live both in the water and upon the land, the wild ducks claim the precedency; ſome of thoſe are ſmaller than the *European* ducks, others much exceed them, being as big as a gooſe. They have alſo a ſort of ſnipes, called *Jakana-miri* and *Jakana-guaku*. Beſides theſe there are cranes, quails and oſtridges, and many others of that kind; the fleſh of which is eatable, but not very toothſome. 1643.

The reſt of theſe birds are very greedy after the amber-greeſe, which is thrown aſhore by the boiſterous ſea, which they devour before the inhabitants can come thither to gather it. They have alſo abundance of *Parrakets*, or ſmall parrots, theſe never ſpeak; but their parrots are extraordinary fine and large, ſome of which learn to ſpeak as diſtinctly as a Man. I have ſeen ſome of theſe parrots expreſs every thing what they heard cried in the ſtreets very plainly; and among the reſt I ſaw one, which if put in a baſket upon the floor, would make a dog that belonged to the ſame houſe, ſit up before the baſket, crying out to him, ſit up, ſit up, you naſty toad. Neither did this parrot leave off calling and crying, till the dog came to ſit up before the baſket. It was afterwards preſented to the queen of *Sweden*.

There is among the reſt a certain ſmall bird, no bigger than a joint of a finger, which notwithſtanding this, makes a great noiſe, and is catched with the hands whilſt it is ſitting among the flowers, from whence it draws its nouriſhment. As often as you turn this bird, the feathers repreſent a different colour, which makes the *Braſilian* women faſten then with golden wires to their ears, as we do our-rings. The birds here are never deſtitute of food, which they always meet with either among the flowers or fruits of the trees, which are never ſpoiled here during the winter ſeaſon.

The rivers and lakes of *Braſil*, as well as the neighbouring ſea, furniſhes them with great ſtore of all ſorts of fiſh, which are accounted ſo wholſome here, that they are even allowed for thoſe that are troubled with agues. The ſtanding waters near the ſea-ſide, which ſometimes are quite dried up, produce abundance of craw-fiſh, tortoiſes, ſhrimps, crabs, oyſters, and divers others of this kind, which are all very good food. *Their fiſh*

There are abundance of fiſh in *Braſil*, common to the ſea and rivers, eſpecially during the rainy ſeaſon; when a great quantity of the river water being conveyed into the ſea, the ſweetneſs of the water allures the fiſh into the rivers, where meeting with abundance of green weeds (the product of the bottom of the rivers) they never return to the ſea.

Among the river fiſh the chiefeſt are, the *Duja*, *Prajuba*, and *Akara-Puku*, the laſt of

1643. of which reſembles the beſt and largeſt of our perches.

Braſil produces alſo various kinds of inſects, ſome of which are of four fingers length, and an inch thick. They have likewiſe ſilk worms, called by the *Braſilians*, *Iſokuku*'s, and their ſilk, *Iſokurenimbo*. There are alſo divers ſorts of fire-flies, which are likewiſe found in the *Eaſt-Indies*, where we ſhall give you a further account of them. Beſides theſe, there are many ſorts of other flies, hornets, waſps, and bees: ſome of which produce honey, ſome none at all. 1643.



Spiders. Among other kinds of ſpiders there is one of a prodigious bigneſs, which is always found either in dunghills, or in the concavities of hollow trees: They call it *Nhanduguaka*. Theſe creatures weave cobwebs like other ſpiders; the ſkin is rough and black, provided with ſharp and long teeth. This creature if provoked wounds with its poiſonous ſting, which is ſo ſmall as ſcarce to be viſible, and raiſes a blueiſh tumour, which is very painful, and if care be not taken in time, occaſions an inflammation, attended with ſuch dangerous ſymptoms as prove afterwards incureable.

Ballar, *or* Kabitto. Near *Rio St. Franciſco* are vaſt numbers of a certain ſmall inſect not unlike our crickets; I have been very curious to get ſight of this creature, to ſatisfy myſelf as to its ſhape, and reſemblance to others of this kind; but though it makes a very ſhrill noiſe, which reſembles that of our crickets, I was never able to ſee any of them; for as ſoon as you approach they deſiſt, ſo that you are at a loſs which way to look. They ſing ſometimes for a quarter of an hour without intermiſſion. In the iſland of *Java* in the *Eaſt-Indies* it is commonly heard in the months of *February* and *June*. At laſt I had the good fortune to get one of theſe creatures into my hands; by means of a certain *Chineſe* woman, after I had often been in ſearch of it, both within and without the city of *Batavia*. The *Javaneſe* ſet two of theſe little creatures a fighting together, and lay money on both ſides, as we do at a cock-match.

There are alſo abundance of ravenous wild beaſts in *Braſil*, ſuch as tygers, leopards, *&c.* The tygers are extreamly ſavage here; they fall upon beaſts, and ſometimes

1643. times upon men, of whom ſeveral were killed by them in my time. A certain *Portugueſe* had a ſugar-mill very pleaſantly ſituated near a wood, whither we uſed to go to divert ourſelves ſometimes. The *Portugueſe* ſitting one time with four more of his friends in the houſe, with the windows drawn up for the conveniency of the land air, a dog belonging to the houſe, who had ventured too far into the adjacent wood, was purſued by a tyger, ſo that to ſave his life he leapt into the window to ſeek for ſhelter near his maſter; but the tyger cloſely purſuing him, leapt alſo through the window into the room, where the door being ſhut, he tore two of thoſe there preſent in pieces before the reſt could make their eſcape, and afterwards went his way.

There is another ſort of ſavage beaſt in thoſe parts, called by ſome of our people, *Jan-over-Zee*, or jack beyond ſea, which ſurpaſſes all others in nimbleneſs, and tears all to pieces it meets with.

Cattle. *Braſil* has alſo great plenty of cattle, but the fleſh will not keep above twenty-four hours after it is dreſs'd. The *Dutch* cut off the fat, and cut the lean in thin ſlices, and dry it in the ſun like fiſh. No butter is to be made here, becauſe the milk turns to curds immediately: the *Dutch* butter is drawn out of a veſſel like oil.

Hogs. Their hogs are ſmall and black, but very well taſted, and wholeſome; there is another kind of amphibious hogs, by the *Portugueſe* called *Kapiverres*, they are very near as black as the others, and good food.

There is another four legg'd creature in *Braſil*, called by the inhabitants *Taperete*, and by the *Portugueſe*, *Antes*; its fleſh has the taſte of beef, but ſomewhat finer. It is about the bigneſs of a calf, but ſhaped like a hog; it ſleeps all day among the woods, and ſeeks for belly-timber in the night: Its food is graſs, ſugar-reeds, cabbages, and ſuch like. They have likewiſe good ſtore of goats, called by them *Pakas*, and *Kotias*, and hares and rabbits, which don't give way in goodneſs to thoſe of *Europe*. There is alſo an excellent kind of lizards, called by the inhabitants, *Vuana* and *Teju*, which are accounted a dainty bit.

Antes.

Fiſh. The fiſh in *Braſil* are no leſs conſiderable for the ſupply of our plantations, than the cattle, which are on the coaſts of *Braſil*, but eſpecially in *Parnambuko*, where they are found in ſuch plenty, that at one draught they catch ſometimes two or three thouſand fine fiſh, in the four or five ſummer months, for during the rainy ſeaſon, they catch but few. There are certain diſtricts along the ſea coaſt whither the fiſh moſt reſort; ſome of thoſe belong to the inhabitants, the reſt to the company, and are farmed at a certain rate *per annum*. The lakes as well as the bays, are ſtored with an incredible multitude of fiſh; the firſt are by the *Portugueſe* called *Alagoas*; and the beſt they produce are the *Sindia*, *Queba*, and *Noja*, all without ſcales. And though the fiſh which are catcht in the lakes are not ſo much eſteemed as the river-fiſh, nevertheleſs are they not much behind them in goodneſs, becauſe theſe lakes are not always ſtanding waters, but intermixt with ſeveral rivers. Some of theſe fiſh they dry in the ſun. The chiefeſt of this kind are thoſe called by the *Braſilians*, *Kurima Parati*, and by the *Dutch* inhabitants *Herders*. They abound no leſs in ſea-fiſh of all ſorts. The fiſh called by the *Braſilians*, *Karapantangele*, which is not unlike our perch, has the preference among them. And as the rivers furniſh infinite numbers of fiſh, ſo they are generally fatter and better taſted than the ſea-fiſh. Thoſe which are catcht in theſe fiſheries near the ſea-ſhore, are for the moſt part ſalted, and carried from thence into the countrey, for the uſe of the ſugar-mills, which cauſe great plenty among them.

The craw-fiſh, which are in great quantities near the rivers and in the marſhy grounds, ſerve likewiſe for food to *Braſilians* and negroes, and ſome of our people like them tolerably well.

It is further to be obſerved, that whereas a conſiderable number of cattle, during the war was run aſtray out of the parks into the foreſts and woods beyond the river of *St. Francis*, it was thought convenient by the great council of the company here, to agree with certain perſons to catch this cattle, and bring it to the *Receif*, in order to be killed for the uſe of the inhabitants. The time of the ſaid contract being expired, it was conſulted whether the ſame ſhould be renewed; but it being apparent that there were not enough left to quit coſt, the ſame was laid aſide, and this reſolution ſent to the council of nineteen. For in the mean while the inhabitants near *Rio St. Franciſco* and *Rio Grande*, having applied themſelves to the breeding of cattle, their parks were ſo well ſtockt by this time, that they not only furniſhed the inhabitants of the *Receif*, but alſo the ſugar-mills, with plenty of meat, which was bought at the rate of three and four pence *per* pound in the countrey; beſides that, they provided the garriſons with the ſame for a twelvemonth, after the ſtore-houſes of the *Receif* were emptied; and notwithſtanding this, the inhabitants of thoſe parts were not out of debt, when thoſe of *Parnambuko* and *Parayba*, were involved over head and ears; which ſhews what advantage they reapt from the breeding of cattle; and that if the

1643. the *Dutch Braſil* had continued in peace, thoſe parks might have furniſhed all the garriſons with meat without impairing their ſtock for breeding; which, together with the great plenty of fiſh, are the two main pillars of the ſtate of *Braſil*.

Notwithſtanding all which, it is certain that the inhabitants of the *Dutch Braſil* cannot be provided with ſufficient maintenance, without a yearly ſupply from *Europe*, as well eatables as other commodities, as has been found by experience, to the great detriment of the company; after our ſtore-houſes were exhauſted by the ſeveral expeditions againſt *Angola*, *Meranhaon*, and other places.

Croco-diles. In the rivers and lakes here are alſo found crocodiles, by the *Braſilians* called *Jakare*, and in the *Eaſt-Indies*, *Kaymans*. They are like the *African* crocodiles, but not quite ſo big, ſeldom exceeding five foot in length. They lay twenty or thirty eggs bigger than geeſe eggs, which are eaten by the *Braſilians*, *Portugueſe* and *Dutch*, as well as the fleſh.

In the ſeas near the coaſt of *Braſil*, they meet alſo ſometimes with great lampreys. Before the bridge from the *Receif* to *Maurice-town* was built, one of this kind of a conſiderable bigneſs did lurk near that paſſage, where the boats uſed to paſs over from one ſide to the other, and ſnatcht all that fell in his way; both men and dogs that ſwam ſometimes after the boat, into the water: But at a certain time, by the ſudden falling of the tide, being got aground with the foremoſt part of the body, he was with much ado brought aſhore.

The diſtrict of *Pernambuko* does alſo abound in various ſorts of fruits, as well as all the other parts of *Braſil*, of which we ſhall ſay more hereafter.

Upon the captainſhip of *Pernambuko*, borders to the north the captainſhip of *Tamarika*, which owes its name to an iſland of the ſame name, being the chiefeſt part of this diſtrict, which however extends near thirty-five leagues along the ſea coaſt on the continent.

The iſland of *Tamarika* lies two leagues to the north of *Pomerello*, in the ſea; being parted from the continent by the river *Tamarika*, its moſt ſouthern point lying under the 7th degree 58m ſouthern latitude. It is from ſouth to north about two leagues long, and its circuit near ſeven. To the juriſdiction of this iſle did alſo belong *Goyana*, *Kapavaribi*, *Terukupa*, and *Abray* on the continent. Formerly it had but few inhabitants, and ſcarce any houſes, though it is a very pleaſant iſle, and tolerably fertile, producing braſil-wood, coco nuts, cotton, ſugar-reeds, melons, and ſuch like; beſides wood for firing, and freſh water for the conveniency of the *Receif*: It abounds likewiſe in wood both for building of houſes and ſhipping. This iſland was much infeſted with wild beaſts, which did great miſchief to the ſugar reeds: This moved *Peter Pas*, director of the captainſhip of *Itamarika*, to make his application to count *Maurice* and the great council in 1647, to know their pleaſure, whether they ſhould diſpoſe of thoſe beaſts by contract, to ſuch as would be at the charge of catching of them, or whether they ſhould be taken and killed for the uſe of the garriſons; but this was rejected by the council, who enjoined the inhabitants not to kill thoſe beaſts in the open fields, unleſs they ſhould break into their plantations, it being for the intereſt of the company to preſerve them in caſe of a neceſſity: The damage which from thence might accrue to the ſugar reeds, being to be prevented by ſurrounding their plantations with pales and ſtakes. 1643.

The conſequence of this iſle. The iſland is look'd upon as of the greateſt conſequence to us, it having been propoſed by ſome to transfer the ſeat of the *Dutch-Braſil* from the *Receif* thither; but the directors of the company did not agree to it; conſidering that at that time this iſland was quite deſolate; whereas upon the *Receif* were ſtore-houſes, magazines, ware-houſes, and ſuch like buildings ready to their hands; beſides that the place was much more pleaſant, fertile, and ſtronger; and the harbour much more convenient for ſhips: The river *Tamarika* on the other hand being not navigable, but for ſmall veſſels, by reaſon of the ſhallowneſs of the harbour, which was noted for ſhipwracks. The defect of freſh water in the *Receif*, in which this iſle abounds, may be ſupplied from the river *Biberibi*; beſides that, they had ſeveral baſons with freſh water within the *Receif*, for their preſent uſe. During the war with the *Portugueſe* we were ſenſible of the conveniencies we received from this iſland, by reaſon of its ſtrength both by art and nature, which might ſerve as a ſafe retreat upon all emergencies; beſides, that its preſervation was abſolutely neceſſary for the *Receif*, which was ſupplied from thence with fiſh, and ſeveral other other ſorts of proviſions.

Upon the banks of the river at the ſouth entrance of the harbour, we had built a quadrangular fort, called *Orange*. It was provided with a goodly wall, but the ditch was not very deep, and for the moſt part without water, for which reaſon it was ſtrenghten'd with palliſadoes. On the north-ſide we had a hornwork, but much decayed; within the body of the fort was a powder-vault, and other conveniencies for the

1643. bedding of ſoldiers. Several batteries were raiſed upon the walls, mounted upon ſix braſs and as many iron great guns. In the iſland near the entrance of the river, cloſe by a moraſs full of thorn-buſhes, was a ſmall town, moſt inhabited by ſoldiers, called by the *Portugueſe*, *Noſtra Senhora de la Conceptiano*. Upon a hanging rock, juſt by, was an old redoubt erected by the *Portugueſe*, called by the ſame Names, which together with the whole iſland, was taken by the *Dutch*, under the command of colonel *Schop* from the *Portugueſe*, and the place, after his name, called *Schop*'s *Town*. This fort was afterwards by the *Dutch* cloſed up on the backſide towards the church, ſo that it afterwards ſerved both for the defence of the town and the harbour, as the *Blockhouſe* on the north-ſide cover'd the gates. There were then eleven pieces of cannon mounted upon it. At the north entrance of the harbour, was another redoubt, which defended that paſſage on that ſide, with three iron cannon. One Mr. *Dortmont*, governor of *Itamarika*, found under the before-mention'd rock, in 1645, as he was digging a well, a ſpring of freſh water, which proved very uſeful for the garriſon, becauſe it could not be cut off by the enemy.

Hanging-rock.

Somewhat higher up the river *Tamarika*, lies an iſland called *Magioppe*, where are found abundance of *Tandihoka* roots. You may go quite round this iſland in barks; it having a kind of a harbour on both ends, *viz.* to the ſouth and north, but the firſt is the beſt; becauſe there ariſes from the northern ſhore of the continent, a ſhelf, which reaches very cloſe to the iſland, the channel betwixt both not having above ten or twelve foot water. The only harbour fit for uſe thereabouts is the ſouth-entrance of the river, which makes *Tamarika* an iſland, where ſhips that drew fourteen or fifteen foot water, may paſs through; there is no convenient anchorage: That end, where the river returns into the ſea, is by the *Dutch* called the northern-entrance, and by the *Portugueſe Katuamma*.

The rivers Marafarinha *and* Garaſſou.

Betwixt *Pomerello* and the river *Tamarika*, a river comes from the continent, fit for barges, called *Marafarinha*; and half a league within the mouth of the river *Tamarika*, another falls likewiſe from the continent called *Garaſſou*, but is of little moment. From thence to the north, are ſeveral other rivers near the ſea-ſhore, which are navigable with barges, for the conveniency of the ſugar-mills, of which there are ſeveral thereabouts.

Punto Pedra.

A league and an half further to the north of the north-entrance of *Tamarika*, is a noted point of land called by the *Portugueſe*, *Punto Pedra*, ſurrounded with a *Receif*, betwixt which you may paſs with barges and yachts. 1643.

The river Goyana.

A league further to the north from this point, and three leagues to the north-weſt of *Tamarika*, is the ſmall river *Goyana*, under 7 deg. 46 min. which diſembogues in two branches in the bay; at the entrance lies a great rock, where is great ſtore of ſea-fowl. Before it lies a great *Receif*, but within are ſo many ſhelves that renders the paſſage very dangerous.

The river Auyay.

About two leagues and a half beyond the river *Goyana*, to the north, is a great river, called *Auyay*, but the entrance is ſo choak'd up with ſands, that there is ſcarce any paſſage for barges. This river ſends forth ſeveral branches into the country, upon one of which to the north, lies the village of *Maurice*, and upon the ſouthern branch the village *Auyay*.

Porto Franciſco.

Among others, *Porto Franciſco* lies in a creek three long leagues to the north of the river *Auyay*; and five leagues to the north-weſt of the ſame river, an unnavigable river called *Grammana*, beſides ſeveral other rivulets.

Parayba.

About a league and a half to the north-weſt of the river *Grammana*, is the *Cabo Blanco*, or *White Cape*; and three leagues from thence to the north-weſt, the cape of *Parayba*, being a long point of land, with a large adjacent bay. The whole coaſt from *Pomerello* to the cape of *Parayba*, is cover'd with receifs or rocks, which lying for the moſt part about half a league from the ſhore, and the water between them being generally very ſmooth, affords an eaſy paſſage to barges, even in tempeſtuous weather when it is almoſt impoſſible for ſhips to paſs without the rocks, by reaſon of the violence of the current from the northern and the ſouthern winds, which blow there continually.

The Town of Goyana.

Three leagues within the mouth of the river *Goyana* is a town of the ſame name, where is kept the court of judicature of this *captainſhip*. There are five or ſix ſugar-mills thereabouts, ſituated upon the banks of the river, for the more commodious tranſportation of ſugar in barges to *Pernambuko*. This countrey produces likewiſe braſil-wood, ginger, cotton, and *Indian* nuts; the people called *Petiguaves* inhabit here; tho' this whole tract of land, as far as *Cabo Blanco*, is not very populous, having only a few villages, inhabited by the *Braſilians*.

The iſle of *Tamarika* has ſeveral landing places on the river-ſide, the chiefeſt are: *Os Markos* and *Pedreiros*, where the river is narroweſt; *Tapaſima* and *Kamboa* of *Domingos Rebeyro*; the great *Makqueira* and

1643. and *Kamboa* of *Conrad Pauli*; in which places the enemy landed in that iſland. The paſs near the north-entrance of *Topowa*, and the iſland *Tapoſoka*, where with one ſingle ſhip you may defend the paſſage from the rivers *Tujukapape* and *Maſſerandaku*, as likewiſe from the ſea. For the reſt, the ſhore all along the river being very marſhy and full of *Manga* trees, is of a very difficult acceſs. The ſhore towards the ſea-ſide is very flat, but woody, which together with the ſands, that are at ſome diſtance in the ſea, makes the approach of ſhips very dangerous on that ſide. Formerly the court of judicature of the *captainſhip* was kept in this iſland, but was afterwards transferred from thence, as we told you before, to the Town of *Goyana* and *Kapivaribi* on the continent, becauſe theſe places were both more populous, and more ſugar-mills were built thereabouts, the ground being much better here than in the Iſland. In my time there were five judges belonging to this court, three of which lived at *Goyana*, and the other two in the iſle of *Itamarika*. However, this court was afterwards likewiſe removed from *Goyana*. In the year 1641, Mr. *Peter Pas* was director of the *captainſhip* of *Itamarika* for the *Weſt-India* company, and captain *Sluiter* commander in chief over the ſoldiers.

Parayba. This *captainſhip* has derived its name from the capital city, which has borrow'd hers of the river *Parayba*, upon which it is ſituate. It is one of the moſt northerly *captainſhips*, about five leagues diſtant from the ſea. It was formerly in the poſſeſſion of the *French*, who were 1585, chaſed from thence and ſeveral other harbours, by the *Portugueſe* general *Martin Leytan*.

The city Parayba. Five leagues upwards the river *Parayba*, is a city founded by the *Portugueſe*, and after *Philip* king of *Spain*, called *Filippen* and *Noſſa Senhora de nives*, otherwiſe *Parayba*, from the river *Parayba*; which name was by the *Dutch*, after they had in *November* 1633, conquered the whole *captainſhip*, changed into that of *Frederick*'s *Town*, after *Frederick Henry* prince of *Orange*. This city had been but lately built by the *Portugueſe*, and had ſeveral ſtately houſes with marble pillars, the reſt being only of ſtone. Here is kept the court of judicature of this *captainſhip*. Before the time of the rebellion of the *Portugueſe*, this place was inhabited as well by the *Portugueſe* as *Dutch*, being much frequented by the inhabitants of the circumjacent countrey, was uſed to exchange their ſugar for what other commodities they ſtood in need of, which was afterwards from thence tranſported to other places.

Within the mouth of the river *Parayba*, were three very conſiderable forts. One on the ſouth-point, by the *Portugueſe* called *Catharine*, but by count *Maurice*, afterwards named *Margaret*, after his Siſter. It was defended with five goodly baſtions, and a hornwork without. *Fort* Margaret. 1643.

Fort St. Anthony. The fort called *St. Antonio*, by the *Portugueſe*, was built upon a ſmall iſland, which by a narrow breach was ſeparated from the north-point. This is only the remainder of a large four ſquare fort, formerly erected by the *Portugueſe*, which was afterwards raſed by the *Dutch*, part of it having been waſh'd away by the river. It is ſurrounded with palliſadoes and a good ditch, ſupplied with water from the beforenamed branch of the river: The Walls are very ſtrong, and upon a battery are mounted ſix iron pieces of cannon. It may be defended by the cannon both from the city of *Parayba*, and from the fort *Margaret*, lying juſt oppoſite to it on the ſouth-ſide, which is the reaſon it was always but careleſly guarded by the *Portugueſe*.

The third fort. The third fort lies upon a triangular iſland, called *Reſtinga*, not far from thence, more upwards the river. It was ſtrengthened with palliſadoes, and upon the batteries were mounted five braſs, and as many iron pieces of cannon.

The river Parayba. The *captainſhip* of *Parayba* is watered and divided by two conſiderable rivers, *viz.* the *Parayba* and *Moſgoapa*, otherwiſe call'd *St. Domingo*. The great river of *Parayba* lies under the 6th deg. 24 min. four leagues to the north of *Cabo Blanco*, and diſcharges it ſelf in two branches into the Sea, being ſeparated by a large ſand-bank: One is called the northern, and the other the ſouthern entrance. From the laſt extends a rocky-ridge as far *Cabo Blanco*, and within the river lies a ſand-bank quite croſs to the fort *Margaret*. This river is very ſhallow during the ſummer time, but in the winter ſeaſon, the waters riſe to that height that they overflow all the adjacent countrey, ſometimes to the great loſs of men and cattle.

Porto Lucena. Two leagues beyond this river to the north, is a bay which affords a very ſafe ſtation to the largeſt ſhips. It is by the *Portugueſe* called *Porto Lucena*, and by the *Dutch* the *Red-Land*, the grounds being red hereabouts. There is very good anchorage here at five and ſix fathom water, and the country near it affords very good freſh water; which is the reaſon why the *Dutch* ſhips bound for *Holland* from the *Receif*, uſed to ſtay for one anothers coming in this bay, and to provide themſelves with freſh water.

1643. Half a league further to the north, under 6 deg. 34 min. the river *Mongoapa*, or *Mongoanavapy*, exonerates it ſelf into the ſea: This river is much larger towards its ſource than at the mouth; the banks on both ſides being full of briers, buſhes and *Manga* trees. Before its entrance lies a *Receif*, and at the very mouth two dangerous ſand-banks; it has three fathom water at low tide,

River Mongoapa.

About two ſmall leagues to the north of the river *Mongoapa*, is a bay called by the *Portugueſe Bahia de Treycano*, or *Treaſon*, where, at about a league diſtant from the ſhore, is eleven or twelve fathom water. Five leagues to the north of this bay, you meet with the river *Barra Conguon* or *Konayo*, which is ſcarce paſſable for Yatches. About a league and a half from thence is large bay of about two leagues in length, called *Pernambuko*; and five leagues beyond it to the north, the river *Jan de Sta*, or *Eſtau*.

The natives of *Parayba* inhabit about ſeven villages, the chiefeſt of which is call'd *Pinda Una*, which in 1634, contained about fifteen hundred inhabitants, where each of the others had ſcarce three hundred; each of theſe comprehending not above five or ſix very long buildings, with a great many doors, but very ſmall ones.

The chief commodities of this *captainſhip* are ſugar, braſil-wood, tobacco, hides, cotton, and ſuch like The ſugar-reeds did bear extremely wel , becauſe they were tranſplanted into freſh grounds. Whilſt the diſtrict of *Parayba* was under our juriſdiction, there were above one and twenty ſugar-mills on both ſides of the banks of the river, eighteen of which ſent away every year four thouſand cheſts of ſugar. Near the river-ſide, the country is low and plain, but not far from thence riſes by degrees, and affords a very agreeable variety of hills and vallies. The flat countrey, which is alſo the moſt fertile, is diſtinguiſh'd into ſeveral diviſions, ſome of which have borrow'd their names from ſmall rivers which run thro' them; as for inſtance, *Gramamma*, *Tapoa*, *Tibery*, *Ingeby*, *Monguappe*, *Increry*, *Kamaratuba*, and ſeveral more. All thoſe countries are extremely fertile, occaſion'd by the overflowing of the river *Parayba*. Their products are, ſugar, barley, turky-wheat, potatoes, ananas, coco-nuts, melons, oranges, citrons, bananas, pakovas, markomas, cucumbers, and all other neceſſaries for the ſuſtenance of men and beaſts. They have here a kind of wild pears, called kajous, which are very juicy and well-taſted; within is a certain bean or ſmall nut, the rind of which is bitter, but the kernel ſweet, if roaſted in the aſhe The pear is very cooling, but the nut has a contrary quality.

Its fertility.

1643.

Towards the end of *November* 1634, the *Dutch* undertook the expedition againſt *Parayba*, their forces being embarked in thirty two ſhips under the command of colonel *Schoppe*, *Artisjoski*, *Hinderſon*, *Stachouwer* and *Carpentier*. The whole fleet was divided into two ſquadrons; the firſt conſiſted of one and twenty ſhips, in which were nineteen hundred and forty five men, the other of eleven yachts, with four hundred and nine men. *Schoppe* was the firſt that landed ſix hundred men, and advanced towards the enemy, who betook themſelves to their heels, leaving their arms and cloaths behind them; *Anthony Albuquerque* their general, himſelf ſcarce eſcaping their hands. In the mean while, the reſt being likewiſe got a ſhore, three companies, under the conduct of *Gaſper Ley*, marched directly to the fort of *Margaret*, and intrencht himſelf near the fort, whilſt *Schoppe* kept all along the ſhore, and *Artisjoski*, poſted himſelf on the right-ſide, in ſight of the garriſon: At the ſame time Mr. *Lichthart* attack'd the fort in the ſmall iſland *Reſtinga*, which he took by force, and put the garriſon to the ſword. By this time *Schoppe* had raiſed a battery againſt the fort, from whence he ſo ſorely gall'd the beſieged, that their commander *Simon d'Albukirque* ſurrendred the place. Hereupon the fort of *St. Antonio* was ſummoned to ſurrender, *Maglianes* the governor deſired three days delay, which being denied, he march'd away ſecretly by night, leaving the place to *Lichthart*, who found there five great braſs pieces, and nineteen iron pieces of cannon.

The Dutch conquer Parayba.

The ſame night our forces marched towards the city of *Parayba*, being ſixteen hundred ſtrong, and having paſs'd a ſmall branch of the river called *Tambra Grande*, made themſelves maſters of it without any oppoſition: The *Spaniſh* general *Banjola*, who commanded there with two hundred and fifty men only, having left the place before, and being retired to *Goyana*, after he had either ſunk or nail'd up the cannon, ſet fire to three ſhips and two warehouſes, in which were conſumed three thouſand cheſt with ſugar. The fort of *St. Catharine* being much decay'd, was order'd by count *Maurice* to be repaired, and the ditch to be enlarged and deepen'd; giving it the name of *Margaret*, after his Siſter. The fort of *St. Antonio* was raſed, for the greateſt part, there being only one bulwark left for the defence of the north-point of the river. The fort *Reſtingas* was order'd to be ſurrounded with new palliſa-

does

1643. does, and the convent of *Parayba* fortified with a wall and outwork; and the command thereof given to *Elias Harkman*, together with the government of the whole *captainſhip*.

Potigi, *or* Rio Grande. The *captainſhip* of *Potigi*, or *Potingi* or *Poteingi*, is otherwiſe, by the *Portugueſe*, called *Rio Grande*, from a river of the ſame Name: The *Dutch* call it *North-Braſil*, in reſpect of the more ſouthern *captainſhips* of *Braſil*. It borders to the ſouth upon *Parayba*, and to the north upon the *captainſhip* of *Siara*; tho' the *Portugueſe* geographers extended its bounds as far as the iſland *Maranhaon*.

The *French* were once maſters of this *captainſhip*, 'till 1597, they were chaſed from thence by the *Spaniſh* commander, *Feliciano Creça de Karvalaſho*. It has four diviſions, named after ſo many rivers, that run through them; *viz. Kunhao*, *Goyana*, *Mumpobu* and *Potegy*. And tho' this diſtrict has been much neglected by the *Portugueſe*, yet does it produce plenty of wild-fowl and fiſh, which are ſo luſcious, that they commonly eat them only with lemon-juice or vinegar, without oil. There is an incredible number of fiſh in the lake *Goraires*; beſides which, abundance of *Farinha* is planted here. This part of the countrey ſtood us in good ſtead during the late rebellion of the *Portugueſe*, our garriſons in *Parayba*, and other places, being ſupplied from thence with good ſtore of fleſh and fiſh.

River Rio Grande. Above the river *Rio Grande*, is a town of no great moment, call'd *Amſterdam*; the inhabitants live by planting *Farinha* and *Tobacco*, and fiſhing. Higher up in the countrey live ſome *Moradores* or husbandmen, who cultivate the grounds; but on the north-ſide of *Rio Grande* are but few inhabitants.

The river *Rio Grande*, *i. e.* the *Great-river*, is ſo called by the *Portugueſe* from its bigneſs, but by the *Braſilians*, *Potigi* or *Poteingi*. The mouth of this river lies under 50 deg. 42 min. ſouthern latitude, three leagues from *Punto Negro*, coming from the weſt-ſide of the continent. It diſembogues four leagues above the fort *Keulen*, called by the *Portugueſe*, *Tres Reyos*: It bears ſhips of great burthen; but the river *Kunhao* in the ſame *captainſhip* is only navigable with barges and yachts. The bays of this *captainſhip* are, *Bahia Formoſa*, *Punto Negro*, *Ponto de Pipas*, and the *Bay of Martin Tüiſſen*. The *Bay of Ginapabo* lies beyond *Rio Grande* to the north; and beyond that a river call'd *Guaſiavi*, upon which, near the mouth lies the village *Atape Wappa*. Near to the north you meet with the river *Siria Mixui*; and near the village of *Natal*, and the fort of *Tres Reyos*, paſſes a river called the *Croſs-River*, which ariſes out of a ſmall lake in *Rio Grande*. Over againſt the ſame fort, a freſh river falls into the great river, betwixt two land-banks, and not far from thence another ſalt-water river. 1643.

The fort Keulen. The fort *Keulen* was four-ſquare, built upon a rock or point of a *Receif*, at ſome diſtance from the ſhore, at the mouth of the river *Receif*; being ſurrounded with water, as oft as it's flowing water, ſo that at high tide there is no coming at it but with boats. In the midſt of this fort is a ſmall chappel, where in 1645, and 1646, our people found a wall about a foot and a half wide on the top, but at the bottom three feet, cut within a rock, which brings freſh ſupplies of good and ſweet water every tide; with an ordinary tide two hundred and twenty five, and at ſpring-tide about three hundred and fifty quarts; which is more than ſufficient for the uſe of the garriſon, in caſe of ſiege. The fort is built of a ſquare ſtone; being towards the ſhore defended with two half baſtions, in form of hornworks. In the year 1646, there was an artillery of twenty nine, as well braſs as iron pieces of cannon in the place, and provided with a good under-vault, and convenient lodgments for the ſoldiers.

Its conqueſt by the Dutch. This fort was in 1633, taken by the *Dutch*, under the command of *Matthias van Keulen*, one of the governors of the company, who being aſſiſted by ſeveral noted captains, *viz. Byma*, *Kloppenburg*, *Lichthart*, *Garſtman* and *Mansfelt van Keulen*, ſet ſail thither with eight hundred and eight men, embarked in four ſhips and ſeven yachts, and made himſelf maſter of it, and the whole captainſhip at the ſame time; ſince which it changed its name *Tres Reyos*, into that of *Keulen*, from the commander in chief of this expedition.

The *Tapoyers* (or mountaineers) uſe commonly twice a year, eſpecially when the dry ſeaſon puts them in want of freſh water, to make an inroad into this *captainſhip*; there being a conſtant enmity betwixt them and the *Portugueſe*. It happen'd in *July* 1645, that theſe *Tapoyers* being advertiſed that the *Portugueſe* intended to revolt from us, and had actually begun the ſame in *Pernambuko*, did, under the conduct of one of their leaders, called *Jacob Rabbi*, after ſeveral provocations given them by the *Portugueſe*, make an incurſion into *Kunhao*, where they killed thirty ſix Perſons in a ſugar-mill belonging to one *Gonſalvo d'Olivera*. From thence they marched to a certain place, where the *Portugueſe* had caſt up a line for their defence, which they made themſelves maſters of, and put

1643. the *Portugueſe* to the ſword. The *Braſilians* told us, that this had been done in requital of what had been done to ſome of thoſe mountaineers by one *Andrew Vidal* in *Serinhaim*, after quarter given them before, of which we ſhall ſay more hereafter. Since which time, the *Portugueſe* have laid this tract deſolate, which the *Dutch* once had a mind to re-people, and to put it in the ſame condition as the *Portugueſe* had poſſeſs'd it, but for want of people that deſign was fain to be laid aſide.

Siara. The *captainſhip* of *Siara* is one of the moſt northerly diſtricts of *Braſil*, bordering upon *Maranhaon* to the north upon the river *Siara*. It is of no great extent, its whole compaſs being not above ten or twelve leagues.

The river Siara. The river *Siara*, which riſes deep in the continent, diſembogues about ſeven leagues and a half to the north of the bay *Mangorypa*, under 3 deg. 40 min. ſouthern latitude.

The native inhabitants of this *captainſhip*, according to the report of thoſe that have frequently viſited it, are very large of ſtature, with ugly features, long hair and black ſkin; except the ſpace betwixt the eyes and mouth. They have holes in their ears, which hang downwards upon the ſhoulders; ſome make holes in their lips, ſome in their noſes, in which they wear ſtones as an ornamen . Their food is *Farinha*, wild-fowls, fiſh and fruit. They drink moſt water, but make likewiſe a certain liquor out of *Farinha*; and of late began to be uſed to drink good ſtore of brandy, tho' it was expreſly forbidden to bring it into the villages, to keep them from the exceſſive uſe of ſtrong liquors. The countrey produces ſugar-reeds, chryſtal, cotton, pearls, ſalt, and ſeveral other commodities. Ambergreaſe is alſo found on the ſea-ſhore.

The inland part of the countrey was in 1630, governed by one of their own kings, call'd *Algodoi*; in ſome reſpect tributary to the *Portugueſe*, who had built a fort upon the river *Siara*, and made themſelves maſters of the whole ſea-coaſt thereabouts; notwithſtanding which they were in continual broils with one another, 'till 1638, this fort and the whole countrey was taken by the *Dutch* from the *Portugueſe*, in the following manner.

Siara conquered by the Dutch. Count *Maurice* and the council, being ſollicited by the natives of that country, to make themſelves maſters of the *Portugueſe* fort on that ſide, and to deliver them from the oppreſſion they lay under at that time, they offering their aſſiſtance, and and giving two young lads of their beſt families, as pledges of their Fidelity, this expedition was reſolved upon. The chief command over the Troops deſign'd for this exploit, was conferr'd upon colonel *John Garſtman*, a man of more than ordinary conduct in martial affairs, tho' as the caſe then ſtood, this enterpriſe was not likely to meet with any conſiderable difficulties; being aſſured of the aſſiſtance of the *Braſilians*, who bore an old hatred to the *Portugueſe*, and were acquainted with the ſtrength and condition both of their forces and places. *Garſtman* being provided with ſhips, men, ammunition, and all other neceſſaries requiſite for ſuch an expedition, ſet ſail towards the river *Siara*; where being met by the *Algodoi*, or king, with white enſigns in token of peace; and having landed his men, two hundred of the natives joined with them. With thoſe he marched directly to the fort, which after a brave reſiſtance from the *Portugueſe*, who killed ſome of his men, he took by ſtorm; and made moſt of the garriſon priſoners, among whom were ſome commanders of note: They found good ſtore of cannon and artillery in the place. 1643.

The fort Siara. Since that time, the *Dutch* built a ſmall fort upon the *Siara*, unto which they gave likewiſe the name of *Siara*, which was provided with a garriſon of betwixt thirty and forty ſoldiers only; not ſo much for the defence of the countrey, as to maintain a good correſpondency with the *Braſilians*, who being very numerous in thoſe parts, might do us conſiderable ſervice in time of war. It was upon this conſideration, that the great council always commanded their officers, ſent thither, to cultivate a good underſtanding with them; and at ſeveral times ſent them ſome ſmall preſents, which, however proved ineffectual in the end, for in 1644, they attack'd and kill'd ſeveral of our men at *Komeſay*, (a place about thirty leagues from *Siara*) as we ſhall hear anon.

For the *Braſilians* being, in 1641, increaſed to ſuch a number in *Siara*, that the villages thereabouts were not able to contain them without great inconveniency, whereas the diſtrict of *Rio Grande* was almoſt deſtitute of inhabitants, and conſequently not in a condition to oppoſe an enemy; one *Andrew Uliifs* propoſed to the great council, to build a village in *Rio Grande*, for the uſe of ſuch as intended to ſettle there out of *Siara*, deſiring to be conſtituted chief of the ſaid village. Count *Maurice* and the great council, being informed of the inclinations of thoſe *Siara*, who were willing to ſettle in *Rio Grande*, their ancient place of abode, and conſidering the benefit that was likely to accrue to the company, from the ſettlement of thoſe *Braſilians*, ſo near at hand, granted *Uliif*'s requeſt, wiſhing him to bring thither

1643. thither as many of the *Braſilians* of *Siara* as he thought convenient, for the compaſs of a village of which he was made chief or captain. Things being thus ſettled, they choſe, with the approbation of our directors, certain chiefs or heads out of the moſt ancient families of each diviſion, called *Reſidoor* by the *Portugueze*, and certain judges; as for inſtance in *Goyana*, *Domingoi*, *Fernandes*, and *Karapeva*; in *Parayba*, *Peter Potty*; and in *Rio Grande*, *Antonio Perapeva*. Notwithſtanding all this, the *Braſilians* of *Siara* revolted againſt the *Dutch* in 1644. ſurprized the garriſon in the fort, which they razed, and killed the commander in chief, *Gideon Morritz*, with the whole garriſon, beſides all the workmen belonging to the ſalt-pits near the river *Upanemma*, who were all cut in pieces by theſe *Barbarians*.

A certain maſter of a ſhip, with a captain, lieutenant, and ſome ſoldiers, who happened to come aſhore in a boat to fetch ſome freſh proviſions, being ignorant of their treachery, were alſo put to the ſlaughter, three ſeamen having the good fortune to eſcape with their lives into the wood.

Some laid the cauſe of this rebellion at the door of the *Portugueſe* and *Braſilians* of *Maranhaon*, bordering upon them; but if we ſearch into the true ſource of this evil, it muſt be attributed to the miſcarriage of our own officers, who by their hard uſage, had forced the inhabitants to revenge themſelves for the injuries received at their hands.

Thus much concerning the *Captainſhips* of the *Dutch Braſil*; we will in the next place give you an account of all the memorable tranſactions that happened betwixt the *Dutch* and *Portugueſe* in *Braſil* during our ſtay there; after I have repreſented to you the excellency and convenient ſituation of this country, together with the eccleſiaſtical eſtate of the *Dutch Braſil*.

The excellency of Braſil.

Braſil is a country excellently well qualified by nature for the producing of all things, which are generally found in the *Weſt-Indies*, under or near the ſame climate; except, that hitherto no gold or ſilver mines have been diſcovered here worth taking notice of. But next to gold and ſilver, the ſugar claims the precedency here before all other commodities. Among all the harbours and places of the *Weſt-Indies*, there is not one that can compare with *Braſil*, either for the product, or conveniency of tranſportation of ſugar; the whole coaſt of *Braſil* being full of ſmall rivers, which flowing through the adjacent valleys, diſembogues in the ſea; from whence the ſugar-mills built in the valleys reap the benefit of ſaving vaſt charges, which elſe muſt be beſtowed upon labourers and carriages; whereas theſe rivers drive the mills, ſerve for the tranſportation of ſugar to other places, and furniſh them at an eaſy rate with what commodities they ſtand in need of; all which conveniencies, as they are not to be met with in any other place of the *Weſt-Indies*; ſo, no ſugar-mills could be erected there with any proſpect of profit. The exportation of ſugar from *Braſil* into *Europe* and *Africa*, is likewiſe performed with much more eaſe than from any other places in the *Weſt-Indies*; for the ſituation of *Braſil*, (being the moſt eaſtern part of all *America*) is ſuch, as could not be more conveniently contrived by human art or nature for the tranſportation of ſo general and agreeable a commodity as ſugar, into all the other parts of the world; conſidering thoſe two excellencies of *Braſil*, together with its vaſt extent, it is moſt certain, that, provided it were well peopled, it might command both the *North* and *Æthiopian* ſeas, and ſpread its commerce over all parts of the world; nay, it might extend its conqueſts both to the eaſt and weſt, or at leaſt eſtabliſh factories there for the conveniency of traffick. To prove which, it is to be obſerved: 1643.

That all *Eaſt-India* ſhips, both going and coming, muſt paſs by the coaſt of *Braſil*; and as thoſe ſhips in their voyages thither, are often forced to touch upon this coaſt, ſo in their return, nothing could be more commodious for them, than to be ſupplied with freſh proviſions here. From *Braſil* you may ſail in fourteen days to the *Caribbee* iſlands, and in the ſame time, or a little longer, to *Sierra Leona* on the coaſt of *Guinea*. It is impoſſible to enter deep into the great ſouth ſea, (whereabouts a great part of the terreſtrial globe remains as yet undiſcovered) unleſs you take in freſh proviſions and firing in *Braſil*, or expoſe yourſelf to the greateſt hazards imaginable in ſo long a voyage, as is ſufficiently evident from the journals of *Oliver Van North*, *Spilbergen*, *le Maire*, and *John l'Heremite*. And experience has taught us, ſince Mr. *Brewer's* voyage to *Chili*, how eaſy the paſſage is betwixt *Braſil* and the ſouth ſea; for he loſt not ſo much as one ſhip out of four, and very few died in the whole voyage.

The wholeſomeneſs of its climate.

Braſil enjoys likewiſe the advantage of a very wholſome climate; for tho' it lies betwixt the equinoctial line and the *Tropick of Capricorn*, and conſequently is ſubject to burning heats, yet are the ſame much allayed by the winds, that blow out of the eaſt from the ſea, their free paſſage being

1643. being not interrupted by any mountains or iſlands; which is the reaſon, that in *Braſil* the ſame diſtempers are rarely to be met with which reign ſo frequently in *Angola*, *Guinea*, *St. Thomas*, and ſeveral other places, where the eaſt winds cannot afford them the ſame advantage. A plague is a thing unknown in *Braſil*, in which it excels all other countries; tho' they are not free from continual putrid fevers, cauſed by the hot and moiſt air, and the exceſſive uſe of raw fruits.

Thoſe that are bound for the coaſt of *Braſil* ought to have a ſpecial regard to the ſeaſon of the year, which regulates the winds and ſtream thereabouts; and to be very careful to ſail above the harbour whither they are bound; for if they miſs and come below it, they loſe their aim, and muſt ſtay till the next turn of the wind and ſtream. For it is obſervable, that on the coaſt of *Braſil*, the ſtream runs from *February* till paſt *July* conſtantly northernly, during which time there is no paſſing from the north to the ſouth; but after thoſe months are paſt the ſtream turns, and from the beginning of *September* to the latter end of *November*, runs as violently to the ſouth as it did to the north before, and conſequently there is no ſailing from the north to the ſouth, no more than before from the ſouth to the north. The winds here turn with the ſtream; and at the beginning of *March* blow ſouth-ſouth-eaſt, and ſouth-eaſt. And like as the ſtream changes its current till *September*, ſo the winds continue in the eaſt, and blow till that time out of the eaſt-ſouth-eaſt. For there are but two winds that reign along this coaſt, *viz.* the ſouth-eaſt and north-eaſt winds; according to which ſhips muſt regulate their courſe here.

The eccleſiaſtical ſtate of the Dutch Braſil.

The eccleſiaſtical ſtate of the *Dutch Braſil* was in my time thus ordered:

Before the inſurrection of the *Portugueſe*, there were to the ſouth of the *Receif* five proteſtant churches; *viz.* in *Rio* St. *Franciſco*, *Porto Calvo*, *Serinhaim*, the Cape St. *Auſtin*, and St. *Anthony*; though theſe were ſeldom altogether provided with miniſters, becauſe that ſome or other of them returned into *Holland*, after their limited time was expired. In the iſle *Tamarika* and fort *Orange*, was at that time a miniſter, one *John Offringo*, who lived formerly in the town of *Schop*, and at the ſame time preached in the church of *Igaraſſu*, which was afterwards left by the *Dutch* and poſſeſs'd by the *Portugueſe*. In *Rio Grande* preached one *John Theodore Polheim*. In *Parayba* were formerly two miniſters, whilſt the town of *Frederica* was as yet under the *Dutch* juriſdiction, but after the revolt of the *Portugueſe* the place was left by the inhabitants, and *Henry Harman* was the only miniſter in thoſe parts. In the *Receif*, *Maurice*'s town, and the circumjacent forts, which contained about 400 proteſtants, *Dutch*, *French* and *Engliſh*, were three miniſters, who preach'd in the *Dutch* tongue; *Nicholas Vogel*, *Peter Ongena*, and *Peter Grib*. Beſides theſe there was a fourth called *Jodocus Aſtett*, who formerly had been miniſter of the Cape of *St. Auſtin*, but now was employed either aboard our fleet, or upon any land expedition. The *French* church here remained without a miniſter, after the departure of *Joachim Solaer*, ſo that they were forced to be contented with reading of certain chapters of the bible, and prayers every *Sunday* morning. The *Engliſh* miniſter was one *Samuel Batchelour*, who 1646 return'd likewiſe to *England*; about which time there were ſeven *Dutch* miniſters in the *Dutch Braſil*. Our religious worſhip was both in its doctrine and practice regulated exactly according to the preſcription of the ſynod of *Dort*, and peculiar care was taken for the education of the youth, for which purpoſe the catechiſm was every *Sunday* in the afternoon explained, both in the *Receif* and *Maurice*'s town. Four times in the year the holy ſacrament was adminiſtred, thoſe who deſired to be partakers of it, being obliged to make their confeſſion before the church-council, or the miniſters, who entred their names in a book; and if they came from abroad, publiſhed their names to the congregation; and in all other reſpects the church diſcipline was carefully obſerved. The church-council was compoſed of ſix church-wardens, beſides the miniſter, theſe met duly once a week, and if any buſineſs of moment happen'd, ſuch as chuſing a miniſter, *&c.* they called the deacons, who were likewiſe ſix in number, to their aſſiſtance. Out of the deacons were every month choſen two, who (beſides their ordinary buſineſs) were to viſit the ſick and wounded, and to provide for them if neceſſity required. They alſo took care of the orphans, to have them inſtructed in reading and writing. In the ſame manner the other churches were regulated, with this difference only, that the number of church-wardens and deacons was leſs, in proportion to the number of their reſpective congregations. Thus much of the eccleſiaſtical ſtate.

1643.

Their church-council.

Beſides thoſe living creatures we have given you a deſcription of before, there are divers ſorts of bees in *Braſil*, call'd *Eiruku*'s, which ſettle upon the trees in a moſt ſurprizing manner. They are not unlike

1643. unlike our bees, but ſomewhat ſmaller; and ſwarm chiefly among the woods. The *Braſilians* diſtinguiſh them into twelve different kinds; *viz. Amanakay-Miri*, *Amanakay-Veu*, *Aibu*, *Mumbuka*, *Pixuna*, *Urutuetra*, *Tubuna*, *Tujuba*, *Eiruku*, *Eixu*, *Kubiara* and *Kurupireira*; the laſt of which are in no eſteem among them.

The bees *Eiruku* are the largeſt of all, and produce a very good honey, though it is not commonly uſed. They make their combs within the hollowneſs of trees, which the *Braſilians* draw from thence by the means of a hollow pipe. The bees called *Eiku* and *Kopy* are ſmaller and of a blackiſh colour; they make holes from without, in the bark of the trees, in the nature of bee-hives; and the comb within is all of white wax; this is now counted the beſt thing, but is not gathered in the ſame quantity as the former; beſides that theſe bees ſting very furiouſly. The bees *Thanbuka* are likewiſe ſmall, of a yellowiſh colour; they fix their combs on the top of the higheſt trees, and afford the beſt honey, which is in great quantities tranſported from hence to *Europe*, where it is ſold very cheap. It is little inferior in goodneſs to the *European* honey, and of a good ſubſtance, tranſparent and of an agreeable ſcent. It is accounted very balſamick, corrects the ſharp humours in the inteſtines, and eſpecially in the kidneys, and provokes urine. They make of this honey metheglin, which is very ſtrong, and will keep a great while: You may alſo make meath with this honey without boiling, only mix'd with ſome ſpring water and expoſed to the weather.

Balſam. *Braſil* produces likewiſe ſeveral ſorts of balſams; the beſt of which is called by the *Braſilians Kopaiba*, from the trees from whence it comes. *Kopaiba* is a very high wild tree, with an aſh-coloured bark, which ſpreads at the top into many branches. The leaves are about half a foot long, ſometimes larger, ſometimes leſſer, which in the midſt of the branches ſtand oppoſite to one another, but on the end like other leaves. At the end of the great branches are abundance of leſſer ſprouts full of leaves, out of which comes forth the bloſſom, and afterwards berries, not unlike our laurel-berries. They are green at firſt, but as they ripen turn black and ſweet. Within is a round hard ſtone, the kernel of which is white, but mealy, and not fit to be eaten. The berries ripen in *June*, when the *Braſilians* ſuck the juice out of them, and throw away the ſtone and ſkin. The apes take great delight in this fruit.

The oily and odoriferous balſam, in which this tree abounds, drops every full moon, provided you cut a ſlit through the bark as deep as to the pith, in ſuch quantity, that in three hours time you may gather above twelve *Mengeln*. But if that does not drop immediately, the ſlit is made up with wax; and within fourteen days after, they are ſure the balſam will come in great quantity. This tree does not grow ſo plentifully in the captainſhip of *Pernambuko*, as in the iſle *Maranhaon*; from whence this balſam is tranſported into *Europe*. The balſam is hot in the ſecond degree, of a thick oleaginous and reſinous ſubſtance. It is very ſtomachic, and a good remedy againſt the choiick, occaſioned by cold, externally applied to the affected parts; ſome few drops taken inwardly ſtrengthen the bowels, and ſtop the overflowing in women, the looſeneſs and involuntary emiſſion of ſeed in men; againſt which diſtempers it likewiſe is uſed in clyſters or by ſyringing. Thus far concerning the ſole *Dutch Braſil*; we will now proceed to give you an account of what paſſed during our abode there. 1643.

A Mengeln is near thr quarts

New directors ſent to Braſil. In the year 1640, Mr. *Henry Hamel*, one of the directors of the *Weſt-India* company for the chamber of *Amſterdam*, and Mr. *Dirck Kodde Vander Burgh* (both perſons excellently well qualified for the management of the *Dutch Braſil*, and of great experience in affairs of commerce) were at the requeſt of the council of nineteen, ſent to *Braſil*, and arrived there on the 8th of *Auguſt*, the two preceeding directors or councellors, *Matthias Van Keulen* and *John Güſeling*, reſigned their places to them, and with them the chief management of the *Dutch Braſil*, under the government of *John Maurice* count *Naſſau*.

Dutch Braſil. At the time of their arrival in *Braſil*, there were under the juriſdiction of the ſtates the following *Captainſhips: Pernambuko*, *Itamarika* (unto which belongs *Goiana*) *Parayba*, *Rio Grande* and *Siara*, being the northern part of *Braſil:* The ſouthern part, which contained the *Captainſhips Bahia*, *Ileos*, *Porto ſecuro*, *Spirito Santo*, *Rio Janeiro* and *St. Vincent*, remained under the *Portugueſe*, who inhabited the country as far as *Rio de Plate*.

Portugueſe Braſil. Not many months after the iſland of *Maranhaon* was joined with the *Dutch Braſil*, but the charges we were fain to be at to defend it againſt the *Portugueſe*, thoſe of *Para* and the natives, which over-balancing the profit the company was likely to reap from thence, it was thought moſt expedient to quit the ſame; which was done accordingly in the year 1644, or rather to confeſs the truth, by the combination of the *Portugueſe*, thoſe of *Grand Para* and the natives, we were forced to abandon it.

1643. Before the arrival of thoſe new directors a fleet had been ſent to the *Bahia*, to land ſome men there, and to deſtroy all with fire and ſword; which after they had put in execution, and returned to the *Receif*, the ſame fleet under the command of admiral *Jol* and *Cornelius Lichthart*, was by ſpecial command from the council of nineteen in *Holland* ordered to the *Weſt-Indies*, to lay in wait for the *Spaniſh* plate fleet of *Terra fiuma* and new *Spain*; but they returned without doing any thing, 1640 in *December*, having loſt four or five ſhips in this voyage. Colonel *Koin* was much about the ſame time ſent with a body of ſoldiers into the captainſhip of *Rio Real*, to bridle the *Portugueſe*, by making a diverſion in their own territories; but thoſe troops being but indifferently ſupplied with neceſſaries in an enemies countrey, and forced to undergo great fatigues; they were ſo much weakned that it was thought adviſeable to recall them out of *Rio Real*, and to aſſign them quarters of refreſhment in the garriſons. Major *Van Brande* had worſe ſucceſs than all the reſt, for being ſent abroad with a party to fetch in ſome cattle, was put to the rout, and he himſelf taken priſoner.

The Dutch *miſcarry in their deſign upon the* Spaniſh *plate fleet.*

In the mean while that our whole fleet was waiting for the *Spaniſh* plate fleet on the coaſt of *America*, and we conſequently were not in a condition to undertake any thing at ſea; our directors had all the reaſon in the world to fear, that the *Portugueſe* would take this opportunity to revenge their loſs, by deſtroying our ſugar-mills, which made them leave no ſtone unturned to ſecure the *Dutch Braſil* and its inhabitants, againſt the attempts of the enemy: And conſidering that a great part of our ſecurity depended on the good inclinations of the *Portugueſe* living among us, it was thought convenient to call an aſſembly of the chiefeſt *Portugueſe* inhabitants of the three captainſhips of *Pernambuko*, *Itimarika*, and *Parayba*, towards the latter end of *Auguſt*, to concert meaſures how to defend their ſugar-mills and fields againſt the incurſions of the enemy.

The moſt effectual means that could be pitched upon in this aſſembly were, to provide their forts with good garri ſons on the borders, and to ſecure the ſugar-mills, by putting a certain number of ſoldiers in or near them, for the ſecurity of the adjacent fields. This was put in execution accordingly, and the officers had ſtrict charge to keep a watchful eye upon the leaſt motion of the *Portugueſe*, notwithſtanding which it had not the deſired effect; becauſe thoſe *Portugueſe* who lived at a conſiderable diſtance from us, and near the enemies frontiers, durſt not give timely notice of their approach; beſides that many among them having a conſtant hatred to our nation, did favour the enterprizes of thoſe parties that burnt the ſugar-fields and plundered the mills, ſerved them ſometimes for guides, and had their ſhare in the booty; which obliged our people to be at a conſtant charge of a ſtrong guard to conduct their goods, and defend them againſt any ſudden attempts. Such an incurſion was not long after made by the *Portugueſe* into our territories. For in *November* the viceroy, the marquis of *Montelvano* ſent two barges full of ſoldiers to burn our ſugar-reeds in the plains, which they effected, but durſt not go too far, or attempt any thing againſt our mills, for fear of the ſoldiers quartered thereabouts; who could not prevent their burning in the fields, as being done in the night time. The *Dutch* were the greateſt loſers by it, becauſe they had generally the greateſt ſhare in thoſe fields and mills, beſides that the *Portugueſe* ſpared thoſe of their own countrey-men; all which brought a great damp upon trade, every one being afraid to venture in any buſineſs, where he might loſe all his ſubſtance in one night, and that perhaps by the hands of a ſingle perſon, whereby the revenues of the company were greatly impaired, and their charges increaſed, being forced to maintain twenty or thirty ſoldiers for the defence of any conſiderable plantation or ſugar-mills; which prevented them from bringing a ſufficient body of men into the field, to make head againſt the enemy. This was the ſtate of the *Dutch Baſil* towards the latter end of 1640. 1643.

The twenty-ſecond of *December* in the ſame year, Mr. *Adrian van Bulleſtraete* arrived at the *Receif* from *Middleburgh*, in the quality of director of *Braſil*, ſo that now the great council being compleat, the beſt expedient to obviate all theſe difficulties, was judged to conſiſt in our fleet; purſuant to this reſolution, all our ſhips were ordered to the *Bahia*, to make the enemy ſenſible that we were in a condition to be even with them, and thereby to facilitate the negotiation that was in hand, for the ſurceaſing of burning on both ſides. The council of nineteen having alſo ſent expreſs orders to cruiſe with ſome ſhips before *Rio Janeiro*, from whence the *Spaniſh* ſhips uſed generally to return into *Spain*, about the month of *May* or *June*, ſome of the biggeſt ſhips were ordered that way to intercept if poſſible the *Flota*, the reſt being left near the *Bahia*.

The Dutch *ſhips ordered to the* Bahia.

But whilſt our commiſſioners were treating with the viceroy about the ſurceaſing of burning and plundering, a certain *Portugueſe*, *Paulo de Kunha* by name, committed

unheard

1643. unheard of cruelties, with murthering, plundering and burning, in the open countrey, which made count *Maurice* write the following letter to the viceroy.

Count Maurice's *letter to the vice-roy.*

Count Maurice's letter to the viceroy.

THE barbarities lately committed by Paulo de Kunha, *with burning, murdering, and plundering in the open countrey, give me great reason to fear, that your last obliging letter was designed for a complement, without any reality. The confidence I had in your excellency's sincerity, made me recal our ships and forces from your territories, to take away all means of offence: But the long stay of our deputies affords great occasion of suspicion, that your intention is only to amuse us; which has obliged me to dispatch a vessel to let them know that in case the treaty is not brought to a conclusion, to return without delay; it being our intention that the said negotiation should not be continued longer. Your excellency will there dismiss them, together with our two hostages, as we are resolved to send back to you* Martin Ferera, *left with us as hostage from your excellency, his companion being dead of late.*

Hereupon, by the mediation of the clergy living under our jurisdiction, but especially by the indefatigable care of *Dirck Kodde Vander Burgh*, who was sent thither for that purpose, the treaty was brought to a happy conclusion in *February* 1641, by virtue of which, all destruction by burning and plundering were to surcease on both sides; which being published by proclamation, the *Portuguese* were ordered to quit our dominions, whereby we reapt this advantage, that now we might turn all our forces where we found it most expedient.

The treaty against burning concluded.

In *June* 1641, count *Maurice* and the great council received advice of the ten years truce concluded betwixt the states of *Holland* and the king of *Portugal*, with all the articles thereunto belonging, which were published by proclamation in all our captainships, and all acts of hostilities ceased on both sides; the *Dutch* living in good understanding with the inhabitants of the *Bahia*, giving them all the demonstrations of friendship, sufficient to convince the *Portuguese* that they had not the least reason to fear any infraction on their side.

The great council being willing to improve this interval of peace for the advancement of traffick, and the benefit of the company, gave all imaginable encouragement, in proportion to the circumstances of time and place, to all the inhabitants of what nation soever, for the cultivating the lands, which had this good effect, that the masters of the sugar-mills rebuilt their mills, and the husbandmen betook themselves with so much eagerness to the cultivating of their sugar-fields, that they borrowed considerable sums, upon a prospect of sure gain, which would over pay their debts; as without question it would have done in a short time, if by the treachery of the *Portuguese* they had not been disappointed in their hopes. The next thing to be taken in hand, was to make such wholesome laws as were thought most expedient for the establishment and increase of commerce, both in the *Receif* and other places, and to improve the domains and other revenues belonging to the company, during this time of truce. 1643.

Trade then began to flourish apace, so that some time after the truce, the merchants and factors sold more commodities than had ever been known either before or since. Many millions were dealt for in a little time, the merchants and factors being contented to sell to those who would pay some money in part, though there were buyers enough who would and could buy for ready cash.

The finances of the company in *Brasil* were in so good a state by the extraordinary care of the great council, that 1640 and 1641, they bought considerable quantities of sugar upon the publick account, which they sent to *Holland*. In the *Receif* and *Maurice Town*, we saw several goodly structures erected by the inhabitants, who lived in great plenty and magnificence, every one looking upon his debts as secure, and having a fair prospect to increase his riches, by the flourishing state of commerce and improvement of the lands.

The flourishing state of Brasil.

But this was of no long continuance, for in the beginning of 1643, things began to appear with a quite different face; for the magazines of the company being exhausted by several expeditions against *Angola*, &c. and having received no supplies in their stead out of *Holland*, as they used to do before, the great council was obliged to make use of what was due to the company, for the payment of the garrisons and other officers, and consequently to force their debtors to prompt payments.

Its decay.

For at the beginning of the government of the new directors, the company had a considerable naval force upon the coast of *Brasil*, their magazines were well provided with provision and ammunition, and they maintained a good number of soldiers. The great council of the *Dutch Brasil* relying upon their strength, did with consent of count *Maurice*, send in 1641, several fleets with soldiers to *Spirito Santo*, *Rio de Janeiro*, the isle of *Maranhaon*, *Angola*, *St. Thomas*, and other places thereabouts, to attack

1643. tack the ſame, which ſucceeded according to expectation; but their magazines were greatly exhauſted by thoſe expeditions. Beſides this, the merchants in *Holland* began to call upon their ſervants and factors for conſiderable ſums of money, in return of what they had received from them; who being obliged to ſend all the money they could bring together from their creditors, to their maſters in *Holland*; this occaſioned great ſcarcity of ready money, and conſequently no ſmall detriment in traffick, which continuing thus from time to time, there aroſe ſuch a general ſcarcity of money, as is ſcarce to be imagined; many of the maſters of the ſugar-mills, that had no ready money to ſatisfy their debts at the appointed time, being forced to take up money upon credit, and to pay three or four *per cent per* month, which reduced many of them to ſuch an extremity in a little time, that they were neither able to pay the principal nor intereſt.

The reaſon. Upon the arrival of the three new directors, or members of the great council in 1640, *viz. Henry Hamel*, *Kodde*, and *Bulleſtraete*, they found that the inhabitants, but eſpecially the *Portugueſe* of the *Dutch Braſil*, by buying of ſugar-mills and plantations, as well as negroes and other commodities, had run themſelves much in debt; having bought their negroes not only at three hundred pieces of eight *per* head, but alſo given moſt extravagant prices for all other ſorts of commodities, and purchaſing whole warehouſes without making a juſt account how to be able to pay for them. This was done by the *Portugueſe* in hopes of the good ſucceſs of thoſe great fleets they underſtood were equipping in *Spain*, to reduce *Braſil* under the king's obedience, which they ſuppoſed would free them from all their debts; which the factors not being aware of, and blinded with the proſpect of vaſt profit, ſold their goods to the *Portugueſe* without reluctancy. But the deſign of the *Portugueſe* vaniſhing into ſmoak for that time, they were forced to pay; but new ſupplies of all ſorts of commodities being ſent out of *Holland*, they bought on a-freſh, heaping debts upon debts, till failing in their payments, their credit began alſo to fail with the merchants, who now began to urge for ſatisfaction of their debts. For the countrey-traders being urged by the factors and merchants, who received thoſe commodities from their correſpondents in *Holland*, was obliged to call to an account the *Portugueſe* unto whom he had ſold the goods. And becauſe the *Portugueſe* had not bought thoſe commodities from the *Dutch*, but with an intention never to pay for them, the countrey trader who was obliged to pay the merchants in the *Receif*, ſaw himſelf reduced to ruin, the *Portugueſe* having not wherewithal to ſatisfy their debts. 1643.

Thus through the unwarineſs and miſmanagement of thoſe factors, whom the merchants in *Holland* had intruſted with their goods, ſuch a confuſion was introduced, as tended to the great detriment of their correſpondents in *Holland*. All the buſineſs at that time lay among the lawyers, and in the courts of judicature, which conſidering the chargeableneſs of law-ſuits in *Braſil*, tended to their farther ruin; for when they had obtained ſentence and execution againſt the debtors, the greateſt difficulty was, how and which way to lay the execution; moſt of the *Portugueſe* ſueing for protection from the regency, which if they could not obtain, they lived incognito; eſpecially thoſe who had no lands or effects, or if they had, it was no eaſy matter to find out where they were. Beſides that, if the creditors executed their executions upon the lands, they were forced to be the buyers themſelves, and to live in the countrey to manage the lands, a thing altogether inconvenient to the merchants, who had other buſineſs upon their hands in the *Receif*. Such as were caſt into priſon muſt be maintained there at the charge of the creditor, which in proceſs of time amounted to ſuch a ſum, that they themſelves were fain to ſolicite the releaſement of their debtors, and to make the beſt compoſition with them they could. *Great confuſion in traffick.*

Beſides theſe inconveniences, there have happened of late ſeveral others, *viz.* a great mortality of the negroes and *Braſilians*, by a certain infectious diſtemper, incident to the natives, called *Bexigos*, reſembling our ſmall-pox in *Europe*. Moſt of theſe negroes were bought at the rate of three hundred pieces of eight, and conſequently their loſs drew after it the ruin of the planters, who alſo complained much of vermin, and ſeveral inundations that had done conſiderable damage to the ſugar-fields. This confuſion in traffick introduced no ſmall broils among the inhabitants themſelves, who in caſe of non-payment, threw one another in priſon without mercy, and endeavoured to prevent one another by clandeſtine means, to get in their debts before the reſt; offering conſiderable abatements and rewards to ſuch as would underhand ſurrender or tranſport their effects; and thoſe diviſions were not a little fomented by ſome ill minded perſons, to the prejudice of the government; many of thoſe, who either by unwarineſs or other miſmanagement loſt their debts, laying the fault thereof at the door of the regency and of the courts of juſtice, vainly imagining that what they had loſt by their own neg- *Mortality among the negroes.*

1643. lect or want of care, ſhould be made good by the publick purſe; eſpecially if it happened ſo, that the ſame perſons were indebted to the company as well as private perſons, there ariſe great conteſts about the preference.

The debts of the company did alſo increaſe every day, which at laſt amounted to ſome millions: For the directors, which before the year 1640 had the management of affairs in *Braſil*, did ſell moſt of the confiſcated eſtates, ſugar-mills, and merchandizes, as well as the negroes bought on account of the company in *Africk*, upon credit, ſo that their books were filled with debts, but their caſh empty of money. The ſucceeding members of the great council, Mr. *Hamel*, *Bulleſtraet*, and *Kodde*, did leave no ſtone unturned to correct this cuſtom, and to ſell their commodities for ready money, or otherwiſe to exchange them for ſugars, thereby to eaſe the company in the great charge they were forced to be at in their ſeveral expeditions; and it is certain, that in 1640, 1641, and 1642, they ſent ſuch vaſt cargoes of ſugar to *Holland*, that the like had never been known before in *Braſil*. Notwithſtanding which, by the vaſt numbers of negroes that were imported, after our conqueſt of *Angola*, the company fell more and more in debt, by reaſon their debtors were very dilatory in their payments. The council of nineteen ſent expreſs orders to remedy this evil, by ſelling the negroes for ready money, or exchanging them for ſugar; but this could not be put in practice, becauſe there was no body who would buy upon thoſe conditions; ſo that the price of the negroes falling daily lower and lower, and theſe being a great burden to the company, and ſubject to diſtempers and mortality, this order was fain to be revoked, unleſs they would ſee the negroe trade dwindle away into nothing; for the inhabitants being for the moſt part ſuch as had beſtowed moſt part of their ſubſtance in their ſugar-mills, plantations, and negroes, they could not pay ready money, but were forced to deal upon credit, till they could reap the benefit of their labour.

The members of the great council did therefore take all imaginable care to call upon their debtors exactly at the time of their ſugar-harveſt, and ordered their officers in the countrey to ſeize upon ſome of them on account of the company.

From hence aroſe nothing but law-ſuits, ſentences, executions, and impriſonments: The members of the great council thinking it not below their ſtation, to go ſometimes in perſon into the countrey to promote the payment of the debts owing to the company. But this had a contrary effect, for the merchants and factors began to be extreamly diſſatisfied, that the company ſhould ſeize upon the ſugar in the mills, without letting them who were creditors as well as they, have their ſhare in them. This occaſioned not only murmurings, but alſo threats, and complaints to the council of nineteen, where they miſrepreſented theſe tranſactions under the worſt colours they could, hoping thereby to deter the officers of the company from doing their duty. The great council having taken the matter into mature deliberation, and fearing, not without reaſon, that in time it might occaſion a general diſcontent, they left no ſtone unturned to ſatisfy the minds of the people, by finding out means to have their debts ſatisfied. It was propoſed by ſeveral underſtanding perſons, that the company ſhould undertake to ſatisfy the debts of private perſons, either by way of payment or exchange; in lieu of which the maſters of the ſugar-mills ſhould ſurrender to the company every year, the whole product of theſe mills, till they had ſatisfied all their debts: And to make the ſame the more effectual, for the general benefit as well of the company and ſugar-mills, as the merchants and factors, it was agreed, that certain articles ſhould be agreed upon for that purpoſe; the greateſt advantage the company pretended to reap by it being, that they ſhould have a fair opportunity of recovering ſome of their debts, which were given over for loſt. Theſe agreements were wonderfully pleaſing to the council of nineteen, who in the year 1645, on the 16th of *June*, ſent their approbation of a ſecond agreement made with one *George Homo Pinto* (which indeed was of as great conſequence as all the other contracts together) to the great council as follows: 1643.

Approbation of the Agreement.

The approbation of the agreement.

CONcerning the agreement by you (meaning the council) on the 14th *of* December *laſt, made with* George Homo Pinto, *we have had ſeveral debates, which we find to have been brought to a concluſion, with the previous advice and approbation of the councellors of juſtice and of the finances; ſo that both in reſpect of the ſame, and of the great benefit that is likely to accrue thereby to the company, we have thought fit to approve of the ſaid Agreement; recommending to you the execution of it, with the ſame zeal as you have ſhewn your conduct and circumſpection in the whole management of theſe contracts.*

That theſe agreements were by all people, that had any knowledge of thoſe affairs, looked upon as greatly for the intereſt

1643. reſt of the company, is moſt evident from hence, that ſeveral other merchants that were ſenſible of this advantage, made agreements with their debtors much upon the ſame terms as the company had done; which that it may be put beyond all doubt, we will give you a copy of one of thoſe agreements, from whence it will plainly appear with how much circumſpection the council proceeded in this matter, betwixt the company, the maſters of the ſugar-mills and their debtors.

The copy of an Agreement.

The copy of an agreement.

MR. Peter John Bas, *and* John van Ratſfield, *councellors of juſtice of* Braſil, *by ſpecial commiſſion from the* Weſt-India *company, and* John van Walbeeck, *aſſeſſor of the great council, did appear before us on one ſide; and* Manuel Fernando Cruz, *Sieur* de Ingenho Tapicura, *in behalf of himſelf and his heirs; as alſo* Benjamin de Pina *for ten thouſand ſix hundred gilders;* Iſaac de Coſta *for thirteen thouſand one hundred and eight;* Joſeph Abenacar *for four hundred ninety;* Simon de Vale *for three hundred twenty-five;* Gaſper Franciſco *and* David Brandoa *for eleven hundred thirty-three;* Abraham de Tovaer *for one thouſand;* John Parente *for three hundred and fifty;* John Mendonça de Moeribeca *for four thouſand three hundred fifty;* James Gabay *for one thouſand and fifty;* More de Leon *for ſix hundred;* Balthazar de Fonſeca *for ſix hundred;* Simon Gomes de Liſboa *for five thouſand nine hundred ten;* Bartholomew Rodrigues *for nine hundred; and* Daniel Cardoſa *for nine hundred and ten gilders; the whole amounting to forty thouſand five hundred twenty-ſix gilders, being all creditors of the ſaid* Manuel Fernando Cruz, *and for the moſt part debtors to the company on the other ſide, who profeſs and declare to have agreed among themſelves, that the beforementioned* Manuel Fernando Cruz, *ſhall pay to the company the full ſum of ſixty thouſand ſeven hundred ninety five gilders,* viz. *nineteen thouſand two hundred ſixty nine gilders upon his own account, being by him owing to the ſaid company, and the remaining ſum on the account of his creditors, which proportionably to their reſpective debts, ought to be diſcounted for with him by the ſaid company, upon the following conditions.*

I. *That the whole debt is to be ſatisfied in the three next following years, the firſt payment to begin in* January 1645, *and if it happen, that in one year a leſs ſhare be paid than in the other, the whole is to be made good in the laſt year.*

II. *That no diſcounts ſhall be entred in the books of the company, 'till after the payment of the due proportion appointed for each reſpective term or time.* 1643.

III. *That the creditors of thoſe with whom they have entred into articles of agreement, as well as the debtors of the company, ſhall not be diſcharged of their debts in the books of the company, but in caſe of failure or delay of payment, either of the whole ſum or part thereof, all the reſpective appointed times, ſhall ſtand engaged and anſwerable, each for his reſpective debt, unleſs they give other ſecurity to the company; but thoſe creditors who have no debts in the books of the company, ſhall have liberty to transfer other debts, or elſe to receive their ſhare in two years time, either by aſſignments or in Negroes; but not in any commodities imported from abroad, or ſugar to be exported; provided nevertheleſs that the articles of agreement be fulfilled, or otherwiſe the ſum be put to their own account immediately, in which caſe they are to allow eighteen pound* per cent. *and nevertheleſs be liable to ſee the agreement put in execution.*

IV. *Thoſe who are entred into articles of agreement ſhall be obliged to engage both their body and goods for the performance thereof, but eſpecially to deliver an inventory of their perſonal eſtates, confirm'd by oath; beſides which, they are to give ſuch ſecurities as ſhall be approved of by the great council; with renouncing the* beneficium ordinis, diviſionis & excuſationis, *as well for each reſpective payment at the appointed times, as the whole ſum in general.*

V. *Theſe before-mention'd ſecurities are to be perſons well-qualified, of good ſubſtance, not involv'd in debts, but eſpecially in the company's; and ſhall be warranted by the magiſtrates of their reſpective places of abode.*

VI. *Publick notice is to be given to all perſons, who have any bonds, bills, or accounts, or other engagements relating to the perſonal eſtates (which ſhall be named or ſpecified) of ſuch as are entred into thoſe articles, that within the ſpace of three weeks they are to produce the ſame, or elſe to be excluded from the benefit thereof, 'till after the expiration of the time mentioned and appointed in the ſaid agreement.*

VII. *That he, who has engaged himſelf in ſuch an agreement or contract, ſhall not be permitted to contract new debts, unleſs with the conſent of the great council; otherwiſe the ſame to be void and null, of which publick notice ſhall be given. Neither ſhall he abalienate any ſugars by land as remains, under the penalty of reſtitution to be made with full intereſt and charges.*

1643. *The creditors ſhall be obliged to ſurrender and renounce all their pretenſions, engagements and actions to the company; neither ſhall they lay any claim upon that ſcore of precedence or otherwiſe.*

Whenever it ſhall be judged requiſite, by the great council, *to ſend a certain perſon to the* ingenho *of any perſon entred into ſuch an agreement, for the better ſecurity of their debt, and the receiving and ſending away the ſugar, allotted to the company, he ſhall be obliged to find him with victuals and lodgings in his* ingenho; *but the company ſhall pay him for his pains.*

Purſuant to which, the before named Manuel Fernando Cruz, *with the advice and conſent of his before-mentioned creditors, has obliged himſelf in general, and by theſe preſents, obliges and engages his perſon and eſtate, both real and perſonal, without any reſervation or exception; but eſpecially the before-named* Ingenho Tapicura, *with all its appurtenances, according to the inventory thereunto affixed and confirmed by oath; which* Ingenho Tapicura, *he declares to be free from any pre-engagements, with all the grounds, ſugar-fields, paſturages, woods, and other things thereunto belonging,* viz. *eight braſs* calderns, *ten* tachoos *and ten* parvos, *beſides ſeveral other copper veſſels belonging to the ſaid* ingenho; *twenty ſlaves belonging to the ſaid* ingenho, *and* Manuel Ferdinando Cruz, *his houſe and ſixty oxen. And for the better performance of this agreement,* Senhor John de Mendoſe *dwelling at* Moeribeca, *and* Manuel Gomes des Lisboa, *living in* Moquiaxe, *have, after certificates obtained from the magiſtrates of their reſpective dwelling-places, engaged themſelves, and do by theſe preſents engage themſelves as ſecurities for the whole debt, and as debtors for each and every part thereof, promiſing to indemnify the company of all actions, ſuits, or other pretenſions which may be made againſt them on the account of any other creditors of the ſaid* Manuel Fernando Cruz, *not mention'd or engaged in this agreement; as likewiſe, that no ſugar ſhall be ſurreptitiouſly convey'd away or abalienated: That in caſe of non-payment, the company ſhall be hereby fully empowered to recover their damages with intereſt and charges, upon their perſons and eſtates; they renouncing by theſe preſents all exceptions,* ordinis, diviſionis & excuſationis, *as likewiſe all other pretenſions of privileges tending to the invalidity of this contract. The before-named creditors alſo, in general, and every one of them in particular, declare that they have given in a true account of all their reſpective pretenſions upon the ſaid* Manuel Fernando Cruz, *neither that they do demand any other ſum or ſums of him, but what have been ſpecified there under their reſpective names; promiſing to be well ſatisfied with what has been ſtipulated, and, if put in execution accordingly, to renounce all actions or private engagements, diſcontents or preference in favour of the company; and that in caſe of non-payment they will be obliged to make good and reſtore to the ſaid company, not only each particular ſum paid at certain limited times, but alſo the whole, in the ſame manner, as if the ſaid agreement had never been made betwixt them; leaving it to the diſcretion of the company, whether they will lay their actions againſt* Manuel Fernando Cruz *and his ſecurities, or againſt themſelves and their eſtates; under the condition they were in before the concluſion of this agreement; the benefit of* actionem ceſſam *being allowed them againſt the ſaid* Cruz *and his ſecurities, for the recovery of their juſt debts. In witneſs and confirmation of which we have granted theſe our letters, as uſual in ſuch caſes, ſealed with the ordinary ſeal of the court of juſtice, and ſigned by the ſecretary of the council. Tranſlated in the* Receif, 23d September 1644. 1643.

In the ſame manner all the other contracts were made and penn'd; the contents of which amounted in the whole to two million a hundred and twenty five thouſand eight hundred and ſeven gilders, which were due from the farmers to the maſters of the ſugar-mills, and from thoſe again to the company.

For what reaſon theſe agreements were made.

The chief, if not the only reaſon, why theſe agreements were reſolved upon, was, (as we ſaid before) the intolerable vexations and exactions put upon the maſters of the ſugar-mills by their creditors, who, unleſs theſe maſters paid them at the rate of two or three *per cent.* intereſt *per* month, made immediate ſeizure of their negroes, oxen, coppers, and other neceſſaries belonging to the ſugar-mills; ſo that the maſters of theſe ſugar-mills being reduced to a neceſſity of paying ſuch exorbitant exactions, or elſe to ſee themſelves entirely ruined, began to defend their plantations and mills by force, ſo that things ſeemed to tend at that time to a general inſurrection, if the ſame had not been prevented, by entring into thoſe contracts; by which means the maſters of the ſugar-mills being freed from the oppreſſions of their creditors, and in lieu thereof now become debtors to the company, and time given them to employ their mills for the payment of their debts, at certain limited times, and that at the rate of one *per cent.* intereſt *per* month only, all pretenſions and occaſions of a revolt were thereby removed, at leaſt for that time; the firſt term of payment being ſet out for a conſiderable time.

To

1643. To make this the more evident, theſe following heads deſerve our particular obſervation: That the company and the merchants, being creditors of the maſters of the ſugar-mills, endeavouring at the ſame time to force them to the payment of their debts, by executions. This occaſioned from the year 1647 to the time of the making of thoſe contracts, ſuch a confuſion, as muſt needs have tended to the total deſtruction of the ſugar-mills, and conſequently of the merchants and company; which induced them to apply themſelves to the great council, to find out ſome means, by way of diſcount, or otherwiſe, to put theſe debts into the company's hands.

The councellors of juſtice did not at firſt agree in all points to theſe propoſals, but at their meeting on the 12th of *Auguſt* 1644, being better convinced of the matter, and that the company was ſufficiently ſecured and benefited thereby, the next following day did not only approve of the ſame, but alſo were of opinion, that ſome things might be rather mitigated for the Advantage of the maſters of mills and their creditors, than not to relieve them at this juncture; ſo that the conditions were the 10th of *November* 1644, agreed unto with the conſent of the councellors of the court of juſtice and the finances.

Purſuant to theſe, the great council took care that publick notice ſhould be given of theſe agreements made betwixt the company and certain private perſons, by which every one was forewarned not to ſell any thing upon credit to them, without the conſent of the great council; and their creditors ſummoned to make good their debts within three weeks time, or elſe to be excluded from the benefit of the contract, 'till after the time therein limited was expired. From all which it is ſufficiently demonſtrable, with how little appearance of truth ſome have attempted to inſinuate, that theſe contracts were prejudicial to the company, and had given no ſmall occaſion to the enſuing revolt of the *Portugueſe*; when it is beyond all queſtion, from what has been ſaid before, that theſe were the only means to prevent thoſe calamities, wherewith the maſters of the ſugar-mills, and the farmers or countrey planters, were over-whelmed all that time, who were forced to let their mills ſtand ſtill, and leave the ground uncultivated; all which, as it tended to the utter deſtruction of the ſugar-mills, ſo the company ſuſtained an irreparable loſs, *viz.* thirty eight pounds *per cent.* yearly in *Braſil*, and thirty ſeven pounds *per cent.* in *Holland*, which being ſeventy five pound *per cent.* did altogether ariſe from the uſe of the ſugar-mills.

Beſides this, there were not a few of 1643. thoſe merchants that were creditors of the ſugar-mills, that were conſiderably indebted to the company, who pleading inſolvency, by reaſon of the non-payment of their debtors; the company would have been conſiderable loſers by them, unleſs by this way of diſcounting they had found means to recover thoſe deſperate debts. All which moved the great council to make a virtue of neceſſity, and with the advice of the maſters of the ſugar-mills and their creditors, and the approbation of the council of nineteen, to enter upon thoſe articles; which could not be in any wiſe detrimental to the company; tho' ſome malicious perſons have objected againſt them, that (ſuppoſing there had been no revolt) theſe maſters would not in twenty years, nay, perhaps never have been in a condition to wrong the company, what they had laid out upon their account; when it is ſufficiently known that the great council never paid one farthing of ready money for them on the account of the company; beſides that for the ſatisfaction of the company, twenty five ſugar-mills were engaged, which one with another, affording from two hundred and thirty to two hundred and fifty cheſts of ſugar yearly; if the company had drawn but a hundred and forty or a hundred and fifty cheſts from each, the ſame would have amounted to four hundred and twenty thouſand gilders; from whence it is evident, that not to include the ſugar-mills, their coppers, oxen, and other Inſtruments thereunto belonging, the ſum of two millions one hundred and twenty five thouſand eight and ſixteen gilders, being the total ſum of the debt owing to the company by vertue of theſe contracts, might have been ſatisfied without much hazard; the *Portugueſe* maſters of the ſugar-mills, being by this expedient left in the quiet poſſeſſion of their mills, and eaſed from the oppreſſions of their creditors, and our hopes were not a little increaſed by the induſtry of the inhabitants of the country, who finding themſelves now at eaſe, applied themſelves with ſo much aſſiduity to the improvement of their plantations, for the better ſatisfying of their debts, that in 1645 there was ſuch a fair proſpect of a plentiful harveſt of ſugar, as had not been known in many years before.

Reaſons of the revolt of the Portugueſe.

But it ſeems as if the *Portugueſe* out of an in-born hatred to our nation, who had conquered them, were reſolved not to reſt ſatisfied, 'till by underhand practices and plots they had undermined our government. Add to this, that many of them having involved themſelves over head

and

1643. and ears in debt, and seeing no way to satisfy their creditors, were become desperate, and more forward to run the hazard of an open revolt (in hopes of assistance from *Portugal*) than to undergo the unavoidable necessities of poverty; which made some of them frankly tell our people afterwards, that in case they were disappointed in their hopes of succours from the *Bahia*, they would seek for aid in *Spain* or *Turkey*.

Towards the latter end of the year 1642, there were rumours spread abroad of a Plot contrived by the *Portugueſe* against the state when they were disarmed, and their arms brought into the magazines, which however they got again under some pretence or other afterwards, they living very quietly among us, for fear, as I suppose, of our garrisons, and that they were not then sufficiently assured of succours from the *Bahia*. But it will not be amiss to trace the true origin of this revolt.

Suspicion of treachery.

The 13th *December* 1642, one *John Fernandes Vieira*, alderman of *Maurice's-Town*, appeared in the great council, count *Maurice* being present, where he told them, that he had been informed by certain *Jews*, how he and his father-in-law *Beringel* were suspected in *Holland*, of having sent letters by a son of the said *Beringel* to the king of *Portugal*, tending to the detriment of the state. He did not deny to have sent a letter by the said person to the king of *Portugal*, but containing no more than a recommendation of the said *Beringel*'s person, to help him him to some employment under the king: This he offer'd to prove by his copy, which being produced, there was found nothing material in it, but a congratulation to the king upon his accession to the crown, and a recommendation of the said *Beringel*; *Vieira* further proposed, that he thought it absolutely necessary, for the safety of his estate, to have the *Portugueſe* disarmed, as likewise the captains *de Campo*, with those under their jurisdiction, the *Negroes*, *Brasilians*, *Mulatts* and *Mamalukes*.

There was also a letter sent by the council of nineteen, dated 1 *June* 1642, to count *Maurice*, containing in substance, that one *John van North*, who had served for fourteen months in the quality of a cadee in *Brasil*, had declared to them at *Amsterdam*, that he had been a servant in a sugar-mill belonging to *John Fernandes Vieira*, where after a stay of two months, he was entreated by *Francisco Beringel Labrador*, to go with his son *Antonio Dandrado Beringel*, as an interpreter to *Holland*, and from thence to *Portugal*; which upon great promises he accepted of, and they set sail on board the Ship called the *Love* from *Brasil* for *Zeeland*, and afterwards from *Ulissimen* went to *Lisbon*. He said, that this *Antonio Dandrado Beringel*, after a familiar conversation of three weeks, had told him that he was sent with a letter sign'd by *John Fernandes Vieira*, *Francisco Beringel*, *Bernardin Karvailho*, *John Biserro* and *Lewis Bras Biserro*, in which they gave to understand to the king of *Portugal*, that they were well provided with men, money and arms, for the reducing *Brasil* under his obedience. The council added, that the king of *Portugal* had made the said *Beringel* a captain, for this piece of service, and that therefore they desired count *Maurice* and the great council to keep a watchful eye over them, being sensible what an aversion the *Portugueſe* did bear to the *Dutch*.

1643.

Is encreased by letters from abroad.

At the meeting of the great council of *Brasil*, 16th *February* 1643, count *Maurice* assured them, that he had received intelligence, that some of the chiefest of the *Portugueſe* had resolved to surprize our garrisons in the country, at *Moribeca*, *St. Anthony*, and some other places, and to put them to the sword, which was to be put in execution upon one of their saints days, when they used to meet in considerable Numbers. Those who had the chief management of this affair, had their dwelling-places in the *Vargea*, who had proposed to surprize likewise the *Receif*, not questioning that if they could make themselves masters of it, the other garrisons in the country would be easily reduced, and consequently the company not able to subsist long in *Brasil*, without soldiers and traffick.

What resolution taken thereupon.

Hereupon it was taken into deliberation, whether 'twere best to secure the heads of this rebellion immediately, or to delay it 'till a more convenient time, for fear of allarming the whole country by their Imprisonment: The last was resolved upon, because they did not think themselves as yet sufficiently assured of their designs, and did not question, but that by the secret intelligence count *Maurice* was to receive of their transactions, they might prevent them. It was however judged advisable to draw the garrisons out of the country into the *Receif*, which was strengthened with new pallisadoes, and the old wooden battery repaired; a ship was also ordered with several great chaloops, the first on the sea-side, the others in the river, to defend the avenues of the *Receif* with their cannon. There were likewise divers letters sent by private persons, some without names, to count *Maurice* and the great

1643. council, confirming the traiterous deſigns of the *Portugueſe*; among others, one Mr. *Van Els* ſent a letter to count *Maurice*, dated at *Serinhaim* the 20th of *March* 1643, importing, that he had it from ſure hands, that a certain *Mulat*, of the company of *Auſtin Hardoſo*, being asked by certain inhabitants of that *Fregeſie*, what buſineſs they had thereabouts, had told them, that they had been to carry letters to ſome perſons living near the *Receif*, adding, that in a ſhort time they would ſee that place taken without any effuſion of blood, either of the *Dutch* or *Portugueſe*.

In *December* 1643, *Don Michael de Kraſto*, *Don Baſtian Manduba de Sonho*, and *Don Antonio Ferdinandes*, three ambaſſadors from the count *Sonho* in *Angola*, arrived in the *Receif*, in the ſhip call'd the *Arms of Dort*; they had but one ſervant each, but brought along with them ſeveral negroes with golden collars, as a preſent to count *Maurice*, beſides a great number of other Negroes for the company.

Ambaſſadors from the count of Sonho *admitted to audience.*

Being admitted to audience by count *Maurice* and the great council, they deſired in the name of their Maſter, not to ſend any aſſiſtance to the king of *Congo*, whom they feared would attack them before long, notwithſtanding they were at that time both engaged in a war againſt the *Portugueſe*. They received for anſwer, that the council would write to Mr. *Niewland*, their director there, to interpoſe his authority and mediation, in order to maintain a good correſpondency, and remove all occaſion of conteſt betwixt the king of *Congo* and their maſter, they being both confederates of the States: The ſaid Earl ſent likewiſe a letter to count *Maurice*, in which he deſired leave to buy a chair, a cloak, ſome enſigns of war, ſome apparel, and ſuch like things. The great council writ alſo a letter, as well to the king of *Congo*, as to the count of *Sonho*, exhorting them to peace, and ſent them the following preſents in the name of the company.

To the King,

A long black velvet cloak, with ſilver galloons.
A ſcarf edged with ſilver lace.
A velvet coat.
And a caſtor-hat with a ſilver hatband.

To the Count,

A red velvet elbow-chair, with gold fringes.
A large velvet cloak, with gold and ſilver galloons.
A ſcarf with a gold and ſilver lace. 1643.
A velvet coat.
And a caſtor-hat with a gold and ſilver hatband.

They were entertained with all imaginable civility, during their ſtay here: They were very skillful in playing with the backſword; in the management of which, they made moſt terrible poſtures and faces. They underſtood *latin* very well, and made ſeveral learned harangues in the ſame.

Freſh ſuſpicion of a revolt.

The 13th of *October* 1644, a certain *Jew*, called *Gaſpar Franciſco de Kunha*, with two others of the chief of the ſame fraternity, gave notice to the great council, that they had been credibly informed by ſome *Jews*, who converſed and kept frequent correſpondence in the country, that the *Portugueſes* were plotting againſt the *Dutch-Braſil*, telling the council the reaſons upon which they founded this ſuſpicion. The council, after having returned thanks to theſe elders for their care, reſolved to leave no ſtone unturn'd to diſcover the deſigns of the *Portugueſe*; and having received certain intelligence, that they expected ſome arms and ammunition to be brought them by ſea, they ordered the 12th of *October* 1644, the yacht called *Niewhouſe*, with a galliot and a challoop, to cruiſe along the coaſt of *Dutch-Braſil*, to obſerve what veſſels did approach the ſhore.

The 11th of *May* 1644, count *Maurice* left the *Receif*, in order to his return to *Holland*, after he had been eight years governor of the *Dutch-Braſil*. All the citizens and chief inhabitants, both of the *Receif* and *Maurice*'s town, appeared in arms, making a lane from the old town to the water-gate, of whom, as he paſs'd by, he took his leave with all imaginable demonſtration of kindneſs. At the gate he mounted on horſe-back, and being accompanied by the great council, the councellors of juſtice and all the military officers, as far as *Olinda*, he there once more took his leave of them in particular, the Sieur *Bulleſtraet* remaining only with him, being deputed by the regency to conduct him on board the ſhips deſign'd for his tranſportation. They did not ſet ſail from the *Red-Land* 'till the 22d of *May*, with a fleet of thirteen ſhips, on board of which were a good number of ſoldiers, leaving only eighteen companies for the defence of the *Dutch-Braſil*. Mr. *Bulleſtraet* return'd the 26th to the *Receif*.

On the 22d of *April*, not long before the departure of count *Maurice*, the commiſſion from the governors of the *Weſt-India* company, according to a reſolution taken at their meeting the firſt of *July* 1642,

1643. 1642, concerning the government of *Dutch-Braſil*, and dated the 22d of *May* 1643, was read in the great council, by which the members thereof were to have the adminiſtration of the government 'till further orders. Accordingly count *Maurice* having appointed a day to inveſt them with the adminiſtration of the government, he ordered (with the conſent of the ſaid council) an aſſembly to be called on the 6th of *May*, of the counſellors of juſtice, of the magiſtrates, the eccleſiaſtical council and miniſters of *Maurice*'s *Town*; of the commanders in chief both by ſea and land, the chief officers of the company, the officers of the militia, and the chief men among the *Jews*.

All theſe being at the appointed time met in the great hall of the *Stadthuis*, he told them, that ſince their high and mightineſſes the ſtates, his highneſs the prince of *Orange*, and the council of nineteen, had been pleaſed to grant him leave, after a ſtay of eight years among them, in the quality of governor of the *Dutch-Braſil*, to return into *Holland*, he had called them together, to return them thanks for the many ſervices, each in his ſtation, had done to the company; as likewiſe for the obedience, fidelity and reſpect they had always ſhewn to his perſon; telling them, that from this minute he reſign'd the government into the hands of the great council, requiring and deſiring them, in the name of the ſtates, the prince of *Orange*, and the council of nineteen, to ſhew them the ſame obedience, fidelity and reſpect they had done before; whereupon count *Maurice* having congratulated the council, and the reſt there preſent done the ſame, he took his leave of them in the hall, and immediately after in the council-chamber, of the members of the great council, giving them moſt hearty thanks for their faithful council and aſſiſtance upon all occaſions, and for the reſpect and deference they had always ſhewn to his perſon; telling them, that ſince this would be the laſt time of his appearing in their aſſembly, he had drawn up a memorial, which might ſerve them as a guide, for the better adminiſtration of the government; and that, if they thought it convenient, he ſhould be ready to diſcourſe with them, and enlarge further upon that ſubject. The members of the great council returned him their unfeigned thanks, wiſhing him a happy voyage, and good ſucceſs in all his undertakings, and recommended themſelves and the whole *Dutch-Braſil* to his care hereafter. Before the breaking up of the aſſembly, it was debated in the preſence of count *Maurice*, which of the members ſhould have the precedency there as preſident, or whether the ſame ſhould be taken by turns, the ſame being not determined in their commiſſion: After ſeveral arguments *pro* and *con*, it was agreed, that things ſhould remain, in reſpect of this point, in the ſame condition as had been uſual before, in the abſence of count *Maurice*, *viz.* for every one to keep his rank without any priority 'till further orders from the council of nineteen; to wit, firſt Mr. *Dirk Hamel*, then Mr. *Bulleſtraete*, Mr. *Kodde Vander Burgh*, *&c.* 1643.

Count Maurice *abdicates the government.*

Takes his leave.

The next thing the great council took in hand, was to inquire more narrowly into the deſigns of the *Portugueſe* againſt the government; to effect which, it was reſolved in *January* 1644, to ſend *Gilbert de Wit*, councellor of the court of juſtice, and captain *Dirk Hoogſtrate*, then commander in chief in the *Cape of St. Auſtin*, to *Antonio Telles de Sylva*, then governor of the *Bahia*, with the following inſtructions, dated the 15th of the ſame month; to compliment the governor (after the delivery of their credentials) in the name of the great council, with a ſincere promiſe and aſſurance of friendſhip, and good neighbourly correſpondency. After this, they were to repreſent to him, that many of the ſubjects of the *Dutch-Braſil*, after having contracted conſiderable debts there, both with the company, and other inhabitants, did retire into the *Bahia*; wherefore they deſired, that for the promoting of juſtice, they would either detain thoſe bankrupts in priſon, or at leaſt give timely notice of their coming thither, to the *Dutch* government, whereby their ſubjects might be enabled to proſecute them at law: But their real errant was to be inſtructed underhand in the following points.

Envoys ſent into the Portugueſe-Braſil, *and their inſtructions.*

I. WHat *forces the* Portugueſe *had at that time in the* Bahia, *and the other ſouthern provinces.*

II. *What number of ſhips.*

III. *What number of ſhips were expected there out of* Portugal.

IV. *How the negro's trade ſtood affected, and from what places they were brought thither.*

V. *Whether there was any commerce betwixt them and the inhabitants of* Bonas Aires.

VI. *In what condition their places were thereabouts; of all which they were to give the beſt account they were able to get, after their*

1643. *their return to the great council; they were also charged by word of mouth, to make diligent enquiry who were the perſons that underhand encouraged the ſo much feared revolt of the* Portugueſe *in the* Dutch Braſil, *and what aid or aſſiſtance they were to have from them; and to deſire the governor not to permit for the future that ſuch of the* Dutch *ſoldiers as deſerted out of the* Receif, *and went by land to the* Bahia, *might from thence be tranſported into* Portugal, *but be ſtopt and ſent back to the* Receif.

Their arrival at St. Salvador.

Theſe envoys arrived ſafely the 8th of *February* 1644 in the *Bahia*, and dropt their anchor towards the evening near the city of *St. Salvador*, and the caſtle of *St. Antonio*, where two officers came on board them, to enquire from whence they came, and by whom, and to whom they were ſent, in order to give an account thereof to the governor *Antonio Telles de Sylva*. The next following day they were complimented in the name of the governor by major *Domingo Delgados*, and captain *David Ventura*, who told them that he intended to ſend his chaloop with the firſt opportunity to fetch them aſhore. About three a clock in the afternoon, the ſame officers with three or four more, came with the chaloop to fetch them; and they were no ſooner landed but found ſeveral horſes ready for them to mount upon, which they did, and were conducted up a high hill, all over covered with ſpectators, to the governor's palace. In the outward hall was a ſtrong guard of ſoldiers, in the ſecond ſeveral enſigns and other inferior officers, in the third apartment they met with nothing but captains and lieutenants, and in the fourth with colonels, general officers,

Are admitted to audience.

ſome clergymen, and the governor himſelf; who after having received them at the door, deſired them to ſit down next to him, upon chairs ſet for that purpoſe. The envoys then begun their harangue, in which they told him, that they were extreamly glad to find him in good health at this time, when they were ſent by the great council of the *Dutch Braſil*, to aſſure him of their good inclinations, to maintain a good correſpondency and friendſhip with him, and of their hearty wiſhes for his majeſty's, his own, and the government's proſperity; to preſerve which, they were ready to contribute all that lay in their power. Then they told him that they had ſeveral things to propoſe to him, when he ſhould think convenient to receive them; the reſt of the diſcourſe run upon mutual complements and news. After which, the envoys were again accompanied by the governor to the door of the apartment, where he ordered the beforementioned *Domingo Delgados* and *David Ventura*, to conduct them to a certain large houſe finely furniſhed, in *Biſhops-ſtreet*, and 1643. to entertain them at his charge; which though the envoys refuſed, alledging it to be contrary to the intentions of their maſters, yet were forced to accept of the ſame, and were very magnificently entertained at ſupper.

Their ſecond audience.

The next morning about eleven a clock they went again to the palace, and after having deſired a ſecond audience, were received in the ſame manner as before. Every one being ordered to withdraw, beſides the ſecretary of the governor; the envoys made their propoſitions to the laſt, which they delivered to him in writing in *Portugueſe*, recommending the ſame to his conſideration, as tending towards the maintaining a good and firm correſpondency betwixt them. To which the governor gave this general anſwer; *That he ſhould always endeavour to cultivate a good underſtanding and correſpondency with us, purſuant to the ſtrict and reiterated orders he had received for that purpoſe from the king his maſter. And that concerning the propoſitions made by them to him, he would aſſemble his council of war and juſtice, and afterwards impart to them his anſwer.* Then they were by *Domingo Delgados* reconducted to his own houſe, where they were very well entertained the ſame day at dinner, and the next by the governor himſelf.

Their third audience.

The 17th they had another audience from the governor, who told them in very obliging terms, *that he had conſulted the matter with his council, and could give them no other anſwer but what was contained in this letter*, which he delivered to them, and told them the contents thereof; whereupon our envoys told him, that ſince thereby a door was left open for rogues and vagabonds, they hoped he would at leaſt order that the names of ſuch as fled to the *Bahia* might be taken notice of, that the great council of the *Dutch Braſil* might not remain quite unſatisfied, whither they were fled; which he promiſed to do. After ſome further complements and mutual aſſurance of friendſhip, they parted for this time.

The 22d they took their leave of the biſhop, and ſeveral other perſons of note, unto whom they owed any obligations, and laſt of all of the governor himſelf, being conducted thither by many perſons of quality and officers; they returned him thanks for the civilities and reſpect he had been pleaſed to ſhew them, wiſhing both him and his *Portugueſe* majeſty a long and happy reign, and victory againſt the *Caſtilians*. The governor returned their complements, and conducted them out of the room, ordering ſeveral negroes to attend them down the precipice of the hill, upon which the city is built, with chairs; but the envoys

chooſing

1643. chooſing rather to go on foot, they were in the ſame chaloop they came in aſhore, carried back under the ſound of muſick on board their yacht. The *Portugueſe* officers after having taken their leave, returned to the city, and ours made the beſt of their way to the *Receif*, where they arrived ſafely not long after.

Their return to the Receif.

The letter delivered to them by the governor, was as follows.

The Governour's Letter.

The governors letter. GIlbert de Wit *councellor of your court of Juſtice, and* Dirk Hoogſtraten *commander in chief on the* Cape of St. Auſtin, *your lordſhips deputies, whom I received according to their quality and merits, have delivered your letter to me, and propoſed ſuch other matters as they were impowered to treat with me about. Though I endeavour nothing ſo much as to cultivate and maintain in the ſtricteſt manner, our neighbourly good correſpondency, yet am I conſtrained at this time frankly to acknowledge, that it is not in my power to give your lordſhips any more ſatisfactory anſwer than this, in hopes that the many proofs you have had of my ſincere inclinations, will ſerve as a plea with your lordſhips, to aſſure you, that I ſhall always be ready in all points depending on my government, to give the ſame proofs both of obedience and fidelity to the king my maſter, whoſe pleaſure is, that the truce ſhould be obſerved inviolably; and of my ſincere intentions, and the eſteem I have for your lordſhips friendſhip, deſiring nothing more than that you furniſh me with an opportunity of giving real demonſtrations of my readineſs to ſerve you; whom I recommend to the protection of God almighty.*

Bahia, Feb. 14. 1645. Signed,

Antonio Telles da Silva.

Concerning the ſix points mentioned in their ſecret inſtructions, they made the following report to the great council.

Report of the envoys to the council. I. *THAT the* Portugueſe *forces in thoſe parts were generally eſteemed to be leſs or more betwixt three and four thouſand men, without the* Braſilians *and negroes. But that upon the moſt exact enquiry they could make, they had found them to be not above three thouſand, including the* Braſilians *and negroes, and their garriſons both to the north and ſouth, as far as* Rio Janeiro. *Theſe conſiſted of five regiments,* viz. *three of* Portugueſe, *under the colonels* John Darauge, Martin Soares, *and* N. N. *the fourth of* Braſilians, *under a* Braſilian *colonel*, Antonio Philippo Camarao; *and the fifth of negroes, under the command of negro* Henricio Dyas. *Theſe two laſt regiments, amounting both not to above three hundred men, were divided in the garriſons to the north, about* Rio Real *on our frontiers; they being the ſcum and off-caſts of all their territories; and conſequently not to be quartered near the capital city, there having of late been ſome broils among them in the garriſons, whither officers were diſpatched to compoſe them. The three* Portugueſe *regiments conſiſting of about two thouſand ſeven hundred men, kept garriſon in* St. Salvador, *and the circumjacent forts, except two companies, one of which quartered about* Rio Real, *the other in the iſland* Morro St. Paulo; *and about one hundred fifty more, which were diſpoſed in the captainſhips of* Os Ilheos, Porto Seguro *and* Spirito Sancto; *ſo that the garriſons of* St. Salvador *and the circumjacent forts, conſiſted in at leaſt two thouſand three hundred, each company conſiſting of one hundred men leſs or more, all choſen men and well cloathed; four companies mounted the guard every night, one at the palace, at each of the two gates one, and the fourth in the water-forts without the city.*

1643.

II. *Of their naval ſtrength they gave a very ſlender account, being more conſiderable in number than force, as conſiſting only in fifty ſmall veſſels and yachts, not in the leaſt fitted for war; neither could they obſerve the leaſt ſhew of preparations tending that way; their aim being only to protect their ſhips bound to the* Portugueſe *coaſts, againſt the inſults of the* Caſtilian *and* Denmark *privateers, and the* Turkiſh *rovers. It was, as they ſaid, upon this account, that, during our ſtay there, two ſtout* Portugueſe *ſhips fit for war, manned with ſix hundred men, and provided with good ſtore of ammunition, arrived in the* Bahia, *under the command of* Salvador Correada-ſa, *with orders to go directly from thence to* Rio de Janeiro, *and to fetch all ſhips ready loaden from thence to the* Bahia, *from whence they were to convoy theſe as well as ſuch other veſſels as they found ready there, to the coaſt of* Portugal; *for which reaſon alſo all the veſſels which otherwiſe uſed to go according to their own conveniency, were ordered to ſtay for the ſaid convoy. That news was brought by the ſaid two ſhips, that the king of* Portugal *had forbid the building of* Caravels *and other ſuch like ſmall veſſels, inſtead of which they were to build ſhips of better defence againſt the inſults of an enemy at ſea. From whence the envoys ſaid they ſuppoſed would ariſe this inconveniency to the* Portugueſe, *that the freights and convoy money paid for the commodities tranſported from* Portugal *to the* Portugueſe Braſil, *and for the ſugar tranſported fnom thence to* Portugal *muſt encreaſe, and conſequently would not be able to ſell the laſt at the ſame price the* Dutch *did, conſidering eſpecially that they muſt be conſi-*

1643. *conſiderable lofers both in their intereſt and time, where they were forced to tarry for their convoys, whereas they uſed formerly to make the beſt of their way home.*

III. *They had obſerved, that though the inhabitants of the* Bahia *expected the coming of thoſe ſhips at their firſt arrival, yet ſeveral veſſels arrived there, both from the* Portugueſe *coaſt and the iſlands before the reſt.*

IV. *They concluded the negro trade to be very inconſiderable there, they having ſcarce ever heard it as much as mentioned; but becauſe the price of a good negro did not at that time amount to above three hundred gilders, they ſuppoſed them pretty well ſtockt with them; thoſe which were of late bought there being brought thither from* Cape Verde *and* Arder. *They further reported, that when on wedneſday being the* 8th *of* February, *they entred the* Bahia, *they met two ſhips of good bulk, carrying about twenty guns each, and well mann'd going out, which upon enquiry were told them to be bound for* Portugal, *but could not learn to what harbour there, which together with ſome other reaſons, made them ſuſpect that they were intended another way, in which we found ourſelves not deceived, when on the* 22d *of* February, *juſt as they were ready for their departure, they underſtood from* Mulat Juliana, *and of two monks, that theſe two ſhips were ſent with men to* Angola, *for the ſecurity of the inhabitants of* Maſagao, *who being but ſmall in number, were ſorely afraid to be ſet upon by the negroes of the countrey, and having deſired the governor's aſſiſtance, who ordered thoſe ſhips and the men to go in the night time, and to endeavour to reach* Maſagao *unperceived by any, and without committing any hoſtilities againſt the* Dutch. *Whether and how far this might be true, time would ſhew, but they had all the reaſon in the world to believe, that it was upon their ſcore of concealing this expedition, as well as ſome other matters from them, that immediately after arrival (though they were not informed of it till near the time of their departure) that no* Dutch *or* Germans *ſhould appear, as much as in the ſight of the envoys, much leſs diſcourſe with them; which was obſerved with that ſtrictneſs that they really imagined there had been no* Dutch *there; but found afterwards that they had been all (how many they knew not) carried on board the* Portugueſe *veſſels, to prevent their keeping any correſpondency with us and our ſhips crew; to which end alſo, ſix centinels were placed in two boats lying near our yacht, during the time of our ſtay here, under pretence of protecting our veſſel, but in effect to prevent any body from coming on board us, purſuant to the orders of the governor.*

V. *That the inhabitants of the* Bahia *and the other* Portugueſe *captainſhips, had not the leaſt commerce at this time with thoſe of* Bonas Aires. *That immediately after the revolution in* Portugal, *thoſe of the* Bahia *had attempted to go thither, but were treated as enemies by them; ſo that it was their opinion, the place would either ſoon, or was already totally ruined for want of commerce; all their livelihood conſiſting in the traffick from the coaſt of* Braſil *thither; which falling away, no ſilver could be tranſported thither from* Peru; *it being not probable that the* Spaniards *would run the hazard of paſſing along an enemy's coaſt, when they had a ſafer way to tranſport their treaſures from the* Weſt-Indies. 1643.

VI. *That they could not get the leaſt certain information concerning the deſigns carried on betwixt ſome of the inhabitants of the* Bahia, *and thoſe of the* Dutch Braſil *againſt the laſt; beſides which they gave them a general relation of what they had been able to learn, concerning the condition of the city of* St. Salvador, *its inhabitants, governour, and ſome other matters relating to the countrey thereabouts.*

Another revolt of the Portugueſe.

The rumours which in 1640 were noiſed about concerning the treacherous deſigns of the *Portugueſe* inhabitants againſt us, being for that time vaniſhed into ſmoak, the ſame was revived, and their deſigns began to be diſcovered in *February* 1645, *viz.* That confiding in the promiſed ſuccours from *Bahia*, they intended to riſe in arms againſt us, looking upon this juncture as the moſt favourable for their purpoſe, ſince count *Maurice* with the greateſt part of our fleet, and a good number of ſoldiers were returned to *Holland*, from whence no freſh ſupplies were come of late into *Braſil*. The great council not being ignorant of this, were indefatigable in their care, to leave no ſtone unturned to find out the ring-leaders of this rebellion, ſo as to charge them effectually with this crime, and find out ſufficient cauſe for their commitment. They ſent out ſeveral of their officers into the countrey, as ſpies, to ſound the inclinations of the people, and whether they could meet with any one who incited the reſt to an inſurrection. The like he did on the other ſide of the river of *St. Francis*, and in *Kamaron*'s camp, whither they had ſent certain perſons to inveſtigate their deſigns, and to learn what preparations they made for war, and whether they were intended againſt *Pernambuko*, but were not able to find out any thing, upon which they could make any ſure account. Being nevertheleſs ſenſible that thoſe forewarnings were not altogether groundleſs, and knowing the *Portugueſe*

1643. *tugueſe* to be of ſo haughty a temper (beſides the difference in religion) that they would ſcarce let any opportunity ſlip of withdrawing themſelves from the obedience of their conquerors; they writ the 13th of *February* 1645 the following letter, concerning the deſigns of the *Portugueſe* to the council of nineteen.

A letter from the great council to the Weſt-India *company.*

Moſt noble and right honourable,

A letter from the great council to the Weſt-India *company.*

DURING *the government of his excellency count* Maurice, *there were already ſeveral of the inhabitants of this ſtate entred into ſecret cabals to riſe in mutiny againſt us, in hopes of aſſiſtance from the* Bahia; *their buſineſs was to inſinuate into thoſe that were well affected to them, after their good ſucceſs in* Maranhaon, *that our forces being conſiderably weakned by the ſtrong detachments ſent to the garriſons of* Angola, St. Thomas, *and others, a fair opportunity was offered them, to withdraw themſelves from our obedience, and to enjoy their former liberty under their own king. They were not a little encouraged in their deſign, imagining the ſame might be carried on without any great difficulty, when they found that of late we had received no ſupplies either of meat or other proviſions, or of ſoldiers from* Holland, *whereby the ſtorehouſes of the company here being exhauſted, the garriſons of the forts were forced to be ſupplied from time to time with farinha and freſh meats out of the countrey, they judged, if they could once be maſters in the field, they muſt of neceſſity fall into their hands; as it happened in* 1640 *to the* Spaniſh *garriſons in* Portugal, *who for the ſame reaſon were not in a condition to hold out againſt the* Portugueſe; *being beſides that ſenſible that unleſs we would too much weaken our garriſons, we had no ſufficient number of troops left to appear formidable in the field. Theſe and other ſuch like inſinuations have been frequently ſpread among the* Portugueſe, *by thoſe, who finding themſelves moſt uneaſy under our government, hoped for a change of their affairs, by changing their maſters; which however wrought no conſiderable effect, as long as his excellency continued in the government, partly becauſe we being forewarned of their deſigns, kept a watchful eye over all their actions, partly becauſe our ſea and land forces being much more conſiderable at that time than they are now, they had but little proſpect of ſucceeding in their enterprize, which therefore they judged moſt convenient to defer till after his excellency's departure, which as it was ſufficiently known before hand, ſo they were ſenſible that thereby our forces both by ſea and land muſt be conſiderably weakned, and conſequently would furniſh them with a fairer opportunity of putting their ſo long rejected deſign in execution; the more, becauſe that many of the* Portugueſe *who relying hitherto upon the authority of count* Maurice, *as the only means to keep the ſoldiers in awe, being now put in fear of the executions and exorbitancies likely to be committed by the covetous officers and rapacious ſoldiers, would be forced to join with them againſt us. After the departure of his excellency for* Holland, *thoſe cabals have inſtead of divine things encreaſed every day; they have been very diligent in getting information concerning the ſtrength of all our garriſons, with an intent to carry on their deſigns before we could be reinforced with ſupplies of men and proviſions from* Holland; *to effect which, they have by meſſengers ſent to the* Bahia, *ſollicited for ſuccours of men and arms, of which as it ſeems they have no ſmall hopes. There is great reaſon to believe that the journey of* Andrew Vidal *from the* Bahia *hither, in* Auguſt *laſt, undertaken under pretence of taking his leave before his return to* Portugal, *in order to ſerve the king there, was founded upon no other motive than to inform himſelf moſt narrowly concerning the true ſtate of affairs here, in order to give a verbal account thereof in the* Bahia *and afterwards in* Portugal; *as likewiſe to ſound the inclinations of the inhabitants, and to animate ſuch as he found well diſpoſed for his intereſt, with hopes of ſpeedy ſuccours from the* Bahia; *we have ſince received ſecret intelligence that he has been preſent at ſeveral of theſe cabals. But though they were greatly encouraged with theſe hopes of good ſucceſs, by reaſon of the diminution of our forces and ſcarcity of proviſions, they were not very forward in venturing upon this enterpriſe, being ſenſible that their deſign having taken vent, we made all neceſſary preparations againſt them; beſides that many of the* Portugueſe *inhabitants, being beyond their expectation, well ſatisfied with the government of the great council, did rather chuſe to live quietly and ſecurely, than to engage in ſo dangerous an enterpriſe. So that things remained without any conſiderable alteration at preſent; and as matters ſtand now we are not able to find out ſufficient cauſe to ſatisfy ourſelves whether they proceed in the ſame deſign. Their chief deſign as we are credibly informed was laid againſt the* Receif, *which they intended to ſurpriſe, upon a certain day appointed for the ſale of negroes, when the inhabitants of the countrey flocking thither in great numbers, they did not doubt but with the aſſiſtance of our own negroes, who are for the moſt part papiſts, to make themſelves, maſters of the place, not queſtioning but if this ſucceeded, the reſt would ſoon be forced to yield. But in this they were prevented, by the ſtrong guards we took care to poſt in the* Receif *on thoſe fair days.*

1643.

The

1643. *The chief ringleaders, as they are ſpecified to us, are* John Fernandes Vieira, *and his father-in-law* Franciſco Beringel, *with ſeveral others, whom we would have committed to priſon, if we could have had more certain information againſt them; but though we left no ſtone unturned to find out the truth, yet could we not meet with ſufficient motives to induce us either to impriſon them, or to proceed again to the general diſarming of the inhabitants, we having received certain intelligence, that ſo ſoon as we ſhould attempt it, we muſt expect no leſs than a general inſurrection, which conſidering our own magazines and ſtore-houſes were ſo ill provided, and no ſufficient force could be drawn out of the garriſon to ſecure the open countrey, would have drawn after it very ill conſequences for our nation, eſpecially thoſe living at ſome diſtance from our forts, who thereby, as we had reaſon to fear, might have been expoſed to the danger of being maſſacred by the* Portugueſe. *It is evident from the information given to your lordſhips in* Holland, *and tranſmitted to us, that the ſubjects of the king of* Portugal *themſelves are encouraged and animated againſt us; wherefore it will be abſolutely neceſſary to be very cautious, and to haſten the ſupplies we have ſo often requeſted at your hands. Upon the firſt information we received, that toward the ſouth of the* Receif *the* Portugueſe *intended to land ſome men or arms, we ſent the* 13th *of* October *a yacht, the* Enckhuyſen *with another galliot and chaloop to cruiſe thereabouts, but they returned after ſome time without being able to diſcover any ſuch thing. The next intelligence we had was, that a fleet was equipping in the* Bahia, *to tranſport ſome forces, for the aſſiſtance of our rebellious ſubjects; to find out the bottom of this deſign, we thought we could pitch upon no better expedient than to ſend thither Mr.* Gilbert de Witt *and* Dirk Hoogſtraten *with certain inſtructions; of which we have enloſed the copy, who ſet ſail the* 22th *of the laſt month. Being further informed that a certain* Portugueſe *captain with an enſign and three ſoldiers have been lately diſpatched from the* Bahia *to our captainſhips, to endeavour to ſtir up our ſubjects to rebellion, with aſſurance of ſuccours from thence; we have employed all neceſſary means to find them out and get them into our hands. We ſhall not be wanting in any thing, which according as occaſion preſents, may contribute to the preſervation of this ſtate.*

Receif 13th February, 1645.

The 4th the great council were informed by letter from *Iſnac Raſiere* and captain *Blewbeck*, written at *Parayba*, that a rumour was ſpread thereabouts that *Kamaron* chief commander of the *Braſilians* in the *Bahia*, was on his march from *Sertao* to *Siara*, to join with the *Braſilians* inhabiting thereabouts, to attack with their united forces the inhabitants of the captainſhip of *Rio Grande*. Whereupon the council ſent orders to *Hans Vogel*, governor of *Seregippo del Rey*, to get intelligence and ſend them ſpeedy word whether *Kamaron* with his camp were ſtill in *Rio Real*; and if not, whither he had taken his march, or whither he intended to take it. They alſo ſent word to the inhabitants of *Parayba*, that they ſhould be very diligent in enquiring after the cauſe of this rumour, and ſend them intelligence accordingly. The 15th of *May* they received an anſwer from *Hans Vogel*, dated the 25th of *April* at *Seregippo del Rey*, wherein he told them that purſuant to their orders he had ſent a ſerjeant with ſome ſoldiers to *Kamaron*'s head quarters, about ten leagues from *Seregippo del Rey*, under pretence of looking for ſome deſerters; who after their return reported, that his forces conſiſting of two hundred *Portugueſe* and one thouſand two hundred *Braſilians*, were ſtill in the ſame place, buſied for the moſt part in cultivating ſome plantations, *Kamaron* himſelf being then in the *Bahia*, to aſſiſt at the ſolemnity of their eaſter; from whence they conjectured, that the rumour concerning his march was only a fiction. But two days after the ſame rumour was renewed by two paſſengers coming from *Rio St. Franciſco*, and being landed by one *John Hoen*, a maſter of a veſſel near *Kandelaria*; but upon a more ſtrict enquiry made by the council, the ſaid maſter of the veſſel declared, that on the eighth of the ſame month, when he left *Rio de Franciſco*, there was no news of *Kamaron*'s march. 1643.

The 30th of *May* 1645, a letter without a name was delivered to the great council by one *Abraham Markado* a jew, ſubſcribed only *plus ultra*. This letter being tranſlated out of the *Portugueſe* the ſame night, the contents thereof were, that three unknown perſons gave them notice that a good body of troops were come from *Rio Real* into *Parayba*, with an intention to join with a diſcontented party there, and to ſurprize the *Dutch* forts; with advice to ſeize upon the perſon of *John Fernandes Vieira* their chief ringleader.

The letter is as follows,

A letter of intelligence to the council.

WE ſtand amazed you are ſo ſecure, when it is reported that the Matta *of* Parayba *is full of ſoldiers, come thither lately from* Rio Real, *who conſiſting in a good number of negroes, mulats, and* Portugueſe, *with* Kamaron

1643. Kamaron *at the head of them, began their march in the month of* March, *expecting now to be joined by other troops, which hitherto were ſtopt by the overflowing of the rivers. Their aim is to encourage the inhabitants to take up arms, which done, they expect conſiderable ſuccours from the* Bahia, *both by ſea and land, wherewith they pretend to block you up in the* Receif, *intending to fix their camp either at* Olinda, *or in the* Vergea, *and quarter the ſoldiers in the* Fregeſies *thereabouts. They boaſt that their forces are already conſiderably encreaſed by thoſe who are indebted to the company, and other vagabonds, and threatned to maſſacre all ſuch of your ſubjects as refuſe to join with them. A certain perſon of note and reputation belonging to the ſame camp, has given us this information, in order to communicate it to your lordſhips to be upon your guard, which we do accordingly by theſe preſents. The ſame perſon told us, that* John Fernandes Vieira *was the chief ringleader of this inſurrection, who maintains the rebellious crew in the* Matta, *as they meet together, till a certain day appointed for their rendezvous, when they are with their joint forces to attack all the* Dutch *forts and out-guards at once. We were alſo told, that the ſaid* Vieira *does not ſleep in his houſe, and is always upon his guard; to try which, you have no more to do than to ſend ſome to take him, with his ſervants and factors; which if you could do they would be all amazed, and make an open confeſſion, which may be done without the leaſt hazard; for if you miſcarry in the attempt, it will nevertheleſs not redound to your diſadvantage. We conjure your lordſhips to take care of this poor nation, for fear they ſhould be forced to join with the rebels againſt you. We judge it therefore abſolutely neceſſary to undertake the buſineſs without delay, with all imaginable ſecreſy; for if they find themſelves diſcovered, they will begin the game immediately; ſo that ſtrong guards ought to be put in the outworks, and in the harbours of* Kandelaria *and the* Receif. *We adviſe your lordſhips to oblige the inhabitants forthwith to ſurrender their arms, to order all the maſters of the ſugar-mills, with their planters, to appear in the* Receif, *eſpecially thoſe of the* Fregeſies *of* Vergea, Garaſſu, St. Lorenzo, St. Amaro, Moribeca, de Cabo, Pojuka, *and* Serinhaim, *with aſſurance that they ſhall not be moleſted for any debts there; and when they are come, to detain them till they ſee what is further to be done, under pretence of ſecuring them againſt the attempts of the rebels in the country, by which means you will both ſecure the government, and oblige many private perſons. The ſame method ought to be uſed with thoſe of* Parayba, *where they may be detained in the fort, as well as thoſe of* Porto Calvo *in that place. Thus if you can get the chiefeſt into your hands, the deſign will dwindle away to nothing. We beſeech you not to ſend away any more ſoldiers before you have made a full diſcovery of the rebellion, and provide your forts with good garriſons; whither we would alſo have all the* Dutch *inhabitants to retire for fear of being maſſacred. We three being faithful ſubjects of your lordſhips, have now ſatisfied our conſciences in propoſing your remedy, which conſiſts in the taking of* Vieira, *which muſt be undertaken with great ſecrecy and foreſight, he being, as it is ſaid, continually upon his guard. Your lordſhips will be ſenſible without our advice how much it concerns them, not to divulge to any, from whom they have received this information; and we aſſure you, that we will not fail to give further intelligence of what we are able to learn by way of letters; and one time or other, we ſhall make no difficulty to let you know, who theſe three faithful ſubjects are. If we had been preſent, we could have declared no more than we have done in this letter. Your lordſhips muſt take effectual care againſt their attempts without delay, the approaching feaſt being the time appointed for the putting it in execution. We have ſent you immediate notice after it came to our knowledge: We adviſe you likewiſe to ſeize upon* Franciſco Beringel, Vieira's *father-in-law, and* Antonio Kavalkanti; *and in ſhort, all the chiefeſt of the* Vergeas, *and other places.* Signed, 1643.

A. Verdade.

Plus Ultra.

Hereupon the great council called *Paul de Linge*, preſident of the council of juſtice, vice-admiral *Cornelius Lichthart*, and lieutenant colonel *Garſtman*, into their aſſembly, to conſult unanimouſly what were beſt to be done at this juncture for the preſervation of the *Dutch Braſil*; when by this, as well as ſeveral other letters and intelligences, they were forewarned of the approaching danger; and notwithſtanding they were much in doubt, whether they ought to make any certain account upon a letter written without a name; yet conſidering all the circumſtances of this, as well as ſeveral other informations, it was judged abſolutely neceſſary to provide for the ſafety of the *Dutch Braſil*, againſt any attempt of an enemy.

I. By providing all the forts with meal for two months.

II. By giving immediate notice to all commanders of forts to be conſtantly upon their guard.

III. To write to *John Liſtry*, chief commander

mander of the *Braſilians*, to keep his people in readineſs with their arms in the villages, to be ready to march upon the firſt orders from the council, we being not in a condition to take the field without them.

IV. To ſend abroad their ſpies in all corners, even into the woods, to get intelligence whereabouts the enemies troops are, and to give timely notice of what they are able to learn to the council.

V. It was agreed, to ſummon *John Fernandes Vieira*, the chief ringleader of the intended rebellion, and his ſecurities, *Franciſco Beringel*, *Vieira*'s father-in-law, and *Bernardin Karvalho*, unto the *Receif*, under pretence of making a ſecond agreement with him, which he earneſtly deſired; by which means they ſhould ſecure his perſon, know the whole bottom of the *Portugueſe* deſign, and conſequently be the better able to prevent it. A certain broker called *Koin*, who ſollicited this agreement for *Vieira*, was prevailed upon to undertake this taſk, which he might do without the leaſt ſuſpicion; but the *Whitſontide* holidays put ſome ſtop to it for the preſent. With the ſame care the great council employed all poſſible means to get the other perſons of the *Vergea*, ſuſpected to have a hand in this rebellious deſign, into their hands, under ſome pretence or other, they being not likely to be taken by force, becauſe they did not lodge in their mills and houſes in the night time, and by day were ſo ſtrictly upon their guard, that they could not poſſibly be ſurprized.

The 31st of *May*, vice-admiral *Lichthart*, and *Henry Haus*, a lieutenant, offered to undertake the delivering of *John Fernandes Vieira* to the council, which they intended to effect, under pretence of giving him a viſit, and going a fiſhing with him in the lake *Lewis Bras Biſerra*.

Further advice concerning the inſurrection.

The 9th of *July*, the great council received advice by a letter from Mr. *Koin*, governour of *Rio St. Franciſco*, dated the 1st of *June*, that *Kamaron*, with a ſmall body was paſſed the river *St. Francis*; therefore he deſired ſome aſſiſtance of men, with ſuitable ammunition.

The ſame was confirmed by another letter, dated the 27th of *June*, with advice, that as yet no enemy had appeared within ſight of the fort.

Frequent intelligence being likewiſe ſent to the council, that in the *Matta* of *St. Lawrence*, and ſome other diſtant places, conſiderable numbers of ſoldiers from the *Bahia*, of Mulats and Negroes, were gathering in a body, they ſent ſeveral ſmall bodies thither, under command of ſuch as were well acquainted with that country, who all unanimouſly reported, that they could meet with no ſoldiers, mulats, or any other vagabonds thereabouts. 1643.

The 12th of *June*, the director *Moucheron* ſent further advice, that he had been credibly informed, by letters dated the 8th of the ſame month, from *Rio St. Franciſco*, that *Kamaron* and *Henrico Dias*, with ſix companies of *Braſilians*, Mulats, and Negroes, were paſs'd the ſaid river; and that juſt as he was concluding his letter, two inhabitants of the *Algoas* had given him to underſtand, that ſome of them had been at their houſes for ſome meal; the copies of which letters he ſent to the council, who did now not in the leaſt queſtion, but that their aim was upon the *Dutch Braſil*, eſpecially ſince they were forewarned by ſeveral letters from *St. Antonio*, that the inhabitants thereabouts ſeem'd to prepare for a revolt.

The Reſolution of the council thereupon.

The council finding their project of taking *Vieira* by craft, not to ſucceed, becauſe he and the ſecurities of his father-in-law, *Franciſco Beringel*, and *Bernardino Karvalho*, could not be cajoled into the *Receif*, under pretence of renewing their former contract, and looking upon him as the chief ringleader of this revolt, they ordered *Joachim Denniger*, a lieutenant, with a good number of ſoldiers, to the mill and houſe of the ſaid *John Fernandes Vieira*, to bring his perſon from thence to the *Receif*. Accordingly *Denniger* advanced with his ſoldiers towards the evening near the mills, which he ſurrounded, and about midnight unexpectedly entred both the houſe and mills, making a moſt ſtrict ſearch throughout all the rooms and corners, but to no purpoſe. In the morning he withdrew at ſome diſtance, but return'd the next night, when after having made another ſearch, but in vain, he was informed by one of his *Turkiſh* ſlaves, and ſome Negroes, that neither *Vieira*, nor his father-in-law *Beringel*, had ſlept in their houſes theſe laſt three weeks; that ſometimes they came thither on horſeback, but after a very ſhort ſtay went their ways again. *Denniger* likewiſe ſearch'd the houſes of *Antonio Kavalkanti* and *Antonio Biſerra*, but to as little purpoſe as thoſe of the former, being informed by their Negroes, that they had abſconded for ſome weeks before.

In the mean while, the council ſent divers parties abroad, under the command of *Hans Katner*, *Slodiniſki*, and *Cunraed Hilt*, all which, after their return, agreed in this, that there were no enemies there as yet, eſpecially not in the *Matta*, where they met with no body but thoſe

1643. that were employed in manuring the grounds.

The great council finding themſelves altogether diſappointed in their hopes of taking *Vieira*, reſolved to ſecure immediately the perſons of *Franciſco Beringel*, *Vieira*'s father-in-law; *Bernardino Karvalho*, and his brother *Sebaſtian Karvalho*, *Lewis Bas*, *Amaro Lopez*, and *John Peſſoa*, being perſons ſuſpected to have a hand in the conſpiracy, inhabiting the *Vergea*. In the more diſtant provinces were ordered to be ſeized

In *St. Amaro*, *Antonio de Bulhous*.

In *St. Antonio*; *Amador d'Arouja*; *Pedro Marinho Falcao*; *Antonio del Raſto*.

In *Pojuka*; *Kornero de Morais*; father *Frey Lewis*; and *Franciſco Dias del Gado*.

In *Serinhaim*; *John Albuquerq*, ſon-in-law of *Pero Lopez de Vera*.

In *Porto Calvo*; *Rodrigues de Barros Pimentel*.

In *Iguaraka*; *John Pimenta*.

In *Itamarika*; father *Lawrence d'Alkunha*.

And in *Rio Grande*; *John Leſtan Navarro*.

But it being moſt of all to be feared that the inhabitants of *Parayba*, who were much indebted, would revolt before all the reſt, Mr. *Paul de Linge* was ſent thither immediately in the quality of director, with full power to act both in that and the *Captainſhip* of *Rio Grande*, as he ſhould find it moſt expedient for the company, with expreſs orders to preſs 100 men out of the ſhips, with proportionable proviſions, immediately after his arrival there, which were to be diſpoſed in the fort of *St. Margaret*, both for its defence, and to keep the inhabitants in due obedience.

Parayba ſecured.

And conſidering that the ſcarcity of proviſions was one of the main obſtacles to be ſurmounted on our ſide, which as the caſe then ſtood, would more and more increaſe, unleſs we could remain maſters of the field, from whence we drew moſt of our proviſions, and to over-awe the diſcontented inhabitants, it was judged requiſite, to form a ſmall camp near *S. Lawrence*; and accordingly the two lieutenants *Huykqueſloot* and *Hamel* were order'd thither with 35 men each, the firſt from *Iguaraka*, the laſt from *Moribeka*, as likewiſe captain *Wiltſchut*, with 50 men more from the *Receif*; *John Liſtry*, commander in chief of the *Braſilians*, was likewiſe ordered to join them with all poſſible ſpeed, 300 *Braſilians* under their own commanders.

A ſmall camp near St. Lawrence.

The ſame day (being the 12th) after a view was taken of the fortifications of *Moribeka* town, the ſame were ordered to be repaired, and news being brought, that *John Fernandes Vieira* had been ſeen in his mill the ſame night, the council endeavoured with all poſſible care to have ſecured his perſon, but in vain; it being certain, that (according to the depoſitions made by his ſteward of the mill, called *St. John*, before the publick notary *Indiik*, in the *Receif*, 21 *Jan.* 1647.) near ſix months before the breaking out of this inſurrection, he had never ſlept one night in his houſe: And whenever he happened to be there in the day-time, he remained for the moſt part in a turret on the top of the houſe, from whence he could have a proſpect at a great diſtance; if his buſineſs called him below, he put ſome body elſe there to keep the watch; who, if they ſaw but two or three perſons come that way, gave immediate notice thereof to him; and if any *Dutch* in a body were diſcovered, he retired inſtantly into the adjacent woods. He had likewiſe placed ſome Negroes at a certain diſtance from the houſe, who were to give notice of the approach of any unknown perſons that way. 1643.

The 13th *Sebaſtian Karvalho* and *Antonio de Bulhous*, were brought in priſoners to the *Receif*, the reſt who were ſenſible of their guilt, having eſcaped their hands; the firſt being examined the ſame night by the aſſeſſor of the court of juſtice, Mr. *Walbeek*, concerning the intended conſpiracy, gave him the following account by word of mouth.

Sebaſtian Karvalho *brought in priſoner.*

His CONFESSION.

His confeſſion.

THAT he was one of thoſe three, who a few days ago, had by way of letter given an account of an intended conſpiracy in the Vergea, *to the great council, the ring-leader thereof being* John Fernandes Vieira, *who, with the reſt of his* Portugueſe *accomplices, relied upon the ſuccours promiſed them from the* Bahia; *with what he had judged moſt proper for obviating the ſame. That the whole deſign of this conſpiracy was laid open to him by means of a certain writing, in form of an aſſociation, which was delivered to him by a* Portugueſe ſervant *of the ſaid* Vieira, *together with a letter, in which he deſired him to ſubſcribe the ſame, there being no more than two who had ſubſcribed it at that time,* viz. John Fernandes Vieira, *and* Lewis da Coſta Sepulpeda. *The contents of this aſſociation were, that they promiſed to riſe in arms againſt this ſtate, and to ſacrifice their lives and eſtates for the recovery of the* Dutch Braſil, *under the obedience of the king of* Portugal. *That indeed he had ſigned the ſaid aſſociation, but given immediate notice thereof to* Ferdinando Vale *and a third perſon beſides; and that he, together with Mr.* Vale,

had

1643. *had cauſed the beforemention'd letter, directed to the great council, to be delivered to* Merkado *the phyſician. That the inſurrection was intended to extend all over* Dutch Braſil, *but that the inhabitants of the* Captainſhip *of* Parayba *were moſt to be feared, as being moſt indebted, and conſequently bearing an ill-will to our government. That their main deſign was to ſurprize one of our forts, on or near the ſea-ſide, whereby they might ſecure themſelves a place to receive ſuccours from the* Bahia; *from whence they expected to be aſſiſted with two men of war, and three or four fregates. That he had ſigned this aſſociation barely out of fear of* Vieira, *who had threatned thoſe that ſhould refuſe with no leſs than death, and had cauſed ſeveral to be murthered upon that account.*

His confeſſion agreeing in all points with what *Ferdinando Vale* had depoſed before, and being all that time ſorely afflicted with the gravel, he was diſpenſed with from any further examination.

The council being by this depoſition of *Karvalho* fully convinced of the treachery of *Vieira* and his adherents, it was reſolved to attempt once more the taking of the ſaid *Vieira*, if perhaps he might as yet lurk ſomewhere or other near the *Receif*, and of his factor *Mor Manuel de Souſa*, engaged in the ſame deſign; as likewiſe of *Antonio Bezerra* and *Amaro Lopez*, both inhabitants of the *Vergea*, but in vain. Thoſe who were ſent upon that errand, bringing back no other ſatisfaction, than that they were not to be met with thereabouts, and that beſides that, *Antonio* and *Manuel Kavalkanti*, *Antonio Bezerra*, *John Peſſoa*, and *Coſmo de Kraſto*, were the ſame day retired out of the *Vergea* to the *Matta*. The ſame day captain *Wiltſchut* was ordered to ſeize the publick notary, *Caſpar Pereira*, dwelling in *St. Lawrence*, who was ſuppoſed to have drawn the beforementioned aſſociation; and it was reſolved to ſend a pardon to *Antonio Kavalkanti*, and *John Pais Kaeral*, who having a great family at home, might thereby be prevailed upon to quit the party of the rebels, whereby we ſhould both weaken that of the enemy, and get a further inſight into their deſigns. *Antonio de Bulhous* being examined at the ſame time, ingenuouſly confeſſed that he had not the leaſt knowledge of the conſpiracy; *Sebaſtian Karvalho* being, notwithſtanding his former confeſſion, detained priſoner upon ſuſpicion till the 4th of *Auguſt*, was, at his requeſt, diſmiſſed by the great council, after having given ſufficient proof that he was one of the three who writ the letter concerning the intended conſpiracy to the council.

Karvalho *diſcharged.*

The 14th of *June*, orders were given to all the inhabitants of the *Receif*, and thoſe living upon the back of the river, to ſurround their dwelling places with palliſadoes, under forfeiture of 200 gilders. And to render the companies the more compleat, and expoſe our men to as little danger as might be of being ſurpriſed by the enemy, all the ſafeguards were commanded to be withdrawn by Mr. *Haus*, near the *Receif*, and in *Serinhaim* by captain *Fallo*, who was likewiſe ordered to remove the garriſon of *Huna* to another place of more ſtrength. The better to ſupply the ſcarcity of proviſions in the forts, which for want thereof might be in danger of falling into the enemies hands, orders were diſpatch'd to the chief commanders, to ſeize upon what quantity of *Farinha* (or meal) they ſtood in need of for the uſe of their reſpective garriſons among the inhabitants of the country, which they were to be paid for by the commiſſaries of the company. It was alſo thought neceſſary, that for the greater ſecurity of *Maurice*'s town, the ditches of the fort *Erneſtus* ſhould be made larger, as likewiſe the *Quinqueregular* fort, which was put in execution by *Haus*, as vice-admiral *Lichthart* took care to have two ſpy ſhips poſted, one betwixt the *Quinqueangular* fort and the fort *Bruin*, the other beyond *Baretta*, to prevent any ſurprize on that ſide at low tide; it was alſo reſolved not to let any ſhips or boats go out of the *Receif*, without a paſs from the great council. The major of the city militia was ordered to keep the reſt of his officers with the ſoldiery in readineſs againſt the 17th, to paſs the review, the ſame day being alſo appointed to the garriſon for that purpoſe; ſeveral new commanders were alſo choſen for the militia, inſtead of thoſe that were ready to return into *Holland*. The ſame day *Paul Linge* ſet out on his journey into *Parayba*, being furniſhed with fifteen hundred ſoldiers for neceſſary occaſions; and *Bernardino Karvalho*, who had abſconded for ſome time, had, at his requeſt, leave granted him to come to the *Receif* to anſwer for himſelf.

1643. *The* Receif *ſtrengthened with palliſadoes.*

The fortifications of Maurice *town enlarged.*

The 15th *John Peſſoa*, maſter of the ſugar-mill *Pantello*, one of thoſe that were ordered to be ſecured, deſired leave alſo in a letter to the council, to appear before them, his flight being occaſioned not by his guilt, but only fear, which was granted him, as well as the requeſt of father *Lawrence Alkunha*, upon the ſame account.

On the 16th early in the morning, we received ſecret intelligence, that *Andrew Vidal*, at the head of 1000 *Portugueſe*, and *Kamaron* with *d'Indeos Rondelas*, and *Henry*

1643. ry *Dias* with a body of arm'd Negroes, had poſted themſelves above *St. Anthony*, near the ſugar-mill *Topekura*. The ſame day *John Karnero de Maris*, and *Franciſco Dias del Gado*, both maſters of ſugar-mills in the diſtrict of *Pojuka*, ordered to be apprehended, were brought priſoners to the *Receif*, and *Amador da Rouje*, and *Pero Marinha Falkao*, inhabitants of *St. Anthony*, who had hitherto abſconded, did aſk permiſſion to come to the *Receif* to anſwer for themſelves, which was eaſily granted.

Our camp removed to Moribeka.

It was then taken into deliberation by the great council, whether, according to the laſt intelligences received of the enemies deſigns, it were not moſt expedient to remove our ſmall camp from *St. Lawrence* to *Moribeka*, which after ſome debates, was agreed upon accordingly, thereby to ſecure the paſſage of the river *Sangea*, and conſequently to remain maſters of the country as far as the cape of *St. Auſtin*, from whence both the camp and the *Receif* might conveniently be ſupplied, both with *Farinha* and cattle; whereas on the contrary, if the enemy ſhould be poſſeſſed of it, he might (as had been done in the former wars) cut off all ſupplies coming from the ſouth to the *Receif*.

Purſuant to this reſolution, orders were ſent to captain *Wiltſchut* to march immediately to *Moribeka*, to expect there the coming of the *Braſilians*, and ſome further ſuccours: In the mean while, to poſt himſelf in the church, and to fortify the ſame againſt any ſudden attack: And the aldermen of *Maurice*'s town were ordered to buy up the neceſſary proviſions, both of *Farinha* and cattle about *Moribeka*, for their uſe. A proclamation was alſo iſſued, commanding all the inhabitants of *Serinhaim*, *Pojuka*, *St. Antonio*, and *Moribeka*, without any exception, to repair well armed, both horſe and foot, with all poſſible ſpeed to *St. Antonio*, there to liſt themſelves for the defence of the open country, under the command of colonel *Gaſpar Vander Ley*, and lieutenant colonel *John Heck:* Thoſe that were not able to maintain themſelves at their own charge, being to receive their proviſion from the company, like other ſoldiers: The ſaid colonel and lieutenant colonel offering at the ſame time, to furniſh fifteen hundred *Alquera*'s or meaſures of *Farinha*, for the uſe of our garriſons, for ready money.

The ſame day the great council received a letter from *Antonio Kavalkanti*, (unto whom they had lately ſent his pardon) in which he proteſted, that neither he nor the reſt of the inhabitants of the *Vergea* were concerned in any cabals againſt the ſtate, their flight being occaſioned only by fear of being impriſoned upon ſuſpicion, raiſed againſt them by their enemies. The anſwer of the council was to this effect, That if he knew himſelf innocent, he ſhould return to his mill, this being the only means to recover his former reputation. 1643.

The great council having great reaſon to ſuſpect, that *Kamaron* would endeavour to bring the *Braſilians* under their juriſdiction over to his party, reſolved, in order to ſecure them in their intereſt, to treat with *Liſtry*, their commander in chief, to perſuade them, to ſend their wives and children into the iſle of *Tamarika*, under pretence of ſecuring them againſt any attempts of the enemy, to which they might in all probability be expoſed in the open villages; but in effect, to keep them as pledges of their fidelity.

Number of thoſe ſent from Bahia *to the rebels.*

The ſame day the council received ſecret intelligence from *Antonio d'Olivera*, that the ſuccours ſent to the rebels from the *Bahia*, conſiſted in a conſiderable number of *Portugueſe*, under the the command of the brother of *Kavalkanti*; of four hundred *Braſilians*, under the command of *Kamaron*; three hundred *Indeos Rondelas* from *Sertoa*; and fifty Negroes, under command of *Henry Dias*.

Enſign Sloteniſki *ſent abroad, and his account.*

On the ſame 16th of *June*, Mr. *Sloteniſki*, enſign of the guards, was ſent abroad to be at the campaigne, with eleven firelocks, and twelve *Braſilians*, who returning the 24th of *June*, gave the following account to the great council. That he took his way from the *Receif* directly to *St. Lawrence*, and from thence directly to the village of *St. Michael*; where being joined by his *Braſilians*, he marched thro' *St. Franciſco* to *Kaſura*, from thence to *Geyta*, and ſo further through the *Matta* to *St. Sebaſtian*, where all the inhabitants had left their houſes. At *St. Sebaſtian* he paſſed the river *Topikura*, and coming to *John Fernandes Vieira*'s park, met there with good able horſes. The Negroes told him, they had orders from their maſter to fly from before the *Dutch*, but to furniſh the *Portugueſe* with what they deſired. From thence he marched to *Antonio*, and in his way thither did light upon a houſe belonging likewiſe to *John Fernandes Vieira*, where he found about fifty or ſixty ſheep, with good ſtore of poultry, intended for the uſe of the ſick belonging to thoſe rebels, or thoſe come to their aſſiſtance from the *Bahia*. They forewarned him not to advance too far, he being likely to meet ſome troops in the park belonging to the fathers of *St. Bento*; but coming thither found both the *Portugueſe* and Negroes fled. From thence he marched to a houſe belonging to *Michael Fernandes*, who a-

1643. bove three months before had been ordered by *John Fernandes Vieira*, to provide a ſufficient quantity of *Farinha* for the uſe of the ſuccours expected from the *Bahia*; which he lately had tranſported from thence to *Pedro de Alkunha*, where was the rendezvous of two companies of the rebellious inhabitants, where the ſaid *Michael* expected a good ſtore of cattle, bought up by *Vieira* for their uſe, according to the information of a Negro, brought by *Slotcniſki* to the *Receif*. Near the park of *Don Pedro d'Alkunha*, he met with the ſame Mulat who had ſhot captain *Waldeck*, and with two *Hollanders* who had committed murther, and were never pardoned. *John Fernandes Vieira* had promiſed to be with them againſt *Midſummer* day. From thence *Sloteniſki* marched directly to *Una*, and ſo further to *St. Luce*, but met with no body there except one monk, and ſo returned to the *Receif*.

On the 17th of *June* it was reſolved by the great council, with the conſent of the council of juſtice, to iſſue a proclamation for a general pardon, except ſome few ringleaders of the rebellion.

The proclamation was as follows.

A Proclamation *for a general pardon.*

THE great council of Braſil *makes known to every body, whom it may concern, that they being ſenſible, to their grief, how many of their ſubjects, having been miſled by ſome of the ringleaders of the rebellion, have left their mills, wives and children for fear, as has been inſinuated to them, of being diſturbed, plundered, and killed by our ſtragling parties: We being willing to provide againſt it, and to contribute as much as in us lies, to the proſperity of our ſubjects, and their eſtates, have thought fit to publiſh their intention, to be, to defend and protect the inhabitants of the open country, againſt all evil intention'd perſons to the utmoſt of their power. And to reduce thoſe who have left their habitations, to obedience, and prevent their utter deſtruction, we promiſe our pardon to all ſuch as ſhall within five days after ſight of this our proclamation, make their perſonal appearance in the* Receif, *not excepting thoſe who have been actually engaged in the ſaid rebellion (unleſs they are among the number of the chief ringleaders) provided they leave the rebellious party, and return to their former obedience; and that they ſhall enjoy the quiet poſſeſſion of their mills and lands as before, under our protection; under condition however, that they ſhall be obliged to take a new oath of allegiance to the ſtate. Thoſe on the contrary, who ſhall perſiſt in their rebellion, or ſhall aſſiſt the rebels under what pretence ſoever, are hereby declared enemies of the ſtate, who have forfeited their lives and eſtates, whoſe perſons and eſtates ſhall be liable to be proſecuted with fire and ſword*, &c. 1643.

This proclamation being immediately tranſlated into the *Portugueſe* tongue, was ſent in the morning to *St. Antonio* and the *Vergea* to be publiſhed there; ſeveral copies were alſo diſtributed among the friars, in order to publiſh them from the pulpits, and cauſe them to be affixed to the church doors.

The 18th, good ſtore of proviſion and ammunition was ſent to the fort *Keulen*, and *Rio Grande*, and the garriſons of both theſe places forewarned to keep upon their guard. At the ſame time the proclamation of pardon was ſent thither to be publiſhed; and *Antonio Parayba*, chief of the *Braſilians* in thoſe parts, was ſummon'd to keep his *Braſilians* in readineſs with their arms, whenever they ſhould be commanded to give proofs of their fidelity to the company.

The 19th of *June*, two inhabitants of *Porto Calvo*, that were landed but the ſame morning in a ſmall boat on the *Receif*, brought news to the great council, that *Kamaron*, at the head of the *Braſilians*, and *Henry Dias*, with his armed Negroes, conſiſting in ſeven companies, had poſted themſelves in the *Alegoas*, near the ſugar-mill *Velho*; that their number was increaſed ſince to four or five thouſand men, by the conjunction of thoſe who were paſſed the river *St. Franciſco* through the *Matta*, and that they had begun to commit open hoſtilities; ſo that now the council had not the leaſt reaſon to doubt any further of the deſign of the *Portugueſe*. The commander of *Porto Calvo* ſent word much to the ſame purpoſe, and that he prepared for a vigorous defence. The firſt effects of this inſurrection broke out in the diſtrict of *Pojuka*, and conſidering that our whole force there conſiſted only in 30 men, under *Jacob Flemming*, a lieutenant, orders were ſent him to retreat to *St. Antonio*, there to defend themſelves with their joint-forces. The firſt beginning of hoſtilities was made by thoſe of the *Pojuka*, by ſeizing upon two boats, all the paſſengers of which they took priſoners, and ſlew them afterwards, except one ſeaman, who had the good fortune to eſcape. This done, the inhabitants both of the village and the open country, choſe for their head *Tabatinga Amador d'Arravio*, whereby they cut off all communication with the cape *Auſtin* by land, and all about to the ſouth, beſides that, the fort on the ſaid cape could

Open rebellion begun in Pojuka.

1643. could not, but with great difficulty, be ſupplied with water from the river.

The 20th of *June*, a *Braſilian* arrived very early in the morning in the *Receif*; his errant to the council was, that he being ſent by *John Blaar*, from *Porto Calvo*, with letters to the great council, was ſet upon by thoſe of *Pojuka*, near *Kamboa*, who took from him the ſaid letters, and kill'd his companion. For the reſt he told them, that *Kamaron* was poſted in the diſtrict of *Porto Calvo*, and that captain *John Blaar* was in the fort. A council being called to conſider of the beſt means to ſecure the *Dutch-Braſil* againſt any attempts of the enemy, the firſt thing that fell in debate was, whether, according to the general advice of thoſe of the inhabitants, who wiſh'd well to our government, it were not moſt expedient for our defence, to form a camp to make head againſt the enemy in the field; who, if once maſter of the open country, would force the inhabitants to join with him, and cut off our proviſions, without which we could not ſubſiſt long. The next thing to be taken into conſideration was, where to find forces for this camp, the garriſons being ſo weakly manned, as not to be able to ſpare any, and the body under captain *Wiltſchut* conſiſting only of one hundred and twenty men, beſides the three hundred *Braſilians*, to be joined with him. Conſidering therefore that the whole force in the *Allegoas*, conſiſted only of two companies under the command of *Mucheron*, a number not any ways proportionable to the extent of ſo large a tract of ground; it was judg'd moſt convenient to make a virtue of neceſſity, and to draw them from thence to the *Receif*, as indeed they had been ordered before. But their way by land being cut off by the rebels of *Pojuka*, a veſſel, which lay ready to go out a cruſing, was ordered to *Porto Franciſco*, with orders to *Mucheron*, to embark forthwith thoſe forces aboard her, without having any regard to the baggage; but the reſt, which could not be put aboard the veſſel, ſhould be ſent by land to *Rio Franciſco*, to reinforce captain *Koin*, for the better defence of that place. Captain *Fallo* was likewiſe ordered to march with the garriſon of *Serinhaim* to *St. Antonio*, it being not likely that the troops in *Serinhaim* ſhould be able to make head there, after the coming of *Kamaron* into *Porto Calvo*, it being an inland country.

A reinforcement ſent to Tamarika.

The ſame day forty new-liſted ſoldiers were ſent to *Tamarika*, under command of captain *Peter Seuliin*, maſter of the ſugar-mill *Harlem*; becauſe this iſland was of the greateſt conſequence to us; and the garriſons of the fort *Orange*, and the town of *Schop*, conſiſting each of one company, were very weak, and the armed inhabitants did not amount to above one company more. 1643.

The ſame day Mr. *Bas* and Mr. *Van de Voerde*, counſellors of the court of juſtice, were ordered to examine *Gaſpar Pereira* the publick notary, concerning his drawing of the inſtrument of aſſociation; as likewiſe *John Kariero de Maris*, *Franciſco Dias Delgado* maſters of ſugar-mills, in the diſtrict of *Pojuka*, and *Sebaſtian Karvalho*, concerning what they knew of the intended conſpiracy.

Second confeſſion of Karvalho.

Karvalho declared a ſecond time, at the houſe of lieutenant colonel *Haus*, that ſome days ago (he could not remember exactly which) a certain *Portugueſe* ſervant, whom he knew not, did come to him in the name of *John Fernandes Vieira*, with a letter, in which the ſaid *Vieira* deſired him to ſign the encloſed writing drawn in form of an aſſociation, to take up arms againſt the government, as ſoon as they ſhould receive any ſuccours from the *Bahia*; which at that time was ſubſcribed only by *John Fernandes Vieira* and *Lewis da Coſta Sepulpeda*; but, as he ſuppoſed, was to be carried to moſt of the inhabitants. He further declared, that he refuſed to ſign the ſaid writing upon the bare letter of *John Fernandes Vieira*, and the hand-writing being unknown to him, he ſent both the letter and inſtrument of aſſociation back by the ſame lad that brought it, with his anſwer by way of mouth, that he could not ſubſcribe it. Having more maturely weighed the matter, he ſent the ſame evening to his friend *Fernando Vale*, to deſire him to give him a meeting the next morning upon the hills of *Garapes*; which being done accordingly, it was agreed among them to give notice of this conſpiracy to the great council, in a letter without a name. This letter, with the ſubſcription of *plus ultra*, was writ by *Vale*, and about ten days after given him to read in a bakers houſe in the *Pont-ſtreet*, and afterwards given to *Abraham Merkado* the phyſician, who delivered it to the great council.

The ſame day, the 20th of *June*, the great council received a letter from Mr. *Ley* and *Hoek*, dated at *St. Antonio*, importing, that the whole *Fregeſie* had taken up arms, and made ſixteen or eighteen *Dutch* inhabitants priſoners; that they had fortified the church againſt thoſe of *Pojuka*, whom they did not queſtion to force from thence, provided they received any ſuccours from the *Receif*. The council having taken the whole matter into ſerious deliberation, and conſidering with themſelves,

1643. selves, that, as the caſe then ſtood, they had no great reaſon to fear any rebellion in the north, in *Parayba* and *Rio Grande*, as long as our fleet remained near the *Red-Land*, and judging it highly neceſſary to bring the rebels in *Pojuka* to reaſon, and by their puniſhment to deter the reſt from attempting the like; they ordered lieutenant colonel *Haus*, with a detachment of a hundred men, to march the next morning to *Moribeka*, there to join with captain *Wiltſchut* and the *Braſilians*, and ſo continue their march to *St. Antonio*; from whence they were with their joint forces to go directly againſt the Rebels of *Pojuka*, to reduce them to obedience; it being otherwiſe to be feared that they would cut off all communication betwixt the *Receif* and the garriſons to the ſouth. This expedition proved ſo ſucceſsful, that the rebels were put to flight, and lieutenant colonel *Haus* made himſelf maſter both of the town and convent, forcing them to quit all the paſſes thereabouts; and forty priſoners were releaſed, whom they had loaded with irons in the ſaid monaſtery. But having received intelligence of the approach of *Kamaron* with his whole Body againſt him, he deſired further ſuccours from the great council to keep the field; but the garriſon of the *Receif* being too much weakened already, they could ſend him no other reinforcement 'till the expected ſuccours ſhould arrive from *Holland*.

Succours ſent to Pojuka.

A faſt. The 21ſt, it was reſolved by the great council, to proclaim a general faſt all over *Dutch-Braſil*, to be kept the 28th of *June*, to return thanks to God Almighty for the great mercy ſhewn to them on ſeveral occaſions, but eſpecially of late, in the timely diſcovery of the treacherous deſigns of their enemies, who intended to have ſurpriſed them when they were leaſt aware of them.

Scheme of the Portugueſe *Plot.* The deſign of this conſpiracy was laid thus by the *Portugueſe:* They intended in the *Whitſuntide* holidays to make ſolemn rejoycings, with feaſting, tournaments, and ſuch like, on occaſion of ſeveral weddings appointed for that purpoſe, unto which were to be invited all the chief men of *Dutch-Braſil*, both civil and military; whom, after they were flushed with wine, they intended to murther, in imitation of the *Sicilian veſpers*, or the noted *Pariſian wedding*; not queſtioning but that, when the heads of the *Dutch-Braſil* were cut off, the reſt, when attack'd at once in divers places, would fall an eaſy prey into their hands. But being prevented in this bloody deſign for that time, *Midſummer-day* was pitcht upon, as moſt proper for the execution of it, when the ſhips were departed out of the harbour of the *Receif*. For the *Portugueſe* were not ignorant, that we having received no freſh ſupplies, eſpecially of gun-powder, for a conſiderable time out of *Holland*, our magazines were but very indifferently ſupplied both with ammunition and proviſions; and that conſequently we muſt ſoon be reduced to great extremity, if they were maſters of the field: They knew alſo, that all our ſhips, except two, were ready to ſail with the firſt fair wind, being already fallen down to the *Red-Land*; thus being ſenſible of our weakneſs, the *Portugueſe* propoſed to themſelves no leſs than the conqueſt of the whole *Dutch-Braſil* at one ſtroke. But the whole deſign being diſcovered before *Midſummer-day*, it vaniſh'd into ſmoke, both ſides betaking themſelves to decide the matter by arms. 1643.

Pretences of the Portugueſe. The *Portugueſe* pretended not ſo much the Allegiance due to their king, as liberty of conſcience; notwithſtanding which, we have all the reaſon in the world to imagine, that this inſurrection was undertaken not only with the knowledge, but alſo at the inſtigation of the court of *Portugal*, and of thoſe of the *Bahia*; it being very improbable, that *Kamaron*, *Henry Dias*, and the reſt of the ring-leaders, ſhould without the approbation of the king of *Portugal*, have attempted to attack us by open force. Beſides this, *Mucheron* declares to have read in a *Portugueſe* commiſſion theſe words: *This revolt and war undertaken for the honour of God, the propagating of the roman catholick faith, for the ſervice of the king and common liberty:* He further adds, that he has heard ſeveral *Portugueſe* ſay, that if they miſcarried in their deſign of chaſing us out of *Braſil*, to deſtroy all with fire and ſword, thereby to bereave us of all future proſpect of receiving any benefit from thoſe lands; which done, they would retire with their wives and children to the *Bahia*, or ſettle in ſome more remote place, where they might be ſecure againſt any attempts of the *Dutch*. There have indeed been ſome, who, conſidering the unſettled eſtate of the king of *Portugal*, and the odd fancy of his reign, have thought it very improbable, he ſhould involve himſelf in a war with us, or have given his conſent to this inſinuation, but the event has ſufficiently contradicted that opinion.

A letter from the heads of the rebels to the council. The 22d of *June* a letter was delivered to the *great council*, ſigned by *John Fernandes Vieira*, *Antonio Kavalkanti*, *John Peſcoa*, *Manuel Kavalkanti*, *Antonio Bezerra* and *Coſmo de Craſto Paſos* in which they complained, that they being a conſiderable time ago accuſed by the *Jews* of a treache-

rous

1643. rous design against the government, had been great sufferers upon that score; that now they being informed by the same *Jews* that they were in danger of losing all their mills and lands, to be given to certain *Hollanders*, who were sent for, for that purpose, they desired that the time of five days appointed in the last pardon might be prolonged, as being too short for a business of such moment, and that the said pardon might be granted without exception; which they refusing to grant, they did hereby protest before God and all the *Roman* catholic princes, that they thought themselves innocent, and not in the least guilty of all those miseries which might ensue from this refusal hereafter.

The council debates the matter.

The 23d in the morning the council was assembled, to consider of the said letter; where after several harangues upon the present state of our affairs and the enemy's design against us, they were divided in their opinions, some being for granting a general pardon, without the least exception, as the case stood with us at present, when we were destitute of sufficient provision, ammunition and men; others maintained, that a letter which contained so many notorious untruths deserved not the least answer; others were of another opinion. Whilst they were thus debating the matter, letters were brought to the council, written by lieutenant colonel *Haus* from *St. Antonio*, that he was ready to attack the rebels of *Pojuka* the next day, not without hopes of good success, so that the council considering of what moment the event of this action was to their affairs, resolv'd to adjourn the said debate 'till the next day, when they hoped to know the issue of the whole enterprise.

The 28th of *June*, *Mucheron* arrived with his two companies in the *Receif*, from the *Allegoas*, where it was resolved to dispose his own company in the *Quinqueregular* fort, of which, as a place of great consequence, he was made commander in chief; the other of captain *William Lambert* was put in the fort *Ernestus*.

Good news out of Parayba.

By letters from *Paul Linge*, governor of *Parayba*, dated the 25th of *June*, we received advice, that the inhabitants thereabouts offered to give him fresh assurance of their fidelity, by taking a new oath of allegiance, and that he did not observe the least motion towards an insurrection.

Jacob Dassine master of the sugar-mill *Supapema*, who had been abroad with a good party, made his report to the council, that he had been at several sugar-mills, where he had met with about two hundred of the enemies troops divided into divers small bodies, composed of *Portuguese*, mulatts and negroes, under the command of *Amador de Araouje*, *Antonio de Crasto*, one *Taborda* and *Henry Dias*. 1643.

The 29th of *June*, by special commission from the council, *Balthasar Vander Voerden* examined *Antonio d'Oliveira*, concerning the design of the *Portuguese* form'd against our government. He declared, that about the beginning of this present *June*, being then at the house of *Sebastian de Karvalho*, together with *Francisco d'Oliveira*, *Bernardin Karvalho*, and the before-named *Sebastian de Karvalho*, a certain *Portuguese* very well known to them all, delivered to him a letter, directed to all the persons there present, with another piece of writing unsealed, which he began to read; but finding the contents to be, that the underwritten persons promised to be, and declare themselves faithful subjects of the king of *Portugal*, and that *John Fernandes Vieira*, *Francisco Beringel*, *Antonio de Sylva*, and several more, whose names he would not look upon, had signed the same, he returned the said writing, and refused to subscribe the same, telling his son at the same time, *You ought rather to suffer your hand to be cut off, than sign this paper*; and so went his way immediately, not any one of all there present having subscribed their names at that time: He protested he knew not the hand-writing. After a more serious consideration, he thought it requisite to make a discovery of it, which he did accordingly within two days after, to *Matthew Reex*, desiring him to give an account of it to the great council; he declared further that the said writing was signed by above one hundred of the inhabitants.

Before-named examination and confession of Antonio Oliveira.

The 30th of *June* one *Digos Lopes Leyte*, who was not long ago taken prisoner by the *Brasilians*, was examined by Mr. *Bullestrate*, *Dortmont* and some other military officers. His confession was, that at the first beginning of the design of the *Portuguese* against this state, they had sent a letter to the governor of the *Bahia*, *Antonio Telles de Silva*, to crave assistance from him, which if he refused, they would seek for aid in *Spain*; and if they did not succeed there, they would rather surrender themselves to the *Turks*, than endure any longer the ill treatment they met with from the *Hollanders*. That nevertheless he had heard many dire imprecations made against *John Fernandes Vieira*; that he deserv'd no less than the gallows, he having raised this rebellion for no other end, than thereby to free himself from the vast debts he owed to the company.

Digos Lopes Leyte examined.

The same day it was agreed to send abroad a party of twelve soldiers and eight *Brasilians*, to fetch a good quantity of *Farinha*

1643. *rinha* from *St. Lawrence*, who were put to the rout near that place, ſo that very few eſcaped. At the ſame time the council received the unwelcome news, that ſome of the inhabitants of *Iguaraſu* had taken up arms againſt them.

In the beginning of *July* it was reſolved to draw the fortifications of *Maurice*'s *Town* into a narrower compaſs, and to add a new line with a breaſt-work. This task was performed by the negroes belonging to the inhabitants of *Maurice*'s *Town* and the *Receif*, under the conduct of vice-admiral *Lichthart*, who took care to have the ſame perfected, according to the model drawn by the engineer.

The ſame day advice was brought, that *John Lawrence Frances*, and *John Dias Leyte*, inhabitants of *Iguaraſu*, made it their buſineſs to incite the inhabitants to an inſurrection. Captain *Sluyter* ſent alſo word from *Tamarika*, that about eighty men, and one hundred ten women and children, all *Braſilians* of the villages of *St. Michael* and *Naſſau*, were come into that iſland for ſhelter, and that the *Braſilians* of *Otta* intended to do the like. The magiſtrates and chief *Portugueſe* of *Goyana*, gave the council freſh aſſurances of their fidelity, provided they might in caſe of neceſſity be allowed to retire into the ſaid iſland, which was granted, and thanks given them for their loyalty. The magiſtrates of *Iguaraſu* adviſed, that *Vieira* had cauſed a declaration to be affixed in the ſugar-mills of *Gonſalvo Novo de Lira*, which they had order'd to be torn down, and ſent a copy of it to the council, aſſuring them, that they would take all poſſible care to keep the Inhabitants thereabouts under obedience, tho' they found ſome of them much inclined to a revolt.

Fernandes Vale *examined.*

At the ſame time *Fernandes Vale* was examined by Mr. *Vander Voerde* and Mr. *Bas*; he declared, that having received a letter from *Sebaſtian de Karvalho*, to meet him the next morning upon the hills *Garapes*, becauſe he had ſomething to communicate to him, concerning no leſs than their eſtates, lives and honour; he without mentioning any thing of it to his wife or brother, went thither on horſe-back, accompanied only by a boy; notwithſtanding he happened at that time to be afflicted with the gravel; there he met *Sebaſtian Karvalho*, with one boy only, who told him, that he having received a letter, with another writing, containing a project of an inſurrection to be undertaken againſt the government, he thought it abſolutely neceſſary, to give notice thereof to the great council; and that he deſired him to write a letter accordingly to the council; he being pretty well verſed in the *Dutch* Tongue. 1643. That *Vale* ask'd him, whether any body beſides himſelf knew of the matter, unto which he anſwered, that his Brother *Bernardin* did, whoſe opinion was likewiſe to diſcloſe it to the council; hereupon they returning each to their reſpective homes, *Vale* writ a letter in *Portugueſe*, purſuant to the inſtructions he had received from *Karvalho*, for whom the ſaid letter was left to peruſe in a baker's houſe, on a publick fair-day for the ſale of negroes; after which he had ſent the ſaid letter incloſed in another, to Dr. *Markado*, deſiring him to ſee the ſame carefully diſpatch'd to the great council, without mentioning the contents thereof.

The great council receiving frequent intelligence, that the *Portugueſe* from the *Bahia* intended to ſend a fleet to the aſſiſtance of the rebels, it was reſolved to ſend orders to the four ſhips, the *Amſterdam*, the *Blackmore*, the *North-Holland*, and *Groningen*, then at anchor near the *Red-Land*, in order to their return to *Holland*, to return forthwith to the *Receif*; the government ſtanding in great need of their aſſiſtance, to prevent the conjuction of the forces from the *Bahia* with the rebels. They received alſo letters from lieutenant colonel *Haus*, dated at *Pojuka* the 26th of *June*, aſſuring them, that he had granted paſſes to above two hundred perſons that were returned to their duty; that two or three of the ring-leaders, excepted in the laſt pardon, ſued for the ſame favour, and that he had cauſed one *Franko Godinho*, one of the chief of the rebels, taken by his people, to be hanged on the gallows he had erected himſelf; that *Amador d'Araouje* being gone from thence with a hundred and fifty men to the *Vergea*, to join with *Vieira*, he expected their orders whether he ſhould follow him, he looking upon it as a faint to draw him from thence. He further told them, that with the *Braſilians* and their wives and children, he was above five hundred ſtrong, and that unleſs they were ſoon ſupplied with proviſions from the *Receif*, they ſhould conſume all the cattle thereabouts.

The council recal their Ships from the Red-Land.

The great council ſent an anſwer the ſame night to lieutenant colonel *Haus*, requiring him to grant free pardon to all who ſhould deſire it, not excepting the ringleaders themſelves, thereby to weaken *Amador d'Araouje* and his party. That with what forces he could ſpare in *Pojuka*, (after ſufficient proviſion made for the defence of the garriſons, according to their own diſcretion) he ſhould march to the *Receif*, in order to attack *Vieira*, where they need not fear but to be able to ſubſiſt upon what the ſaid *Vieira* had laid up for the uſe of the

expected

1643. expected ſuccours from the *Bahia*, and the cattle belonging to the rebels.

But whilſt lieutenant colonel *Haus* was employed in ſecuring *Pojuka* againſt their attempts, thoſe of the *Vergea* ſtrengthned themſelves with all poſſible diligence; to further which, *John Fernandes Vieira* and *Antonio Kavalkanti*, who ſtiled themſelves the heads of this war, did not only affix their declarations round about *Maurice*'s *Town*, and in *Iguaraſu*, inciting the inhabitants to rebellion, by promiſing them conſiderable ſuccours from the *Bahia*, but their parties alſo, which they ſent frequently abroad, forced thoſe of the open country to take up arms, killing ſuch as refuſed. The ſame was practiſed by *Amador d'Araouje* in *Pojuka*; ſo, that what with proviſions, what with threats and force they got together a conſiderable body in the *Vergea*, we being not in a capacity to prevent it, becauſe what forces we had were in *Pojuka*.

But judging it abſolutely for our intereſt to ſtop as much as poſſible theſe proceedings, it was reſolved to arm ſome of the luſty young fellows with firelocks, which they were furniſhed withal by the citizens, (there being none in magazines) and to join with them a detachment of the garriſon, beſides a hundred *Braſilians*, that were lately arrived under *Peter Potti*.

Captain Blaar *ſent abroad with ſome troops.*

Purſuant to this reſolution, captain *John Blaar* received orders to put himſelf at the head of three hundred men, with whom he was to march with all imaginable ſecreſy from the *Receif*; and by lying in ambuſh near the paſſes, to endeavour to intercept ſome of the enemies Troops, not queſtioning, but that out of the Priſoners, they ſhould be able to learn where *Vieira* was poſted with his main body, and of what ſtrength both he and the ſuccours from the *Bahia* was reputed to be among them. He had ſtrict orders not to moleſt any of the inhabitants, who were not in arms, but to protect them and their eſtates, and to receive thoſe who ſought for mercy, and bring them into the *Receif*. Orders were alſo ſent to lieutenant colonel *Haus* to march with what forces could poſſibly be ſpared out of the garriſons to the ſouth, to the *Vergea*, in order to join with captain *Blaar*, and endeavour to attack the heads of the rebels, which if they could once put to the rout, might be a means to quench the whole fire of rebellion, and to reſtore peace to the *Dutch-Braſil*.

The firſt of *July* it was debated in council, whether all ſuch perſons as were ſuſpected to have a hand in the conſpiracy, ought not to be granted to all that deſired it, without exception. The laſt was reſolved upon as conducing moſt to the quieting of the ſubjects minds.

The 2d in the evening, the council received advice from captain *Blaar*, that he was poſted at *Mongioppe*, with an intention to attack the enemy, wherever he met them. 1643.

The 3d he marched to *Iguaraſu*.

The 4th they received letters from lieutenant colonel *Haus*, from *St. Antonio*, importing, that after having left a garriſon in *Pojuka* under lieutenant *Flemming*, and one hundred *Braſilians* in *St. Antonio*, he was ready to march to the ſugar-mill *Velho*, and from thence to *Moribeka*; where he would expect their further orders.

The condition of Goyana.

At the ſame time the inhabitants of *Goyana* having fortified themſelves in a certain houſe, belonging to *Liſtry* their chief magiſtrate, they deſired the council to furniſh them with forty muſquets, for the uſe of ſuch among them as were unprovided with arms. Their requeſt was granted, and poſitive orders ſent at the ſame time to *Servaes Karpentier*, to take this opportunity to diſarm all the *Portugueſe*, either by fair or foul means; to effect which, he ſhould keep the *Dutch* together in a body as much as poſſibly he could; his anſwer was, *he would endeavour to diſarm the* Portugueſe *by fair means, he wanting power to do it by force*. Beſides which, he gave notice in his letter dated the 11th of *July*, that every thing remained quiet hitherto in *Goyana*, but that the *Braſilians*, (contrary to his expreſs orders) claiming a prerogative to be commanded by none but their own officers, purſuant to a decree of the council of nineteen, had in their paſſages to *Tamarika* plundered ſeveral of the *Portugueſe* inhabitants.

Moſt of the rebellious *Portugueſe* had left their wives and children in their houſes and mills, which as it tended to their no ſmall conveniency, ſo ſome of the faithful *Portugueſe* inhabitants did propoſe on the 3d of *July* to the great council, whether it would not be for our intereſt to oblige thoſe wives and children to quit their houſes and mills, and to ſend them after their husbands. Several reaſons were alledged for it.

I. Becauſe the rebels being encumbred with their families, muſt of neceſſity make greater conſumption of *Farinha*, and other proviſions, which would oblige them the ſooner to alter their meaſures, and to change their places.

II. That thereby they would be much diſheartened, for fear of a vigorous attack.

III. That they would not be able to march or to change their camp ſo conveniently as before, or to lurk in unhabitable places.

IV. That by the removal of theſe women, who ſerved them as ſpies by the help

of

1643. of their negroes, we ſhould take away all opportunity from them, to be informed of our deſigns.

All which reaſons being well weighed, the following proclamation was publiſhed.

A Proclamation *for the removal of the rebels wives and children.*

THE great council of Braſil, *by the authority of the ſtates general of the* united provinces, *his highneſs the prince of* Orange, *and the* Weſt-India *company, make known unto every body, that whereas many of thoſe, who have ſided with the three head rebels,* John Fernandes Vieira, Antonio Kavalkanti, *and* Amador d'Araouje, *againſt this ſtate, have left behind them their wives, children and families, which hitherto continue in their former dwelling places; we do by theſe preſents ſtrictly command all the wives and children, whether male or female, whoſe husbands and fathers are engaged with the rebels, to leave their reſpective houſes within ſix days after the publication of this proclamation; and to repair to their reſpective husbands and fathers, or elſe to incur the penalties due to rebels; it being our reſolution not to take the ſame into our protection; nay, to take away our ſafe-guards from all ſuch of our ſubjects as ſhall be found to harbour or conceal theſe beforeſaid wives, children, and their effects, unleſs the huſbands and fathers of theſe wives and children ſhall within the limited time of ſix days, return to their dwelling-places, and ſue for pardon to the council.*

Thus decreed in the aſſembly of the great council of *Braſil.*

About this time near one thouſand *Braſilians*, among whom were three hundred and ſixty nine men, the reſt women and children, being retired to the iſle *Tamarika*, to ſhelter themſelves againſt the rebellious *Portugueſe*, Mr. *Dormont* counſellor of the finances, was ſent thither in the beginning of *July*, as ſupreme director of the territory of *Iguaraſu*, to ſecure that iſland, which was of ſo great conſequence to the ſtate, in our intereſt.

The 5th of *July*, a proclamation was iſſued againſt the three chief rebels, *John Fernandes Vieira*, *Antonio Kavalkanti*, and *Amador d'Araouje*, declaring their lives and eſtates to be forfeited, offering a reward for the apprehending of them, as follows.

A proclamation for apprehending the three head rebels.

THE great council of Braſil, *by authority of the ſtates general of the* United Provinces, *his highneſs the prince of* Orange, *and the* Weſt-India *company, ſend greeting: Be it known by all, that whereas we are fully ſatisfied that* John Fernandes Vieira, Antonio Kavalkanti, *and* Amador d'Araouje, *ſetting aſide their allegiance, have a conſiderable time ago entered into a conſpiracy againſt the ſtate, ſending their letters throughout ſeveral Fregeſies of our juriſdiction, to excite our ſubjects to a revolt; that they have gathered and ſtill are gathering forces to maintain their treacherous deſigns againſt this ſtate, forcing our faithful ſubjects to join with them, threatning with death ſuch as refuſe to enter into this rebellion; nay, having cauſed ſeveral, as well* Hollanders *as* Braſilians, *to be murdered upon that ſcore: That they have affixed and publiſhed declarations in ſeveral places, tending to the diſquieting and diſturbing the minds of the ſubjects of this ſtate, with the name and title of governours of this war (whereas they ought to have ſtiled themſelves faithleſs traitors) covering their villainous deſigns under the name of the divine majeſty, beſides many other miſdemeanours, whereby they have rendered themſelves guilty of high treaſon. It is for theſe reaſons that we thought it our duty to declare the above named* John Fernandes Vieira, Antonio Kavalkanti, *and* Amador d'Araouje, *and by theſe preſents do declare them enemies of this ſtate, diſturbers of the publick peace and our good ſubjects, rebels and traitors againſt their lawful magiſtrates; and to have forfeited all their privileges, rights, lives, and eſtates; and as ſuch, we grant not only free leave to every one to apprehend or to kill the ſaid* John Fernandes Vieira, Antonio Kavalkanti, Amador d'Araouje, *but alſo promiſe a reward of one thouſand* Charles's *gilders, to ſuch or ſuch perſons as ſhall do ſo ſignal a piece of ſervice to the company, as to apprehend either of thoſe perſons, ſo as they may be brought to juſtice; and the like reward to any perſon who ſhall kill either of the ſaid traitors, beſides his pardon for any offence he may have committed before; and if he be a ſlave, his liberty, together wtth the reward. We alſo ſtrictly command by theſe preſents, all the inhabitants of this ſtate, of what quality, degree or nation ſoever, that they ſhall not preſume to aſſiſt the ſaid rebels with arms, proviſions, money, men, and ammunition, or harbour, conceal, or adviſe them in any reſpect, or keep the leaſt correſpondence with them, under pain of being declared traitors, and to be puniſhed as ſuch with the utmoſt rigour,* &c.

1643

Whilſt the great council were thus endeavouring to quench the flame of rebellion, they received frequent intelligence, that beſides the ſuccours already come to the rebels from the *Bahia* by land, by way of *Rio St. Franciſco*, they expected a conſiderable fleet from thence; it was reſolved

1643. to send once more some deputies to the governor *Antonio Telles da Silva*, to represent to him that *Kamaron* and *Henry Dias* being under his jurisdiction, their entring in an hostile manner into the *Dutch Brasil*, could not be interpreted otherwise than a breach of the truce concluded betwixt the king of *Portugal* and their high and mightinesses the states general.

Deputies sent to the governor of the Bahia.

The persons pitched upon for this purpose were *Balthasar Vander Voerde*, councellor of the court of justice, and *Dirk Hoogstrate*, then commander in chief to the cape of *St. Austin*, who being looked upon at that time as a very loyal person, was sent for the 4th of *July*, leaving *Barent Van Tichlenborgh* to command in his absence. *Francis Krynen Springapple* was appointed their secretary, and *Gerrard Dirk Laet*, *Alexander Sylve*, and *Jacob Swearts*, to attend them as gentlemen.

Their instructions.

Their instructions were, to lay open to the governor the true reason and occasion of this insurrection, and the ringleaders thereof, who would never have dared to attempt it without the hopes of succours, which were sent them by land through *Rio St. Francisco:* They were to search into his intentions as near as possibly they could, and to desire him to recal *Kamaron* and *Henry Dias* with their troops out of the *Dutch Brasil*, and to punish them according to their deserts. If they found the governor not inclined to give them due satisfaction, by recalling those troops either by publick proclamation, or sending some person of authority to bring them back, or by giving them some other real demonstrations of his sincere intention before their departure, they were to protest to, and to declare themselves innocent of all the damages, murders, and rapines as well against the *Hollanders*, as *Portugueſe* and *Brasilians*, already committed or to be committed by those forces. They were to declare to the governor, that they would look upon it as an open breach of peace and act of hostility, of which they must give an account to their masters, who, without question would know how to make themselves amends for the damages sustained; and to protest once more, that the *Dutch* declared themselves innocent of all the miseries which must ensue from their taking up arms for their own defence, after their so reasonable request had been rejected.

Arrive in the Bahia.

Accordingly they set sail the 9th of *July* 1645, from the *Receif*, in the ship called the *Roebuck*, and coming to an anchor the 17th in the *Bahia*, were in the name of the governor *Antonio Telles da Silva*, complimented aboard their ships by several *Portugueſe* gentlemen, from whom they asked leave to come ashore, having several matters of moment to propose to him in the name of the great council of *Brasil*. 1643.

Are admitted to audience.

The next day being the 18th of *July*, about noon, lieutenant colonel *Andrew Vidal*, and captain *Pedro Kavalkanti*, with some other officers, came in a brigantine to fetch them to the palace; where, after the first complements, they delivered their credentials, telling the governor, that out of those he would understand that they were sent to treat with him of certain points, which they were ready to propose either now or whenever he should be disposed to receive them. The governor, after the usual return of complements and perusal of the credentials, told them, that he was ready to hear them whenever they pleased; whereupon they proposed,

Their propositions.

That some *Portugueſe* subjects of their high and mightinesses the states general of the *United Provinces*, have entred into a cabal, in order to take up arms and attack *Pernambuko*; to effect which, they have by certain letters solicited their fellow subjects to enter into a rebeilion, and provided themselves with arms, in hopes of succours from abroad. That in the beginning of *May*, *Kamaron* and *Henry Dias* with their *Brasilians* and negroes, and some *Portugueſe*, being on their march in an hostile manner to *Pernambuko*; *John Fernandes Vieira*, *Antonio Kavalkanti*, and *Amador d'Araouje*, with other *Portngueſe* their accomplices had no sooner notice of their coming, but they absconded from their houses, gathered what forces they could, some by force, some otherwise, published their declarations, styling themselves governors of this war for the public liberty; all which they undertook upon hopes of being backt by foreign troops. That through God's mercy their masters did not want power to protect their faithful subjects, and to punish the rebels according to their deserts: But as they could not comprehend what it was that could induce these foreign troops to enter their territories in time of peace, in order to aid their rebellious subjects against them, so they were at a stand how to deal with them. That the great council as well as all the rest of the inhabitants, being too well acquainted with his excellency's extraction, exquisite knowledge in state affairs, and the good neighbourly correspondency he had always cultivated with our government, than to harbour the least thought that he should give the least encouragement to any of his subjects, to aid rebellious subjects against their sovereigns: That they were sensible he would use all

1643. poſſible means to prevent it. It was for this reaſon that they were ſent by the great council to give his excellency notice of the hoſtilities committed by *Kamaron* and *Henry Dias*, deſiring that he would be pleaſed not only to command them not to aſſiſt the rebels with their troops, but alſo to retire out of *Pernambuko* and the other captainſhips under the *Dutch* juriſdiction; that ſo the rebels being diſappointed of their aſſiſtance, might be ſooner reduced to their former obedience, and our ſubjects enjoy the benefit of the truces ſtipulated betwixt his preſent majeſty of *Portugal*, Don *John* IV. and their high and mightineſſes the ſtates general. All which, the great council of *Braſil*, highly recommended to his excellency's conſideration, in a letter which was then delivered by the deputies to the governor, which is as follows.

A letter from the great council to the governor of the Bahia.

IT is ſufficiently known to your excellency with what ſtrictneſs the truce betwixt his majeſty of Portugal *and the high and mighty the ſtates general of the* United Provinces, *has been obſerved in all its circumſtances by the inhabitants of the* Dutch Braſil, *even according to the conſtitution of thoſe of the* Bahia *and other places, who have of late paſſed through our captainſhips; neither have we ever received the leaſt complaints upon that account, either from the king your maſter, or from your excellency; all which gave us ſufficient reaſon to believe that you would not in the leaſt conſent that your ſubjects ſhould attempt any thing contrary to the ſaid truce. And though ſome of the* Portugueſe *inhabitants, ſubjects of the ſtates, laying aſide their allegiance, have taken up arms and are riſen in rebellion againſt this ſtate, as ſoon as* Kamaron *and* Henry Dias *at the head of their* Braſilians *and negroes, beſides ſome* Portugueſe, *did without licence or the leaſt encouragement from us, enter our territories, contrary to the law of nations, and joining with the rebels, exerciſed open hoſtitilies againſt our ſubjects, not like ſoldiers but robbers and thieves; yet can we not be perſuaded that thoſe troops ſhould have made this attempt by order or conſent of his majeſty of* Portugal *or your excellency, againſt us your confederates.*

Thanks be to God we don't want means to bring our revolted ſubjects to reaſon, and to deſtroy thoſe foreign troops; but to ſhew to all the world how ready we are to fulfil the reiterated command of our maſters, to maintain inviolably the truce betwixt his majeſty and them; and to remove all ſiniſter interpretations which might be made in foreign courts upon this head, as alſo to give ſufficient opportunity to his majeſty of Portugal *and your excellency, to convince the world that you have neither conſented to nor abetted this conſpiracy; we in the name of their high and mightineſſes the ſtates general, his highneſs the prince of* Orange, *and the governors of the* Weſt-India *company, have ſent Mr.* Balthaſar Van Voerden, *councellor of the court of juſtice, and* Dirk Hoogſtrate, *commander in chief on the cape of* St. Auſtin, *as our deputies to you, with full power to propoſe theſe points to you, and to deſire you forthwith to recall the ſaid* Kamaron, Henry Dias, *and other leaders, with their troops, within a limited time out of our territories, either by publick proclamation, or ſuch other means as your excellency ſhall think moſt forcible or expedient, and to puniſh them according to their deſerts; and if they refuſe to obey, to declare them open enemies to his majeſty; it being impoſſible for us to conceive, how due ſatisfaction can be given without it to their high and mightineſſes, to the prince of* Orange, *and the* Weſt-India *company, which nevertheleſs we ought and do expect from your excellency.*

Subſcribed, *Your excellency's Well-meaning friends,*

On the ſide ſtood, Henry Hamel, A. Van Bulleſtraten, P. J. Bas, J. Van Walbeck, *and* Henry de Mucheron.

From the Receif, *July* 7, 1640.

1643.

The governor's anſwer to the deputies.

The governor gave immediate anſwer to the deputies propoſitions, that he was ſo far from ſending any ſuccours to the rebels that he had not had the leaſt knowledge of it. That the *Braſilians* and negroes were diſbanded by his majeſty's order, and that theſe as well as the *Portugueſe* among them, that were come to the aſſiſtance of the rebels, could be in no great numbers, conſiſting (as he ſuppoſed) in ſome vagabonds, or others, who having committed miſdemeanours in the *Bahia*, had taken this opportunity to ſhelter themſelves, and flee from puniſhment, as it frequently happened that ſuch like perſons did come to the *Bahia* from *Pernambuko*, which nevertheleſs had given him not the leaſt ſuſpicion of the councils ſincerity. He told them that he was extremely glad to underſtand the good confidence their maſters repoſed in him, of maintaining the truce concluded betwixt his majeſty of *Portugal* and their high and mightineſſes the ſtates general, aſſuring them

1643. them that he never ſhould be prevailed upon to act contrary to it, for fear of hazarding his life. And that if he had any ſuch intention, he did not want means to attempt it by the aſſiſtance of the *Braſilians*. But that he had never had any thoughts that way, notwithſtanding he had been provoked to it by the *Dutch*, who ſince the truce had taken a *Portugueſe* ſhip and carried it to the *Receif*, which by the bravery of the *Portugueſe* was delivered from the *Hollanders*, and they and the ſhip brought to the *Bahia*; the *Dutch* mariners being diſmiſſed without any puniſhment. He told them further, that he was not inſenſible what an opinion their maſters entertained of his ſincerity; and that he had reaſon to believe, that they had at this time as they had done before, ſent their deputies chiefly to feel his pulſe, to enquire into his ſtrengrh, and to dive into his deſigns. That however, he would communicate the letter to his council, and give them a ſpeedy anſwer, in order to their return home, purſuant to the requeſt of their maſters. Then the governor ariſing from his ſeat, the deputies took their leave and returned aboard.

Their ſecond audience.

The 19th in the morning they were ſent for a ſhore by a lieutenant, and brought to the houſe of lieutenant colonel *Pedro Korea de Gama*, where they dined in company of *Andrew Vidal* and *Paulo de Kunha*. Towards the evening they were again conducted to the palace, where the ſecretary deſired them to tarry a minute, becauſe his excellency was buſy with cloſing his letters; after ſome ſtay they were introduced to the governor, who told them, that he had underſtood the contents of the letter, which he found altogether agreeable to the propoſitions made to him the day before by way of mouth by them, which conſiſted chiefly in two points.

The governor's ſecond anſwer.

Firſt, the good opinion their maſters had of his ſincere intention, in maintaining a good correſpondency with them, in order to maintain the truce betwixt his majeſty and the ſtates general, and the confidence they had of his not being concerned in the rebellion, either by encouraging or aſſiſting the ſame. Wherefore he deſired they would continue in the ſame ſentiments, becauſe he never had made the leaſt infraction of the ſaid truce, neither ever thought of any thing like it, nor ſuffered any of his ſubjects to act contrary to it; notwithſtanding, ſaid he, the *Hollanders* have broke the ſame in ſeveral reſpects, *viz.* in their expeditions againſt *Angola*, *St. Thomas*, and *Marinho*; by the plundering of *Pedro Ceſar Mines*, who had been baſely uſed during his impriſonment, 1643. not like a man of quality, being forced to ſhelter himſelf among the woods after his eſcape. They had alſo taken a *Portugueſe* ſhip in his own harbour. Neither did the inhabitants of *Pernambuko* want reaſons of complaint as well as the other captainſhips; he had underſtood out of ſeveral letters from thence, how the *Jews* were always buſy in forging accuſations againſt them, which were taken for truth; and when the *Portugueſe* had thereupon abſconded themſelves out of fear, the *Tapoyers* or mountaineers were armed againſt them, among the reſt they had cauſed a poor hermit to be hanged. The great council had always given him ſufficient proofs of their ſuſpicion, the laſt embaſſy being intended to no other purpoſe (as captain *Hoogſtrate* could teſtify) than to dive into his deſigns and ſtrength. Thus it was reported and believed, that *Andrew Vidal* and *Paulo Kunha*, with ſeveral other officers, were ſent by him into *Pernambuko*, though they ſaw them here before their eyes.

Upon the ſecond point, concerning the troops ſaid to be ſent to *Pernambuko*, he gave for anſwer, that they muſt be ſome *Braſilians* and negroes lately diſbanded, who were of little account, as we were ſenſible ourſelves: That if a few *Portugueſe* were among them, they muſt be ſuppoſed to be criminals who were fled from juſtice; that he was not unwilling to call them back by proclamation, but feared that he ſhould be but ſlenderly obeyed, by a ſort of people who could not be kept in obedience within his own juriſdiction. That to ſatisfy our requeſt, and to remove all reaſons of complaint, he intended to ſend his deputies ſhortly to *Pernambuko*; all which he had more clearly expreſt in his letter to the great council, wherewith he would, according to the requeſt of our maſters, diſpatch us with all imaginable ſpeed.

A reply of the deputies.

The deputies replied, that their maſters had never entertained any ſuſpicion of his excellency, neither had they given any orders to dive into his deſigns; but always had a favourable opinion of his firm adherence to the truce, as might be evidenced by Mr. *Andrew Vidal*, who during his ſtay with them, had liberty to go where he pleaſed, without any attendance but his own. That what he objected concerning the accuſations of the *Jews* was of no moment, the ſame being never hearkned to, the intended inſurrection being diſcovered by perſons of unqueſtionable credit. That *John Fernandes Vieira*, *Antonio Kavalkanti*, and others their adherents, had always been protected

1643. protected againſt any falſe accuſations, and had free acceſs to all the counſellors of the court of juſtice, and thoſe of other colonies, as well as the chiefeſt among the *Dutch*, ſo that they had no reaſon to abſcond out of fear for the *Tapoyers*, who never were intended to be employed againſt them. That they did not know of any hermit that was hanged by them, but remember'd that in an engagement with *Amador d'Araouje*, ſuch a one was ſhot by the *Braſilians* as he was ringing the bell to give the alarum.

They further told him, that tho' they had no orders to treat with his excellency upon any other points than thoſe that concern the rebellion, they could eaſily make it out before all the world, that *Angola* and the other places were conquered according to the rules of war, without the leaſt infraction of the truce, it having been expreſly ſtipulated, that the war ſhould continue in thoſe parts till the ſame was publiſhed there. The *Braſilians*, Negroes and *Portugueſe* were come in conſiderable numbers into our territories, not like diſbanded ſoldiers, but well armed, and their coming was not unexpected, but well known to the rebels; but the council was not ſo much concerned for their number, as to be ſatisfied under whoſe authority they had taken up arms againſt them, that they might deal with them accordingly. But however it was, they deſired his excellency to believe, that their maſters would be extremely glad to underſtand his good inclinations, that thereby the effuſion of humane blood might be ſaved; intreating him to ſend his deputies forthwith with the neceſſary inſtructions.

The governor promiſed to ſend his deputies ſoon after their return to *Pernambuko*, telling them, that as he thought himſelf ſecure of the good neighbourly correſpondency of their maſters, ſo he was reſolved to continue in the ſame on his ſide. What he had propoſed for the reſt, had been only by way of diſcourſe, not with an intention to enter into a diſpute concerning the legality or illegality of it; tho' it appear'd very odd to him, that they ſhould aſſiſt his maſter at home, and at the ſame time wage war with him in other parts, under pretence that the peace was not publiſhed there; and what had paſſed with *Pedro Cæſar de Mines* was a thing not juſtifiable in his underſtanding.

After the uſual compliments he aroſe from his ſeat, telling them, that he would ſend the letter directed to the council to them aboard the next day, and ſo our deputies returned aboard their ſhip. The 20th in the morning the ſecretary of the governour came aboard our veſſel, with the governors letter to the council, which he delivered to the deputies, requeſting in his maſter's name, to ſend him a tranſlation of the letter from the council to the governour out of the *Dutch* into the *Portugueſe*, ſubſcribed with their own hands; which they did, and having delivered the ſame to the ſecretary, he took his leave and returned aſhore. 1643.

They take their leave.

Our people ſet ſail the ſame day about noon from the *Bahia* to *Pernambuko*, where they arrived the 28th in the afternoon before the *Receif*, and gave an account the ſame day of their negotiation to the great council, unto whom they alſo delivered the letter written by *Antonio Telles da Silva*, and directed to them. The contents of which are as follows. *Their return to the* Receif.

The governours letter to the council.

The governors letter to the council.

MR. Balthaſar Vander Voerden, *counſellor of juſtice, and captain* Dirk Van Hoogſtrate, *commander in chief on the Cape of* St. Auſtin, *your lordſhips deputies have delivered your letter to me, in which you are pleaſed to give me notice of the revolt of ſome of your ſubjects againſt you. I received this news as I ought to do, and ſhould not have been able to receive it without the greateſt ſurprize and diſcompoſure of mind, if I had not been aſſured in my conſcience, that your lordſhips did not in the leaſt imagine, that this inſurrection could derive its ſource from our government; and, tho' I could upon this occaſion enter upon a long recital of the proceedings of my government, tending from its beginning till now, to a ſufficient juſtification, in the eyes of all the world, and of the greateſt kings and princes of chriſtendom, that the ſaid good correſpondency has been maintained as ſtrictly on our ſide, as the ſame is promiſed in your lordſhip's letter: But rather than give the leaſt occaſion of diſguſt or difference, by enlarging myſelf upon thoſe heads, in which your ſubjects have expreſly and manifeſtly violated the truce concluded and ratified betwixt the king my Maſter, and the States General of the United Provinces, I will ſacrifice the ſame to the intereſt of our common neighbourhood, rather than to enter upon a particular account of theſe miſcarriages, in the expedition of* Angola, *at a time when the States General did aſſiſt the crown of* Portugal *with their naval force, when our ambaſſadors reſiding in the* Receif, *were told, that theſe troops were not intended to be employed againſt any of his majeſty's harbours, but in the* Weſt-Indies, *tho' at the ſame time they were embarked for the conqueſt of* Angola. *The ſame may be ſaid of the taking of the iſle of* St. Thomas, *and the city* Luy de Mapanha, *and the ſeizing of a* Portugueſe

1643. gueſe *ſhip upon our coaſt, loaden with ſugar from* Spiritu Sancto. *The commiſſary* Greening *was diſpatch'd hither, under a pretext of buying of* Farinha, *but in effect to ſound my inclinations, as he himſelf confeſſes, when he ſays in a certain letter of his,* I was ſent thither with this commiſſion, but rather to feel his pulſe and try his friendſhip, than that we were in want. *The unfaithful dealings of the directors of* Angola *in the capitulation with the governor* Pedro Ceſar de Mines; *the razing of our fort* Araval *in* Bengo; *the baſe treatment put upon the ſaid governor, being a perſon of quality, and a general of his majeſty's, are matters altogether inconſiſtent with the rules of war, nay, with humanity itſelf, and contrary to the practice not only of the more civilized nations of* Europe, *but alſo the* Barbarians *themſelves. Of the ſame ſtamp was the anſwer given by your council to our ambaſſador, who urging a ceſſation of arms in the kingdom of* Angola, *was anſwered, that the ſame had no dependency on our juriſdiction, quite contrary to the ſincere intentions always obſerved by me in all our tranſactions with you; for no ſooner did your lordſhips make complaints to me againſt one captain* Auguſtino Condago, *and one* Domingo de Rocha, *who having carried away a barge with ſugar, had brought her into the harbour of our city, I ſent back the ſaid veſſel immediately, and put the captain in priſon till he was ſent over to his majeſty. And that time being informed, that two ſoldiers living under my juriſdiction, whoſe names were* John de Campos, *and* Domingo Velho Sigiſmundo, *had committed ſome inſolencies in your captainſhip of* Pernambuko, *I cauſed them to be hanged immediately, looking upon it as a duty not to be diſpenſed with by me, for the maintaining of our mutual good correſpondency: All theſe beforementioned infractions having never been able to make me forgetful of the reiterated orders of his majeſty,* viz. *To improve the effects of the peace and alliances made betwixt him and the States General, to our both ſides ſatisfaction: I muſt at the ſame time confeſs, that looking upon myſelf as a ſoldier, (abſtracted from the conſideration of the intereſt of the ſtate, and the duty of a ſubject) I thought I ought not to take tamely ſo many affronts, and to let ſlip ſo many fair opportunities of doing myſelf juſtice; much beyond what can be ſuppoſed to ariſe from the conjunction of a few unarmed* Portugueſe, *a few diſcontented Negros, and ſome rebels, whoſe protection cannot, as I ſaid before, come in any competition with the ſeveral opportunities and provocations paſs'd by on our ſide before, for the common intereſt; and that conſequently our government cannot as much as be conceived to be the hidden cauſe of this rebellion, as your lordſhips themſelves are pleaſed to confeſs; neither would I have entred upon a recital of thoſe particularities, if I had not thought my ſelf obliged both in duty and affection, to give this ſatisfaction to you. To give you the true account of the abſence of* Henry Dias, *you muſt know, that one night he left his guard in* Rio Reael, *and paſſed over to your ſide;* Don Antonio Philippo Kamaron, *captain of the* Braſilians, *being ſent after him, and not returning, I judged that they were gone towards* Mocambo, *to attack the* Palmairas *of* Rio St. Franciſco, *which made me (to avoid all ſuſpicion of being concerned in any thing that might tend to the breach of peace) ſend two jeſuits to perſuade them to return, but in vain, they refuſing to obey, either for fear of puniſhment, or that they were already engaged with the rebels, (as I now am apt to believe they were) ſo that I have heard nothing from them ſince, except what I have underſtood out of your lordſhips letter. The* Portugueſe *under your juriſdiction have ſent to me the reaſons which moved them to this inſurrection, imploring my aſſiſtance, as ſubjects of the king my maſter; they told me, that they ſtood in fear of being ſacrificed to the fury of four hundred* Tapoyers, *ſent for that purpoſe from* Rio Grande; *to avoid which, and dreading your lordſhips anger, awakened againſt them by the falſe accuſations of the* Jews, *(the moſt perfidious and irreconcileable enemies of* Chriſtendom) *had rather choſen to expoſe themſelves to a moſt miſerable flight, leaving behind them their wives and children, than to endure the hardſhips of a tedious impriſonment. I could ſcarce have imagin'd, that you could be ſo far miſled by the fictions of a people ſo much deſpiſed by all other nations, as to be perſuaded by them, that certain perſons were ſent from hence into your territories, who have been ſeen here by your deputies. And tho' I am apt to perſuade myſelf, that ſome of the* Portugueſe *would, as the caſe now ſtands, be glad to embrace our protection, it being much more natural to be oppreſſed by ones own king or prince, than by foreigners: Yet when I ſeriouſly reflect upon your lordſhips propoſals made by your deputies,* viz. *to oblige captain* Kamaron *and* Henry Dias, *to return to the* Bahia, *and to uſe all other proper means to bring the revolted* Portugueſe *to reaſon; when I ſay, I ſeriouſly reflect upon the publick calamities on one ſide, and how deſtitute I am of ſuitable means at preſent to ſatisfy your deſires, I cannot but be infinitely concerned thereat; being ſenſible that theſe captains will not be brought over by perſuaſions; and wanting means to reduce them to obedience, who have now ſettled themſelves at ſo great a diſtance among the woods and foreſts. But as I am ready to conform* 1643.

1643. *myſelf in all reſpects to your lordſhips deſires, to convince you of the ſincerity of the* Portugueſe *nation, which is ſuch, that no opportunity, tho' never ſo great of promoting their own intereſt, does ever ſtand in competition with what they think they owe to their confederates: I am willing to take upon me the office of a mediator, in order to endeavour to appeaſe theſe troubles by my authority; for which end I intend to ſend to you with all poſſible ſpeed, certain perſons of known ability, with ſufficient inſtructions and power, to the rebellious to return to their duty; which, if they decline, ſuch meaſures may be taken as will force them to it; which, as I hope, may ſerve as the moſt effectual means to reſtore tranquillity to your dominions, and to cultivate the good opinion and correſpondency betwixt us; which I wiſh God Almighty will be pleaſed to continue betwixt theſe two nations, by a perpetual tye of amity.*

Bahia, July 19, 1645.

Signed,

Antonio Telles da Silva.

Mr. *Hoogſtrate* at the ſame time gave a ſecret verbal account to the great council, that ſoon after their arrival there, *Andrew Vidal*, captain *Paulo Kunha*, and *John de Souſa* came to them, the laſt of whom ſat himſelf down near him, (Mr. *Hoogſtraten)* enquiring ſecretly after his uncle *Philip Pays Baretto*, whether he was among the mutineers; to whom he gave for anſwer, that he was ſtill in his mill. After which, the table-cloth being laid, *Souſa* was invited to ſtay at dinner with them, which he refuſed; becauſe, as he ſaid, he was upon the guard: Before dinner was ended *Souſa* came back, and after the table-cloth was taken away, invited Mr. *Hoogſtrate* and *Kunha* to ſmoke a pipe with him in a back room, whither they went, but were followed by the ſecretary, Mr. *Springapple*. As they paſſed through a gallery, *Paulo de Kunha* took *Springapple* a little on one ſide; and in the mean while, *Souſa* told *Hoogſtrate* with a loud voice, that he was ſurprized to hear that his uncle *Philip Pays* had not ſided with the reſt: Unto which *Hoogſtrate* anſwered, *That he thought he did very wiſely to keep himſelf quiet, becauſe it was likely to turn to no account. That is your opinion,* reply'd *Souſa, but have a little patience; and, becauſe I know you to have always been a friend to the* Portugueſe, *I can aſſure you it will turn to a conſiderable account. And it is upon this ſcore, I adviſe you, like a friend, to provide for your own ſafety and your family. You may reſt aſſured, that if you will engage to do a piece of good ſervice to the king my maſter, and to the governor, you ſhall want neither money, ſugar-mills, places, nor preferments.* Mr. *Hoogſtrate* appearing ſomewhat diſcompoſed at this diſcourſe, told him, *That though he was not unwilling to do the king and governor what ſervice he could, he did not know what ſort of ſervice he meant.* Unto which, *Souſa* replied, *I am ſure you are able to do good ſervice to the king; but then,* ſays *Hoogſtrate, you muſt tell me how: That I will,* anſwered *Souſa; are you not governor on the cape of* St. Auſtin? Unto which Mr. *Hoogſtrate* ſaid, *Yes, I am; then,* replied *Souſa, all that is required of you, is, to ſurrender the ſaid fort, with all its works, into the king's hands, that we may land our men thereabouts: If you will promiſe to do it, you ſhall have a very ample reward, and be made commander in chief of our forces.* Mr. *Hoogſtrate* gave for anſwer, *that theſe were things of ſuch a nature, as were not conſiſtent with his oath and honour.* Their diſcourſe being interrupted at that time by the coming of another perſon into the gallery, *John Souſa* and *Paulo Kunha* went out another way. Mr. *Hoogſtrate* told his ſecretary, Mr. *Springapple*, with a diſcompoſed look, *What is the meaning of theſe dogs, do they take me for a traitor?* He was going on to ſay more, when *Souſa* and *Kunha* returning into the gallery, took him aſide, and told him, *That he might be ſure every thing ſhould be performed that had been promiſed him; that if he wanted any money he ſhould have it immediately; and for the reſt, they would introduce him alone to the governor, to receive the confirmation of it from his own mouth.* Mr. *Hoogſtrate* reply'd, *What you deſire is not in my power to perform, if I would never ſo fain; becauſe I am promiſed to have a commiſſion of mayor immediately after my return, and then I ſhall certainly be employed in another place.* During this parley, Mr *Vander Voerde* entred the gallery in company with Mr. *Andrew Vidal*, who entertained him all the while the others were talking together, till *Hoogſtrate* taking his opportunity as they were walking together, whiſpered Mr. *Vander Voerde* in the ear, *I wiſh I was well rid of them, to talk with you in private, for I know not what their deſign is; I am afraid they will either kill or detain me here.* Mr. *Vander Voerde* would willingly have made a reply, but could not, by reaſon *Souſa* and *Kunha*, and *Piedro Korre de Gama*, (the laſt of which underſtood *Dutch)* were ſo near them; ſo that he thought it the ſafeſt way to diſſemble, and to pretend as if they had been talking about ſome indifferent matter. Mr. *Hoogſtrate* then told *Souſa*, that he had a great mind to pay a viſit to *Donna Katharine de Melo*, mother-in-law

1643.

Hoogſtrate *it tempted by the* Portugueſe Souſa.

1643. law of *Philip Pays Souſa*; he anſwered him, that he would aſk the governor, who having given his conſent, *Hoogſtrate* went thitherward with *Souſa*, and at his going out of the gallery, whiſpered *Vander Voerde* again in the ear, *They have catch'd a mackrel, for I intend to act the hypocrite to the life.* As they were walking along the ſtreet to madam *de Melo*'s houſe, *Souſa* and *Kunha* repeated their former diſcourſe, endeavouring to encourage Mr. *Hoogſtrate*, by hopes and promiſes of great reward, both from the king and governor, with whom they ſaid he ſhould confer in private concerning the point in hand, and that in the following manner.

After their return from madam *de Melo*'s, to the houſe of *Piedro Korre de Gama*, where *Vander Voerde* expected their coming, *Kunha* was to go privately to the governor, to agree with him, that when Mr. *Vander Voerde*, *Hoogſtrate*, *Souſa*, and *Kunha*, ſhould come to ſpeak with him, he ſhould by his ſecretary, deſire them to ſtay a little while. In the mean while, *Souſa* was to aſk Mr. *Hoogſtrate* to take a glaſs of wine with him, and under that pretence bring him to the chamber of the confeſſor of the governor, where they were to have this private interview. Accordingly, *Paulo de Kunha* went to the governor, whilſt *Hoogſtrate* and *Souſa* were returning to *Piedro Corre de Gama*'s houſe; when *Souſa* entertained him with nothing elſe, but the probability of ſucceeding in their enterprize againſt the *Dutch Braſil*, telling him, that the governor ſtay'd only for the coming of *Salvador Korrea de Saa* and *Benevides*, who were expected with four galleons from *Rio Janeiro*, beſides ſome other ſhips; and that twenty five hundred men were deſigned for this expedition, beſides thoſe already in arms in *Pernambuko*, who were to be ſent from the *Bahia*, and to be landed on the Cape of *St. Auſtin*; *This is*, ſaid *Souſa*, *the governor's requeſt to you.*

Scarce were they returned to the houſe of *Piedro Korrea de Gama*, when *Andrew Vidal* came and told them, that the governor was ready to receive them; ſo they went to the palace, where they were no ſooner come within the anti-chamber, but the governor's ſecretary came to deſire them to tarry a little, the governor being buſy with cloſing ſome letters. So whilſt ſome *Portugueſe* were entertaining Mr. *Vander Voerde* near the window, ſays *Souſa* to Mr. *Hoogſtrate*, *Come, ſhall you and I take a glaſs of wine in the mean while?* Which Mr. *Springapple*, ſecretary of the embaſſy underſtanding, told him, that he would go along with them; but *Paulo de Kunha*, and ſome other *Portugueſe* taking him aſide, kept him in diſcourſe, whilſt Mr. *Hoogſtrate* was conducted by *Souſa* into the confeſſor's chamber. 1643.

Mr. Hoogſtrate's private interview with the governor.

Within a few minutes after, the governor *Antonio Telles da Silva*, entring the room, ſaluted Mr. *Hoogſtrate* very courteouſly, and ſetting himſelf in a chair near him, order'd the chamber to be lock'd, no body being preſent beſides themſelves but *Souſa*. The governor then told Mr. *Hoogſtrate*, that he had always taken a particular notice of his character, of his being a friend to the *Portugueſe*, that he hoped he would continue in the ſame opinion, and would not refuſe the offer made him by *Don John de Souſa*, in the king's and his name; their intention being not to enter into a war with the *Dutch*, but only to repoſſeſs themſelves of what of right belonged to the preſent king of *Portugal*, *Don John* IV. and that if count *Maurice* of *Naſſau* had ſtay'd any longer in this country, he himſelf would have been inſtrumental in bringing this matter about. Mr. *Hoogſtrate* anſwered the governor, that he ſhould be glad to underſtand what it was he could ſerve him in; *You have*, ſays he, *underſtood that from Mr.* Souſa, *and I deſire you to turn abſolute* Portugueſe. Mr. *Hoogſtrate* told him it was beyond his power, becauſe immediately after his return, he ſhould be provided with a majors commiſſion, and conſequently not be employed in the ſame place: Unto which the governor reply'd, *You need not queſtion any place of honour or profit among us, but it will perhaps not be convenient to diſcourſe together upon this point at preſent, for fear Mr.* Vander Voerde *ſhould ſuſpect us: But I intend to ſend two ambaſſadors, (of which Mr.* Paulo de Kunha *is to be one) to your government, who ſhall be empowered to treat with you further upon this account. And*, ſays he, *giving his hand to Mr.* Hoogſtrate, *reſt aſſured in the name of the king my maſter, that whatever Mr.* Paulo de Kunha *ſhall promiſe you will be punctually obſerved and performed.*

Then the governor took his leave, telling him that he would not detain him any longer, for fear of creating a ſuſpicion in his collegue, and ſo retired into his own apartment. But Mr. *Hoogſtrate* and *John de Souſa* were no ſooner return'd from thence, but the governor ſent for the ſaid Mr. *Hoogſtrate* and his collegue Mr. *Vander Voerden*, to confer with them, concerning their propoſals, made in the name of the council of *Dutch Braſil:* As they were walking thither, Mr. *John de Souſa* told again to Mr. *Hoogſtrate*, with a low voice, and why are you obliged to accept of the

majors

1643. majors commiſſion? It is an eaſy matter for you to tell them, that you would rather continue governor of the place where you now are; and be ſatisfy'd that when you come among us, that you will not want any employment fit for a good ſoldier as you are. Mr. *Hoogſtrate* being not a little moved with this diſcourſe, was more deſirous to get aboard their veſſel, as ſoon as poſſible he might, to get an opportunity of communicating the whole matter to Mr. *Vander Voerde*; which he did accordingly, as ſoon as they were entered the cabin, the door of which he ordered to be lock'd immediately.

The Dutch *debate, whether to employ the* Tapoyers.

In the mean while, *viz.* the 5th of *July*, it was debated in the council of the *Dutch-Braſil*, whether for the ſecurity of the country, they ſhould not want the aſſiſtance of the *Tapoyers*, under their king *John Duwy*, dwelling in *Rio Grande*; who for that purpoſe had gathered a good body near *Kunhau*, eſpecially ſince the *Portugueſe* committed all manner of barbarities againſt the *Dutch*, and had ſummon'd the *barbarians* called *Rondelas*, from the *Bahia*.

But conſidering the devaſtations which muſt needs enſue upon the march of thoſe barbarous people in the flat countrey, it was thought convenient not to come to any certain reſolution upon this point, 'till they had adviſed with lieutenant colonel *Haus*, to whom a letter was diſpatched, immediately upon that account.

On the 7th of *July*, the ſaid Mr. *Haus* ſent word to the council, that he intended to march the ſame day from *Moribeka*, and after being joined with captain *John Blaar*, to attack the enemy at *St. Lawrence*; but by another letter of the 16th, written by captain *Blaar*, they were informed that the rebels continued very ſtrong at *St. Lawrence*, expecting a certain reinforcement from the *Matta*, where they had forced the people to take up arms for them; deſiring a ſuccour of fifty men, to drive them from thence. Hereupon the council diſpatched meſſengers both to *Blaar* and *Haus*, ordering them to join their troops, and to rout the rebels near *St. Lawrence*, on which in a great meaſure depended the preſervation of the *Dutch-Braſil*.

Haus *and* Blaar *ordered to join.*

The 7th of the ſame month the council received alſo a letter from lieutenant *Flemming*, dated at *Pojuka*, in which he advertiſed them, that he had received certain intelligence, that *Kamaron* was marching againſt him, and that two companies were already come to the ſugar-mill of *Pikdora*. Hereupon orders were ſent him, that if he found himſelf not in a condition to keep the monaſtery for want of proviſions, he ſhould at the approach of *Kamaron*'s troops retire to *St. Antonio*, the better to make head againſt the enemy. The ſame day enſign *Hartſtin* marched with a detachment of ninety ſoldiers and thirty *Braſilians*, of the garriſons of the *Receif* and *Itamarika*, to *Ajama* and *Jegoaribi*, in queſt of the rebels, but meeting with none returned about noon, and the ſame evening directed his march towards *Haus*.

Lieutenant Flemming *ordered to retire to* St. Antonio.

1643.

The 8th of *July* the council having received advice from *Haus* that they intended the ſame day to march from the ſugar-mill of *St. John Ferdinando Vieira* to attack the rebels at *St. Lawrence*, if they would abide his coming, it was reſolved to ſend as many forces as poſſibly they could ſpare to his relief, conſidering that the preſervation of the whole *Dutch-Braſil* depended on the ſucceſs of this expedition; and accordingly two companies of foot, of *Mucheron* and *Blaar* were ordered to march thither, not queſtioning but that before their arrival *Haus* would be join'd by captain *John Blaar*; and in effect the next following day they received advice from Mr. *Haus*, that he was ready to join with the ſaid *Blaar*.

The council ſends ſuccours to Haus.

The 10th of *July*, the council gave an account by letters to *Haus*, what intelligence they had received concerning the poſture of affairs in *St. Antonio* and *Pojuka*, with orders to ſend as many firelocks and *Braſilians* as he could poſſibly ſpare to their relief, to keep the paſſage from *St. Antonio* to *Pojuka* and *Serenhaim* open; without which all communication betwixt them and the *Receif* would be cut off by the enemy. Two letters of *John Fernando Vieira* and *Antonio Kavalkanti* were the ſame day read in council, in which they complained of the ſeverity of the two laſt proclamations, but were not thought fit to be anſwered; eſpecially ſince *Amador d'Araouje* had about the ſame time retired from the paſs of *Pinderama*.

Haus *ordered to ſend relief to* St. Antonio.

Two days before, *viz.* that the council had received letters from Mr. *Hoek*, dated the 25th of *June*, at *Rio Grande*, intimating that hitherto there had not happened any commotions in thoſe parts, that however he had diſarmed the *Portugueſe*, and that the *Tapoyers* appeared to be well inclined to the government: Orders were ſent him to cultivate a good underſtanding with the *Tapoyers*, for which purpoſe they ſent ſome preſents to *John Duwy* their king, and that the council approved his diſarming of the *Portugueſe*. On the ſame day father *Imanuel*, *Lewis Bras*, *Imanuel Ferdinand de Sa*, *Kaſpar de Mendoza*, *Furtado* and *Jeronymo de Rocha*, all *Portugueſe* inhabitants of the *Dutch-Braſil* delivered their

1643. their petition to the council, requesting, that the time of six days appointed by the last proclamation, for the wives and children of the revolted *Portugueſe*, to leave the countrey, being expired, they might be allowed to ſtay in their habitations at leaſt, 'till the ways, which at that time were rendred unpaſſable, by the overflowing of the rivers, were ſomewhat mended. But conſidering that the *Portugueſe* rebels forced the inhabitants by threats and other unuſual methods to take up arms againſt the government, their requeſt was not granted.

The petition of the Portugueſe *refuſed.*

The 13th of *July* the council were advertiſed by letters from *Haus*, dated the 12th, that he had paſſed the river *Kapivaribi*, and marching thro' the *Matta* to the ſugar-mills of *Arnao d'Ollanda*, had met with four hundred rebels, who at the approach of his troops were fled to *Moribeka*, with the loſs of ſome of their men, from whence they might without any oppoſition march to the *Matta* of *Braſil*, and that he was ready to march directly to *St. Lawrence*, where he would expect the further orders of the council. They immediately diſpatched their orders to him, to purſue and rout the flying rebels with all poſſible ſpeed, before they could make head again, which done, he ſhould fix his head quarters, in ſuch a place where he was ſure he might be ſupplied with proviſions out of the adjacent countrey; their magazines being ſo exhauſted, as not to be in a condition to ſupply his troops. *Haus* had already in ſome meaſure taken effectual care of this point, having in the mean while ſent a reinforcement of one hundred foot, and a company of *Braſilians*, under the command of captain *Tallo*, to Mr. *Ley* governor of *Moribeka* and *St. Antonio*. The council alſo ordered the governor of the *Cape of St. Auſtin* to ſtrengthen the fort with palliſadoes; and at the ſame time received Advice from Mr. *Ley* from *St. Antonio*, that the rebels under *Amador d'Araouje*, and *Pedro Marinha Falkao*, had poſted themſelves within ſight of them, in the new ſugar-mill, but as ſoon as he received the expected ſuccours, he did not queſtion to chaſe them from thence, *Amador d'Araouje* having in vain attempted to force thoſe of *Pojuka*, to take up arms againſt the government.

The rebels flee before Haus.

Revolt in Pojuka.

He received alſo intelligence from Mr. *Carpentier* out of *Goyana*, that things remained in quiet there as yet: But whilſt *Haus* was buſy in making head againſt the rebels in the *Vergea*, *Petro Marinho Falkao* having declared himſelf head of the rebels of *Pojuka*, had gathered a body ſufficient to block up the garriſon of *St. Antonio*, who had no other ſupplies of proviſion, but what they received from the circumjacent countrey; ſo that the council being ſenſible of the danger, ſent immediately orders to *Haus*, to haſten to the relief of that place; who, accordingly directed his march the ſame night to the ſugar-mill of *Lewis Bras*, leaving captain *Wiltſchut* with a company of ſoldiers, and all the ſick, behind at *St. Lawrence*. 1643.

The council received alſo advice by letters from *Paul de Linge*, dated the 12th of *July* at *Parayba*, that things were as yet quiet thereabouts, but that with much ado he had hitherto kept the *Braſilians*, inhabiting the villages, from plundering the *Portugueſe* inhabitants, who were extremely diſſatisfied, becauſe ſome of the *Braſilians* and *Tapoyers*, that had done them conſiderable miſchief, were diſcharged out of cuſtody. They ordered him to take all poſſible care to keep both the *Braſilians* and *Dutch* inhabitants, who were both for plundering the *Portugueſe*, from doing any miſchief to them; for which reaſon the council ſent the following proclamation to be publiſh'd there.

A PROCLAMATION.

WE the members of the great council, having received frequent complaints, that many of the faithful inhabitants of the countrey, who lately have taken a new oath of allegiance to the government, are plundred and robb'd by the ſoldiers and volunteers; and being reſolved to maintain them in the poſſeſſion of their eſtates and goods, have for that reaſon granted them ſafeguards, and taken them into our peculiar protection; do hereby forbid all our officers and ſoldiers, as well as the other inhabitants under our Juriſdiction, to attempt to plunder any of the inhabitants, provided with ſuch ſafeguards, or to endamage them any otherwiſe, either in their goods or perſons, upon pain of corporeal puniſhment.

The 15th of *July* in the evening, the council was advertiſed by Mr. *Ley*, that the rebels had kill'd ſome ſoldiers of the garriſon of *St. Antonio*, that were ſent abroad to fetch ſome cattle from the ſugar-mill *Gurapou*, and had ſo cloſely block'd up the place, that no proviſion could be brought thither; and as they were not provided with neceſſaries for above a few days longer, they were in the utmoſt danger of being loſt. Lieutenant colonel *Haus* being expected the ſame evening with his troops at *St. Lawrence*, orders were diſpatch'd thither for him to go either in perſon, or at leaſt to ſend as many able ſoldiers as he could bring together, under

1643. the command of captain *John Blaar*, to the relief of *St. Antonio*, the council being of opinion, that the ſafety of the *Cape of St. Auſtin*, and of all the ſouthern provinces, depended on the preſervation of this place; for which reaſon, they alſo ordered captain *Falho*, who was expected about the ſame time with a company of ſoldiers, and as many *Braſilians* at *Moribeka*, to march directly to *St. Antonio*, and to ſtay there 'till further orders; of all which they ſent advice to Mr. *Ley*, and Mr. *Heck*. *Haus* having, purſuant to theſe orders, directed his march to *St. Antonio*, (notwithſtanding the wearineſs of his ſoldiers tired by a tedious march) *Pedro Marinho Falkao* had no ſooner notice of his approach, but he raiſed the blockade of *St. Antonio*, and with his body of rebels gathered out of the three diſtricts of *St. Antonio*, *Pojuka* and *Moribeka*, to the number of ſix hundred, joined with the rebels in the *Vergea* of *Moribeka*.

The blockade of St. Antonio raiſed.

The 17th of *July* the council were advertiſed by *Haus* in a letter dated at *Moribeka*, that having received a meſſage from Mr. *Ley* and Mr. *Heck* out of *St. Antonio*, with advice, that in *Puerto de Gallinas*, two boats with ammunition were landed by *Pedro de Kunha*, he had ſent thither captain *John Blaar*, and enſign *Hartſtein*, with a good Body of his ableſt ſoldiers and *Braſilians*, he himſelf not being in a condition to follow with the reſt, diſabled by their late marches; for which reaſon he had put them into quarters of refreſhment in *Moribeka*, where he would expect their further orders, as not judging his preſence neceſſary at the *Receif*, now the enemies were fled before him.

Orders ſent J. Haus by the council.

Orders were thereupon diſpatch'd to him by the council the 19th of *July*, to keep his head quarters in *Moribeka*, the better to keep a watchful eye over the rebels that were retired into the woods; and to be the nearer at hand to ſuccour either *St. Antonio* or *Pojuka*, for which *Moribeka* lay very convenient; but if the enemy ſhould become too ſtrong for him, he ſhould retreat towards the *Receif*. Advice alſo was ſent him, That *Amador d'Araouje*, *Pedro Marinho Falkao*, *John Pais*, and *Kabral*, were with the rebels they had gathered in *St. Antonio* and *Pojuka*, march'd the day before in the morning from *d'Ingenio Moreno Gardo*, to join their troops with thoſe of *John Fernandes Vieira*.

The council likewiſe received ſeveral letters from *John Hoek*, *Rudolph Baro*, and *James Rabbi*, dated the 5th, 6th and 7th of *July*, concerning the preſent ſtate of affairs in *Rio Grande*, and that they being threatned with an invaſion by *Kamaron* on the ſouth ſide, and by the *Braſilians* of *Siara* and *Maranhaon* from the north, they had 1643. diſarmed all the *Portugueſe* and laid up their arms in the fort of *Keulen*. They had alſo by the advice of king *John Duwy*, taken into cuſtody a certain *Portugueſe* called *Antonio Vetello*, with his ſon, being accuſed by the ſaid king *Duwy* of having had a hand in the murther committed upon the *Dutch* in *Siara*, and in the conſpiracy of the rebels. They further complained of the ill practices of the *Portugueſe*, who ſought by all means poſſible to oppreſs the *Dutch* thereabouts; adding withal, that king *Duwy* was ready with his *Tapoyers* to fall upon the *Portugueſe*, as ſoon as he received orders for that purpoſe, which had made many of the *Portugueſe* fly out of *Parayba*.

About the ſame time, near one thouſand *Braſilians*, *viz.* three hundred and ſixty nine men, the reſt women and children, being fled for ſhelter into the iſle of *Itamarika*, where they were maintained out of the magazines, it was reſolved the 21ſt of *July* by the council, to ſend thither Mr. *Liſtry*, to take effectual care, to eaſe the company of that burthen, that they might be engaged to provide themſelves out of their reſpective *Aldeas*. Things were as yet quiet about that time in *Itamarika*, *Goyana* and *Parayba*, by the good conduct of Mr. *Paul Vander Linge*, governor of the laſt. For as ſoon as the fire of rebellion began to break out in the *Vergea*, *Pojuka*, and in *Olinda*, the council being advertiſed that they ought to keep a watchful eye over thoſe of *Parayba*, where ſeveral were ſuſpected of being conſcious of the deſign, they ſent the 13th of *July*, *Paul de Linge*, one of the Aſſeſſors in the court of Juſtice thither, with an ample commiſſion, to endeavour to keep the inhabitants in obedience, and to act for that purpoſe, as he ſhould find it moſt conducing to the publick ſecurity. He was no ſooner arrived there, but he made it his chiefeſt care to provide the forts with ſufficient garriſons, ammunition and proviſions, which he took from the ſhips then lying in the road, behind the *Red-Land*: He further took care to ſecure all the ſuſpected perſons, and ſummoned the reſt to take a new oath of allegiance to the government, which they did accordingly.

The council uſed the ſame precaution in the diſtrict of *Pojuka*, in the *Vergea*, *Garaſſu* and *Goyana*, where they obliged ſuch of the inhabitants as had not left their dwelling-places to take a new oath of obedience. But the late ſuccours ſent thither from the *Bahia* fruſtrated all theſe endeavours.

Propoſitions made by Mr. Ley to the council.

On the 24th of *July*, Mr. *Ley* came with credentials from *St. Antonio* to the council, unto

1643. unto whom he made the following propoſitions.

I. That whereas ſeveral young and able men, living near *St. Antonio*, had not liſted themſelves purſuant to the proclamation iſſued for that purpoſe, they deſired orders might be ſent for all thoſe living in the juriſdiction of *Maurice*'s *Town* and *St. Antonio* in the open countrey, to be obliged to take up arms for the defence of the country.

II. To oblige all ſuch young men as were not able to ſerve as volunteers, at their own charge, to liſt themſelves for ſoldiers, and to inſtruct them in martial diſcipline.

III. That perhaps it might not be unadviſeable to draw the garriſon out of *Porto Calvo*, to appear the more formidable in the field.

IV. To divide our land forces into two bodies, the better to maintain themſelves in the open countrey; whereas now upon the leaſt motion of the enemy, our whole force was obliged to follow them; and that the garriſon of *St. Antonio* ſhould be reinforced with ſuch a number, as to be able to ſend abroad a good party, for the conveniency of fetching the neceſſary proviſions out of the countrey.

After mature deliberation, the council was of opinion as to the

Their reſolutions.

I. That the young inhabitants of *St. Antonio*, *Pojuka*, and *Moribeka*, ought not to be forced to ſerve in the fort *St. Antonio*.

II. That they would empower Mr. *Ley* and *Heck*, to take as many of the young men as voluntarily offered themſelves into the ſervice for four months, at nine gilders *per* month, and one months advance money.

III. They were abſolutely againſt the leaving of the fort *Porto Calvo*, but that ought to be defended to the utmoſt.

IV. What concern'd the dividing of their land forces in two bodies, they would adviſe with colonel *Haus*, but they approved of the propoſed reinforcement of the garriſon of *St. Antonio*, for reaſons by them alledged.

Lieutenant *Haus Vogel*, by his letters dated the 18th and 27th of *July*, at *Seregippo del Rey* adviſed the council, that he had ſent a detachment towards *Kamaron*, who could not get ſight either of any *Portugueſe* or *Braſilians*, but that they had taken a ſingle *Portugueſe*, who was charged with letters to be carried to *Rio St. Franciſco*: He told them, that *Kamaron* with ſome troops was march'd through *Rio St. Franciſco* into the captainſhip of *Seregippo del Rey*; and that three or four ſmall veſſels or *caravans*, with ſome troops under the command of *Andrew Vidal*, were ſail'd from the *Bahia* to *Maranhaon* and *Siara*. 1643.

He likewiſe ſent the letters found upon the ſaid *Portugueſe* to the council, by which it appear'd, that the firſt foundation of this revolt had been laid among thoſe of the *Bahia*; or at leaſt that they had been made privy to it, and that they had provided theſe ſuccours. For among others, there was a letter from the biſhop of that place, to a certain friar of the *Receif*, in which he told him, that he hoped to be with him before long; whereupon the *Fiſcal* was ordered to examine the matter, in order to find out the bottom of this correſpondency betwixt theſe two clergymen.

Certain letters ſeized and communicated to the council.

In the mean while the *Tapoyers* of *Rio Grande* (according to Mr. *Linge*'s letter of the 19th of *July*) had murther'd thirty five *Portugueſe* in the ſugar-mills of *Kunha*, who being of the number of thoſe that had ſurrendred their arms, purſuant to the proclamation, this cauſed no ſmall terror among the reſt of the *Portugueſe* thereabouts, and eſpecially in *Paraÿba*, where they left their habitations, ſo that it being to be fear'd they would aſſociate with the rebels, under pretence of ſelf-defence, Mr. *Linge* deſired a reinforcement of ſoldiers to keep the *Tapoyers* in awe. The council therefore commanded Mr. *Aſtellen* and captain *William Lambert* with his company of foot, beſides twenty fuſileers, and a detachment of fifty men out of the garriſons of *Parayba* and *Rio Grande*, to take care of the *Tapoyers*, and to conduct them to the *Receif*, *Jacob Rabbi* their commander was ordered to march along with them, and *Rudolph Baro* appointed to provide them quarters upon the road.

The Tapoyers murther thirty five Portugueſe.

Haus having by this time ſufficiently refreſh'd his troops, writ a letter dated the firſt of *Auguſt* to the council, in which he deſired their orders to go in queſt of the rebels, and to attack them before they could be reinforced with their expected ſuccours; which being granted him, he attack'd them in *d'Ingenio* of *Balthaſar Moreno*, with ſuch ſucceſs, that he beat them from place to place; 'till on the 3d of *Auguſt* they retired to their entrenchment upon a high ſteep hill, acceſſible only in one place. Notwithſtanding which, he relying upon the bravery of his ſoldiers, and hoping thereby to put an end to the war, attack'd them vigorouſly in this advantagious poſt; but the rebels being ſuperiour to him both in number and in the ſtrength of their camp, his forces were repulſed with the loſs of one hundred men, (ſome ſay five hundred) among whom was captain *Lor*. After this defeat, *Haus* being ſenſible that the enemy expected daily a freſh

Haus engages the rebels.

Is worſted and retires to the Receif.

1643. a freſh reinforcement from the *Bahia*, retired to the *Receif*, where he knew his troops were abſolutely neceſſary for the defence of the place.

Two Portugueſe *condemned to death.*

On the firſt of *Auguſt Gonſalvo Kabral de Kalkos*, was by the court of juſtice condemned to death, having at the inſtigation of *John Fernandes Vieira*, undertaken to head the rebels in the captainſhip of *Goyana*. The ſame fate attending one *Thomas Pais*, an inhabitant of *Tienpio*, who had endeavoured to raiſe ſome troops for the ſaid *John Fernandes Vieira*. The ſame day the great council received advice out of *Serinheim*, (the letters being ſent privately in the night time in a ſmall boat down the river to the ſea-ſide) that the rebels began to be very numerous thereabouts, that they were maſters of the river, had ſtaved all the boats, and plundred *d'Ingeneo Formoſa*, where they carried away the negroes, and kill'd the beaſts belonging to the *Dutch*, but ſpared thoſe of the *Portugueſe*. The council being ſenſible that nothing but force would be able to reduce theſe rebels to their duty, and that they were from time to time reinforced from the *Bahia*, whereas the *Dutch* troops diminiſh'd daily, they reſolved the firſt of *Auguſt*, to ſend Mr. *Balthaſar Vander Voerden* councellor of juſtice to *Holland*, to repreſent to the council of nineteen there, the true ſtate of the affairs of the *Dutch-Braſil*, and to ſollicit prompt ſuccours. Accordingly the ſaid Mr. *Vander Voerden* having taken his leave of the council, ſet ſail the next day, with the reſt of the ſhips that lay ready to ſail for *Holland*, being inſtructed with ſufficient power and credentials from the council; as follows.

Rebellion in Serinhaim.

Mr. Vander Voerden *ſent with a credential into* Holland.

Moſt noble, honourable, and moſt prudent lords.

NOtwithſtanding *the rebels make not the leaſt uſe of the royal authority, but cover their revolt with the cloak of godly liberty, we were always of opinion, that this rebellion of our* Portugueſe *inhabitants has not only been undertaken with the conſent of the king of* Portugal, *or at leaſt of his governor of the* Bahia, *but alſo encouraged and fomented by his authority and conduct. For how can it be ſuppoſed that* Kamaron, Henry Dias, *and the other ringleaders, ſhould have dared to attempt to attack us by force of arms without his approbation? It was likewiſe our conſtant opinion, (conſidering the preſent unſettled ſtate of* Portugal, *and the alliance betwixt that King and the ſtates of* Holland *againſt* Spain*) that he would be ſure never to acknowledge the tranſactions of the heads of the rebellion, and the ſuccours ſent them, to have been done by his authority, leſt the breach of faith and all its ill conſequences might be one time or other laid at his door, 'till he thought himſelf ſure in the entire conqueſt of the* Dutch Braſil. *Our gueſs has ſince proved more than too true, for* Antonio Telles de la Silva, *governor of the* Bahia *(as is evident from his anſwer to our letters here incloſed) denies to have had the leaſt knowledge, much leſs any hand in the contrivance or the conduct of this conſpiracy; laying the blame of this inſurrection upon their ring-leaders, who refuſed to obey his orders; and offering to ſend certain commiſſioners to appeaſe the fury of the rebels; and in caſe they ſhould refuſe to comply, to force them by the kings authority to lay down their arms. But how little agreeable this offer of putting an end to this rebellion, is to his real intention, is apparent out of the report made by Mr.* Vander Voerden *and captain* Dieterick Hoogſtrate, *under-written by their own hands; in which you will find theſe expreſs words of the governor:* That the *Braſilians* and negroes were diſbanded by his majeſty of *Portugal*'s particular order. *The abſtracts of the ſeveral incloſed letters ſent from the* Bahia, *and taken from the meſſenger by our forces in* Seregippo, *will put it beyond all doubt, that ſeveral inhabitants of the* Bahia, *and among them the Biſhop himſelf, had already in* May *laſt ſome knowledge of the intentions of* John Fernandes Vieira, *and his accomplices; add to this the depoſitions of captain* Dieterick Hoogſtrate *ſubſcribed by himſelf, concerning the propoſitions made to him in private, whilſt he was managing the company's buſineſs there, in the quality of one of our deputies; which as it directly contradicts the governors anſwer to us, ſo it unravels the whole ſecret of his real intentions. And for as much as all theſe things are ſufficient forewarnings to us, that the rebels will be conſtantly ſupplied from the* Bahia, *whereas we on the contrary muſt expect to be weaken'd more and more in every reſpect, we judged it abſolutely neceſſary and requiſite for the ſervice of our ſtate, to ſend to you the members of the council of nineteen, Mr.* Balthaſar Vander Voerden, *councellor in our court of juſtice, to give you a verbal account of the deplorable ſtate of our affairs here, in a more ample manner, than the ſame may be expreſs'd in writing, not queſtioning, but your lordſhips will thereby be encouraged to ſend us a ſpeedy and ſufficient ſuccour, to re-eſtabliſh our affairs here, and to deliver your faithful ſubjects from the imminent dadger that threatens no leſs than the ruin and loſs of their lives and eſtates, and deſiring you to give a favourable reception to the ſaid Mr.* Balthaſar Vander Voerden.

Receif *the* 2*d of* Aug. 1645.

1643.

1643. *The Portugueſe prepare for the Invaſion of the Dutch-Brafil.*

Immediately after the departure of the two beforementioned envoys, Mr. *Vander Voerden* and captain *Hoogſtrate* out of the *Bahia*, being the 20th of *July*, the governor *Antonio Telles de Silva*, ordered all the ſea and land men that could be got together in haſte, to be embark'd in twelve ſhips ready fitted out for that purpoſe; with neceſſary ammunition, arms and proviſion, for the intended invaſion. *Hieronymo Serrao de Payva* had the ſupreme command over the fleet, as the colonel *Martin Soares Moreno*, and *Andrew Vidal de Nigreiros* had over the land forces, both officers in the ſervice of the king of *Portugal*. The orders given to the admiral by the governor, dated the 20th *July*, contained in ſubſtance, that the great council of the *Dutch-Braſil* having notified to him the inſurrection of the *Portugueſe* inhabitants of *Pernambuko*, he had judged it expedient to equip his fleet, in order to put a ſpeedy ſtop to thoſe diſorders; becauſe he was willing to comply with the ſaid councils requeſt, in reſpect of the ſincere friendſhip and correſpondency betwixt the crown of *Portugal* and them, which he had ſtrict orders from his majeſty to obſerve; whereas it is evident, that the great council of the *Dutch-Braſil* in their letter to *Salvador Korrea de Saa Benavides*, of the 13th of *Auguſt* expreſly declare, never to have deſired any aſſiſtance from the governor of the *Bahia*, againſt the rebellious *Portugueſe* inhabitants.

Pretences for this invaſion.

Inſtructions of the Portugueſe Admiral.

The further Inſtructions given to the ſaid admiral *Payva* were, that he ſhould directly ſteer his courſe from the *Bahia* to *Pernambuko*, keeping about twenty or thirty leagues diſtance at ſea, from the ſhore; that coming to the tenth degree he ſhould approach the ſhore, and if he found the wind to blow hard from the ſouth, before he came to the before mentioned height, he ſhould be very careful not to paſs beyond the lands point in the night time. After having taken a view of the country, he ſhould, with the advice of his beſt pilots, endeavour to land his men in the moſt ſecure place he could meet with thereabouts, either at *Una*, *Lagamar* or *Tamandare*; being three leagues to the ſouth of the iſle of *Alexo*. But if they could not make any of theſe harbours, they ſhould enter at *Porto Doſſer*, *Nambous* or *Lagamar* of *Marakaipe*, lying two leagues to the north of *Alexo*. But if notwithſtanding all their endeavours, they alſo ſhould miſs their aim in thoſe places, to make themſelves maſters of *Porto de Gallinhas*, and to land their men betwixt that place and *Barra Grande*. After they had landed their men, with the neceſſary ammunition and proviſions, he ſhould ſet ſail to the bay of *Pernambuko*, in order to deliver with his own hands the governors letter to the lords of the great council. 1643.

The Portugueſe ſet ſail from the Bahia.

Accordingly the ſaid fleet ſet ſail towards the latter end of *July* from the *Bahia*, and in few days after arrived in the Bay of *Tamandare*, betwixt the rivers *Olna* and *Formoſa*, about four or five leagues beyond *Alevo* and *Serinhaim*. They were no ſooner come to an anchor there, but the colonel *Martin Soares Moreno*, and *Andrew Vidal de Nigreiros* landed the 28th of *July* one thouſand eight hundred or two thouſand landmen, among whom were many reformed officers well appointed, and great ſtore of arms, ammunition, and other neceſſaries.

Land their men.

The firſt of *Auguſt*, towards evening, three ſhips with five ſmall veſſels appeared in ſight of the *Receif*, ſteering their courſe to the north, whereupon the council diſpatch'd their immediate orders to the two ſhips, the *Zoutlandia* and the *Zealandia*, to make all the ſail they could after them, to obſerve what courſe they ſteer'd, and to prevent their landing of men. About the ſame time an advice-boat arrived from admiral *Lichthart*, with letters to the council, intimating, that he had ſeen the ſaid ſhips, and that he ſuppoſed their intent to be, to land ſome men on the ſouth of the cape of *St. Auſtin*, for which reaſon he deſired them to ſend him ſome ſhips, and grant him leave to take as many of the garriſon of *St. Antonio* as he ſhould judge neceſſary to attack the enemy; of all which immediate notice was given to the northern parts, to be upon their guard againſt any ſudden ſurpriſe.

A falſe alarum upon the Receif.

But the next following day thoſe ſhips being got out of ſight, ſeveral maſters of ſmall veſſels, that had been near them at ſea, reported, that they were heavy freighted ſhips, which by the ſtrong north winds were forced near the ſhore, ſo that it was concluded that they had ſteered their courſe towards *Portugal*.

The Portugueſe Fleet ſail to Pernambuko.

Immediately after admiral *Payva* ſet ſail from the bay of *Tamandare*, and meeting with the fleet under the command of admiral *Salvador Korrea de Saa de Benavides*, which was latterly ſailed out of the port of *Rio Janeiro*, he returned with him into the ſaid harbour, and on *St. Lawrence*'s day with their joint forces ſailed from thence towards the bay of *Pernambuko*.

The firſt news the council received of it was on the 11th of *Auguſt*, by a maſter of a ſmall veſſel called, *John Hoen*, bound for *Seregippo del Rey*, and by commiſſary *John Barentz*, with advice that they had ſeen a fleet of twenty eight or thirty ſhips off of

1643. *Una*, or *Rio Formoſa*, and that three of them had purſued them, and diſcharged ſome of their guns upon them. Much about the ſame time they received letters from major *Hoogſtrate*, from the *Cape of St. Auſtin*, and the fort *Vander Duſſen*, intimating, that *Andrew Vidal*, *Henry Dias* and *Paul de Kunha* were landed at *Una*, and marching to *Serinhaim*, had made themſelves maſters of the place, where they had given quarter to the *Dutch*, but cut to pieces all the *Braſilians*. The council hereupon took immediate care to ſend ſome ammunition and proviſions to the ſaid cape, having already, for the better ſecurity of that place, ordered Mr. *Ley* and Mr. *Hoek*, two days before, to leave the fort of *St. Antonio*, and to retire with the garriſon to the cape of *St. Auſtin*, before they were encloſed by the enemy. That two ſhips, the *Deventer* and the *Elias*, which were in the harbour unlading their goods and proviſions brought along with them for the ſervice of the company, were ordered to be equipped immediately, in order to join with the other five ſhips that lay at anchor in the road, *viz.* the *Utrecht*, the *Zealandia*, *Ser Veer*, the *Zoutlandia*, and the *Golden-Doe*. The ſame Night advice of all what paſs'd was ſent to colonel *Haus*, with orders to be upon his guard, and to retire with his troops to the ſugar-mill belonging to Mr. *Hoek*, or any other convenient place, from whence he might be able to maintain a communication with the *Receif*. Letters were alſo diſpatch'd to Mr. *Dortmont* in *Itamarika*, to Mr. *Carpentier* in *Goyana*, and Mr. *de Linge* in *Parayba*, to advertiſe them of the enemies arrival.

The council adviſed the Receif.

They equip ſome ſhips.

To ſupply the want of ſea men, many labourers were impreſt aboard the ſhips, as were likewiſe thirty-five land ſoldiers of *Moucheron*'s company, who had ſpoiled their fleet by their laſt long march; and out of the ſhip *Elias* were a thouſand pounds of gunpowder, and out of the *Douchter* ſix hundred, ſent a ſhore for the uſe of the garriſon.

Not long after dinner time the enemies fleet, conſiſting of twenty-eight or thirty ſhips, appeared in ſight of the *Receif*, where they caſt anchor to the north of four of our ſhips and a yacht, which lay in that road; ſo that the next following night was ſpent in ballaſting the two ſhips, the *Elias* and *Deventer*, and in fitting them for the ſea. The next morning with break of day the *Portugueſe* admiral who carried the white flag, ſent *Martinho de Rebeira* and *Balthaſar de Caſtilho*, as his deputies aboard the *Dutch* admiral *Cornelius Lichthart*, who brought four letters, *viz.* two from the governor of the *Bahia*, *Antonio Telles de Silva*, the firſt dated the 21st, and the ſecond the 22d of *July*, the third from the *Portugueſe* admiral, *Salvador Korrea de Saa Benavides*, and the fourth from *Jeronymo Sarrao de Pavia*, dated the 12th of *Auguſt*; beſides another letter from the before-mentioned governor, directed to *John Fernando Vieira*, *Anthony Kavalkanti*, and the other heads of the *Portugueſe* rebels. 1643.

Letters ſent to the council.

Admiral *Lichthart* carried the ſaid deputies aſhore, in order to deliver the letters to the council; which being tranſlated, were read at the meeting of the council the 14th of *Auguſt*, as well thoſe of the governor from the 21st, 22d, and 24th of *July*; as from *Salvador Korrea de Saa Benavides*, commodore of the *Portugueſe* fleets, and *Jeronymo Sarrao de Pavia*, who had landed *Andrew Vidal* with his men near *Rio Formoſa*.

The firſt letter was as follows.

The firſt letter.

PUrſuant to your lordſhips letter, and the propoſitions made in your behalf by your deputies, Mr. Balthaſar Vander Voerden *councellor of juſtice, and* Dieterick Hoogſtrate *governour of the* Cape of St. Auſtin, *in which you requeſted the recalling of the troops under* Henry Dias; *I being deſirous to fulfil my promiſe, ſent to you in my anſwer by the moſt effectual means that I could poſſibly think of, have ſent you the two colonels* Martin Soares Moreno, *and* Andrew Vidal de Negreiros *(both perſons of unqueſtionable conduct and prudence) to the captainſhip of* Pernambuko, *with full power and inſtructions, to reduce the revolted* Portugueſe *to their due obedience, for which reaſon alſo I have ſent a letter to the ſaid rebels, to exhort them to the remembrance of their duty, and to lay down their arms. Which that it might prove the more effectual, I have ſent thither ſufficient force, which may be ſerviceable to your lordſhips, to reduce thoſe that remain obſtinate to reaſon, and to chaſe the rebellious troops out of your dominions. I hope that with God's aſſiſtance this may prove an effectual means to quench the fire of rebellion, to reſtore the peace of* Braſil, *and to encreaſe the good underſtanding and friendſhip which has been eſtabliſhed betwixt both theſe nations. We recommend you to God's protection, remaining,*

Bahia, July 21, 1645.

Your lordſhips affectionate ſervant,
Antonio Telles de Sylva.

The ſecond letter of the ſaid governor to the council runs thus,

1643.

The second letter.

I Have dispatched my orders to colonel Jeronymo Sarrao de Pavia, *captain-major of our fleet (which I have sent to your assistance) to deliver these presents to you, immediately after the landing of the forces aboard the said fleet, and to offer in my name all the assistance he is able to give you, pursuant to my command and your lordships request. I am very ready to embrace this opportunity to give you these marks of my zeal for your welfare, especially in contributing what in me lies to the reducing of your revolted subjects to their obedience. Neither do I in the least question, but that by this expedient the flames of an intestine war will be quenched, beyond all hopes of being ever rekindled hereafter; and that I shall have the satisfaction of having been instrumental to answer the expectation of your lordships, pursuant to the proposals made to me upon that account in your behalf. So recommending you to God's protection, I rest*

Your lordships
Bahia, July *affectionate servant,*
22, 1645. Antonio Telles de Sylva.

Besides these he sent another letter by *Don Salvador Korrea de Saa Benavides*, admiral of the *Portuguese* fleet, directed to the council of *Dutch Brasil*, as follows,

The third letter.

WHilst I was endeavouring to satisfy the request made to me by your ambassadours, and busied in embarking the forces designed for your service, under the command of the two colonels Martin Soares Moreno *and* Andrew Vidal de Nigreiros, *together with colonel* Jeronymo de Payva, *captain-major of the forces,* Salvador Korrea de Saa Benavides *admiral of this state, and a member of the council of transmarine affairs, established by authority of the king my master, happened to arrive by God's peculiar direction, with his fleet from* Rio de Janeiro, *in the* Bahia, *in order to conduct them to* Portugal. *But being desirous to redouble my efforts, as well in the conduct of his person as in the strength of his fleet, to render the whole the more serviceable to your lordships, I thought convenient to send the said admiral with the fleet under his command, in conjunction with the rest, to the revolted captainship, not questioning but that by his prudent conduct and authority, he will be very instrumental in restoring the peace in your dominions, according to our utmost wishes; and I live in hopes, that this may serve as real demonstrations of the good understanding and friendship I am willing to cultivate betwixt these two states, both as a just friend and good neighbour. I recommend you to God's protection.* 1643.

Your affectionate servant,
Bahia, July 25, 1645. Antonio Telles de Sylva.

The chief contents of these letters tended to persuade the great council of the *Dutch Brasil*, that the governor of the *Bahia* had, pursuant to the request made by the deputies of the said council to him, sent certain land forces under the command of the two colonels *Martin Soares Moreno*, and *Andrew Vidal de Nigreiros*, aboard the fleet commanded by *Jeronymo Sarrao de Payva*, in conjunction with the whole fleet of *Rio de Janeiro*, under the conduct of admiral *Korrea*, to assist them both by sea and land, as is evident from the words of the preceding letters: He also requested by his deputies, *viz.* captain *Martinho de Rebeira*, and auditor-general *Balthasar de Kastilho*, that the great council would be pleased to acquaint the king his master with it, in a particular letter from them to his majesty. *The contents of these letters.*

What deserves our particular observation in his letter to *John Fernandes Vieira*, and the rest of the rebels is, that he calls them *the king's subjects, unto whom he has sent this succour for their defence*; yet with this restriction, in order to reduce them by all gentle means to their former obedience to the *Dutch* government. It being evident that the propositions made by our deputies to the governour *Telles* tended to no other purpose than to engage him to recall *Kamaron* and *Dias*, and such others as were come to join with the rebellious *Portuguese*, out of the *Dutch Brasil*, and in case of refusal to declare them rebels and enemies to the king of *Portugal*; but he directly contrary to the intention and request of the said council; had instead of recalling them, sent these forces to their succours; and instead of leaving them to the disposal of the council, had caused them to be landed in a remote place, where the said *Kamaron* and *Dias* were with their forces at that time. Neither was the council ignorant of their intention, in sending a fleet into the road of the *Receif* at this juncture; tending to no other end than to back the revolted rebels in their design, and to encourage the rest to take up arms against them.

The council was fully satisfied as to this point, when they received advice from the cape of *St. Austin*, that the garrison of *Serinhaim* had been forced to surrender to *Andrew Vidal* after his landing thereabouts.

Their

1643. Their chief debate then turned upon this point, by what means this fleet might be removed from the road of the *Receif* and our coaſts; conſidering that the whole naval force of the *Dutch* then ready to ſail, conſiſted only in five ſhips, *viz.* the *Utrecht*, *Zelandia*, *Ter Veere*, *Zoutlandia*, and the *Golden Doe*, not very well manned, and but indifferently provided with ammunition, eſpecially with gunpowder, and few ſoldiers could be drawn out of the neighbouring garriſons; whereas the *Portugueſe* fleet conſiſted at leaſt in eight or ten ſtout ſhips, the admiral being a two-deckt ſhip, reſembling at a diſtance one of their large galeons, ſo that the attacking of them appeared to be a hazardous enterprize. After mature deliberation it was unanimouſly reſolved in the ſaid council, to return thanks to the admiral *Salvador Korrea de Saa Benavides*, for the offered ſuccours againſt the rebels, and to tell him the reaſons that obliged us to deſire him to retire with his fleet out of our road, as will more at large appear out of the following letter: It was thought convenient to diſpatch the ſaid letter immediately, and whilſt we ſtaid for his anſwer, to uſe all poſſible diligence in equipping the two beforementioned ſhips, the *Deventer* and *Elias*; that if the *Portugueſe* refuſed to comply with the councils requeſt, we might be in a condition to attack them, and to drive their fleet from our coaſt, without which we ſaw but little probability to make our party good againſt the rebels, as long as they were backed by conſtant ſupplies from the *Bahia*. It was alſo taken into conſideration whether it were not expedient to detain one of the *Portugueſe* deputies till ſuch time that *Jeronymo Sarrao de Payva*, ſhould according to the requeſt of the council, come aſhore in the *Receif*; but this propoſition was rejected, for fear of furniſhing the *Portugueſe* with a new pretence of ſtaying in our road: Mr. *Gilbert de Wit* and *Henry Moucheron*, both members of the council of juſtice, being ordered to carry the ſaid letter, they went aboard the *Portugueſe* admiral the ſame evening, unto whom they delivered the following letter to *Salvador Korrea de Saa Benavides*.

A letter from the council to the Portugueſe *admiral.*

WE underſtand both out of your lordſhip's letter and thoſe of the governor Antonio Telles de Sylva, *delivered to us by captain* Martin de Rebeira, *and the auditor-general* Balthaſar de Caſtilho, *as alſo by the verbal aſſurances given to us by them in your behalf, that your coming with the fleet into our road is with no other deſign than to aſſiſt us with your authority and council in bringing the rebels to reaſon, for all which we return our hearty thanks to your lordſhip. But at the ſame time we cannot forbear to repreſent to you, that the coming with ſo conſiderable a fleet in this juncture, gives us no ſmall cauſe of jealouſy, not only becauſe we never requeſted any ſuch aſſiſtance, but alſo by reaſon that inſtead of recalling* Kamaron *and* Henry Dias *with their troops, the two colonels* Andrew Vidal *and* Martin Soares Moreno, *have under pretence of reducing the rebels to obedience, landed their men and ammunition without our knowledge, in a far diſtant place, and conſequently for the defence of the revolted* Portugueſe; *whereas (purſuant to his excellency the governour's promiſe to us) this reduction might have been much better obtained by a ſevere proclamation, to oblige them to return to the* Bahia; *or at leaſt the before-mentioned colonels ought to have made their firſt addreſſes to us. Theſe proceedings have, contrary to your lordſhip's intention, drawn this ill conſequence after them, that many of the inhabitants imagining no otherwiſe than this fleet was intended for the aſſiſtance of the revolted* Portugueſe, *have alſo begun to take up arms, in order to join with them; which obliges us to return our thanks to your lordſhip for the offered ſuccours, deſiring you would be pleaſed with all poſſible ſpeed to retire with the fleet out of the road; which, as it will undeceive the inhabitants concerning the ſiniſter interpretations of your lordſhip's intentions, ſo it will ſerve as an effectual means to keep them in quiet, which at this juncture will work upon us a ſingular obligation. What relates to your lordſhips requeſt to take in freſh water and fuel here, being ill provided with both by reaſon of your ſudden departure from the* Bahia, *we ſhould be very ready to comply with it, were it not for the before alledged reaſons, and the badneſs of the ſeaſon, which would make it very tedious, which obliges us to beg your excuſe for this time upon that account. His excellency* Antonio Telles de Sylva *having told us in his letter that he had ordered* Jeronymo Sarrao de Paiva, *immediately after the landing of the infantry under* Martin Soares Moreno *and* Andrew Vidal, *to give us in perſon a full account with what power he was inſtructed by his excellency, we deſire your lordſhip to ſend the ſaid* Jeronymo Sarrao de Paiva *without delay to us, to confer with him concerning the inſtruction he has received from his excellency, in relation to the ſending and landing of theſe officers and land forces. For the reſt, we refer ourſelves to our deputies, councellours in our court of juſtice here, unto whom we deſire your lordſhip*

1643.

1643. *ſhip to give full credit, proportionable to their own merits and the truſt we have repoſed in them. God protect your lordſhip.*

Signed by
Henry Hamel,
A. Van Bulleſtrate,
P. J. Bas,
J. Van Walbeck,
G. de Wit,
Receif, Aug. 13, 1645. J. Albrecht,
Henry de Moucheron,
J. Van Raeſvelt,
and
J. Lichthart.

This letter was pitched upon by the before-mentioned great council, as the beſt expedient at this juncture, till by the conjunction of the *Deventer* and *Elias*, we might be put in a probability of diſlodging them by force, if they refuſed to retire at the council's requeſt.

The Portugueſe *fleet leave the road.*

The 14th by break of day we ſaw the whole *Portugueſe* fleet under ſail, and for the moſt part out of ſight; and conſidering that the boats, which carried both ours and the two *Portugueſe* deputies, would ſcarce be able to overtake them, and that our deputies in their return were to give an account to our admiral on board his ſhip, whether, purſuant to the council's letter, the *Portugueſe* admiral had conſented to ſend *Jeronymo Sarrao de Paiva* to the *Receif*, in order to open his inſtructions to the great council, which they had now all the reaſon to believe he would not, they diſpatched immediate orders to our admiral *Lichthart*, to make all the ſail he could with the ſhips under his command after the *Portugueſe*, to obſerve their motions, and to endeavour to come up with the flag ſhip, on board of which was the ſaid *Jeronymo Sarrao*, to deſire him to return with his ſhips to the road of the *Receif*, in order to confer with the council in perſon, concerning his inſtructions. But after mature deliberation, the whole proceedings of the *Portugueſe*, and the letters of the governour of the *Bahia* concerning the pretended reduction of the rebels, being looked upon as meer amuſements, orders were ſent to our admiral *Lichthart*, to oblige all the *Portugueſe* ſhips he could meet with to ſtrike, and to treat them for the future like enemies.

A letter to the council from Rio Grande.

The 28th of *Auguſt* the council was advertiſed by letters dated the 20th, at the fort of *St. Magaret* in *Rio Grande*, from the governour *de Linge*, that twelve of the enemies ſhips, after having landed ſome forces near *Tamandare*, were come into the bay of *Traikona*; and that according to the depoſition of a certain *Portugueſe* priſoner from on board the ſaid fleet, they intended to land likewiſe ſome men thereabouts, provided they might be joined by the rebels from the *Matta*; but if they failed to come, they would return to the *Bahia*. Whereupon orders were ſent to Mr. *de Linge*, to bring what forces he was able together, either of ſoldiers, *Tapoyers*, or *Braſilians*, to prevent their landing, and their conjunction with the rebels in that captainſhip. 1643.

The next thing under debate was, whether it were not convenient to ſend ſome ſhips under the command of admiral *Lichthart* that way, to attack the *Portugueſe*; after various conſultations, it was agreed to ſtay till all the ſhips might be got ready for that ſervice, to ſupply the want of ſeamen by good able labourers from the *Receif*, and ſo to render ourſelves as formidable at ſea as poſſible could be.

The Dutch *admiral ſets ſail from the* Receif.

In the mean while the ſaid admiral *Lichthart* ſet ſail the 1st of *September* with four ſhips and a yacht only, he himſelf being in the *Utrecht*, but was forced by ſtreſs of weather (in which the *Zelandia* loſt a maſt) and for fear of the rocks, to come to an anchor not far from the *Portugueſe*, who endeavoured to gain the wind of him. Mr. *de Wit* and *Moucheron* returned alſo with their boat, having not been able, by reaſon of the violent winds to overtake the *Portugueſe*, but had put their deputies on board a ſmall veſſel to ſail after their fleet.

The ſame day the council received letters from Mr. *Hoogſtrate*, *Ley*, and *Heck*, from the cape of *St. Auſtin*, that the enemies had poſted themſelves in the ſugar-mills *Salgado*, *Surhague*, and other places thereabouts; and becauſe the *Portugueſe* fleet, which had been ſeen off of the bay of *Traikona*, appeared again in ſight of the *Receif* the ſame evening, it was thought expedient to order admiral *Lichthart* immediately to go on board the *Utrecht*, and with that and the ſhip *Ter Veere* and two ſmaller veſſels, to keep a watchful eye over the *Portugueſe:* Care was alſo taken to get the ſhip the *Overyſſel* ready againſt next day, not queſtioning that when joined by this and the *Zoutlandia* and *Golden Doe*, which were ſent abroad for intelligence, they ſhould be able to cope with the *Portugueſe*, or at leaſt to force them out of the road. The next morning early the *Portugueſe* fleet might be plainly diſcovered from the *Receif*, but our admiral was not able to ſtir by reaſon of the contrary winds; nevertheleſs the *Zoutlandia* and the *Ter Veere*, which came from the ſouth a cruiſing, made all the ſail they could to eſcape

1643. escape the *Portugueſe*, which they did, being much the nimbler ſailors, and joined our fleet.

The 4th of *September* major *Bayert* and Mr. *Volbergen*, complained to the council, that Mr. *Vierbergen* count *Maurice*'s ſteward, had made it his buſineſs to give it out, that they being impowered to cut down certain trees, and ſome part of the ſtabling and gardens, for the better fortifying of the fort *Erneſtus*, had tranſgreſſed their commiſſion, in cutting down many of the great trees, with an intention, as he ſaid, to ruin the whole plantation; whereas they declared, that they had been very careful in preſerving as much as poſſible could be, all the largeſt cocoa-trees that ſtood not in their way; that by theſe rumours the rage of the populace had been raiſed to that pitch that they had much ado to appeaſe them, they being for the cutting down not only of all the trees, but alſo for the pulling down of the whole palace of count *Maurice*; all which they deſired to be regiſtered in the publick records, to ſerve them for a legal defence in due time and place.

In the mean time our admiral *Lichthart* being gone out in purſuit of the *Portugueſe* fleet, met with them in the bay of *Tamandare*, conſiſting of ſeven ſhips, three ſmaller veſſels, and four barks, the reſt being ſent loaden with ſugar to *Portugal*. He was not as yet joined by all the ſhips from the *Receif*; but being reſolved not to let ſlip this opportunity of attacking the enemy, ſent the 7th of *September* advice to the great council, that being come in ſight of the enemies fleet near the bay of *Tamandare*, conſiſting in all of eleven veſſels, he was reſolved to attack them there, deſiring them to ſend as many ſhips as poſſible they could immediately. Hereupon it was reſolved to join the two ſhips the *Deventer* and *Elias*, with the *Unicorn* and *Leyden*, then lying ready in the road and bound for *Holland*, and ſuch tenders as were at hand, and to ſend them forthwith to the admiral *Lichthart*. Purſuant to theſe reſolutions, the whole next following night was ſpent in manning the ſaid ſhips, but were the next morning detained for ſome time by the contrary winds.

The ſame day orders were given to all the ſoldiers and inhabitants of the iſle called *Antonio Vaez*, to provide themſelves with baſkets filled with earth; and palliſadoes were planted from the point of the *Receif* next to the river, to the utmoſt point near the ſea-ſide, and five great guns were planted upon a certain wreck, from whence they could command the ſea-ſhore as far as to the fort of five baſtions.

1643. *The* Dutch *fight and worſt the* Portugueſe *fleet.*

The 8th of *September*, the *Dutch* admiral having ordered the red flag to be put up, boarded the *Portugueſe* admiral carrying ſixty guns and three hundred men: He behaved himſelf very valiantly, having poſted himſelf at the entrance of his cabin with a flaming ſword in his hand, wherewith he killed three or four, but having received ſeveral wounds, was at laſt forced to yield. The reſt of the ſhips following the example of their admiral, had likewiſe boarded the *Portugueſe* ſhips; but theſe ſeeing the flag taken down from the admiral (a diſmal ſignal of her misfortune) they loſt all hopes, and threw themſelves headlong into the ſea, to eſcape the fury of the fire and ſword; whither being purſued by the *Dutch* in their boats, many periſhed before they could reach the ſhore. Above ſeven hundred *Portugueſe* were killed in this action, beſides a great number of priſoners, among whom was the admiral himſelf: Three ſhips were taken and ſent to the *Receif*, the reſt were ſet on fire, being not in a condition to be carried off, becauſe they had cut their cables and were run aſhore, where the *Portugueſe* had planted ſome cannon upon batteries, which ſo annoyed our people, that fearing they might run aground within the reach of the enemies cannon, they ſet fire to them, and with much ado got their ſhips clear from among the ſhelves. After this engagement I returned to the *Receif* to take care of my affairs there, and the admiral ſent an expreſs in a fiſher-boat, with the following letter to the council of the *Dutch Braſil*.

A letter from the Dutch *admiral to the council.*

NO *ſooner were the ſhips* Leyden, *the yacht and the* Doe, *arrived laſt night, near the point of* Tamandare, *but purſuant to the reſult of the council of war, it was reſolved to enter the next morning within the bar, which was performed in the following order: Firſt the ſhip* Utrecht *admiral, ſecond the* Ter Veere, *third the* Zelandia, fourth the *Overyſſel*, fifth the *Zoutlandia, followed by the* Doe *and* Leyden, *and the yacht, the* Unicorn, *the tenders being ordered to be at hand as occaſion ſhould require. Being come within the bar, we found the enemy ſeven ſail ſtrong, beſides three ſmall veſſels and four barks; and that they had planted ſeveral pieces of cannon upon two batteries on the ſea ſhore. We received a very warm ſalute both from their ſhips and batteries, and ſeveral vollies of ſmall ſhot; notwithſtanding which, the ſhip the* Utrecht *couragiouſly laid the* Portugueſe *admiral on*

board

1643. *board, after a ſhort but ſharp diſpute took the ſhip and the admiral's flag: To be ſhort, the reſt of our ſhips behaved themſelves ſo well, that ſoon after they forced the* Portugueſe *to quit their ſhips; God be praiſed for this victory.* Jeronymo Sarrao de Paiva *the* Portugueſe *admiral is our priſoner, and at preſent in my ſhip, being ſorely wounded, whom I intend to deliver up to your lordſhips ſo ſoon as I ſhall come to the* Receif; *in the mean while, I intend to ſend back the* Leyden *and the* Unicorn *to morrow morning, according to your lordſhips directions. And foraſmuch as there is likely to be no more action hereabouts, the enemy having ſtrengthened themſelves near the ſea-ſhore, I will with the firſt opportunity return to the* Receif, *where I hope to give in perſon a more ample account of the whole action; I recommend your lordſhips to God's protection. In haſte,*

From the ſhip the Utrecht, *within the bay of* Tamandare, September 9, 1645.

Your lordſhips ſervant,

Cornelius Lichthart.

The *Portugueſe* admiral *Sarrao de Paiva* in his letter dated the 18th of *September*, gave the following account of his engagement to the two colonels *Martin Soares Moreno* and *Andrew Vidal Negreiros.*

The Portugueſe *admiral's letter to* Andrew Vidal.

IT *being the general diſcourſe here in the* Receif, *which is likewiſe come to my ears, that it is reported by you there, how the* Dutch *admiral* John Cornelius Lichthart, *did before the beginning of the laſt engagement enter the bay with a white flag, thus ſurprizing our people, killed many of them in cool blood. I thought myſelf obliged to acquaint you, that indeed two days before the ſaid engagement, a yacht and a bark with white flags, appeared at the entrance of the bay, at which one of our ſmall veſſels and a bark ſhot three cannon ſhot. But that day when the admiral entred the ſaid bay, he had put up both the* Dutch *and red flags. Neither is it true what had been ſaid of their killing our men in cool blood, there being not one man ſlain aboard my ſhip, but during the heat of the engagement, five or ſix that had hid themſelves below deck having received quarter, and a ſoldier ſorely wounded ordered immediately to be looked after with all care imaginable. Neither was there a ſtroke given after the yielding of the ſhip, but every body treated and provided for according to his quality and preſent neceſſity. The reaſon why ſo few had quarter given them was, becauſe moſt leapt over-board, the ſea men firſt, and then the ſoldiers; I being not able with ſword in hand to keep them from chuſing rather to periſh in the ſea than to ſtand it out aboard the ſhip. Two or three perſons of note ſeeing me ſorely wounded, freely gave me quarter, without knowing either my perſon, or being aſked it by me; a convincing argument that they would not have refuſed the ſame to all the reſt that would have begged quarter. I muſt confeſs myſelf ſo much obliged to the humanity and generoſity of the admiral, that it is not to be expreſt in writing. Beſides that it is unqueſtionable that we firſt ſhot at them, both from our ſhips and batteries near the ſea-ſhore. I have given you a true account of the whole matter, of which as I have been an eye witneſs myſelf, ſo I don't queſtion you will give an entire credit to what I have written to you on this account. God protect you for many years.* 1643.

Receif, Sept. 18, 1645. *Jeronymo Sarrao da Paiva.*

Andrew Vidal ſent a Letter in anſwer to this by one of our drummers (ſent to the enemy upon ſome errand) dated the 20th of *September* as follows:

His anſwer to the admiral's letter.

WE *are ſufficiently ſatisfied by your lordſhips letter, that inſtead of being entertained according to your merits, you receive the ſame ill treatment with the reſt of our countreymen; though conſidering that your caſe is different from the reſt, you ought to have been treated in another manner, your lordſhip being come without the leaſt intention of waging war againſt them (which they ought to have made due reflection upon) but only as you were going to convoy ſome ſhips homeward, did at their own requeſt, land our forces in that captainſhip; conſidering the ill uſage and tyrannies our ſubjects have received at their hands, we are afraid we cannot promiſe your lordſhip a much better entertainment; of all which murders committed in cool blood, we have taken ſo circumſtantial an account, that we are ſure we ſhall be able to juſtify our cauſe and ourſelves, both to the ſtates of the* United Netherlands *and the reſt of our allies; for we have fiſhed up many of our* Portugueſe *with bullets and ſtones tied to their legs and necks, ſome had the good fortune to be ſaved as they were ſwimming aſhore, but many were burnt alive in the wrecks of the ſhips, the intention of theſe gentlemen being without queſtion*

1645. *queſtion, by making ſo general a ſlaughter among their fellow chriſtians, to cut off from us all hopes of returning home: of all which they will be obliged to give one day a ſevere account, both to God almighty and thoſe who ſhall require ſatisfaction for it at their hands, it being our conſtant opinion, that they never will be able to juſtify their cruelties, and the miſchief done to our people, either before God or the king our maſter. We hope your lordſhip will reſt ſatisfied in this preſent condition, and put your truſt in God and our king, who are ſtill alive to demand a ſevere ſatisfaction from them. God protect your lordſhip.*

From our quarters at St. John *in the* Vergea, Sept. 29, 1645.
ſigned
Andrew Vidal de Negreiros.

A certain lieutenant belonging to the enemy, called *Franciſco Guomes*, came along with the ſame drummer, with a letter from the ſaid *Andrew Vidal* directed to the great council, the contents of which were as follows.

Andrew Vidal de Negreiros's *letter to the great council.*

I Received your lordſhips letter at Iguaracu, *wherein you ſeem to be extremely diſguſted at the killing of ſome* Braſilians, *with their wives, by our ſoldiers; under pretence that the abſolute command over them belongs only to you, which I cannot but be much ſurprized at, when I conſider that your lordſhips in your proclamation, wherein you command not to give quarter to any* Portugueſe *inhabitants (though natural ſubjects of the king my maſter) you alledge among other reaſons, becauſe they had received their birth and education in this captainſhip (which however was firſt conquered by the* Portugueſe *kings at the expence of many of their ſubjects) whereas now you would impoſe this hardſhip upon the ſame inhabitants, to give quarter to thoſe* Braſilians, *who not long ago have been maintained and inſtructed in the catholick faith, as being their vaſſals, and conſequently not yours, but the king my maſter's ſubjects. Your lordſhips ought to remember, that you are not in poſſeſſion of this countrey by right of ſucceſſion, or any other legal pretenſion, but baſely by force of arms. We deſire your lordſhips to take effectual meaſures concerning the methods to be obſerved in the carrying on of this war, which we hope will be managed ſo by your prudence, as that quarter may be allowed to the inhabitants of our nation; if not, I ſhall be obliged to act as I find it moſt conſiſtent with my honour, to take ſatisfaction for theſe injuries. We deſire alſo to put a ſtop to the murdering of the women, children, and ancient people, in cool blood, as has been done lately at* Tihicupapo, Rio Grande *and* Parayba. *God protect your lordſhips.* 1645.

From our quarters at St. John, September 29, 1645.
ſigned,
Andrew Vidal de Negreiros.

The great council returned with the conſent of the members of the court of juſtice, and colonel *Garſman*, an immediate anſwer to the ſaid letter, wherewith they ſent the ſaid lieutenant in company of the drummer, back the ſame evening.

An account of their proceeding ſince their landing.

But we muſt look back to their proceedings: After *Andrew Vidal de Negreiros* and *Martin Soares Moreno* had landed their men, to the number of eighteen hundred or two thouſand, the 28th of *July* 1645, with good ſtore of arms and ammunition, near *Tamandare*, betwixt *Olna* and *Formoſa*, they were ſoon after joined, not only by four companies which had taken their way by land from the *Bahia*, but alſo by the troops under the command of *Kamaron* and *Henry Dias*, who had hitherto kept *Porto Calvo* blocked up by their forces. From thence they directed their march to the city of *Serinhaim*, and laid ſiege to the fort in which there was only a garriſon of eighty *Dutch* ſoldiers and ſixty *Braſilians*, commanded by *Samuel Lambert* and *Coſmo de Moucheron*. Two days after their arrival near *Serinhaim*, the enemy poſted themſelves in the *d'Ingenio* of *Daniel Hohn*; about which time *Henry Dias* was ſeen in *Serinhaim*, notwithſtanding the *Portugueſe* commanders *Andrew Vidal* and *Moreno* diſowned to have any correſpondence with them at that time: The ſaid commanders had alſo ſent the captain major *Paulo de Kunha* before to ſummon the ſaid fort, which he did accordingly by his letter dated the 2d of *Auguſt* at the ſugar-mill of *James Peres*, and directed to *Samuel Lambert*.

The ſummons ſent to the fort of Serinhaim.

I Am come to this ſugar-mill by ſpecial orders from Martin Soares Moreno *and* Andrew Vidal de Negreiros *our governors, they being very buſy at preſent in landing their men; they have ſent me before to prevent all miſchief that otherwiſe might happen betwixt you and us; and if in the mean while you will join your forces with ours, or retire with them to ſome other place, you may ſafely do it, I being ready to furniſh you with paſſes for that purpoſe, the before-mentioned governours being*

1645. *being come with an intention to put a ſtop to the preſent inſurrection. God protect you.*

From the ſugar-mill in St. Antonio, Auguſt 2, 1645.

Paulo de Kunha.

Two days after the before-mentioned commanders in chief ſent another letter to *Samuel Lambert*, very little different from this.

A ſecond ſummons from the Portugueſe *commanders.*

WE ſuppoſe you not to be acquainted with the intention of our coming, which makes us to be the leſs ſurprized at your ſtanding upon your defence. The great council of the Dutch Braſil *have ſent an embaſſy to our governor general by ſea and land,* Antonio Telles da Sylva, *to deſire his excellency to make uſe of his authority and forces to appeaſe the inſurrection in this captainſhip, which requeſt being readily granted, in order to be ſerviceable to the council, and to free the* Portugueſe *from the outrages they ſuffered in their houſes and families, we were ſent to land our forces near theſe ſugar-mills of* Rio Formoſa; *which having been done accordingly, and ready to march further into the countrey, we thought fit to acquaint you with our intentions, which in all probability may have reacht your ears, the ſame having been publiſhed in ſeveral places by our proclamations, of which we ſend you one, deſiring it may be affixed on the church of* Serinhaim. *We deſire you therefore to lay by your arms to remove all ſuſpicion; not queſtioning but that we ſhall meet with a favourable reception on your ſide, as we on the other hand ſhall make it our main endeavours to reſtore tranquillity among the revolted* Portugueſe *by all gentle means that poſſibly may be uſed; aſſuring you at the ſame time, that in caſe you refuſe to concur with us in this deſign, you will cauſe no ſmall diſpleaſure to the great council of the* Dutch Braſil. *God protect you.*

From the ſugar-mill of Formoſa, Auguſt 4, 1645.

Martin Soares Moreno,
Andrew Vidal de Negreiros.

The next following day *Paulo de Kunha* came in perſon before the place with a body of ſoldiers and boors, provided with arms from on board the fleet, and after having inveſted the place, cut off the water of the fountains and rivers from the beſieged. In the mean while *Rowland Carpenter* and *Daniel Hohn* had been ſent away with paſſes by the commanders of the *Portugueſe* forces, who embarked their heavy cannon on board *Carpenter*'s veſſel, in order to carry it up the river *Formoſa*. Within five days of the arrival of *Paulo da Kunha*, the whole force of the enemy appeared in ſight of *Serinhaim* in battle array, and cloſely blockt up the fort. The *Dutch* garriſon was inconſiderable in proportion of the enemies ſtrength, who had ſo well guarded all the avenues leading to the place, that they were ſoon reduced to want all manner of neceſſaries, eſpecially water. Beſides this, many of the circumjacent inhabitants and volunteers went daily over to the enemy, who gave them an account of the condition of the fort; and notwithſtanding they had ſent ſeveral meſſengers to the *Receif*, they had heard nothing from the council for two months laſt paſt; ſo that being without all hopes of maintaining their poſt, they judged it more for the intereſt of the company to preſerve the garriſon, which might be ſerviceable in other places, where there was ſufficient want of good ſoldiers, than raſhly to expoſe themſelves to the fury of the enemies ſword: Accordingly *Samuel Lambert*, *Coſmo de Moucheron*, and *La Montagny*, who commanded in the fort, upon the ſecond ſummons made by the enemy, entred the 6th of *Auguſt* into a capitulation with the *Portugueſe*, of which *Moucheron* gave an account in perſon the 15th of *Auguſt* to the council, and delivered it the 20th of *Auguſt* to them in writing.

The fort of Serinhaim *blocked up by, and ſurrendred to the* Portugueſe.

"WE the *Portugueſe* commanders make "known to every body that we "were ſent into this countrey at the re- "queſt of the great council of the *Dutch* "*Braſil*, to appeaſe the revolt and trou- "bles ariſen among the *Portugueſe* inhabi- "tants. But at our landing here, being "informed that notwithſtanding this re- "queſt and our good intention, the *Dutch* "had murdered many *Portugueſe* in cool "blood (it being evident that they had "cut to pieces ſeveral *Portugueſe*, who "were inticed into a church for that pur- "poſe) and that they had formed a camp "to oppoſe us, which ought to be a cau- "tion to us, not to leave any ſtrong holds "behind us, whilſt we are marching to- "wards the *Receif*, we have thought it "neceſſary to enter into this capitulation, "till ſuch time that we may have the oppor- "tunity of concerting new meaſures with "the great council, of which the articles "are as follows:

I. The commanders *Samuel Lambert* and *Coſmo de Moucheron* ſhall have leave to march out of the fort and caſtle, with the garriſon, with enſigns diſplayed, all their arms, matches burning, &c.

II. They

1645. II. They ſhall be permitted to march along the road with their enſigns, and ſwords drawn, and ſhall be ſafely conducted by one or more captains, who alſo ſhall be obliged to provide them carriages and boats, for the tranſportation of their perſons and goods to the *Receif*.

III. The *Portugueſe* oblige themſelves to reſtore to *Moucheron* all what has been taken from him, and belonged to him before the ſiege.

IV. They alſo oblige themſelves to engage the inhabitants of the city as well as thoſe of *Kamara*, to paſs by all paſt injuries either by word or deed; and that ſuch of the *Dutch* as are willing to continue there, ſhall be maintained in their poſſeſſions in the ſame manner as the *Portugueſe* are; and ſhall enjoy the ſame privileges, and their own religion, provided they do not preach in publick, and pay due reverence to conſecrated places. They ſhall be at liberty to traffick with the *Portugueſe*, and call in their debts as before, neither ſhall they be obliged to take up arms againſt the ſtates of the *United Provinces*.

V. The *Dutch* officers ſhall reſtore to the *Portugueſe* all their *Braſilians*, with their wives and children, as being ſubjects of king *John* IV. whom God preſerve; and what relates to their reception and entertainment, is to be left to the diſcretion of the chief commanders of the *Portugueſe*.

Upon theſe conditions they ſhall be obliged to ſurrender the fort, with every thing thereunto belonging, this afternoon, but are permitted to provide themſelves with neceſſaries for their journey, which they ſhall have liberty to perform at their own leiſure.

ſigned,
Andrew Vidal de Negreiros,
Alvaro Fregoſa d'Albuquerque,
Diogno de Silveira,
Lopes Laurenzo,
Fereiro Betenkor,
Suppolito Abuko de Verkoſa,
and
Sebaſtian de Guimares.

Immediately after the ſurrender of the fort, *Moucheron* entred into a long diſcourſe with the *Portugueſe* commanders, about their proceeding, which he told them were far different from what the governor pretended in his letters, to wit, the appeaſing of the revolt of the *Portugueſe* inhabitants, according to the requeſt of the *great council*. They anſwered him with tergiverſations, telling him that they would be very careful not to act contrary to the peace eſtabliſh'd betwixt the king his maſter and the ſtates general. But it was not long before they began to lord it over the country, by taking ſuch as were in the leaſt ſuſpected to them into cuſtody, and taking an account of thoſe of the *Dutch* that had married *Portugueſe* women; nay they erected a court of Juſtice of their own, and forced *Moucheron* to ſell his ſlaves for the fourth part of what they were worth. They had ſo little regard to the late articles, that they cauſed thirty *Braſilians*, part of that garriſon, to be tied to the Paliſadoes, where they were ſtrangled; the *Portugueſe* alledged in their behalf, that they had ſuffered death for certain crimes they had confeſſed themſelves, tho' it is more probable they were made ſacrifices to the diſcontented *Portugueſe* inhabitants, that had made heavy complaints at the *Braſilians*. However, about thirty of them were ſpared, and beſtowed upon the officers to carry their baggage, and their wives given to the inhabitants. The *Portugueſe* made *Alvaro Fregoſo d'Albuquerque* governor of the city and fort, and made one *Francis de la Tour*, a *French* deſerter, captain over forty deſerters, who had taken ſervice among them.

Evaſions of the Portugueſe.

1645.

The Portegueſe *play the Maſter.*

They alſo raiſed three companies out of the *Portugueſe* boors, or inhabitants, commanded by *Pedro Fregoſo*, *Ignatius Ferrere* and *Immanuel de Mello*, which were put into *Serinhaim* for the defence of that place, where they alſo cauſed two *Jews* to be baptized, called *Jacquo Franco* and *Iſaac Navare*. Moſt of the *Dutch* who had any poſſeſſions or ſugar-mills thereabouts had ſafe-guards allow'd them, ſo that none, except two, who came to the *Receif*, left that captainſhip, of which they had ſufficient reaſon to repent afterwards, being very ill treated by the *Portugueſe*, as ſhall be ſhewn more at large hereafter.

The 15th of *Auguſt* in the afternoon, the garriſon of *Serinhaim*, conſiſting of thirty two men (the reſt having ſtaid behind) arrived in a bark at the *Receif*; and their commander in chief appear'd the ſame day before the council, where he gave an account of the reaſons that moved him to ſurrender the place, notwithſtanding which he was ordered to be examined by a court-marſhal, to anſwer the ſame: The enſign who had conducted the garriſon to the *Receif*, delivered the ſame day a letter to the ſaid council, from *Martin Soares Moreno*, and *Andrew Vidal*, dated the 8th of *Auguſt*, intimating that they were come into the *Dutch-Braſil*, by ſpecial command from the governor of the *Bahia*, and exaſperating

1645. ting the outrages, they said were committed by the *Hollanders* against the *Portuguese*. This letter had another enclosed from the said governor, dated the 30th of *July*, with a proclamation, to be publish'd in the captainship of *Pernambuko*, whereby all the inhabitants were summon'd to appear peremptorily before them, within the space of eight days, to receive their directions for restoring tranquility among them. The letter from *Martin Soares Moreno* and *Andrew Vidal* was as follows.

A Letter from the Portuguese *Commanders to the council.*

WHEN your lordships found your selves entangled by a dangerous conspiracy among the Portuguese *inhabitants of this captainship, you made your applications to* Antonio Telles da Sylva, *governor general of* Brasil, *desiring him to make use of the most effectual means he could to appease this rebellion. About the same time the inhabitants of this countrey by one unanimous voice implored his aid and protection against those many affronts, plunderings, murthers and ravishments of women they groaned under; being resolved with joint consent to arm themselves with sticks (the use of arms being taken away from them by their tyrannical governors) against those oppressions, and to defend their honour to the last gasp; not questioning but that God Almighty would take vengeance for the blood of so many innocent people. They represented to his excellency, that he was obliged by his station to assist them in this extremity, as they were his countrymen; but, if that should not be prevailing enough, reasons of state would induce him, not to force them to despair by denying them his aid; which if he did, it should be at the peril of his head, and that he must give a severe account of it before God Almighty, and others, if they should be constrained to beg that from a foreign power, which they could not obtain from their countrymen. The governor having taken all these pressing reasons into mature consideration, and in respect both of your lordships request, and the heavy complaints of the* Portuguese, *made it his chief care to find out the most effectual means (which your lordships seem'd to leave to his discretion) to appease this revolt. Being sensible that the revolt of the* Portuguese *inhabitants had taken deep root among them, and was likely to prove more universal against your government, he judged it most expedient, to send hither certain persons with such forces as he thought might either by their prudence, and, if that fail'd, by force of arms, restore the so much desired tranquility. It is upon this account, my lords, we are come to this place, in order to employ all our force and assistance, according to your request, pursuant to the peace established betwixt these two nations, in regard of which we value not the expences we have been put to upon this occasion. But we scarce had set foot ashore, when our ears and hearts were struck with the doleful outcries of forty innocent catholick* Portuguese, *murthered in the church of* Rio Formoso, *whither they were enticed for that purpose, by those that were in your service, without the least respect of age or sex, the very babes being by the natives barbarously murthered, as they were lying on their mothers breasts. Neither have the sighs and groans of many noble maids escaped our ears, that were ravish'd in the* Vergea *and* St. Lawrence, *by the* Brasilians, *not to mention here what barbarities have been committed in* Pojuka, *where is the sight of many a hermit and innocent babe who were slaughter'd in a cave. Neither have they abstained from holy and consecrated places; they have cut to pieces the images of the saints, and stripp'd the queen of heaven, the virgin* Mary, *our blessed lady, of all her apparel; things so enormous, and never heard of before, enough to create horror and astonishment in a generous heart. And notwithstanding your lordships had desired the governor general to interpose his authority, you did form a camp, which continues in the field to this day; and we being obliged by our orders to come to you upon the* Receif, *we judged it not convenient to leave any armed power behind us, which in time might prove the occasion of great inconveniences to us; we shall endeavour to shew all due respect and kindness to your subjects, and carry the garrison of* Serinhaim *along with us, 'till matters may be concerted betwixt your lordship and us, for the service of god and the state. In the mean while, we most earnestly desire a stop may be put to the outrages committed by your soldiers hitherto, to avoid all occasion of a rupture on your side; we protest on the other hand, in the name of God and* John IV. *the king our master, whom God preserve, as also in the name of the states general, whose power God encrease, that we desire nothing so much, as the continuation of the late established peace, which shall be the guide of all our actions; of which we have brought along with us an authentick copy, to serve us as a sufficient justification by all the princes of* Europe. *And that your lordships may be satisfied in the reality of it, we have sent you enclosed a copy of the proclamation published by us, at our landing in in this captainship.*

1645.

God preserve your lordships.

Serinhaim, Aug. 8, 1645. Martin Soares Moreno, Andrew Vidal de Negreiros.

The before-mentioned proclamation runs thus:

Their

1645.

Their PROCLAMATION.

WE *the commanders in chief of the* Portugueſe *forces*, Martin Soares Moreno, *and* Andrew Vidal de Negreiros, *make known to all perſons and inhabitants of the captainſhip of* Pernambuko *that the* great council *of the* Dutch-Braſil, *having by a letter ſent to the governor and captain general of* Braſil, *given advice of the revolt ariſen among the* Portugueſe *of this place; deſiring to endeavour the appeaſing of this rebellion by his aſſiſtance; for which purpoſe the ſaid governor now having ſent us with a ſufficent force into this captainſhip, we command all the* Portugueſe, *of what condition and quality ſoever, to appear peremptorily within eight days after the publication of theſe preſents before us, in order to reſtore tranquility among them, purſuant to the requeſt of the lords of the council of the* Dutch-Braſil. *We alſo hereby intreat the ſaid lords, in the moſt friendly manner that can be, purſuant to the tenour of the ſtrict alliance there is betwixt both theſe nations, to ſtop the further perſecution of the* Portugueſe, *or any other warlike executions; and that if any of their ſoldiers preſume to act contrary to it, they may, upon complaint made thereof to them, be ſeverely puniſhed.*

I Alexes Antunes *have penned this proclamation, and I* Franco Bravo Deſembarquador *have approv'd it.*

Martin Soares Moreno,
Andrew Vidal de Negreiros.

The great council reſolved to give a ſhort anſwer to the ſaid letter, and to refute the proclamation by another; and conſidering, that the origin and cauſe of all thoſe troubles and miſdeameanours were laid at the door of the council, they ordered the two councellors of the court of juſtice *De Witt* and *Moucheron*, in conjunction with Mr. *Walbeek* aſſeſſor in the ſame court, to anſwer the ſame, and thereby to repreſent to the council of nineteen in *Holland*, that they were occaſioned by the rebels and their adherents.

The Portugueſe *beſiege the* Cape of St. Auſtin.

In the month of *Auguſt* the troops lately come from the *Bahia* marched from *Serinhaim* to *Pojuka*, and ſo to the *Cape of St. Auſtin*, where being join'd by the forces under the command of *Kamaron* and *Dias*, and the inhabitants, they reſolved (after our men had quitted *Pojuka* and the city *St. Antonio de Cabo*) to attack the fort *Vander Duſſen* on the *Cape of St. Auſtin* from the land ſide; purſuant to which reſolution they poſted their troops all along both ſides the river.

1645.

The council in the mean while being forewarned of the enemies deſign, had ordered the 2d of *Auguſt*, Mr. *Adrian Bulleſtrate*, one of their own members, and admiral *Lichthart*, to go thither with all ſpeed, and to take effectual care that nothing might be wanting for the defence of the place. They were for that end to take a full view of the fort *Vander Duſſen* and all its outworks, and to conſider whether the redoubt upon the hill call'd *Nazareth*, and the battery at the entrance of the harbour might be repaired for the better defence of the fort. Accordingly Mr. *Bulleſtrate* and admiral *Lichthart* left the *Receif* the 5th of *Auguſt*, and arrived the ſame evening in the fort *Vander Duſſen*, where having executed their commiſſion, Mr. *Bulleſtrate* returned the 9th of *Auguſt* to the *Receif*, where he gave the following account to the council.

Mr. Bulleſtrate *and admiral* Lichthart *ſent to the* Cape of St. Auſtin.

That he left the *Receif* the 5th of *Auguſt*, in the morning about nine a clock, and came the ſame evening to the fort *Vander Duſſen* on the *Cape of St. Auſtin.*

An account of their tranſactions.

That the 6th of *Auguſt*, after forenoon ſermon was ended he rid with the admiral, and ſome other officers, to the hill of the *Cape of St. Auſtin*; where having taken a view of the harbour, he found the ſtone-redoubt in a condition to be repaired, without any great charge, the cannon upon the batteries nail'd up, but the works towards the ſeaſide in pretty good order.

That he had ordered a draught to be made, to ſurround the redoubt with palliſadoes, to raiſe a battery within it, to build a guard-houſe, and to widen the ditches: He alſo had ordered a ſtone breaſt-work, (for want of wood) to be made on the backſide of the battery, with a row of Palliſadoes, and a guard-houſe; and that with the firſt fair weather, they ſhould ſet on fire all the buſhes and brambles on the ſaid hill, and clear the ground round about the church *Nazareth.*

Upon view of the fort *Vander Duſſen*, he had commanded the major *Hoogſtrate* with all poſſible ſpeed to put it in a good poſture of defence, the admiral having already taken care to have it ſurrounded with palliſadoes. That on the 7th of *Auguſt*, having paid off the garriſon, and thoſe belonging to the artillery, he paſſed through very difficult ways to *St. Antonio*, where he likewiſe paid off the ſoldiery, viſited the retrenchment, and put every thing in the beſt order he could.

That he had bargained with certain perſons to repair the ſaid redoubt on the hill called *Nazareth*, and the ſtone breaſt-work, the building of two guardhouſes, and ſurrounding both the works with palliſadoes

1643. liſadoes, according to his draught, for nine hundred gilders, the whole to be compleated within three weeks time. Here it was he had the firſt notice of the landing of ſome forces from the *Bahia*, near *Rio Formoſa*, by the ſame fleet which the week before was ſeen off of the *Receif:* But not being able to get any ſure intelligence, he had ſent a meſſenger to lieutenant *Montangie*, then commander in *Serinhaim*, to give him a true account of the matter, and in what condition he and his garriſon were at that time; encouraging him by fair promiſes, all communication by land being already cut off betwixt them. Here he alſo liſted thirty eight volunteers that offered their ſervice.

That the 8th of *Auguſt* he left the ſaid place, and notwithſtanding the badneſs of the weather, rid croſs the hills of *Hegendos* to the ſea-ſhore, where meeting with the admiral, they went together up the river *Sangado* with the tide, as far as *Calandaria*, where they ſtaid for ſome time, and received the news, that in the laſt encounter betwixt colonel *Haus* and the rebels near that hill, above two hundred of the laſt, among whom were ſome officers, were ſlain, and about forty or fifty on our ſide. One *Melchior Alvares* came on purpoſe to tell them, that about three hundred of the revolted inhabitants were inclined to accept of a pardon, which he referred to the council.

That being ready to take horſe in order to his return to the *Receif*, a certain ſoldier of our troops, that had been left behind, complained that he had been ſtripp'd ſtark naked by the ſervants of the ferryman of the river *Sangada*, who had wounded and beat him miſerably. *Melchior Alvares* was ordered to take care of his wounds, and captain *Piſtor* to go with twenty of his men in queſt of theſe villains; who, coming to the ferry, beſet the houſe, took the ferryman and his three ſons priſoners, but the *Mulat*, who had committed the fact, eſcaped their hands.

That he purſued his journey on horſeback towards the *Receif*, notwithſtanding the violent rains, and not without great danger paſs'd the river the ſame night near the fort *Æmilia*.

That on the 9th of *Auguſt*, he was advertiſed by ſome negroes belonging to *Moſes Navarre*, whom he had ſent with letters to *d'Ingenio Surſacque*, that an ambuſh had been laid for them near *Candelaria*, but the enemy durſt not attack them, their negroes being all ſuch as were taken priſoners, and afterwards made their eſcape to us.

1645. Major *Hoogſtrate* ſent advice by his letters on the 13th of *Auguſt*, to the council, that the garriſon and volunteers of *St. Antonio* being ſafely arrived on the *Cape of St. Auſtin*, they were now about two hundred and eighty ſtrong, *viz.* two hundred and ſeventeen ſoldiers and gunners, and ſixty three volunteers. That immediately after our garriſon had left *St. Antonio*, *Kamaron* and *Henry Dias* had poſted themſelves with their troops in the ſugar-mill *Algodais*, near that place, where they expected to be join'd by *Martin Soares* and *Andrew Vidal*'s forces, ſafely arrived from the *Bahia*. That he expected every day to be beſieged, and fear'd nothing ſo much as want of freſh water, the ſpring being cut off by the enemy. Hereupon immediate orders were given by the council to ſend thither thirty barrels of water, ſome ammunition and proviſion, and what elſe ſhould be requiſite for a vigorous defence of the place, which was ſufficiently provided before with ſoldiers. The next following day they received intelligence from Major *Hoogſtrate*, Mr. *Ley*, and Mr. *Heck*, that the enemies troops had taken poſt in the ſugar-mill *Salgado Zuviſiaque* and other circumjacent places. The council rely'd much upon the bravery and fidelity of the offices within the fort, from whom they promiſed themſelves a very vigorous defence, they being all perſons who had advanced themſelves in their ſervices, and were in expectation of better preferments, *viz.* Major *Hoogſtrate*, *Caſpar Vander Ley*, formerly a captain of horſe, *John Hick*, and *Albert Gerritſon Wedda*, an old captain belonging to the company: But their unfaithfulneſs and covetous temper over-balanced all theſe conſiderations; for the ſaid major *Hoogſtrate*, commander in chief, with the conſent of *Caſper Vander Ley*, and *Albert Gerritſon Wedda*, treacherouſly and villanouſly ſold and ſurrendred the ſaid fort to the *Portugueſe* the 23d of *Auguſt* for the ſum of eighteen thouſand gilders, beſides ſome other rewards promiſed them upon that account. They went over with the whole garriſon to the enemy, who made *Hoogſtrate* colonel of a *Dutch* regiment, raiſed out of theſe and other ſoldiers of ſeveral nations, that had deſerted our ſervice. Thus this ſtrong hold was betray'd to the *Portugueſe*, by a perſon who owed his whole fortune to our company.

Advice from the Cape of St. Auſtin.

Martin Soares Moreno gave the following account of the ſurrender of this fort to the governor *Antonio Telles da Sylva*, in his letter dated from the hill of *Nazareth*, *Aug.* 26, 1645.

1645. *A letter to the governor of the* Bahia, *concerning the taking of the* Cape of Puntael. 1645.

SUnday the 23d of this month. God Almighty, through his mercy, has put us into the poſſeſſion of the fort of the cape of Puntael, *which was beſieged by* Andrew Vidal de Negreiros: *The next day we were rejoyced with the money ſent to us by your lordſhip, and the wine preſented to me in particular, part of which I have beſtowed upon entertaining ſome of our friends, who are merry with me at this time.*

We have made an excellent bargain; for beſides the importance of the place, and its artillery, we have got the very flower of their ſoldiers; beſides that, this will be like a ſignal to the reſt to follow their footſteps.

John Fernand Vieira *has raiſed on ſaturday laſt the ſum of four thouſand ducats for our uſe, though not without force, but it was very welcome to us at this time, when we were upon ſtriking up the bargain for the better fortifying of this place, the harbour of which is not inferiour to that of the* Receif: *But I will not trouble your lordſhip any longer with this point.*

Not long after the ſurrender of the fort, a bark appeared in ſight, ſent to its relief from the Receif. *We ſent captain* Barreiros *with a well arm'd bark out againſt her, who took her with thirty five men, and good ſtore of gunpowder and bullets, all which will prove very ſerviceable to us.*

I kindly deſire your lordſhip, that in caſe you ſend a meſſenger with this news to his majeſty, captain Damian de Lankois *may be employed upon that errand, it being very probable, that the king, beſides a good preſent, will reward him with ſome honourable employment.*

Laſt night we received advice, that the fleet under Jeronymo de Paiva *was entred the bay of* Tamandare; *I am ſorely afraid they will be attack'd by the ſhips ſent thither from the* Receif, *notwithſtanding we have deſired him ſeveral times to come into our road.*

Kapivara *is gone from that place by land to the* Bahia, *perhaps he has given him notice that we are maſters of the cape; if he thinks fit to bring his fleet to this place, he is ſafe, if not, it lies at his door. 'Tis diſcourſed here, that the ſhip the* Biſhop *is miſſing, perhaps he has a fancy to convoy* Salvador Korrea *ſome part of the way.*

I cannot forbear to let your lordſhip know how much you ſtand indebted to major Dieterick Hoogſtrate, *and the reſt of the commanders of the fort. We have promiſed to the firſt a commandery of Chriſt. I beg of your lordſhip to make my promiſe good to him in his majeſty's name, as ſoon as poſſible may be, he being a perſon who will be ready to do us all the further ſervice he can. We have for the preſent engaged him with ſome preſents of leſs moment, of which we ſhall give an account to you hereafter. Captain* Vander Ley *has likewiſe deſerved well of us, and ſo have all the reſt that had married* Portugueſe *women: It is reported here that he is a perſon of note in his country: We have likewiſe promiſed to him a commandery of Chriſt, and a yearly penſion for one of his ſons: We hope your lordſhip will not refuſe to make good our promiſe, becauſe his ſons are born of a* Portugueſe *woman: The name of the eldeſt being* John, *and the youngeſt* Caſpar Vander Ley. *The reſt are at preſent at their habitations, as ſoon as they return we muſt engage them with ſome promiſes, of which we will give an account to your lordſhip. They are all of conſequence to us, having married* Portugueſe *women. I hope your lordſhip will be well ſatisfied with this piece of ſervice, for* John Fernand Vieira *ſometimes brings us more money in an hour, than the conqueſt of the cape coſts us. He is at preſent in the* Vargea *among the* Barbarians, *and we in the fort on the cape, till we have got every thing in readineſs.* Kapivara *is about three days ago gone by land, poſſibly he may be with you before the bark which carries this letter; I wiſh it may arrive in ſafety, and to your lordſhip a long life for the defence of this ſtate.* Signed

Martin Soares Moreno.

Martin Soares Moreno, and *Andrew Vidal de Negreiros*, had in the mean while ſent ſeven or eight letters from the cape of *St. Auſtin*, dated the 23d, 30th, and 31ſt of *Auguſt*, and the 2d and 6th of *September*, in which they advertiſed the admiral *Paiva*, that they were in poſſeſſion of that cape, deſiring him by all means to come with his fleet into that harbour. The firſt of the two laſt letters was thus written.

Letter from the Portugueſe *commanders to admiral* Paiva.

MY LORD,

WE are got now into the poſſeſſion of the harbour of Nazareth, *and that, as the ſaying is, without caſting an anchor; which is the reaſon we intreat you likewiſe to come with your fleet hither, where you may careen your ſhips, and provide yourſelves with freſh proviſions, men, ammunition, and all other neceſſaries, till ſuch time we ſhall mutually agree in what is further to be undertaken for the ſervice of God and his majeſty. The enemy has hitherto but one ſhip of ſtrength at ſea, the reſt being of no conſequence; neither are they for engaging with you at this time, but endeavour to cut off your communication with the ſea coaſt. My lord, you*

1645. *have given so many proofs of your courage before this time, that this retreat will not abate any thing from the fame of your victories: On the other hand, you have to consider, that you are answerable for so many thousand lives of those that are in your fleet; wherefore we desire you once more to come hither with the fleet, and such officers as are under your command, where you will meet with a very kind and comfortable reception. But being sensible that it would be a gross error in us, to urge a matter so evident in itself, any further, to so great a commander as you, we live in hopes of your coming, where we intend, in the house of* Nazareth, *to receive the blessed sacrament, which name we have given to the fort, having among other things found a mass book here, which is of no small service to us.*

God preserve your lordship.

Puntael, *the* 2d *of* Sept. 1645. *Martin Soares Moreno*, and *Andrew Vidal de Negreiros.*

The contents of the second letter to the same admiral, are as follows:

YOUR lordship being already acquainted with our being masters of the Puntael *(cape) we hope you will take the first opportunity of coming to us; the enemies having two squadrons of ships at sea, with one fireship, to force you from this coast, which has been discovered to us by a letter writ at the* Receif, *and directed to the governor, and taken by us in a bark design'd for the relief of that place, of which we thought fit to give you immediate notice, that you might take your measures according to your wonted prudence. These* Dutch *gentlemen have, by their treacherous dealings, obliged us to have recourse to open force, and we desire your lordship to repay them in their own coin, with fire and sword, as they do to us. If you design to come hither, it must be done speedily, all delay being dangerous at this time. We have a true copy of this letter in our journal to serve for our justification hereafter.*

God preserve your lordship.

Dated in the *Puntael* of the blessed sacrament, *September* the 6th, 1645.

Martin Soares Moreno, and *Andrew Vidal de Negreiros.*

An account of the surrender of the cape of *St. Austin*, and of the further transactions betwixt us and the *Portuguese*, was sent in a letter by *Caspar da Costa d'Abreu*, from the said cape to his friend *Domingos da Kosta*, an inhabitant of the *Bahia*, which runs thus:

I WISH this letter may find you in good health, as I who am your faithful comrade desire; I am in a tolerable good condition in the Puntael *of* Nazareth, *which after a siege of twenty days was surrendred to us at an easy rate, because those who commanded within the fort had* Portuguese *wives, and their estates thereabouts. The captain of horse was the most forward of all in surrendering the place they have obtained what conditions they demanded, and a gratuity of four thousand ducats besides. We found in the fort three hundred* Dutch, *of their best troops, and twelve brass pieces of cannon, four of which were four and twenty pounders, and provisions for three months; so that if they had not come with us to a composition, it would have cost us abundance of men, whereas now we have gain'd the place with the loss of one single man, who was kill'd by a random cannon shot. We made ourselves masters of a bark, firing from the* Puntael, *before its surrender, in which was a gentleman with several hundred men that were going to the* Receif. *This gentleman and another of* Serinhaim *(being both magistrates in their respective places) we delivered up to the inhabitants, who soon kill'd them, notwithstanding one was married with a* Portuguese *woman; for they having been heard to say, that they hoped to wash their hands in the blood of the* Portuguese, *the women were so much exasperated against them, that they soon dispatch'd them, according to their desires. The prisoners are for the most part detained at* St. Anthony, *in order to be sent to the* Bahia; *but many among them have taken service with us. We suppose the number of the dead and* Dutch *prisoners amount to near thirteen hundred: We have not seen the squadron under* Salvador Korrea de Saa; *we are afraid some misfortune has befallen him; some of our ships were cruising hereabouts, but within these three or four days none of them have appear'd on this coast. The* Dutch *have a fleet of twelve ships at sea, it is well if they don't venture a brush with us. The* Receif *with all its forts are invested,* Lawrence Karneiro *is at* Porto Calvo; *the* Jews *report, that orders are come to take all the* Dutch *forces out of* Rio Grande, Paraiba *and* St. Francis, *in order to transport them to the* Receif. *There is no great harmony betwixt the* Jews *and* Dutch, *the first pretending that the others intend to sell the country. Four of their head officers, which are our prisoners, are ordered to be sent to the* Bahia, *and among them their master of the artillery. The same day that we were become masters of* Puntael, *a bark arrived there from the* Receif *with orders to keep it to the last extremity; we took the bark with good store of ammunition and provision, worth in all about fifteen hundred ducats.*

Sept. *the* 5th, 1645. *Caspar da Costa d'Abreu.*

From

1645. From this and the following letters, it is apparent, that major *Hoogſtrate* had laid the foundation of his treacherous deſign of betraying the cape of *St. Auſtin* to the *Portugueſe*, long before; to wit, ever ſince he with Mr. *Balthaſar Vander Horde* was ſent to the governor of the *Bahia Antonio Telles de Sylva*. Thus a certain ſerjeant ſold a redoubt near the city of Olinda to the enemy for three hundred gilders.

At the beginning of the ſiege of the cape of *St. Auſtin*, *Andrew Vidal de Negreiros* ſent two letters to major *Hoogſtrate*, *Ley* and *Hick*, by one *John Guomes de Mello*, dated the thirteenth of *Auguſt*; in the firſt of which the ſaid *Vidal* complains of the ill treatment and murthers committed upon the *Portugueſe* by the *Dutch*; in the ſecond he requeſts them to declare, purſuant to the promiſes made by *Hoogſtrate* in the *Bahia*, for the king of *Portugal*, and to deliver the fort into their hands.

Two letters from Vidal *to* Hoogſtrate.

The firſt was as follows:

I *Am come this morning to the village of* St. Antonio de Cabo, *in hopes of receiving news from you and captain* Ley. *I give by theſe preſents notice to you, that we are ſent hither by order from the governor* Antonio Telles de Sylva, *with no other intention than to appeaſe the troubles lately ariſen in this country, purſuant to the requeſt of the council, of which you are a ſufficient witneſs. No ſooner were we arrived at* Tamandare, *but we received many informations directly contrary to what we expected to meet with here*; viz. *That in* Rio Grande *thirty ſeven inhabitants had been murthered, many virgins deflower'd, and the image of the virgin* Mary *groſly miſuſed by the* Dutch; *things ſo abominable in themſelves, that it is ſcarce to be imagined ſo brave a nation ſhould be guilty of ſuch enormities. Whilſt I am writing this letter, news is brought me, that the* Dutch *have cauſed many of the inhabitants of* Goyana *to be murthered, tho' I can ſcarce give credit to it; for ſuppoſing this to be true, we could not avoid giving aſſiſtance to theſe miſerable people, tho' they were the moſt deſtiſeable of all nations, conſidering they crave our help, and are not only chriſtians, but alſo ſubjects of the king our maſter, whom God preſerve. Whilſt the council was in expectation of the iſſues of the intended accommodation, they have ſurprized and killed many of the inhabitants, which obliges us, to require you in the name of God, of his majeſty, his highneſs and the ſtates general, not to give any occaſion for a rupture, but to maintain the late concluded peace to the utmoſt of your power, as we are ready on our ſide, to concert all poſſible meaſures with the commander in chief of this place, which may tend to the tranquillity of both parties. The bearers hereof are captain* John Guomes de Mello, *and lieutenant* Francis Guomes, *who we deſire may be diſpatched back with all poſſible ſpeed.*

1645.

God preſerve you for many years.

Auguſt 13, 1645. *Andrew Vidal.*

The ſecond letter was written thus:

The ſecond letter.

YOUR *promiſe made to us in the* Bahia, *and what has ſince been told by captain* Ley *to* John Fernandes Vieira, *and captain* John Guomes de Mello, *encourages us to proceed in our former deſign, not queſtioning but that both you and captain* Ley *will not in the leaſt recede from the engagement you have been pleaſed to oblige us with, and to tie us to your ſervice. We are come into this country at the head of three thouſand choſen men, back'd by two ſquadrons of men of war well equip'd, one of which has not as yet appear'd on this coaſt, the other you have ſeen yourſelf paſs by the other day. I hope this may ſerve as a means to ſet the poor miſerable inhabitants at liberty; and as both they and we wiſh for nothing more than to ſee you embrace our ſide, that we may not want an opportunity to give you more evident proofs of our reſpect and affection towards you, ſo we deſire you not to entertain the leaſt ſiniſter ſuſpicion of us; we being ready (for the performance of which we by theſe preſents give you our words) to accompliſh in every point, what has been promiſed to you, by* John Fernandes Vieira, *and* John Guomes de Mello. *And I for my part aſſure you, that I will not fail to perform and agree to whatever you ſhall further demand upon this occaſion.*

The inhabitants of the place ſhall be provided with paſports, and protected by us, in the ſame manner as the commander of Serinhaim, Carpenter, *and ſome others were; and we expect the ſame at your hand. And that you may be ſure whom to treat with upon this account, we have ſent to you* John Guomes de Mello, *who is intruſted with the whole matter; which if you refuſe to do, we muſt take ſuch meaſures as we ſhall judge moſt expedient for us.* In the mean while God preſerve you for many years.

St. Antonio de Cabo, Aug. 13, 1645. Your affectionate friend and ſervant,

Andrew Vidal de Negreiros.

Major *Hoogſtrate*, Mr. *Hick* and *Ley*, ſent an anſwer to this letter immediately, containing

1645. containing in ſubſtance, that they were not in the leaſt concerned in the outrages committed by the *Tapoyers* againſt the *Portugueſe*, and ſeemingly refuſed to treat with *de Mello*. It runs thus:

His anſwer to them.

WE have received your letter ſent by John Guomes de Mello, *out of which we underſtand, that you are come to* St. Antonio. *We are extremely well ſatisfied, that the governor* Antonio Telles da Sylva *has undertaken to appeaſe the tumults ariſen in theſe parts, and don't queſtion but that your preſence will contribute much towards the accompliſhment of it. The affronts and outrages you ſpeak of by the* Tapoyers *and* Dutch *ſoldiers put upon the inhabitants, as they were committed ſorely againſt our will, ſo I can aſſure you, that no body, not ſo much as the leaſt child, has been ſuffer'd to be miſuſed upon our accounts, ſo that theſe complaints muſt not be made to us, but ought to be referr'd to the council. The treaty you propoſe with captain* John Guomes de Mello, *and lieutenant* Francis Guomes, *is beyond our province and power, ſo that we earneſtly deſire you not to uſe any further ſollicitations to us upon that account. So we kiſs your hands, recommmending you to God's protection.* We reſt

Your ſervants and good friends,

Caſpar Vander Ley,
D. Van Hoogſtrate.
John Hick.

Hoogſtrate *diſcovers theſe letters.*

Major *Hoogſtrate* took care to ſend theſe two letters, together with their anſwer to the council, with repeated aſſurances of their conſtant fidelity; whereupon the great council confirm'd *Hoogſtrate* in his government, and exhorted *Ley* and *Hick* to perſevere in their brave reſolution, which they would in due time take care to reward with better preferments. This diſcovery of the enemies letters being look'd upon as an undeniable proof of Mr. *Hoogſtrate*'s ſincere intentions, had ſuch an influence upon the generality of the people, that there was ſcarce any body but what thought himſelf ſecure of his fidelity and duty. Nevertheleſs, as theſe temptations could not but raiſe ſome jealouſy in the minds of the council, they thought fit to ſend colonel *Haus* to the *Receif*, to order him to the Cape of *St. Auſtin*.

The council in the mean while, being by *Vidal*'s letters to *Hoogſtrate* ſufficiently convinced, that the intended recalling of the rebellious troops were nothing but amuſements, ſent immediate orders to their admiral *Lichthart*, that for the future he ſhould treat all the *Portugueſe* ſhips he could meet with as enemies. 1645.

Conſultations about drawing all the forces into the Receif.

The 15th of *Auguſt*, colonel *Haus* being come to the *Receif*, propoſed to the council, that he judged it abſolutely neceſſary for the ſervice of the ſtate, that ſince by the ſuccours come from the *Bahia* to the aſſiſtance of the rebels under *Martin Soares Moreno* and *Andrew Vidal*, they were grown very ſtrong and numerous, the troops encamped in the field ſhould be drawn into the *Receif*, becauſe they being beſides the *Braſilians*, not above three hundred ſtrong, they might eaſily be cut off in a place where they could not be ſeconded from the *Receif*, where they were wanting for the defence of that place, which being the capital of the whole *Dutch Braſil*, would in all likelihood be attack'd with the utmoſt vigour by the enemy.

Againſt this opinion many reaſons were alledged too.

I. By ſo doing they muſt quit all the open country from whence they were now ſupplied with cattle and meal, which they ſtood highly in need of, till ſuch time that they could receive new ſupplies from *Holland*, and that in ſuch a caſe they muſt expect the enemy immediately at their gates.

II. That thereby the number of the enemy would be encreaſed, the inhabitants of the country being freed from the dread of our troops, would join with them againſt us.

III. That by ſo doing we muſt leave the *Tapoyers*, that had taken up arms at our requeſt, and were to be joined by our troops near *Machiape* or *St. Antonio*, to the enemies mercy. To this it was anſwer'd,

1. That as to the ſupplies of cattle and meal from the country, they ſhould be in a much better condition to be furniſhed withal, when their forces could be ſent abroad into all circumjacent parts of the country, whereas now they were forced to remain in one certain place. Beſides that, we being maſters at ſea, might embark at any time a certain number of men, and land them where we found it moſt convenient, which would oblige the enemy, inſtead of beſieging the *Receif*, to divide his forces for the defence of the country. What related to the increaſe of the enemies forces, by the acceſſion of the *Portugueſe* inhabitants of the country, was to be look'd upon as of no great conſequence againſt us; it being more for our intereſt to ſee them appear as declared enemies than diſſembling friends; it being generally known, that their inclinations were bent for their countrymen, and that notwithſtanding all

1645. their ſpecious pretences, they miſs'd no opportunity of giving intelligence to the enemy of what paſſed among us; whereas, if they were once declared enemies of the ſtates, we ſhould have a fair opportunity of ſeizing upon their cattle, proviſions, and other moveables, for the uſe of the *Receif*; which being thus provided, would diſcourage the enemy from attempting to reduce it by famine.

What was alledged concerning the danger of the *Tapoyers*, was acknowledged to be of no ſmall moment; but conſidering they had received no news as yet of their motion, it was not judged of ſuch vaſt conſequence as to be put in balance with the welfare of the whole *Dutch Braſil*, which depended in a great meaſure on the ſafety of theſe troops.

After mature deliberation of the whole matter, it was reſolved, on the 15th of *Auguſt*, by the council, with the approbation of the members of the court of juſtice, that conſidering the danger the troops were expoſed to, and that on their ſafety depended the preſervation of the *Receif*, they ſhould with all poſſible ſpeed march thither, and that only fifty men ſhould be left in the houſe of *de Wit*, under captain *Wiltſchut*, in order to command ſome part of the circumjacent country, and to ſerve as a retreat for our parties that ſhould be ſent abroad to fetch in cattle, and *Farinha*, or meal.

Purſuant to this reſolution, colonel *Haus* went thither on horſeback the ſame day, to put it in execution the ſame evening, if poſſible he could, or at furtheſt the next morning. But it ſeems colonel *Haus* was ſo neglectful, as to delay the march of theſe troops not only that afternoon, but alſo the whole next following day; and inſtead of retreating towards the *Receif*, tarried in the ſame ſugar-mill, without having the leaſt intelligence of the enemies approach; ſo that on the 17th of *Auguſt*, being ſurprized by the troops of *Andrew Vidal*, much more numerous than his, before they could betake themſelves to their arms they were put to the rout. The council being advertiſed, that colonel *Haus* with his troops were attacked by the enemy in the ſugar-mill of Mr. *de Wit*, they call'd the city militia to their arms, Mr. *Bulleſtrate* and *de Bas* went to the houſe *Baviſta*; from whence, as being near at hand, they might give the neceſſary orders, according as they ſhould receive advice from *Haus*: And twelve firelocks were poſted in this houſe for the better ſecurity of the bridge croſs the river. *Dieterick Hamel*, and the counſellors of juſtice, took care to look after the *Receif*. Immediately after, word being brought to the council that colonel *Haus* had been overthrown, and was retired to the houſe of *de Wit* belonging to the ſugar-mill, it was conſulted, whether by any means they might be able to relieve him; and, tho' by reaſon of the weakneſs of the garriſon, it was no eaſy matter to do it; nevertheleſs, it was reſolved, with one hundred volunteers of the inhabitants, and one hundred and fifty ſoldiers, to attempt his relief. But before this could be put in execution, a certain *Braſilian* that had been preſent at the whole action, and having, by changing his clothes with a *Portugueſe*, found means to eſcape to the *Receif*, brought the unwelcome news, that colonel *Haus*, with the forces under his command, had ſurrendred the houſe belonging to the ſugar-mill, and themſelves, upon promiſe of quarters, at diſcretion.

Colonel Haus *put to the rout.*

1645.

Colonel Haus *ſurrenders at diſcretion.*

It was generally believed, that this misfortune was chiefly occaſioned by colonel *Haus*'s own neglect, who did not, till it was too late, put the ſoldiers into a poſture of defence, which was afterwards confirmed by the depoſition of *William Jacobſon*, late captain lieutenant of colonel *Haus*'s own company, made before the great council the 6th of *July*, 1646.

A further account of the defeat of colonel Haus *by captain* Jacobſon.

It was not till the night before our defeat, that colonel *Haus* received the firſt intelligences from a priſoner, a *Negro*, that the enemy with a ſtrong body were broken up from *Moribeka*. The next morning, one of our ſafe-guards brought word to the colonel, that the enemy was paſſing the river; and ſoon after, the colonel's groom, who had been to water his maſter's horſe in the ſaid river, came in a full gallop, telling him likewiſe, that the rebels were paſſing the river, ſo that we ſoon after heard them fire upon our advanced guard, who retired immediately to the main body. Colonel *Haus* did not call the ſoldiers to their arms, or cauſed the alarum to be given, until the enemy came within ſight of us, and charged our out-guard, when we firſt began to ſkirmiſh with them: But they charging us with their more numerous forces in the front, whilſt *Kamaron* with his troops endeavoured to cut off our retreat to the *Receif*, which we were not able to prevent, by reaſon of the ſmallneſs of our number, *Haus* aſk'd captain *Wiltſchut*, *Blaer* and *Liſtry*, *What was beſt to be done? Wiltſchut* anſwered, *You never aſk'd our advice before, do what you think beſt.* Whereupon *Haus* ordered to retreat to the houſe of Mr. *de Wit:* Captain *Blaer*, who expected no quarter, being on the other hand for fighting our way through to the *Receif*. The houſe was bravely defended for four

1645. four hours, but at laſt powder and ball beginning to fail, becauſe half a barrel of gunpowder (which was all they had left) blew up by accident, they ſurrendred at diſcretion to *Andrew Vidal*, under condition to have their lives ſaved, as well for themſelves as the *Braſilians* among them; which agreement being ſigned by *Vidal*, and two or three more of the chief commanders of the *Portugueſe*, was delivered to colonel *Haus*. Notwithſtanding which, the *Braſilians* were cut to pieces by the inhabitants, with the conſent of the *Portugueſe* commanders, as ſoon as we had quitted our poſt in the houſe. The *Braſilian* women ſeeing their huſbands murthered before their faces, daſh'd moſt of their childrens brains againſt the walls, for fear they ſhould fall alive into the hands of the *Portugueſe*. All the *Dutch*, about two hundred and fifty ſtrong, among whom were colonel *Haus*, captain *Blaer* and *Liſtry*, were made priſoners of war, and were for the firſt four or five days kept in the ſugar-mill of *Hacq*, when *John Fernandes Vieira*, and many of the inhabitants ſollicited *Andrew Vidal*, to deliver the ſaid priſoners up into their hands, with an intention to kill them, but *Vidal* refuſed to grant their requeſt, and cauſed them forthwith to be ſent by land to the *Bahia*: They were indifferently well treated in their journey thither; but ſuch as either by reaſon of ſickneſs, or any other accident, were left behind, fell into the inhabitants hands, who cut them to pieces, and would have done the ſame with all the reſt, had it not been for their convoy. After their arrival in the *Bahia*, an account being taken of their names, they had certain quarters aſſigned them, and thirty-one pence halfpenny *per* week for their pay, and a meaſure of meal for every ten days.

They had liberty to walk up and down within the city where they pleaſed, except colonel *Haus*, captain *Wiltſchut*, and *Liſtry*, who were confined to their lodgings, and durſt not, without ſpecial leave, talk with any body. Colonel *Haus* was at laſt ſent to *Portugal*, and *Wiltſchut* and *Liſtry*, in *June* 1647, put on board a ſhip, with two hundred and thirty *Dutch* priſoners; about ſixty of our men took ſervice among them there, but they refuſed the natives of *Holland*.

The enemies being greatly encouraged by theſe ſucceſſes, and their ſtrength encreaſing daily by the great concourſe of the *Portugueſe* inhabitants, who in the captainſhips of *Parayba* and *Goyana*, which hitherto had remained in quiet, and engaged themſelves to the government by a new oath of allegiance, now alſo took up 1645. arms againſt us; ſo that it was thought convenient to recal our garriſons out of thoſe parts.

What became of the garriſon of the cape of St. Auſtin.

But to return to the cape of *St. Auſtin*, after the ſurrender of which the garriſon was carried to *St. Antonio*, where they were forced to deliver up their arms. Among the reſt of our priſoners there was *Iſaac Zweers* afterwards vice-admiral of *Holland* and *Weſtfriſeland*, *Abraham Van Millingen*, and *John Broeckhuſen*, both ſtill living in *Holland*. Major *Hoogſtrate* addreſs'd himſelf to them, endeavouring to bring them over to the *Portugueſe* ſide, by the allurements of captain, lieutenant, and enſign's places, telling them, that it would now be in his power to promote them to much higher employments; but when he ſaw them refuſe his offer, he ſwore they ſhould repent it. At the ſame time he preferr'd three *Dutch* men, to wit, *Winſel Smith*, formerly his lieutenant; *Alexander Boucholt*, and *Claes Claeſen*, a native of *Amſterdam*, to captains places; the laſt of theſe three being an intimate friend of *Zweers* and *Broekhuſen*, told them, and confirmed it by many oaths, that he had taken ſervice among them for no other end, than to get an opportunity of returning to us. They had alſo liberty given them to walk abroad, but not without a guard to keep a watchful eye over all their actions.

Not long after, the *Portugueſe* provider *Mor* ſent for *John Broekhuſen*, and after the firſt complements were paſs'd, told him, that if he would ſerve the king of *Portugal* in the quality of commiſſary-general, he ſhould go along with him to the camp, where he ſhould receive one hundred gilders *per* month, and be welcome to his table beſides; and that if he refuſed his offer, and ſtay'd behind, he would be in danger of being murthered by the inhabitants. He reply'd, that being engaged by his oath to the company, he could not break it, though with the hazard of his life. *And* (ſaid the providor) *will you chuſe rather to ſerve a company of mob than a king? We are juſt now upon the point of executing a deſign which is infallible, and then you will begin to ſee that the king's cauſe is the juſteſt, and will be crown'd with ſucceſs for ever.* Then he gave him a cup with brandy, of which after Mr. *Broekhuſen* had taken a good draught, he took his leave, and return'd to his comrades, unto whom he gave an account of what had paſs'd betwixt them.

Theſe had in the mean while been inform'd by ſome *Portugueſe*, that this deſign was upon the iſle *Itamarika*, and being certain that the council did not foreſee

1645. ſee this danger, they were contriving all poſſible means to give them notice of it, but could not pitch upon any perſon fitly qualified for this undertaking. At laſt, *Iſaac Zweers*, by vaſt promiſes of reward, prevailed ſo far upon a *Dutch* trumpeter, call'd *Martin Stomp*, that he undertook to carry this piece of news in perſon to the council, and at the ſame time to requeſt the releaſing of the *Dutch* priſoner ſtill remaining at *St. Antonio*. Every thing being agreed upon betwixt them, the trumpeter took his leave of Mr. *Zweers*, and ſet out on his journey to the *Receif* about midnight, leaving his wife and children behind him. Mr. *Zweers* and Mr. *Broekhuſen* appear'd very well ſatisfied, but nevertheleſs were in their hearts not a little concerned for the iſſue of this enterprize.

A Dutch trumpeter diſcovers the enemies deſign upon Itamarika *to the council.*

They would often call upon the trumpeter's wife to enjoin her ſilence, and ordered her, that if any enquired after him, to tell them that he was run away from her, in order to take ſervice in the camp in the *Vergea*.

Some days after they met with one *Peter Ritſau*, formerly baker to the garriſon of the cape of *St. Auſtin*; *Broekhuſen* having a mind to feel his pulſe, and finding him not averſe to ſuch a taſk, he at laſt with fair words prevail'd upon him to undertake the ſame journey the trumpeter had done before; that in caſe he ſhould miſcarry, which they much feared he might, the council might nevertheleſs be advertiſed of the enemies intended expedition againſt *Itamarika*. The baker having deſired a certificate from them, teſtifying, that he never had taken ſervice among the *Portugueſe*, prepared himſelf for his journey, which he intended to begin with the firſt dark night.

A baker ſent upon the ſame errand.

The ſame night they were forewarn'd of a deſign againſt their lives, by a certain *Italian* call'd *Jacomo da Perugalho*, ſo that *Zweers* and *Broekhuſen* gueſſing, not without reaſon, that ſome of the *Portugucze* had got ſcent of their ſending away the trumpeter and baker, thought it not adviſeable to ſtay longer in this place, but to aſk leave from colonel *Pedro Marinha Falkaho*, to go to the *Algodais*, where they could not want conveniency to go along with the reſt of the priſoners, that were intended to be ſent to the *Bahia*, which was readily granted.

In the mean while, the baker having taken the firſt opportunity to ſet out on his journey, was met by two *Portugueſe* in the ſugar-mill *Trapicha*, who having found the beforementioned certificate about him, carried him priſoner to *St. Antonio de Cabo*, where being put to the torture, it made ſuch a noiſe among the inhabitants, that they all riſe up in arms, proteſting, they would not be ſatisfied till they had fetch'd *Zweers* and *Broekhuſen* from the *Algodais*, and cut them to pieces; for which purpoſe they alſo obtained ſeven ſoldiers from *Pedro Marinha*, and had certainly put it in execution if captain *Ley* had not oppoſed it; for as good luck would have it, they happened at that time to be in his ſugar-mill, and the baker had ſtood it out bravely, without diſcovering the matter. The next morning captain *Ley* gave them a viſit, telling them what had happened, and ſays he, to *Broekhuſen*, *What is your meaning by this?* but he having no great confidence in *Ley*, denied every thing to the utmoſt. 1645.

Is ſeized.

But the 2d of *October* the whole deſign was likely to have been diſcovered by the imprudence of the beforementioned trumpeter's wife, who being got drunk, told ſome of her acquaintance, that her huſband was gone to the *Receif*. She was carried a priſoner to the cape of *St. Auſtin*, where ſhe was miſerably tortured, but being a reſolute woman, would not confeſs any thing: It was however major *Hoogſtrate*'s advice, that the *Portugueſe* ought not to keep the *Dutch* any longer in *Pernambuko*, but that all ſuch as refuſed to take ſervice among them, ought to be ſent to the *Bahia*. Accordingly all the *Dutch* priſoners then about the cape and *St. Anthony*, were ſent to the *Algodais*, where every one was aſk'd by colonel *Pedro Marinha*, whether they would take ſervice under the king of *Portugal*, and ſuch as would not, ſhould be ſent forthwith by land to the *Bahia*, a tedious journey; beſides, that they ran the hazard of being murthered by the way. Many took ſervice for fear, but *Zweers* and *Broekhuſen* being aſk'd again, whether they were not willing to ſerve the king, they anſwered, they would rather die than bear arms againſt their own nation.

The trumpeters journey diſcovered.

The 5th of *October*, all the priſoners under a convoy, both of ſoldiers and boors, were carried from the *Algodais* to *Pojuka*. But ſcarce were they come thither, when *Zweers* was ordered to be ſent back to the cape of *St. Auſtin*, where he was put to the rack, to extort from him a confeſſion concerning the trumpeter's journey to the *Receif*, who, as they ſuppoſed, had diſcovered their deſign upon *Itamarika*; but not being able to bring him to make the leaſt diſcovery, they ſent him, after an impriſonment of five weeks, to the *Bahia*.

Zweers tortured.

In the mean while Mr. *Broekhuſen*, with the reſt of the *Dutch* priſoners, had been forced to travel day and night till the 28th of *November* 1645, when they came to a caſtle call'd *Tapuao*, on the ſea-ſhore of the *Bahia*,

The Dutch *priſoners come to the* Bahia.

1645. *Bahia*, about half a league from the city of *St. Salvador*, after a dangerous journey: They were carried in ten boats to the city, on that ſide where it is beſt fortified, the *Portugueſe* being not willing to let them have a ſight of the fortifications on the land ſide, Mr. *Broekhuſen* was by order from the governor *Antonio Telles da Sylva*, made a priſoner in a citizen's houſe, and the ſoldiers diſpoſed into quarters. The next day they heard the drums beat up for volunteers, every one being invited to ſerve the king of *Portugal*, of what nation ſoever, except the *Dutch*.

1646. The next following year, on the 18th of *January* 1646, *Zweers* and *Broekhuſen* intercepted a letter writ by *Hoogſtrate* to *Hondius*, concerning ſeveral tranſactions to be communicated to the governor, of which captain *Ley* having got ſcent, gave immediate notice thereof to the governour the firſt of *February*, who threatned them with no leſs than the gallows, ſent them to a loathſome priſon; with ſtrict orders that no body ſhould be permitted to ſpeak with them, nor that pen, ink, or paper, ſhould be allowed them; nay, whilſt the clerk was ſetting down their names, a captain came and told them from the governor, that they were the traitors who kept correſpondence with the *Dutch* in the *Receif*; and ordered that a centinel ſhould be ſet at the priſon door, to keep the inhabitants from laying violent hands upon them; for as they were carrying to priſon, they made a horrible noiſe, crying, *To the gallows with theſe impoſtors and traitors.* They remained five whole days in this priſon, without any victuals or drink, till being almoſt ſpent with hunger and thirſt, they got leave to write to the governor, repreſenting to him their deplorable condition; who gave immediate orders that victuals ſhould be given them for the future: The *Portugueſe* keeper being afraid, that if they ſhould give them plenty of victuals at firſt, it might turn to the danger of their lives, was ſo cautious, as to ſend them no more than each a piece of bread well dipt in wine at firſt, and after ſome hours, ſuch another, but ſomething bigger, till by degrees their ſtomachs were reſtored to their former digeſtive faculty.

A letter intercepted by Zweers *and* Broekhuſen.

Are committed to priſon.

Suffer for want of victuals.

Are provided with victuals.

The laſt day of *February* the governour gave publick audience (which is done three times every year) for the releaſing of thoſe that are priſoners on the king's account. Upon this occaſion a free acceſs was likewiſe granted to our people to the governor. They paſſed thro' the anti-chamber, lined on both ſides with his guards, into the room of audience, adorned with damaſk hangings of divers colours: Here they found the governor ſitting in an elbow chair, on the right-ſide of which ſtood the royal throne, raiſed four ſteps higher from the ground than the governor's ſeat, which was ſurrounded upon the floor with very fine tapeſtry. Juſt behind him ſtood his ſecretary, and ſome halbardiers; on both ſides ſat ſeveral councellours and lawyers, their heads covered. and behind them the officers of the army, all uncovered. The governor, as ſoon as he ſaw our priſoners, gave them a ſign to come nearer, which they having done accordingly, Mr. *Broekhuſen* upon his knees, ſpoke to him thus: *We ſuppoſe your lordſhip not to be ignorant, that now for a whole month we have been detained in a miſerable priſon; without being conſcious of any crime committed againſt you, unleſs it were, that we have detained the letter your lordſhip knows of; if in this we have committed a fault we beg your lordſhip's pardon.*

Have audience of the governour.

1646.

And (replied the governour) ſuppoſing you had done ſuch a thing in Holland? Upon which *Broekhuſen* anſwered, *That his lordſhip would be pleaſed to remember that it was no more than a private letter, and not directed to his lordſhip*; the governour after having paused for a little while, gave immediate order for their diſcharge; from that time they had liberty given them of walking abroad, but were fain to carry themſelves very ſwimmingly, for fear of the inhabitants, who kept a watchful eye over them.

Are diſcharged.

The 7th of *May*, *Iſaac Zweers* and *John Broekhuſen* were carried on board a yacht called the *St. Francis*, in order to be conveyed to the iſle of *Terceira*; and as they were the firſt *Dutch* priſoners that were ſent to that iſland, every body looked upon it no otherwiſe than a pretence to throw them over board after they were come at ſea. Here they met with worſe treatment than before, being forced to ſtand to the pump during the whole voyage, and yet were ready to be ſtarved, notwithſtanding the ſea-men catched more fiſh than they could conſume. At laſt the 28th being arrived in the road near *Terceira*, they ſaw within an hour after a *Dutch* ſhip coming to anchor near them; they called to the ſhip till the maſter ſent ſome of his people aboard them, unto whom they made their complaints, and underſtanding that the maſter was a native of *Niewendam* called *Martin Peter Honing*, they began to be a little chearful, tho' the *Portugueſe* would not allow them to go aboard the *Dutch* ſhip. But the 29th being left alone with the ſteer-man and only one boy in the veſſel, they found means to go in ſpight of their keepers, aboard *Martin Peter Honing*, who promiſed to ſee them delivered. The ſame afternoon *Moor* the governour of

Are ſent to Terceira.

1646. this and the adjacent islands, residing in *Terceira* sent for *Zweers* and *Broekhusen*, and told them that he had received a letter from the governour *Antonio Telles da Sylva*, in which he desired him to detain them prisoners in the castle for a twelve month; but that he did not think himself obliged to follow his directions, he having no other dependance but on the king, who being not concerned in this war, his orders were to send all the prisoners brought thither to *Portugal*; that they might rely upon it, and for their present sustenance, till a ship should be ready to go, ordered them nine rix dollars.

And from thence to Portugal.

The 13th of *June* they met with a master of a *French* vessel, who offered to carry them without any reward to *Portugal*, which they willingly accepted of: Here they met with many of their fellow prisoners, who had imagined no otherwise but that the *Portuguese* had thrown them over board. They continued here till the 10th of *September*, when Mr. *Zweers* and *Broekhusen* embarked themselves at *Lisbon* aboard a man of war called the *Prince Henry*, and at last, the 4th of *December*, after a thousand dangers and miseries, which they had sustained since their departure from the *Dutch Brasil*, arrived safely in the *Maese*.

Arrive safely in Holland.

But we must return towards the *Receif*. The unexpected defeat of colonel *Haus*, put all the inhabitants of the *Receif* under a great consternation; but the council left no stone unturned to put the place with all the adjacent forts, in a condition to make a vigorous defence, in case it should be attacked by the enemy; and that every thing might be performed with the best order that could be, *Peter Bas* was constituted commander in chief in the *Receif*. Admiral *Lichthart* was to take care of the batteries, and artillery thereunto belonging; *Henry Moucheron* was made commander in *Maurice's town*; all their thoughts being now bent upon the defence of these places, which before they judged out of danger.

Preparations in the Receif.

The stables and out-houses for the use of the negroes, as likewise the walks and gardens belonging to count *Maurice*'s house being no small impediment to the fort *Ernestus*; it being to be feared that under favour of these houses and trees, the enemy might unexpectedly surprize the fort and *Maurice's town*, and the inhabitants earnestly requested the pulling down of those stables, out-houses and trees, and what else might prove dangerous to the place; orders were given to Mr. *Valbergen* and major *Bayert*; commanding in the fort *Ernestus*, to see the same put in execution, with as little damage to the house as possibly could be. The houses near the fort *Bruin* were likewise ordered to be pulled down, and the horn-work belonging to it, to be levelled at the request of the citizens. Many negroes were also employed under the conduct of major *Beck* and the captain of the city militia, to break down all the houses in *Maurice's town*, which lay too near the new retrenchments. All *Portuguese* prisoners were ordered to be distributed in the ships, and several volunteers who had committed many outrages in the countrey, and were detained in custody, were taken into service for three months. A rumour being spread abroad that 18 of the enemy were come into the *Affagados*, a company of citizens were got in readiness to assist them, but it proved not true. 1646.

The ship the Orange tree *comes from* Holland.

The same day the ship called the *Orange-tree* arrived near the *Receif*, being come out of the *Maese* the 21st of *May* with thirty-five soldiers for recruits. The watches were so disposed, that in *Maurice's town* Mr. *de Wit* and *Raetfield* (besides the ordinary offices) and in the *Receif* Mr. *Aldrich* and *Valbergen* should go the rounds.

Balthasar Dortmund, governour of *Itamarika* sent advice to the council the 17th of *August* that *Kavalkanti* was with some troops come to *Iguaraku*, and had summoned the *Brasilians* to join with him in four days, under forfeiture of their lives.

The citizens petition for the pulling down of Maurice's *house.*

The 19th the citizens presented a petition, shewing the necessity of having the house of count *Maurice* pulled down, as hindring the prospect from the fort *Ernestus*, and if once possessed by the enemy, they might from thence annoy both the fort and the *Receif* itself with their cannon. But the council having advised with Mr. *Walbeck*, admiral *Lichthart*, *Aldrick de Wit*, *Raetfield*, *Moucheron* and *Valbergen*, thought fit not to agree to it for that time, being in hopes that it might be made useful for their defence. Mr. *de Wit* and *Hamel* were commanded to go from hence to each house in *Maurice's town*, and to take an exact account of what negroes were able to bear arms, and to furnish them with muskets and pikes; the same charge was given to admiral *Lichthart*, and captain *Bartholomew Van Collen*, for the *Receif*. All the sick that were in a state of reconvalescency in the castle were likewise ordered to be armed for its defence.

Negroes armed.

Orders sent to Mr. Dortmund.

At the same time an answer was sent to Mr. *Dortmund*, with orders to draw as many *Brasilians* as possibly he could into the isle of *Itamarika*, and to provide himself with as much cattle and meal (farinha) as he was able to get out of the adjacent places; but that if he found himself not in a condition to maintain the whole island,

1646. or the city of *Schop*, he ſhould retire into the fort *Orange*, where he might be ſupplied by ſea, and conſequently make a vigorous defence. Mr. *Carpenter* was likewiſe forewarned to be upon his guard, and to retire in time into the iſle of *Itamarika*, with his ſoldiers and *Braſilians*, if he found the inhabitants ready to take up arms againſt him.

The 19th at night a party went abroad to get intelligence, but met with no enemy. Some negroes were alſo ſent towards the enemies quarters to know their ſtrength. The ſame evening the council received a letter by lieutenant *Francis Meades* from *Andrew Vidal*, in which he teſtified his readineſs ſtill to maintain the peace, complaining at the ſame time of outrages committed by our ſoldiers, as may be ſeen out of the following letter.

A letter from Vidal *to the council.*

WE have ſent you advice before by lieutenant Manuel Antonio, *of our arrival in this captainſhip, by orders from the governor* Antonio Telles da Sylva, *and at your own requeſt, in order to reſtore tranquillity here by the moſt effectual means we could deviſe. We alſo did repreſent to your lordſhips the many innovations and unaccountable proceedings which had reached our ears, by the lamentable cries of ſeveral noble raviſhed virgins, and the doleful complaints of the inhabitants of* Rio Grande, *where forty perſons of note together with a prieſt, and the other day two more in the* Salinas *were murdered in cool blood. I can ſcarce mention without horror (and the reſpect every one ought to have to ſacred places forbids me to particularize) the outrages committed againſt the Images of ſaints, and eſpecially that of the mother of God, and ſacrileges committed by your ſoldiers: All which conſiderations, together with that we found you in a warlike condition, with your troops in the field, natural right of ſelf defence eſtabliſhed by the conſtant cuſtom of war did teach us, not to leave an armed power behind our backs, which upon occaſion might have proved fatal to us, before we could come to a reſolution in conjunction with your lordſhips, what meaſures were beſt to be taken for the re-eſtabliſhment of that tranquillity which was the only aim of our coming into theſe parts; according to which we have regulated ourſelves in our march towards the* Receif, *till we come to the town of* St. Antonio de Cabo; *where having cauſed* John Fernandes Vieira *to be taken into cuſtody, under a guard of twelve ſoldiers, we were ſurprized at the vaſt numbers of inhabitants, children, women, and religious men, who to ſhelter themſelves from the outrages and robberies committed againſt them by captain* Blaer *in the* Vergea, *came to* 1646. *ſeek for ſhelter among us. They gave us an account how that the ſaid captain not ſatisfied with having plundered their houſes, had carried away three of the nobleſt ladies of the countrey, after they had been grievouſly diſgraced before; the inhabitants being exaſperated by thoſe violences, did (againſt our will) leave our camp ſo ſuddenly, that whatever haſte we made to march after them, we could not overtake them before they were engaged with ſome of your troops, in the ſugar-mill of* Iſabel Gonſalves, *which they intended to have ſet on fire, had it not been for our men, who were forced to interpoſe betwixt them and your ſoldiers, to their no ſmall danger and our loſs, as being expoſed to the vollies of your ſmall ſhot, which conſiſted for the moſt part of bullets cut in pieces and made four ſquare. As the hoſtilities committed daily againſt our troops, afford freſh occaſions of revolt among the inhabitants, ſo we cannot but lay before your lordſhips the late proclamation and ratification of peace betwixt us, proteſting now and for ever in the name of God,* John IV. *our king, as alſo in the name of the ſtates general and all our allies, that your lordſhips will not let things come to a rupture, and not give us new cauſe of acting offenſively, or to declare war againſt you. We cannot longer diſſemble our opinion, that the reiterated complaints of the inhabitants, may at leaſt in ſome meaſure ſerve for an excuſe, if not a juſtification of the proceedings of* John Fernandes Vieira, *concerning whom we are ſufficiently ſatisfied that his firſt intentions were only to afford protection to ſome innocent perſons threatned with deſtruction; which though it was in his power to do, yet did he retire from place to place with his forces, in hopes of avoiding any engagement, till forced thereunto by neceſſity, he was conſtrained to repel force by force. We beg of your lordſhips to take this letter into ſerious conſideration, being of ſo much conſequence, to our both ſides ſafeties; for it ſeems as if heaven itſelf were offended at our proceedings. God preſerve your lordſhips.*

Andrew Vidal de Negreiros.

From de Ingenio of St. John Baptiſt de Venies, Aug. 19, 1645.

An anſwer from the council was ſent the next following day by the ſame lieutenant.

The council's anſwer.

OUT of our anſwer to your letter dated at Serinhaim *the* 8th *of auguſt, you may ſufficiently ſee that the proteſtations made both by the governour* Antonio Telles da Sylva, *and by yourſelf, concerning the maintaining of the*

1646. *the peace betwixt his majesty of* Portugal *and the states general of the* United Provinces, *were never looked upon by us as sincere, or to be relied upon, since your actions did in no wise agree with your words. The treacherous proposals made to one of our deputies, to betray one of our best strong holds into your hands; the landing of so formidable a force in our territories without any knowledge, under pretence of a misinterpreted sense of our letter to his excellency; the coming with a strong fleet into our road; the taking of the fort of* Serinhaim; *the slaughter of so many* Brasilians *our subjects in cool blood; the summons sent to the cape of* St. Austin *for a surrender, nay the attacking and surprising of our troops, who were forced to keep in the field, for the bridling of our rebellious inhabitants; all these, we say, cannot by any unbiass'd persons be looked upon otherwise, than manifest infractions of the said treaty, and open hostilities. We on our side can without the least contradiction to truth positively declare, that our armament was not in the least intended against his majesty of* Portugal, *but against the rebels and their adherents; which we were compelled to, when we saw many armed troops to penetrate into our territories cross the river* St. Francisco. *The surprising of some of our barks in the* Salgados; *the taking of the house* Marecape, *and making our safeguards prisoners there, as well as at* Cambao, *and several other places; the gallows that were erected on purpose to terrify our inhabitants into a compliance with the revolted party; the killing of three of the said inhabitants of* Pojuka *in cool blood, and the surprising of several of our soldiers and* Brasilians *sent to* St. Lawrence *to fetch farinha; the plundering of the houses and shops of several tradesmen in the countrey, with many such like violences committed by the revolted party; and what is the worst, before ever we appeared in arms, but endeavoured by proclamations of pardon and of maintaining them in their possessions, to divert the danger; all these actions, we say, will not admit of any other interpretation but of open hostilities.*

How can it be supposed that in the station we are, we could after all those provocations and slights of our kind offers, desist any longer from drawing the sword? Whatever in the mean time has been transacted contrary to the custom of war, has been done without our knowledge and intention, being occasioned by the treacherous dealings of the rebels, and consequently to be looked upon as deserved punishments, rather than the consequences of a just war; besides, that neither his excellency Antonio Telles da Sylva, *neither you nor any body else, has any legal power to call us to an account concerning the government or punishment of the subjects of the states general, no more than the king of* Portugal *is answerable to us for what is transacted upon that account in his kingdom or other dominions.* 1646.

Notwithstanding which we would have you not in the least lay the before-mentioned crimes and violencies at our door, we are so far from having encouraged or commanded the Tapoyers *to kill the* Portugueſe *inhabitants in* Kunhao, *that for these several years last past we have endeavoured to prevent it; for having, by the ill treatment they had received from the* Portugueſe, *been exasperated against them, they were for killing most of the inhabitants of that captainship, and had actually put it in execution, had we not interposed our authority, and ordered our garrisons to take them into their particular protection. What you say of ravishing of women, is not only beyond our knowledge, but even beyond whatever we heard of before, having taken all imaginable care to prevent such violences by our proclamation, published for that purpose. It is known to all the world that we afforded our peculiar protection to the women of* de Ingenio, *of* St. Arnout d'Orlanda, *and what concerns the taking of the ladies by captain* John Blaer, *was, as we are informed, done with no other intention, than to exchange them for his wife, or at least to keep them as hostages for her, he having received intelligence that she was very ill treated by you at* Serinhaim. *The rebels themselves made the first step towards those robberies and rapines that have been committed by our soldiers since; which however cannot come into balance with those cheats, frauds and rapines, wherewith those rebels have defrauded and robbed their creditors of their debts and goods; notwithstanding which we have by granting safeguards and otherwise done all what in us lay to prevent the same.*

The late murder upon the person of the Salinhas *was committed the* 17th *of* Auguſt, *without our knowledge, to our great dissatisfaction by the flying* Brasilians, *who being enraged at the killing of their men, women and children at* Serinhaim, *without any distinction of age or sex, took this opportunity of revenging themselves. You may easily guess that the papers dispersed by* Antonio Kavalkanti *at* Iguaracu, *have also contributed a little to this enterprize.*

Of the bullets mentioned by you to have been used in the last encounter, we have more reason to complain than you, it being our constant order not to recede from what is the custom of war in these cases.

The courtesy shewed in saving and receiving our soldiers, we are ready to acknowledge, and to return upon the like occasion, desiring you would send us back your resolution upon this point by the same drummer.

It being evident from what has been alledged, that all the past misfortunes ought to

1645. *be imputed to the rebels, unto whom we endeavoured by all requiſite means to reſtore tranquillity and peace; but they perſiſting in their rebellious deſigns, deſerve rather condign puniſhment than the leaſt excuſe at your hands. For which reaſon it is that we proteſt before God and the whole world, againſt the proceedings of his excellency* Antonio Telles da Sylva, *and what elſe has been committed by yourſelf contrary to the treaty concluded betwixt his majeſty of* Portugal *and the ſtates general of the* United Provinces; *not queſtioning but that upon the receipt of theſe preſents, you will retire with your forces to the* Bahia, *and thereby put an end to the further violation of the ſaid treaty. Thus expecting your anſwer, we reſt, ſir,*

Receif. Aug. 20, 1645. *Yours, &c.*

Preparations againſt the Enemies coming to the Receif.

The ſame night word being brought that ſome of the enemies troops were advanced to *Olinda*, notice was given to all the circumjacent forts, to prepare for a vigorous defence, and two batteries ordered to be raiſed on the back-ſide of the dwelling-place of the negroes, from whence they might command the avenues to the *Receif* along the river-ſide. Several volunteers lately come from the flat country, were incorporated into one company under the command of ſecretary *Hamel*, as captain, and *Jeronymo Holman* their lieutenant: Two advanced guards were placed, one betwixt the fort *Bruin* and the triangular fort; the ſecond betwixt the laſt and count *Maurice*'s plantation: Part of the bridge of *Boaviſta* was broken down, to hinder the enemies paſſage that way; and conſidering the importance of the triangular fort, a detachment of twenty ſix ſoldiers out of ſeveral companies was ordered to reinforce the garriſon there. The ſame care was taken for the ſecurity of *Maurice*'s *Town*, *Antonio Vaez*, the fort *Erneſtus*, the quinquangular fort, and all the reſt.

In Maurice's Town *and other forts.*

Major *Bayert* was ordered to have the remaining walls of count *Maurice*'s ſtables pull'd down, becauſe they hindred the proſpect from the fort *Erneſtus*; and *Henry Vermeulen* was commanded to employ thirty negroes in clearing the plantation of count *Maurice* and the ditches from all rubbiſh; and the before-mention'd *Bayert*, ordered to remove the palliſadoes from the ſaid gardens, and to put them round his fort. The engineer *Piſteor* had orders given him to ſet a row of palliſadoes on that ſide of the fort of *Erneſtus*, where it fronts the before-mention'd gardens, and to extend them five rods into the river. And this fort being not ſufficiently ſtored with heavy cannon, commiſſary *Sticht* was to carry thither two great pieces, then planted at the bridge-root, and inſtead of them to place there two culverins; likewiſe the entrance of the channel of *Maurice*'s *Town* was ſtopt by a double row of palliſadoes. The members of the council, in conjunction with thoſe of the court of juſtice, took another view of the ſuburbs of *Maurice*'s *Town*, to conſult whether it were beſt to maintain or to deſert that poſt, but the reſolution thereof was deferr'd 'till the next day. Two great cannons were planted in the *Quinquangular-Fort*, to command the river-ſide; and in conſideration that the hornworks belonging to that fort, required a conſiderable number of men for their defence, the governor of the fort was ordered to have the ſame levell'd by his *Braſilians* and ſoldiers, and one hundred negroes; and the woods betwixt the ſaid fort and the *Afagados*, were ordered to be cut down by the *Braſilians* belonging to the fort, when it was alſo reſolved to draw the fortifications of *Maurice*'s *Town* into a narrower compaſs, and to repair the walls round the *Receif*; ſo that by the indefatigable care of the council, all the fortifications both of the *Receif* and the other adjacent places, were put into ſuch a good poſture of defence, that the enemy, tho' very ſtrong, durſt not attempt any thing thereabouts for that time. Mr. *Dortmund* had drawn near 1400 perſons into *Itamarika*, 700 of which being women and children, he deſired ſome ſupplies of proviſions, but for the reſt, had put the iſland in a good poſture.

1645.

Letters to the council out of Parayba.

Mr. *Linge*, by his letter dated in *Parayba* the 22d of *Auguſt*, ſent advice to the council, that after notice given him of the defeat of colonel *Haus*, he had judged it moſt convenient to remove the garriſon and inhabitants of *Fredericia* into the forts; that however the *Portugueſe* were pretty quiet as yet, notwithſtanding his whole force conſiſted not in above four hundred ſoldiers, one hundred inhabitants, and fifty *Braſilians*, among whom were a good number of ſick and maimed men; and that the *Tapoyers* had ſlain about twelve or fourteen labouring countrymen. Major *Hoogſtrate*, *Ley* and *Heck*, had not long before given notice to the council, that they had burnt all the houſes, but eſpecially the magazine and church without the fort, for its better defence, and that the enemy had poſted themſelves on the hill of the cape, and on the ſouthern iſland.

On the 25th of *Auguſt*, upon another review of the fortifications of *Maurice*'s *Town*, the ſame were ordered to be brought forthwith to perfection.

The ſame day the council received letters from Mr. *Linge*, by the way of *Itamarika*, dated

1645. dated the 18th and 19th of *Auguſt*, in *Paráyba*, that *William Barents* had ſent him advice from *Kunhao* the 14th of *Auguſt*, that he and *Rudolph Bawn* had a troop of *Tapoyers* ready for our ſervice, every thing being very quiet thereabouts; but that the ſaid *Tapoyers* had carried away all the cattle belonging to *Peter Farcharſon*, which had occaſioned no ſmall ſcarcity of freſh fleſh thereabouts.

It was alſo judged abſolutely neceſſary by the council, to take into their ſerious conſideration the preſent condition of the forts in *Rio St. Franciſco* and *Seregippo del Rey*, which being provided but with ſlender garriſons, and all communication cut off betwixt them and the *Receif*, and in great danger of being loſt; it was judged abſolutely neceſſary, after the defeat of colonel *Haus*, to endeavour the preſervation of them, and conſequently of the whole *Dutch-Braſil*, by removing them from thence to the *Receif*.

Conſultations about removing ſeveral garriſons to the Receif.

To accompliſh this with all imaginable ſecurity, Mr. *Walbeck* was deputed by the great council to the council of war, to know their opinion, by what means theſe garriſons, as well as that of *Porto Calvo*, might be with ſafety brought to the *Receif*, or whether, conſidering that they would be forced to leave their cannon behind them, they ſhould be ordered to defend themſelves to the laſt extremity, in hopes of receiving ſpeedy ſuccours from *Holland* for their relief.

The council of war, having well weighed the whole matter, unanimouſly agreed upon the following reſolution.

The reſolution of the council of war.

THAT it was their opinion, conſidering the capital city was in danger for want of a ſufficient garriſon, the garriſons of the before-mention'd forts, which in all probability could not make any long reſiſtance, ought to be taken from thence with as much ammunition and cannon as could be done, and carried to the Receif. *But in regard that the fort of* Porto Calvo *lay pretty deep into countrey, where the river was very narrow and ſhallow, the garriſons of* Rio St. Franciſco, *and* Seregippo del Rey, *were to paſs that way in order to join them, and that they ſhould bury or break their cannon.*

By order from the council of war, *Aug.* 24, 1645.

Signed,

Kornelis Bayer,
Albertus Ooſterman,
L. Van. Harkema,
John Denning,
Samuel Lambartz.
Henry Advocaet.
Frederick Piſtoor.
capt. Haelmeiſter.
Rene de Mouchy.

Accordingly two barks, with the ſhip *Zelandia*, were ordered for the execution of this enterprize, to *Rio St. Franciſco*. 1645.

The laſt day of *Auguſt*, one of the captains of theſe two barks return'd, and gave an account, that he being advanced into the river of *Rio St. Franciſco*, within a league of the ſaid fort, he received ſo warm a ſalute of ſmall ſhot from a *Portugueſe* veſſel full of firelocks, that he was forced to return, without being able to penetrate any further up the river; that the other bark being diſcouraged thereat, durſt not venture to go to *Seregippo*, but that they thought fit to retreat back with the ſhip *Zelandia*; he further added, that it would be very difficult to put this deſign in execution, unleſs they were provided with ſome galliots and yachts well armed.

Purſuant to this advice, the council ordered the yacht called the *Sprew*, with three other barks thither, to join with the ſhip *Zelandia*, for the more effectual execution of this deſign.

Some ſhips ſent to Rio St. Franciſco *under* William Lambartz.

They ſet ſail from the *Receif* the 2d of *September*, captain *William Lambartz* commodore. He return'd with the ſaid yacht, and the *Zelandia*, the firſt of *October*, to the *Receif*, where he gave the following account of his expedition to the council.

He gives an account of his expedition.

We came the 22d of *September* within a half league of the fort of *St. Maurice*, where we met with a bark, which at the diſcharge of one of our cannon, ſail'd away before us up the river. As we were in purſuit of her, we eſpied another ſmall veſſel, in company of the bark belonging to *John Hoek*, both full of ſoldiers: We ſaw the firſt of theſe two run aſhore, and the ſoldiers landing, who skirmiſhed with an oppoſite party for the defence of the veſſel: Our yacht under favour of our cannon, boarded the ſaid veſſel, with an intention to ſet it on fire; but finding it loaden with the baggage of our ſoldiers, fell to plundering firſt; and ſoon after eſpied a boat with a white flag, making all the ſail they could towards them: Major *Pappenheim*, late commander of the fort of *Rio St. Franciſco*, and Mr. *Hoek*, were in this Boat, being ſent by the enemy to let us know, that if we ſet fire to the veſſel, he would cut all the priſoners with their wives and children to pieces, ſo that we deſiſted from it. They gave us an account, that the ſaid fort had been forced to ſurrender three days before, for want of wood and proviſions, after a ſiege of twenty ſix days: That the *Portugueſe* having taken a ſerjeant with four ſoldiers of the garriſon of *Seregippo*, had killed the ſoldiers, and ſent the ſerjeant back with a convoy of two hundred men, to fetch the garriſon of *Seregippo*, which had

1645. had not above four days proviſion left, from thence. That about eight days before the ſurrender of the fort, colonel *Haus*, captain *Liſtry*, and captain *Wiltſchut* paſs'd by that way in their journey to the *Bahia*, whither they, purſuant to their capitulation, were to be carried with the reſt of the priſoners, and from thence to *Portugal*, and ſo further to *Holland*, without any other loſs except their baggage, being for the reſt indifferently well treated. They further added, that the *Portugueſe* not long ago detach'd two hundred men to the iſland of *Melchior Alvares*, in hopes to cut off the retreat of our men, and to prevent their excurſions, but came too late, our people being retired before. That the enemy had likewiſe made themſelves maſters of the fort *dos Affagados*, where Mr. *Bulleſtraete* being made a priſoner, was now on his way to the *Bahia*. Captain *Lambartz* hearing this account, thought it his beſt way to retreat towards the mouth of the river, where having ſpent two days in refitting his ſhips, he returned the firſt of *October* to the *Receif*.

The garriſons of the three forts forced to ſurrender.

The ſame ill ſucceſs attended us at *Seregippo* and *Porto Calvo*; for the council having ſent a bark with proviſions to their relief, the ſame, contrary to her orders, came to anchor before *Rio St. Franciſco*, where being ſeized by the enemy, the garriſon of *Seregippo* being thereby diſappointed in their hopes, were forced to ſurrender after they had ſpent all their proviſions. After this misfortune, there was not the leaſt probability left of ſaving the garriſon of *Porto Calvo*, which lying deep into the countrey, the river was not navigable thereabouts by reaſon of its narrowneſs, and that the enemy was maſter of the field on both ſides, ſo that they were likewiſe obliged to ſurrender for want of neceſſaries. The garriſons of theſe three forts, were contrary to their capitulation, (by virtue of which they were to be conducted to the *Receif*) carried priſoners to the *Bahia*; but thoſe that could not follow the reſt, by reaſon of ſickneſs, or otherwiſe, were cut to pieces by the *Portugueſe*.

Are carried to the Bahia.

Many of the ſoldiers belonging to theſe as well as other garriſons, and of the troops under colonel *Haus*, dreading the danger of the land-journey to the *Bahia*, did take ſervice among the *Portugueſe*; but captain *Nicholas Nicholſon* being ſent with ſixty four of theſe *Dutch* to prepare an ambuſh for ſome of our forces, took this opportunity to join with us, which exaſperated the enemy to that degree, that they diſarmed all the *Dutch* that had taken ſervice there, and murthered them in cool blood; the like they did with the *Dutch* inhabitants that had ſtaid behind in the country.

The Portugueſe *kill all the* Dutch *in their ſervice.*

1645.

In the mean while the captainſhip of *Parayba*, through the good conduct of their governor *Paul de Linge*, remained in obedience, at leaſt in outward appearance, 'till the 25th of *Augſt.* 1645, when the inhabitants, having received intelligence of the defeat of colonel *Haus*, and the ſurrender of the *Cape of St. Auſtin*, and being at the ſame time encouraged by the ſuccours of five companies, and good ſtore of arms, ſent to them by *Vidal* from *Pernambuko*, they began alſo to take up arms, with an intention to cut off the communication betwixt the garriſon in the Monaſtery of *St. Franciſco*, as the inhabitants of *Fredericia*, (a place of no ſtrength) and the forts near the ſea ſhore; but Mr. *Linge* ſhrewdly ſuſpecting their deſign, did with conſent of the reſt of the officers there, order all the citizens with their effects, and the beforemention'd garriſon to withdraw within theſe forts, to prevent their being ſurpriſed by the *Portugueſe*, and to ſerve as an additional ſtrength for the defence of the forts; for which reaſon alſo the *Braſilians* inhabiting with their families in thoſe parts, were commanded to intrench themſelves under the cannon, which ſerved for outworks to them. The enemy finding themſelves by the conjunction of theſe forces, diſappointed in their deſign of making themſelves maſters of *Parayba* by force, had recourſe to their wonted artifice, not queſtioning, but they might have the ſame ſucceſs in purchaſing the forts of *Parayba*, as they had had at the *Cape of St. Auſtin*. To encompaſs which, they ſent in *September* 1645, one *Ferdinand Rodrigo de Bulhaus*, clerk of the court of juſtice of *Parayba*, with a letter directed to the commander in chief, *Paul Vander Linge*, offering him the ſum of 19000 gilders, if he would ſurrender the ſaid fort into their hands. But this meſſage had not the deſired effect, the meſſenger being by order from Mr. *de Linge* taken into cuſtody and hanged the next day; of which he ſent notice to the council the 16th of *September*. In the mean while, (according to Mr. *de Linge*'s letter from the 6th of *September*) five companies more of the enemies troops, making in all about three hundred Men, were arrived in *Parayba*, which being join'd by the ableſt of the inhabitants, had poſted themſelves near *Tibery*, where they had publiſhed by proclamation, for every one to repair to his ſugar-mill, under pain of forfeiting the ſame.

Revolt in Parayba.

Their meſſenger hanged.

The Paſſage betwixt the *Affagados* and the *Quinquangular-Fort*, where the cattle belonging to the *Receif* were kept at paſture, being much infeſted by the enemies parties, one of which had taken good part of

1645. of it, a ſmall wooden fort was ordered to be erected in the moſt convenient poſt, for the ſecurity of the meadows thereabouts.

Sometime before, *viz.* the 26th of *July*, orders were ſent from the council to *Servaes Carpenter*, to diſarm the inhabitants of *Goyana*, who thereupon petitioned the ſaid council to be excuſed from ſurrendering their Arms, conſidering that thirty ſeven *Portugueſe* of *Kunhao*, who had been diſarmed, were murthered by the *Tapoyers*, and that they were daily in fear of the ſame treatment, 'till they were further removed from their borders. The council anſwered, that the murther committed upon theſe *Portugueſe* had been done without their knowledge, and contrary to their orders; that in caſe they perſiſted in their allegiance, they had nothing to fear from the *Tapoyers*, whilſt they were under their protection; neither ought they to imagine that the diſarming of them, was done with an intention to leave them a prey to the *Tapoyers*, but for our own ſecurity, and to furniſh them with a plauſible excuſe not to join with the rebels, whenever they ſhould be prompted thereunto by them. At the ſame time they repeated their orders to Mr. *Carpenter*, not to deſiſt from diſarming thoſe of *Goyana*, notwithſtanding their petition to the contrary, but that he ſhould be very careful, that neither the ſoldiers, nor *Braſilians* of *Marni* might be burthenſome to them. The council alſo deputed Mr. *Aſtelle* and captain *William Lambartz*, with letters to *John Duwy* and *Karakara*, the firſt king, and the ſecond commander in chief of a troop of the *Tapoyers*, with preſents to all the reſt of their commanders, in order to engage them to join with us, they having complained of their not having been preſented, like as *John Duwy* was before; accordingly the ſaid Mr. *Aſtelle* and captain *William Lambratz* having taken their leave the 28th of *Auguſt* of the council, took ſhipping for *Parayba*, in order to go from thence to *Kunhao* to treat with the *Tapoyers*.

Deputies ſent the Tapoyers

The Members of the Court of Juſtice and the council of war, in conjunction with the magiſtrates, having repreſented to the *great council* the abſolute neceſſity of having the houſes in *Maurice*'s *Town* pull'd down and laid level with the ground; an order of the ſaid council was publiſh'd the 29th of *Auguſt* by beat of drum, enjoining the inhabitants to pull down ſuch houſes, within the ſpace of two days, and in caſe of failure, every body to be at liberty to break down the ſame for his uſe; the houſe of Mr. *Rechteren* only excepted, which was to be converted into a redoubt, for the defence of the adjacent plain. The ſame day *John Denninger*, lately lieutenant to colonel *Haus*, ſucceeded captain *Blaar*, now a priſoner with the enemy, in his command; and many negroes offered to ſerve the company under a captain of their own chooſing. 1645.

The 30th of *Auguſt*, captain *William Lambartz*, with part of his forces return'd to the *Receif* from *Parayba*, where he gave the council an account of his negotiation: That not without a great deal of trouble they at laſt obtained two hundred *Tapoyers* from their king *John Duwy*, who pretended that he dreaded an incurſion from one of his neighbours, who in the abſence of his troops might perhaps kill him with all his family, and demanded at the ſame time, that all the *Portugueſe* might be killed in *Parayba*. That he marching with theſe *Tapoyers* into the ſaid captainſhip of *Parayba*, they actually ſlew all the *Portugueſe* they met with in their way, to the number of one hundred perſons, and plunder'd their houſes; and as ſoon as they found him prepared to appeaſe them, one half of them, with what negroes and other booty they had got, returned home; but continuing his march with the reſt thro' *Goyana* towards the *Receif*, the *Tapoyers* did no ſooner underſtand, that they were likely to meet with ſome oppoſition by the way, but they followed the footſteps of the reſt homewards; ſo that he was forced to retire with all ſpeed to the fort of *St. Margaret* in *Parayba*, from whence he returned by ſea to the *Receif*. Hereupon the council diſpatched ſome letters the 16th of *September* for *Rio Grande*, directed to king *John Duwy*, *Jacob Rabbi* and *Rudolf Baro*, exhorting them to join their arms with ours, for our mutual defence, and to chaſe the *Portugueſe* that were on their march thither, from thence.

The ſucceſſes of their negotiation.

The Tapoyers *deſert.*

The 13th of *September* 1645, *Jeronymo Serrao da Paiva*, late admiral of the *Portuguſe* fleet, (made priſoners in the late ſea engagement in the bay of *Tamandare*) appeared before the council, where being examined concerning the deſigns of the governor of the *Bahia* in ſending a fleet, and landing his forces in the Bay of *Tamandare*, as likewiſe concerning the fleet under the command of *Salvador Korrea de Saa*, he refuſed to give any other anſwer, or to make the leaſt confeſſion, except that he was ſent with the ſaid fleet and forces to offer his aſſiſtance to appeaſe the revolt ariſen among us. He deſired alſo leave to ſend a letter by a drummer to the colonels *Martin Soares Moreno* and *Andrew Vidal*, about the exchanging of his perſon, and ſome other *Portugueſe* Priſoners, which was granted.

The captive Portugueſe *admiral examined.*

Some

1645. Some of the citizens having conceived a jealousy, as if their pressing circumstances and the need they stood in of present relief, had not been sufficiently represented to the council of nineteen in *Holland*, it was thought fit by the council to communicate the contents of the two last letters to them for their satisfaction.

The 19th of *September*, about noon, our whole fleet retired from the bay of *Tamandare* into the road of the *Receif*, with two men of war, and two small vessels taken from the enemy; where I was arrived long before, having left them, immediately after the engagement. The same night *Servaes Carpenter* who died the day before, was interr'd. The same day the yacht call'd the *Doe*, and one of the small vessels taken from the enemy, and call'd by us the *Receif*, were sent out a cruising to the *Cape of St. Austin*, to prevent the enemies receiving any supplies by sea thereabouts.

The council being sensible that the enemy made it their chiefest endeavour to drive away their cattle, and to prevent them, by strong parties from fetching of wood and fishing, a company of fusileers was order'd to be erected out of other companies, who were to be commanded by captain *Renbagh*, and to serve as a constant guard against the enemy's flying parties. The 21st of *September*, the following proclamation of pardon for such as had taken service with the enemy, was publish'd.

Company of fusileers erected.

A PARDON *publish'd.*

THE great council of the Dutch-Brasil *being made sensible, that many of their subjects being fallen into the enemies hands, have either for fear of being killed or transported, and out of other considerations, taken service among the enemies troops, and considering that most of them have been inveigled by their commanders, and perhaps are in a fair way of repenting of their error, have thought fit, by these presents to grant our pardon to all such as shall return to our service, for all past offences; with our promise, that they shall receive the advantage of the same station they were possess'd of among us before; and such as are willing to return to their native countrey, shall have passports granted them for that purpose; from the benefit of which pardon, are however excepted* Dirck Hoogstrate, *and the other traytors, who being commanders of forts, have treacherously delivered up the same to the enemy.*

By this time the enemy had block'd up all the avenues by land, leading to the *Receif*, in hopes to reduce us by famine, having posted both all the *Portugueſe* forces sent to their aid from the *Bahia*, and the rebellious troops, from the city of *Olinda* to the *Baretta*, in the form of a half-moon; and made about half a league from the fort of *Affagados* an entrenchment provided with six pieces of heavy cannon, brought hither from *Porto Calvo*, ; but durst not attack us by force, knowing we were prepared for their reception. 1645.

Mr. *Dortmund* having by his letters represented to the council, the necessity there was of sending one of their members to provide for the security of *Itamarika*, and to keep the *Brasilians*, (consisting of 1500 men, women and children) by his authority in their duty against the solicitations of *Kamaron*, who left no stone unturn'd to bring them over to his side; they desired Mr. *Bullestrate* to take upon him this province; who accordingly the 23d of *September*, set sail thither in the ship the *Deventer*, and returning the 29th of *September* to the *Receif*, gave the following account to the council.

Mr Bullestrate *sent to* Itamarika.

He arrived about noon at the entrance of the river *Maria Farinha*, where being informed by *John Vos*, master of a bark, that the enemy had twice attack'd the city of *Shoppe*, and continued before it still, he went into a challop, with five or six seamen to the fort *Orange*, but was no sooner espied by the garrison, but they desired him not to come nearer, they being still smartly engaged with the enemy upon the hill, and doubtful of success: Whereupon he sent two seamen, with a letter to Mr. *Dortmund*, who being encouraged by the reward of two reals, brought an answer from him the same night, intimating that the enemy, had been forced to retire.

An account of his proceedings.

The 25th of *August*, by break of day, he went in a challop to the city of *Shoppe*, and finding that the enemy, what with the brave resistance made by the garrison, what with fear of this ship, had abandon'd not only the city, but also the whole island, he ordered the fortifications to be forthwith repaired, and to be put into a good posture of defence.

For the enemy perceiving that it was in vain to attack us upon the *Receif*, sent great part of their forces, embark'd in 8 boats and a bark against *Itamarika*, the 20th of *September*; where having surprized, and vigorously attack'd our forces posted on the hill near the city, (our deserters making the first attack) that they the third time made themselves masters of it, forcing our troops to retreat into their entrenchment of the church.

The Portugueſe *attack* Itamarika.

About three days after, *viz.* the 23d, Mr. *Bullestrate*, as we told you, arrived in the ship *Deventer*, to give the necessary orders for the defence of the place; and to keep the *Brasilians* in awe, he brought along with

1645. him some volunteers chosen from among the citizens, the garrison of the *Receif* being so weak as not to be rendred useless by any further detachments; besides that there were 400 *Brasilians* capable of bearing arms at *Itamarika*. He was charged by the great council, and the members of the council of war, to watch above all things for the defence of the fort *Orange*, which was to be maintained to the last, if they were not able to keep the whole island on the hill.

Mr. *Bullestrate*, after his arrival there, found it absolutely necessary to preserve likewise the city of *Shoppe*, from whence the said fort must be supplied with wood, its situation being such, as that so long as we were masters at sea, we could maintain a correspondence betwixt the said fort and city; for which purpose also, the yacht call'd the *Golden-Doe*, had her station appointed betwixt the fort *Orange* and the hill, to maintain the passage of the river between both. But to return to the siege of the city: The enemy made three vigorous attacks upon the entrenchment on the hill, but was repulsed with the loss of 150 kill'd; tho' a barber, who after the fight deserted them, made their loss amount to 450. *Kamaron* and *Hoogstrate* were wounded, and we had only 15 kill'd and 16 wounded. The *Brasilians* lately transported thither, from the villages of *Goyana*, *Iguaracu*, and other places, behaved themselves to a miracle upon this occasion, tho' it must be allow'd, that the arrival of Mr. *Bullestrate* did not a little cool their courage, which made them abandon the island in the night, betwixt sunday and monday.

Abandon it again.

Further consultations about the safety of Itamarika.

The 2d of *October* the great council entred upon a second debate concerning the preservation of *Itamarika*, they having received certain intelligence, that the enemy had undertaken the last expedition against that island, upon hopes of being seconded therein by certain persons of our party, with whom they kept a secret correspondency; and tho' they were in the dark upon whom in particular to fix the intended treachery, yet did they think it conducing to the safety of that so important place, to remove captain *Sluyter*, with his company from thence, and in their stead to send thither the company commanded by captain *William Lambartz*, and to entrust him with the supreme command of all their forces there, which was put in execution accordingly the next day. The entrenchment round the church and the fort *Orange*, were also ordered to be strengthen'd with pallisadoes; and the first, pursuant to the advice of *Garstman* and *Dortmund*, I ordered to be surrounded with a counterscarp, within the compass of which a company of *Brasilians* were lodged, with their wives and children, and the rest to be employed in the defence of the fort *Orange*; so the redoubt which commanded the place, from which the fort was supplied with water, was ordered to be repaired against a sudden attack, without which the fort could not long subsist, or hold out against an enemy. 1645.

Letters were about the same time delivered to the council, dated the 5th of *October*, by Major *Austin de Magethaes*, sent by *Andrew Vidal*, to treat about the exchange of prisoners; he told them, that since admiral *Serrao de Paiva*, had by two several letters sollicited his releasemen., he desired that the same might be exchanged for other soldiers, or be ransomed by *Antonio Telles da Sylva*, governor of the *Bahia*. He desired also that a cartel might be agreed upon for the exchange of the soldiers; and that in the mean while such of the *Portuguese* inhabitants, as were prisoners with us, might be released for reasonable ransom, which was not accepted of by the council.

Vidal *sollicits the exchange of prisoners.*

In the mean while, (pursuant to the letters from the commander in chief of *Rio Grande*, and *John Hoek* of the 6th of *October*) *Jacob Rabbi*, with a small troop of *Tapoyers* and *Brasilians*, in conjunction with 30 *Dutch* inhabitants, made themselves masters of the seat of *John Lestan*, with the slaughter of 15 *Portuguese*. But they had not the same success at *Fernandes Menda*'s house in *Potigi*, which being defended by 50 *Portuguese*, they were repulsed with some loss.

Fifteen Portugueſe *killed by the* Tapoyers.

The enemies finding themselves disappointed in their design of gaining *Parayba* by treachery, did again apply all their care to block up all the avenues leading to the *Receif*, in hopes of reducing it by famine. This occasioned many skirmishes, in which the *Brasilians*, who got the greatest part of their provision out of the countrey, did a considerable mischief to the *Portuguese*; who for their greater security built a fort in *Pernambuko* (as they likewise did in the *Vargea* of *Parayba*) near the sugar-mill of *George Huomo Pinto*, but slightly fortified, and not able to hold out against any vigorous attack. In *Rio Grande* the *Tapoyers* plaid the masters over the *Portuguese*; for as we told you before, that according to their custom they entred the said captainship in *July* 1645, when being informed of the rebellion of the *Portuguese* in *Pernambuko*, they out of an inborn hatred to that nation, attacked the 16th of *July* some of them in the sugar-mill of *Kunhao*, and killed every soul of them, the *Dutch* inhabitants thereabouts not being strong enough to prevent it. From thence the *Tapoyers* marched to *Monpobu*, *Goyana*,

and

1645. and *Potosi*, places belonging likewise to *Rio Grande*, where finding a body of *Portugueſe* entrenched with palliſadoes in the nature of a *Palanka*, they forced them in conjunction with ſome *Braſilians*, to ſurrender, under condition that their lives ſhould be ſaved, provided they did not give any further occaſion of diſturbance. But ſome of the *Portugueſe* flying afterwards into *Parayba*, the *Tapoyers* looking upon this as a breach of the late treaty, did with the beforementioned *Braſilians* agree to put the reſt to the ſword whereever they met with them, which they did accordingly, the *Braſilians* exclaiming againſt the tyranny committed upon thirty or forty of their comrades, who by *Andrew Vidal*'s order, were tied to palliſadoes in *Serinhaim* and ſtrangled, which had this good effect, that *Rio Grande* for that time was entirely purged of the rebellious crew, except ſome few who eſcaped their hands. Their eſtates and cattle were afterwards diſpoſed for the benefit of the company, and others their creditors, which furniſhed the publick magazines with good ſtore of fleſh, at a very ſeaſonable time. The *Portugueſe* being ſenſible that we drew conſiderable ſupplies of proviſions from that countrey, endeavoured to prevent it by ſending ſeveral bodies of their troops thither, but were always forced to retire to *Parayba*, whither they carried as much cattle along with them as they could.

The Tapoyers *clear* Rio Grande *of the* Portugueſe.

An account of the enemies forces.

According to the depoſition of captain *Nicholas Nicholſon* (who came over to us the 12th of *November*, as we ſhall ſee anon) the four companies of *Dutch* quartered in the *Vargea*, were as follows.

The company of *Nicholas Nicholſon*, 63 men, and among them 23 muſquets.

The company of *Alexander Buchhalt*, of 43 men, among whom 36 muſquets.

The company of captain *Anthony*, who was mortally wounded in a late engagement, conſiſting of 36 men, and among them 32 muſquets.

The company of *John de Witt*, of 40 men, but miſerable wretches, and among them only 12 muſquets.

Beſides theſe they had two other *Dutch* companies in *Goyana*, one commanded by *George Peterſon* of 17 men, all pikes, the other by *La Cour* of 19 men, likewiſe moſt pikes. They had alſo two more in *Parayba*, one under the command of captain *Peter Gendre* of 19 men, moſt pikes; the ſecond by *Edward Verſman* of 20 men, among whom was but one muſqueteer: So that the whole number of theſe eight companies, amounted to no more than 257 men; their colonel was *Hoogſtrate*, and *Francis la Tour* late alderman of *Serinhaim*, major, a proteſt enemy to the *Hollanders*. Moſt of the *Dutch* priſoners were put under a neceſſity of taking ſervice with the enemy, being otherwiſe in danger of being murdered in their way to the *Bahia*, as it happened to 42 priſoners taken at the cape of *St. Auſtin*, who were all ſlain in the ſugar-mill *Konjau*, near *Serinhaim*. He further declared, that the enemies forces in the *Vergea*, conſiſted of about 700 men ſent from the *Bahia*, divided into nine companies, well armed with muſquets and firelocks. That beſides theſe, they had about 100 men, gathered from among the *Portugueſe* inhabitants, they having forced all the young men from the ſouth of *Huma*, as far as *St. Lawrence* to take up arms; ſome being armed with firelocks, others with muſquets they had taken from us; they were for the moſt part mulats, and an undiſciplined rabble, commanded by *John Fernand Vieira* as colonel, and *Anthony Dias* (who came from the *Bahia*) their major. Their captains moſt in eſteem among them were, *Simon Mendes*, *Domingos Fagundos*, and *John d'Albuquerque*. *Kamaron* commanded 100 *Braſilians* armed with blunderbuſſes, and *Dias* 200 negroes (among whom 50 were ours) provided with very good guns; beſides ſome *Tapoyers*. Each ſoldier had for his daily allowance, a pound of meat, and about a pint of farinha or meal, and 12 gilders *per* month; a captain 120 gilders, an enſign 42, a ſergeant 21, and a corporal 15 gilders *per* month. But they only paid the *Dutch* troops with ready money, the account with the *Portugueſe* from the *Bahia* being made up but once a year. They were at that time buſy in raiſing of a fort with four ſmall baſtions and a powder houſe, betwixt *Bierbrom*'s ſugar-mill and *Caſa de Sabrodo*, upon each of which were to be mounted three pieces of cannon, eight pieces having been brought for that purpoſe from *Porto Calvo*, among which were five of metal. Round about this fort the ſoldiers from the *Bahia* had their quarters aſſigned them, except the company commanded by *John de Magehais*, which was quartered in the *Baretta*, with four *Dutch* companies, *viz.* the *Dutch* that were in the ſugar-mill of *Bierbrom*, and thoſe commanded by captain *Peter Kavalkanti*, and *Anthony Jaconio*, and two or three companies of the *Portugueſe* come from the *Bahia*, in the ſugar-mill *Brito*; the reſt being *Portugueſe*, *Mulats*, and other idle fellows they had forced to follow them from the ſouth. Theſe were armed for the moſt part with firelocks and muſquets, the reſt with pikes, *Andrew Vidal*, *John Fernand Vieira*, and major *Hoogſtrate*, were at that time in the *Caſa de Sabrodo*; all theſe conſiſted not in

1645

1645. In above 600 men. About the ſugar-mill of *John de Mendonce* were quartered three companies, two at the houſe of *Sebaſtian Karvalho*, and two more in the ſugar-mill of *Mengao*. The reſt were poſted in the *Salines*, *Baretta*, and the city of *Olinda*. Some of *Kamaron*'s troops were in the ſugar-mill of *Van Scholl*, and in the houſe of *John Kordero de Mendoje*, upon the bank of the river, being their advanced guard; *Henry Dias* with his troops had his poſt in the houſe of Mr. *Luffelen*. The redoubts belonging to the city of *Olinda*, were manned only with 17 ſoldiers.

In *November* the great council received intelligence, both by letters from *Paulo de Linge* out of *Parayba*, as alſo by ſeveral deſerters, that the enemy had ſent 400 men, 200 of which were ſoldiers, the reſt inhabitants, from *Rio Grande* into *Parayba*, to make themſelves maſters of the open countrey, or at leaſt to drive away the cattle; whereupon it was reſolved, with conſent of colonel *Garſman*, to endeavour to hinder the execution of the enemies deſign.

Captain Nicholas Nicholſon *deſerts the enemy.*

The 12th of *November*, captain *Nicholas Nicholſon*, a native of *Amſterdam*, came, as we told you before, over to us to the *Receif*. He was among other priſoners of the cape of *St. Auſtin*, carried from thence to *St. Antonio*, where he took ſervice among the *Portugueſe*, but with no other intention than to deſert them upon the firſt opportunity; he being intruſted with a captain's commiſſion, to command a company of *Dutch* ſoldiers forced to liſt themſelves from among the priſoners they had taken, was ordered, at the recommendation of *Hoogſtrate*, and *Albert Geuitz Weddo*, with the approbation of *Vidal* and *John Vieira*, to lye in ambuſh for ſome of our people in the *Salines*, with a detachment of 60 men, out of the four *Dutch* companies in their ſervice; and four more companies were ordered for a reſerve, to aſſiſt him upon all occaſions. The ſupreme command of the whole body being committed to him, he approached as near as he could with his *Dutch* to the fort *Bruin*, where he took the opportunity to paſs the river by break of day, and to go with them (they being all willing to follow) over to us to the ſaid fort. Captain *Nicholas Nicholſon* had the command over the ſaid company confirmed to him by the council, they being all willing to enter into their ſervice: But the enemy had no ſooner notice of it, but they diſarmed all the *Dutch*, and under pretence of ſending them to the *Bahia*, cauſed them to be murdered by the way, with their wives and children.

The 2d of *November*, the council had received advice from Mr. *Linge* from *Parayba*, that *Andrew Vidal* had entred that captainſhip with 200 men, and that *Kamaron* had by letters ſtrongly ſollicited *Peter Potty*, to deſert our ſervice with his *Braſilians*, but had received a ſmart refuſal; the council ſent him two pieces of fine linnen cloth as a reward of his fidelity. For it ought to be obſerved, that the *Portugueſe* when they firſt began to take up arms againſt the government, did with letters and great promiſes, tempt the *Regidors* or commanders of the *Braſilians* to join with them, but they were ſo far from hearkening to them, that they ſent all the letters written upon that account, both by *Kamaron* and the reſt of the rebellious ringleaders, without opening to the council, thereby to avoid all ſuſpicion of keeping any correſpondence with the enemy, *Peter Potty* being a near kinſman of *Kamaron*; and ever ſince that time they have behaved themſelves ſo well upon all occaſions, and have done ſuch conſiderable miſchiefs to the *Portugueſe*, by plundering and killing them, wherever they could meet with them, that we had not the leaſt reaſon to miſtruſt the ſincerity of their intentions. 1645.

The Dutch *defeat the* Portugueſe.

The ſaid Mr. *Linge* did alſo ſend word *November* the 4th, that the enemy had attempted nothing as yet; and from *November* 14, that a party of 300 of our people being joined by ſome *Braſilians* of *Parayba*, had engaged 800 of the enemies troops, whom after a ſmart engagement they put to the rout, with the ſlaughter of a good number of their men. The *Braſilians* being encouraged by this ſucceſs, did over-run all the flat countrey, and meeting with a good number of *Portugueſe*, who were merry-making upon *St. Martin*'s eve in the ſugar mill of *Andrew Dias de Tigeireda*, they attackt them ſo furiouſly, that after a ſlender reſiſtance they put them all to the ſword, even the ſon of the ſaid *Tigeireda* himſelf, and a prieſt, without giving quarter to any body, except to a very beautiful maiden; who though almoſt diſtracted at the death of her father, and ſome of her other relations, that lay wallowing in their own blood, had ſuch a powerful influence upon the hearts of theſe *Barbarians*, that they brought her a priſoner ſafely to the fort of *Parayba*.

The Tapoyers *kill many* Portugueſe.

The Dutch *attack the* Portugueſe *near* Kunhao *without ſucceſs.*

The 21st of *November* towards the evening, 360 ſoldiers (20 of whom were taken from the *Receif*) ſet ſail in ſmall boats to the bay of *Traican*, and continued their march the ſame night, under the command of lieutenant *Berge*, juſtice *Hoek*, and the receiver-general of *Pernambuko*, towards *Kunhao*, in order to attack the enemy that were lately come into *Rio Grande* from *Parayba*; but theſe enemies having got ſome intel-

1645. intelligence of our designs, were retired from *Kunhao* to a retrenchment among the bogs, which being accessible but in one place, they so warmly saluted our forces that would have forced them from thence, with their shot, that they were obliged to retreat with the loss of some dead and wounded, to the castle of *Keulen*, partly to refresh their men, partly to prevent their penetrating deeper into the council.

The 4th of *December* it was resolved to send the ship the *Overyssel*, and the yacht called the *Sprew*, towards the *Bahia* a cruising, to get intelligence of their naval strength thereabouts, and to endeavour to take some prizes. The 5th of *December* the great council sent for all the commanders of the *Brasilians*, to inform them, that they had received considerable supplies of powder, ball, and all other sorts of ammunition, by the ship called the *Swan*, with letters from *Holland*, that they were equipping a considerable fleet for their relief; at which the *Brasilians* were extremely rejoyced; the *Portuguese* commanders having made it their business to persuade them, that no such thing was expected from *Holland*.

The Brasilian *commanders summoned.*

The same evening a *Brasilian* deserter declared, that all the *Dutch* were killed by the rebellious inhabitants, and their wives and children made slaves. The same thing was confirmed by a negro deserter, concerning captain *Bockholt*; who having taken service with the enemy, and being afterwards suspected by them, had caused him to be murdered, as they had done with all the rest of the *Dutch* in their service, who were slain in their way to the *Bahia*.

Advice that all the Dutch *were killed by the* Portuguese.

The 7th of *December* it was resolved in council, to erect four companies of fusiliers, the same being found by experience to be more serviceable at this juncture, for which purpose the companies of colonel *Garsman*, captain *Jurian Remberger*, captain *Nicholas Nicholson*, and captain *John Taylor*, were pitched upon before all the rest.

Four companies of fusiliers erected.

In the same month of *December*, a certain *Portuguese*, *Gasper Gonsalves*, was taken by the *Brasilians* in the island of *Itamarika*, sent on purpose to persuade the *Brasilians*, that the *Dutch* intended to deliver them up to the *Portuguese* for a certain sum of money, and they to retire with their effects into *Holland*, which caused no small commotion among the *Brasilians*, who began to give credit to the relation. And because *Gonsalves* had spread this rumour abroad some time before the arrival of *Caspar Honyhouse* (who the 28th of *August* was appointed commander in chief of the *Brasilians* of *Itamarika* instead of *Listry* taken prisoner by the enemy) he was hardly put to it how to remove this jealousy from among them. 1645.

Jacob Rabbi, pursuant to his letters of the 11th of *December*, was about the same time preparing to enter 80 leagues further into the countrey towards the *Tapoyers*, to sollicit their assistance: He at last came to *Oyepe*, son-in-law of king *Duwy*, who promised, in case those of *Siara* would send their troops to us, he would endeavour to raise as many of his vassals as he could; but king *Duwy* excused himself under pretence that many of his troops died by sickness in the *Sartan*.

The night before the 27th of *December*, the enemy had by means of a boat, fastned two puppets with fire-works to the ship called the *Swan*; but being discovered as soon as it took fire, was soon quencht without doing any damage to the vessel; which made the ships to be constantly upon their guard for the future.

The 30th of *December* two such puppets found by two soldiers in a small boat near the fort *Bruin*, were presented to the council. This boat, which questionless was sent on purpose to fasten these puppets to some ship or other, being discovered by the centinels, the men quitted the boat, leaving the said puppets behind them.

The Portuguese *endeavour to fire the* Dutch *ships.*

Mr. *de Linge*, by his letters dated the 30th of *December* from the fort *St. Margaret* in *Parayba*, advised, that a certain negro who had deserted the enemies quarter of *St. Andrew* had declared, that the enemy had built two large barks in order to transport 300 men in each, in order to attack *Peter Potty* commander of the *Brasilians* in his entrenchments. That *Kamaron* had been near three weeks in *Parayba*, the enemies troops consisting thereabouts in 16 companies; but that they had many sick among them for want of provisions, and that they had drawn all their forces out of *Rio Grande*.

The 6th of *January* 1646, *Peter Bas* one of the members of the great council, did by order from the said council, set sail with the two ships the *Lichthart* and the *Receif* and a bark called the *Blue-Boar*, towards the captainships of *Parayba* and *Rio Grande*. His instructions were, to consult with Mr. *Linge* commander in chief in *Parayba*, and the rest of the officers there, how to put the intrenchments and other works of the *Brasilians* into a posture of defence. From thence he was to go to *Rio Grande*, there to take an exact account both of the real estates and chattels of such *Portuguese*, as by reason of their being engaged with the rebels, were forfeited to the company; he was also to use his endeavours to have those goods which were upon that account concealed or embezzled, restored for the benefit of the said company. He was also

Mr. Bas's commission.

1645. ordered to act in all other respects, but especially in providing for the security of the captainship and the fort, as he found it most consistent with our present interest, and to exhort the inhabitants to remain stedfast in their duty, and not to neglect the cultivating of the grounds and breeding of cattle.

An account of the enemies designs.

The 12th of *January*, *Peter Dunkerke* arrived from *Parayba*, where he had been a cruising before the *Receif* in the ship *Hamel*; he brought a letter from Mr. *Linge*, dated in the fort *St. Margaret*, the 11th of *January*, who sent also one Mr. *Steinhuisen* to the council, he having deserted the enemy when they began to kill the *Dutch* in their service. This *Steenhuisen* brought advice to the council, that *Kamaron* with 500 well-appointed soldiers, was marched out of *Parayba* into *Rio Grande* to be master of the field there; and consequently to keep our garrisons from being supplied with cattle and farinha from thence. He further added, that the enemy were in want of meat, oil, and other necessaries; but that the inhabitants flattered themselves, that for want of provisions, we should shortly be obliged to surrender our forts into the hands of the *Portuguese*. This being likewise confirmed by Mr. *Linge*'s letter dated the 10th of *January*, a council was called against the 13th of *January*, *Dirk Hamel*, and Mr. *Bullestrate* being present, both members of the great council, besides the assessor *Walbeck*, as likewise lieutenant colonel *Garsman*, Mr. *Raetsfield*, Mr. *de Witt*, *Alrich*, *Volbergen*, and *Sams*, in order to deliberate concerning the present exigency, considering, that in case we should, by the enemies being masters of the field, be bereaved of the supplies of cattle and farinha of *Rio Grande*, at a juncture when *Itamarika* and *Parayba* are closely beset by their troops, it would be next to an impossibility to maintain our selves in the possession of the *Dutch Brasil*, till the arrival of the expected succours from *Hollland*. It was therefore taken into consideration, whether this captainship might be best secured by a powerful diversion, or by endeavouring to drive him from thence. But being sensible that the enemy were so powerful near the *Receif*, *Parayba*, and *Itamarika*, as not to be attack'd in any of these places, without exposing the whole *Dutch Brasil* to an imminent danger, it was resolved, that in order to attempt the relief of the captainship of *Rio Grande*, Mr. *Dortmund* should be ordered to send 60 soldiers under the command of captain *Welling*, and 100 *Brasilians*, in the barks sent him for that purpose, from *Itamarika* to *Rio Grande*: At the same time orders were dispacht to Mr. *Linge*, commander in the fort *St. Margaret* in *Parayba*, to send the same number of soldiers under lieutenant *Bresman*, and of *Brasilians* to *Rio Grande*, to join with the rest that were to rendezvous there. These forces consisting of 120 soldiers and 200 *Brasilians*, set sail the 19th of *January* for *Rio Grande*, and were thought sufficient to oppose the enemies designs on that side.

Consultations held hereupon.

Their resolution.

1645.

Mr. *Dortmont* and *William Lambartz*, by a letter dated the 15th of *January*, gave notice to the council, that they had sent a body of 60 soldiers and 100 *Brasilians* abroad, as far in the *Aldea* by *Oubus*, and from thence to the sugar-mill *Arraripe*, but did not meet with any enemies in that part of the countrey, tho' they had several guns discharged at them from among the woods; so that they return'd to *Itamarika* by the way of *Tapasima*.

Mr. *Linge* not long after sent advice by his letter dated the 22d of *January*, at the fort of *St. Margaret* in *Parayba* to the council, that *Peter Potty* with 150 *Brasilians* had attack'd the enemy 400 strong in the *Aldea* of *Magrebbe*, and put them to flight with the loss of 20 killed, and many wounded, whereas they lost but one *Brasilian*.

The Portugueſe defeated.

The 29th of *January* it was resolved in council, to bring the ships the *Elias*, *Orange-Tree*, *Deventer*, *Omlandia* and the *Swan*, into the road of the *Receif*, to be ready upon all occasions, in case the enemy should again appear at sea.

Mr. *Bas*, pursuant to his letter from the castle of *Keulen* in *Rio Grande*, dated the 23d of *January*, could not, by reason of a tempest, land his forces at *Kunhao*, in order to join them with those under captain *Rhineburgh*; but was forced to land his forces the 14th and 15th near *Peringi*. In the mean while *Kamaron* having found means to break in through the *Matta*, had surprised many of the inhabitants in their *Fazendas*, and kill'd them without distinction of age or sex: He had since posted himself with his forces, consisting of 400 soldiers, as many *Brasilians*, and 80 *Tapoyars*, under the command of *Antonio Jacomo Beserro*, at a house of *Henry Hamme* in *Mompabou*, to cut off the provisions from us. Our forces consisting of about 1000 soldiers, *Brasilians* and *Tapoyars*, march'd the 23d of *January* to a house of *John Lestan Navarre*, to attack the enemy, and to force them to quit the captainship of *Rio Grande*. Besides these *Jacob Rabbi* and the sons of king *Duwy*, were the 19th past, by the fort *Keulen*, at the head of 60 *Tapoyers*, and were daily follow'd by others, that came to our assistance. Mr. *Bas* follicited also some supplies of provisions, of which they stood in great want, there being above 1500 *Brasilians*

Mr. Bas gives an account of his proceedings.

1643. *Consultations held thereupon.*

filians, men, women and children, lodged under the caſtle. He deſired alſo ſome money, ammunition, linen and ſilks to preſent to the *Braſilians* and *Tapoyers*; all which, together with ſome pieces of red-cloth, was ſent him by the council.

According to this advice, it being much to be feared the enemy would ſcarce ſtand the brunt in *Rio Grande*, but retire into *Parayba*, it was taken into ſerious conſideration the 29th of *January*, whether it would be adviſeable, in caſe the enemy ſhould be forced by our troops, or voluntarily retreat into *Parayba*, to purſue them thither, and thereby endeavour the recovery likewiſe of that captainſhip: But conſidering that by reaſon of the weakneſs of our garriſons, we were not in a condition to ſend any further ſuccours from the *Receif*, *Itamarika* or *Parayba*, without running a manifeſt hazard to our troops there; whereas, on the contrary, the enemies did not want opportunity to relieve theirs from the adjacent places of *Parayba*, and that we lived in daily hopes of ſuccours from *Holland*, it was judged the beſt way, that the welfare of the whole *Dutch-Braſil* ought not to be put to the hazard by ſuch an enterprize as this.

Their reſult.

Accordingly orders were ſent to Mr. *Bas* and the reſt of the commanders of our troops there, to act with all imaginable caution, and rather than expoſe our men, in following the enemy into *Parayba*, to be contented with the recovery of the captainſhip of *Rio Grande*.

Colonel Garſman ſent to Rio Grande.

The 30th of *March*, colonel *Garſman* was by ſpecial order from the council ſent a ſecond time with ſome Troops to the captainſhip of *Rio Grande*, to inform himſelf, whether any troops of the enemy were poſted in that captainſhip, and in what number; his inſtructions were, that ſo ſoon as he had received intelligence of the enemy, he ſhould, with what forces he was able to bring together, endeavour to ſtop their progreſs. But if he found himſelf not ſtrong enough to oppoſe them, he ſhould ſend ſpeedy advice thereof to the council, that they might ſend him ſpeedy ſuccours, and that he was to take all imaginable care not to engage the enemy, before the arrival of the ſaid ſuccours. But if he found the enemy already ſo ſtrongly entrench'd as to be maſter of the countrey, without any hopes of forcing them from thence, the defence of the fort *Keulen* ſhould be his chief-eſt care, as likewiſe of the *Braſilians*, with their wives and children, and ſince, in caſe the ſaid fort of *Keulen* ſhould be in danger of being attack'd by the enemy, it would be of ill conſequence, to have theſe women and children encloſed within the fortifications, for fear of want of proviſions, he was ſtrictly ordered to tranſpo t them in time, to ſome place of ſecurity, ſuch as *Siara*, or the like, where they might be able to ſubſiſt, and be ſecure againſt any attempt from the enemy. He was ordered alſo in his return to the *Receif*, to take *en paſſant* (if it could be done without inconveniency) a view of the fortifications of *Itamarika* and *Parayba*, in order to give an account of their condition to the council.

1645.

But to return to Mr. *Bas*: According to his letters dated the 30th of *January* from the fort *Keulen*, captain *Rhinebergh* had with his body made ſix ſeveral attacks upon the enemy, who was retired from *Mompabou* and *Kunhao* into a bog, without being able to force their entrenchments; we loſt about 100 kill'd and wounded in this action, and retreated to the houſe of *John Leytan* with order to get ſome cattle, which was very ſcarce thereabouts, our forces feeding moſt upon fiſhes, which they caught by the help of two large nets; 28 of our wounded men were brought to the *Receif*, with advice that notwithſtanding this unſucceſsful attack on our ſide, the enemy were retreated into *Parayba*. Mr. *Bas* alſo ſollicited ſome freſh ſupplies of men and Ammunition, in order to purſue them into *Parayba*, but the reſolution upon this head was deferr'd 'till they ſhould hear further from Mr. *Bas*. The 7th of *February* it was reſolved by the council with the approbation of admiral *Lichthart* to equip the *Hollandia* and the *Swan* together with the yachts, the *Flight*, the *Hamel*, *Bulleſtrate* and *Lichthart* for cruiſing. By letters from Mr. *Linge*, dated the 11th of *February* at the fort *Margaret* in *Parayba*, the council was adviſed, how that, according to the depoſition of a negro deſerter, *Kamaron* was come with all his troops into the city of *Parayba*, with an intention to attack our forts on that ſide; an anſwer, with what was thought neceſſary for this preſent purpoſe, was immediately ſent back in a bark by the council. By another bark ſent by Mr. *Bas* from *Rio Grande*, they were advertiſed, that he lay ſtill encamped with his troops near the houſe of *John Leſtan*, where with much ado he could get proviſions for them, the enemy being ſtill poſted at *Momguappe*, and guarding all the avenues into the countrey; that he had ſent ſeveral ſpies abroad, to get intelligence concerning the preſent poſture of the enemy. The 17th of *February* the ſhip the *Swan* and the yacht call'd *Bulleſtrate* were ordered to go out a cruiſing; the 18th the yacht the *Flight*, and the 20th the ſhip *Hollandia* ſet ſail for the ſame purpoſe. The ſhip the *Overyſſel* was alſo

The Dutch *attack the enemy, without ſucceſs.*

Advice from Mr. Linge.

1645. also ordered to go out, to serve for a spie ship on the coast of *Parayba*.

The 21st of *February* the council received a letter from Mr. *de Linge*, dated the 18th, in the fort of *St. Margaret*, intimating that he had heard nothing since of the enemy. Yet that he wish'd the forces he had sent to *Rio grande* might be returned with all convenient speed, to make use of them for the defence of his forts, in case of an attack. The 24th of *February* a party under command of captain *Killion Taylor* and captain *Nicholas Nicholson*, were sent abroad towards the island of the *Barette* to get some prisoners, but they return'd the 20th to the *Receif*, having met with no body except with a man, at a considerable distance. Another party which had taken their way towards *Olinda* and *Bracco de St. Jago*, but with the same success, the enemy having only shewn himself at a distance, as they were returning to the fort *Bruin*. The 27th of *February* the enemy appeared with a strong body in the *Salinas*, but being saluted by some cannon-shot from the fort *Bruin*, retired without attempting any thing.

Parties sent abroad without succes.

In the mean while, according to Mr. *Linge*'s letter, from the 2d of *March*, three barks with soldiers were arrived in *Parayba* from *Rio Grande*, so that the rest, under the command of Mr. *Bas*, being 500 in number, might be hourly expected at the *Receif*. He further advised, that he had seen no enemy of late, but being informed that a considerable body lay encamp'd in a valley near the village of *Magarebbe*, he had ordered thither 120 soldiers, and 100 *Brasilians*, to beat up their Quarters, and to get some prisoners. In effect the 4th of *March*, he, with his troops consisting in 500 Men, arrived from *Rio Grande* at the *Receif*, and the 5th of *March* gave the council an account of his expedition.

News from Parayba.

The 9th of *March* in the night, the enemy appeared in three bodies near the fort *Prince William*, and gave us several volleys of small shot, but being answered with our cannon retired immediately. The same day a party of 50 men were sent abroad under lieutenant *Mos* to get intelligence; being met by two companies of the enemy, a sharp encounter ensued, our forces retiring without any considerable loss, under the fort *Wardenburgh*, and the enemy retreated at the discharge of some of our cannon. By letters from Mr. *Linge*, dated the 8th of *March* at fort *St. Margaret* in *Parayba*, the council received the unwelcome news that the enemy in *Rio Grande* had by a pretended flight drawn the 5th of *March* lieutenant *John de Vael* with 48 soldiers, who were too eager in the pursuit of them, into an ambuih, where they had kill'd 30 of them, tho', according to the report of some deserters that were present at the engagement, not without considerable loss also on their side; *Kamaron*, *Andrew Vidal* and some other *Portugueze* officers of note were also present. About the same time 15 *Brasilians* surprised five men, six women and eight children, in an entrenchment seven leagues above *Iguaracu*, called *Papeku*.

Several skirmishes.

1645.

In the mean while the *Tapoyers*, who according to their custom, come once a year, about midsummer, from among the mountains, some hundreds strong, into the captainship of *Rio Grande*, were, after they had carried away all the horses and mares they could light on, retired to the hills; a thing very fortunate for us, for without it our garrisons would not have been able to subsist there. Provisions growing every day scarcer in the *Receif*, it was agreed the 6th of *March* by the council, to send the *Brasilians* raised in *Rio Grande* with a company of fusileers to *Itamarika*, to ease our magazines of that burthen, whilst they might provide themselves with *farinha* roots in that island. Much about the same time the two majors *Bayert* and *Pistoor*, appear'd before the council, intimating, that being informed that the citizens began to murmur at their staying at home, pretending that they were sufficient to guard the forts; for which purpose, as it was reported admiral *Lichthart* had offered 300 men, they were come on purpose to offer their service, and were ready to take the field with those few forces they had left in the garrison; tho' they at the same time protested, that they were of the same opinion, which had been approved some days before, to wit, that this undertaking, by reason of their small number, would be full of danger, and yet not answer the end of bringing provisions into the *Receif*. Admiral *Lichthart* being thereupon ask'd whether he had made any such offer, he declared not to have spoken any thing like it, his ships being so ill mann'd, that he could spare no men for any other service.

Propositions about the taking of the field.

The night before the 13th of *March*, the enemy appear'd both on the other side of the river and the dike leading to the fort *Bruin*, discharging their musquets and blunderbusses at our centinels, but upon the first salute from the cannon of the fort retired. The same they did near the fort of *Affagados*. The same evening betwixt nine and ten a clock they made an attack upon the wooden fort, built betwixt the *Affagados* and the *Quinquangular-Fort*, for the defence of the plain, which they continued 'till one a clock, cutting down some palisadoes, and bringing great store of dry reeds, in order to set it on fire, but in vain, being

The Portugueze *attack a wooden fort near the* Receif.

1645. being forced to retreat with the loſs of ſome of their Men; on our ſide two were kill'd, and four or five wounded, among the laſt was lieutenant *Caſper Ferdinand van Grol*, who received two dangerous wounds. The next morning the broken paliſadoes were repaired, and another row ordered to be ſet beyond the firſt, and footangles to be laid betwixt both. The 17th of *March* the bark call'd the *Parayba* coming from *Siara*, brought advice, that the *Braſilians* were gone from *Siara* to *Komeſi*, having refuſed to return to *Rio Grande*, for fear they ſhould be call'd to a ſevere account there for the murther of ſeveral inhabitants, committed by them before.

By the ſame bark Mr. *Linge* ſent advice from the 14th of *March*, that the enemy had appeared of late in a conſiderable body near the northern fort, but was retired now, but whether to *Rio Grande* or *St. Andre*, he was not able to tell. They had ſpoil'd all the *farinha-root* fields in the *Aldeas Magarebbe*, and thereabouts; ſo that the *Braſilians* being for the future to be furniſhed with proviſions out of the magazines, he deſired a ſupply of wine and oil: Immediately advice hereof was ſent to *Dortmund* commander in chief of *Itamarika*, and ſome ammunition, beſides 1000 gilders in ready money. The ſame ſum was tranſmitted to Mr. *Linge* in *Parayba*, and a barrel with oatmeal, a pipe of wine, a hogſhead with oil, and another fill'd with dry peaſe, beſides good ſtore of ammunition. He was alſo ordered to ſend the *Braſilians* back to *Rio Grande* for defence of that captainſhip, and to get intelligence whether the enemy had directed his march thither, in order to oppoſe his deſigns.

In the mean while admiral *Lichthart* (purſuant to his letter of the 21ſt of *March* to the council) had embark'd ſome ſoldiers and *Braſilians* in *Itamarika*, and taking his courſe to the north-entrance of the river, was got up as far as to the iſle of *Tapeſco*, from whence they had brought back a great quantity of *farinha* roots, for the uſe of the *Braſilians* in *Itamarika*, and of the magazines there.

Good ſtore of farinha *roots brought to* Itamarika.

The 30th of *March* it was reſolved, with the approbation of admiral *Lichthart*, to ſend the following ſhips a cruiſing before the *Bahia*; the *Uliſſingen*, the *Ter Veer*, and the yachts, the *Greyhound*, the *Heemſtede*, *Sprew* and *Bulleſtrate*; and on the 6th of *April* the *Swan*, the *Zouteland*, the *Flight*, and the yacht the *Lichthart*, were ordered to go a cruiſing before the *Cape of St. Auſtin*, and ſet ſail the 10th of *April* accordingly.

Ships ſent out a cruiſing.

The 31ſt letters were brought to the council, dated the 25th of *March* in *Rio Grande*, intimating, that *Paulo de Kunha* and *Kamaron* were entred *Kunhao* with 800 men, among whom were 300 muſqueteers, to carry away the cattle from thence to *Parayba*. 1645.

But, according to colonel *Garſman*'s letters to the council, upon his arrival, which was the 4th of *April*, the enemy were already retired out of *Rio Grande*, without undertaking any thing againſt our people, who conſiſting only in 400 ſoldiers and 300 *Braſilians* lay encamp'd near the houſe of *John Leſtan*, yet they carried off ſome cattle. *News from colonel* Garſman.

About the ſame time they received letters from Mr. *Linge*, that the enemy had made ſeveral falſe alarms near the forts, without attempting any thing. And in effect in *June*, they did not appear any more thereabouts.

In the year 1646, the 5th of *April* in the night, *Jacob Rabbi* was at the inſtigation of lieutenant colonel *Garſman*, near *Potoſi*, about three leagues diſtant from the caſtle of the ſame name, villainouſly ſhot with two bullets, as he was going home from one *John Miller*'s houſe, where he had been entertained that evening in company with colonel *Garſman*. *Rabbi* had a conſiderable time before (as he had declared to his friends) ſuſpected the treachery of *Garſman*, and was for that reaſon juſt upon his departure out of *Rio Grande*, in order to ſhelter himſelf among the *Tapoyers*. The council reſented this villainy to the higheſt degree, ſince, conſidering that this *Jacob Rabbi* was in great eſteem among the *Tapoyers*, and his wife a *Braſilian*, it was to be feared, that this would exaſperate both the *Tapoyers* and *Braſilians* againſt us. So that *Garſman* returning the 19th of *March* to the *Receif*, after he had given an account of his expedition to the council, was by their particular order, the 24th of *March*, taken into cuſtody, and ſent on board the *Hollandia*, major *Bayert* being ordered in the mean time to ſupply his place. This *Jacob Rabbi* a native of *Germany*, had been employ'd by authority of the ſtates general, his highneſs the prince of *Orange*, and the company, to engage and keep the *Tapoyers* in the intereſt of our government; in which commiſſion he had acquitted himſelf ſo well, that he brought theſe *Tapoyers* ſeveral times, out of the mountains (their habitations) to our aſſiſtance. His dwelling-place was in the fort *Keulen* in *Rio Grande*, where he had married a *Braſilian* woman. *Gaſper Honyhouſe*, commander of the *Braſilians* in *Itamarika*, being ſlain in the laſt engagement in that iſland, Mr. *Vincent van Drillenbergh*, was, at their requeſt, conſtituted their commander by the council. 1646. Jacob Rabbi *treacherouſly killed.* Garſman *ſecured.*

1646. The 17th of *April*, some papers were delivered to the council, which had been dispersed by the enemy, to debauch our soldiery; in return of which, they sent abroad their summons, upbraiding such of their subjects as were in the enemy's service, with treachery, and exhorting them to return to their duty. It was also agreed to publish a copy of a letter delivered by the *Portuguese* ambassador at the *Hague* to the states general from the king his master; with the answer of the states to the said letter: For since the king of *Portugal* in this letter did disown the war, and the proceedings of *Antonio Telles da Silva*, and his sending of his troops into the *Dutch-Brasil*, they did not question but by this means to open the eyes of the *Portuguese* inhabitants, not to flatter themselves with vain hopes of assistance from *Portugal*; besides, that we were in hopes thereby to sow the seeds of mistrust betwixt them and the *Portuguese* commanders from the *Bahia*.

The 24th of *April*, two *Portuguese* companies commanded by captain *Lawrence Karnero* and *Peter Kavalkanti*, consisting of about 40 men each, marched from the *Vargea* and the city of *Olinda* to *Iguarassu*.

They were headed by *Vidal* and *Hoogstrate* in person, who having got intelligence that admiral *Lichthart* and *John Nicholson* were gone to *Itamarika*, to get some *farinha* roots. The 25th of *April*, as they were marching from *Iguarassu*, a certain *German* chirurgeon, named *Christopher Mars*, who was formerly taken prisoner by them, happening to stay somewhat behind, whilst he was pissing, was surprized by one of our parties near *Tapasino*. Upon examination by Mr. *Walbeck*, he declared, that not long ago there were nine companies of the enemies forces quarter'd in the *Baretta*, the city of *Olinda*, and in the mills of *Bierboom* and *Brito*; each company consisting of betwixt 40 or 50 men. That there were five companies more, much of the same strength, posted in the *Salinas*, and *Henry Dias* with 200 mulats and negroes in *Gaspar Cox*'s house, but they had then no forces in the *Vargea*.

One Mars *taken prisoner.*

His depositions.

That after *Nicholas Nicholson* was come over to us with his troops, *Martin Soares Moreno* had caused 260 *Dutch*, both soldiers and inhabitants, (among whom were six women and two children) to be killed by a company of the country militia, in the woods of *Tabatinga*, betwixt *Sibero* and *Deriba*, in their way to the *Bahia*, besides those killed by his order in other places, amounting in all to 300.

By this time there began to be great scarcity of meat in the *Receif*, notwithstanding which, the garrisons in the outworks, as well as the *Brasilians* in *Itamarika*, with their wives and children, were to be supplied from thence; and the *farinha* roots being either all taken up before by our own people, or else destroy'd by the enemy, in the island *Itamarika*: To supply this pressing necessity, it was resolved by the great council, to send a detachment of 400 men in barks to *St. Lawrence de Praja* or *Tujukapa*, to fetch *mandinka* or farinha roots from thence. This detachment was composed out of these following troops.

1646. *The* Dutch *go out for some* farinha *without success.*

Out of captain *Nicholas Nicholson*'s company 9 men.

From the *Quinquangular-fort* 25.

From the *Affagados* 25.

Out of the company of captain *William Lambartz* 50.

Volunteers from *Itamarika* 30.

Brasilians 150.

The 29th of *April* the council was, by letters from *Itamarika*, advertised, that our forces being sent abroad to fetch some *farinha*, had chased the enemy out of two or three entrenchments; but they retiring into another, surrounded with a deep ditch, they were there also with more courage than conduct attack'd by our troops, being forced to retire with the loss of 16 kill'd and 26 wounded, among whom was captain *William Lambartz*: The enemy had likewise not a few kill'd on their side. Mr. *Dortmund*, commander in chief of *Itamarika*, therefore desiring to be supplied with meal, his magazines being quite exhausted, the council sent thither the first of *May*, 20 barrels with meal, two with oatmeal, two with dry pease, besides a pipe of wine and brandy, and 1000 gilders in money, for the use of the *Brasilians*.

The 3d of *May* the council received advice by a letter dated the 2d of *May* from Mr. *Dortmund*, that the enemy had carried away ten Negroes, four belonging to the company, the rest to one Mr. *Seulin*, and four other men from *Itamarika*; and that the *Brasilians* there had been so far debauched by their intreagues, that they retired into a wood, and being twice summon'd to rejoin our troops, had refused so to do. That at last, Mr. *Appriſius*, (Minister of the *Brasilians*) having been sent to reduce them to their duty, either by persuasions or threats, his arguments were so prevailing, that they return'd quietly, alledging for their excuse, that they were forced to fly thither for want of subsistance. Hereupon *Dortmund* desired fresh supplies for his magazines, that a person of authority might be sent thither, and that another company might be put in place of that of captain *Vosterman*, his men being ready to revolt.

Mutiny of the Brasilians *appeased.*

1646. To remove all theſe obſtacles, it was reſolved immediately to diſpatch thither Mr. *Bulleſtrate*, a member of the great council, who was to agree with certain private perſons, to provide our garriſons with fiſh, and to act in every thing there, as he ſhould find it moſt expedient for the ſervice of the company.

Mr. Bulleſtrate *ſent to* Itamarika.

Accordingly Mr. *Bulleſtrate* ſet ſail the 4th of *May*, in the yacht the *Greyhound*, and arrived the ſame day in the afternoon in *Itamarika*, where having executed his commiſſion, he return'd the 10th of *May* to the *Receif*, and gave the following account to the council: That he had taken a view of the city of *Shoppe*, and the fort *Orange*, both which he had ordered to be ſtrengthned; as alſo, to fortify the old brick-houſe, formerly the *Stadthouſe*, with palliſadoes, againſt any ſudden attempt; that he having call'd before him all the commanders of the *Braſilians*, had repreſented to them that we were in daily expectation of a powerful ſuccour from *Holland*, exhorting them to remain ſtedfaſt in their duty, and to keep their ſoldiers under the beſt diſcipline they could; he had alſo preſented their commander with cloth for a ſuit of clothes, and the reſt with ſome wine and money, which they very thankfully accepted: He had *En Paſſant* taken a view of the plantations of *Conradt Pauli*, where he had found about 160 cocoa-trees cut down by the *Braſilians*, being forced by famine to feed upon the fruit; the like they had done in ſeveral other places; that he had endeavoured to treat with ſeveral private perſons for a certain quantity of fiſh to be delivered at the *Receif*, but could meet with none that would accept his offers; they alledging, that moſt of their negroes being either run away or taken by the enemy, they did catch no more fiſh but what they could readily ſell in the iſland, without the charge of ſalt and tranſportation; that he had likewiſe propoſed to the commander in chief of the *Braſilians*, to give them for the future money inſtead of meal; and that they were to be furniſhed with three nets to catch fiſh for their own uſe; that the commander promiſed to propoſe it to the reſt, and gave him ſome hopes that they would accept of the ſaid offer.

An account of his proceedings.

To ſupply the preſent want of proviſions, which began to be ſcarcer and ſcarcer every day in *Itamarika*, *Parayba*, *Rio Grande*, and the *Receif*, by reaſon that the expected ſupplies from *Holland* were not as yet arrived, and we were cloſely block'd up by land; it was thought fit to give all imaginable encouragement to the fiſhing trade, for which purpoſe the two members of the great council, Mr. *Hamel* and Mr. *Bas*, ordered the 7th of *May*, to buy up as much yarn as poſſible could be got to make fiſhing nets of, which afterwards ſtood us in good ſtead. 1646. *Fiſhery encouraged.*

A certain *Portugueſe*, who had committed manſlaughter in *Angola*, and was fled from thence to the *Receif*, having accuſed *John Vieira d Allegoas*, he was by order from the council taken into cuſtody. John Vieira *accuſed of treaſon.*

This *Portugueſe* declared, that the ſaid *Vieira* had delivered to him a certain piece of parchment, written in characters, and a box, wherein were ſeveral other papers, in order to carry them to the enemy, which parchment and box he produced in the preſence of the members of the council. *John Vieira* denying the matter, was put to the rack, but continued reſolute in his denial; till at laſt, the key of theſe characters being found among his papers, and a certain *Jew* having unciphered theſe letters, it appear'd, that he had given an account of the whole poſture of our affairs to the enemy, with directions how to make themſelves maſters of the *Receif*: ſo that finding himſelf diſcovered, he confeſt that he had written and delivered theſe cyphered papers to the *Portugueſe*, and was executed the 29th of *May*. *Is executed.*

The magazines being by this time almoſt exhauſted, there being ſcarce proviſions left for a few weeks, it was propoſed by the council to the majors, *Beyert* and *Piſtoor*, that conſidering it was not adviſeable to exaſperate the ſoldiery at this juncture, by retrenching their allowance of bread and other eatables, whether inſtead of a pound of meat, they might not be prevailed upon to take ſix-pence, by this means to preſerve that ſmall ſtore of fleſh they had left, which theſe two majors undertook to propoſe to the ſoldiers, not without hopes of ſucceeding in their project, and that nobody might be excepted from bearing his ſhare in the publick calamity, it was ordered that the loaves which uſed before to weigh a pound and half, ſhould be reduced to one pound weight, and that each citizen and others depending on the company, nay the members of the great council themſelves, ſhould have an allowance only of two loaves *per* week; the ſame was to be given to all ſeamen, captains, lieutenants and enſigns; but the reſt, from the ſerjeant to the common ſoldier, ſhould have three pounds of bread allow'd them *per* week. *Orders concerning the allowance of bread.*

Mr. *Linge* adviſed from the 1ſt of *May*, out of *Paraiba*, that the enemy had not attempted any thing againſt the forts, and that a party of *Braſilians* was gone abroad towards *Tapoa*, in hopes to take ſome priſoners. Much about the ſame time the council received advice, that colonel *Garſman*,

1646. *man*, without orders from the council, had endeavoured by ſome preſents, to draw the *Tapoyers* into *Rio Grande*, under pretence of keeping them at hand, to enter into a confederacy with the new members of the great council that were expected from *Holland*. The council being not a little ſurprized at this undertaking, ſince by the coming of the *Tapoyers* into that captainſhip, they ſhould be diſappointed of a conſiderable part of thoſe ſupplies they received from thence; they ſent word to *Rudolph Barro* to leave no ſtone unturned to draw the *Tapoyers* by fair means back to their habitations, but that if they would ſend ſome of their commanders to the *Receif*, all imaginable ſatisfaction ſhould be given them concerning the murther of *Jacob Rabbi*; and the more to engage *Barro* to do his utmoſt, a preſent of wine, brandy, and ſome toys, was ordered to be ſent him. For as the caſe then ſtood, it was abſolutely neceſſary for us to remain maſters of *Rio Grande*, till the arrival of the ſuccours from *Holland*; the vaſt numbers of *Braſilians* that were fled to *Itamarika*, having conſumed all ſorts of proviſions there to that degree, that that iſland could not only not ſend any ſupplies to the *Receif*, but moſt of the women and children of the *Braſilians* muſt be ſupplied out of the magazines there; ſo that *Rio Grande* was the only place left from whence they received a conſiderable quantity of *Farinha* and cattle, which in ſome meaſure abated the ſcarcity of proviſions in the *Receif*, and by the prudent conduct of the council, was the chief means that the place continued in tolerable good health till the arrival of the ſuccours, which without it, it would in all humane probability have been impoſſible to be done; and no queſtion but this captainſhip might for a conſiderable time after, have furniſhed the garriſons to the ſouth with neceſſaries, had it not been for the following accident.

Garſman ſummons the Tapoyers without orders.

The conſequence of Rio Grande to the Dutch.

The expected ſuccours from *Holland* being detained by the winter ſeaſon and contrary winds, the *Braſilians* of *Gojana*, who with their wives and children had ſheltred themſelves in *Itamarika*, were reduced to the greateſt extremity for want of food; for after they had conſumed all what the iſland could afford for their ſubſiſtance, and all the avenues by land being block'd up by the enemy, they had no other ſupplies but what they received from our magazines: Theſe being now exhauſted to ſuch a degree, that each citizen had but one pound of bread allowed him *per* week (which however at that rate would not hold out above fourteen days longer) the council was under an abſolute neceſſity to have it propoſed to the *Braſilians*, to retire with their wives and children (in all about 1200) to *Rio Grande*, where they might ſubſiſt ſome time upon what the country afforded. Accordingly they writ to Mr. *Dortmund* the 1ſt of *May*, and ſent Mr. *Walbeck* thither in perſon, to perſuade the *Braſilians* to ſend at leaſt 500 women and children, with a certain number of their men, to *Siara* and *Rio Grande*, there being at that time in all near 1500 *Braſilians*, men, women and children in that iſland, among whom were only 500 fit to bear arms, under the command of *Caſpar Honyhouſe*, who had each ſcarce a pound of bread allow'd them *per* week. 1646.

Conſultations about the ſcarcity of proviſions.

Proviſions, as I told you before, growing daily ſcarcer and ſcarcer, by reaſon the ſuccours from *Holland* were detained beyond all expectation, by contrary winds; a general council was call'd, where the three numbers of the great council Mr. *Hamel*, Mr. *Bulleſtrate* and Mr. *Bas*, being preſent, as likewiſe admiral *Lichthart*, and the two majors *Beyert* and *Piſtoor*, the following points were taken into debate.

Firſt of all, the ſending of the *Braſilians* from *Itamarika* to *Rio Grande*, being look'd upon as unavoidable, immediate orders were given to get the neceſſary tranſport veſſels ready for that purpoſe. It was alſo taken into conſideration, whether it were not feaſible to gather a ſufficient force out of the forts, who in conjunction with the *Braſilians*, might attack ſome place or other, from whence to provide ourſelves with *Farinha*; but to this it was objected by the majors *Beyert* and *Piſtoor*, that the garriſons of the forts could not be weakned by any detachment, without running a great hazard; beſides that it was a hard matter to pitch upon any place where there was any ſtore of *Farinha*, the enemy having either conſumed, ſpoiled or carried it away before; ſo that we muſt expoſe our men to an apparent danger, without a ſure proſpect of intereſt; for, ſuppoſing we ſhould be ſucceſsful, the quantity that might be got, would not be ſufficient to maintain our garriſons for any conſiderable time. It was however agreed to take an exact account of all the garriſons, to ſee whether upon an occaſion ſomething might be undertaken for the ſervice of the ſtate. Accordingly theſe two majors, *Beyert* and *Piſtoor*, having preſented a liſt of theſe forces the next day to the council, it was concluded that no troops could be ſpared out of the forts, except it were out of the *Affagados*, but they were but few in number. At the ſame time it was reſolved to ſend captain *Niger* with his company of *Braſilians* to *Rio Grande*, and the *Omlandia* and *Greyhound* yacht were ordered forthwith to

1646. sail to *Itamarika*, to transport the *Braſilians* to *Rio Grande*.

Further debates about the attacking of the enemy.

The 30th of *May* the council, the admiral, and two majors, entred into a ſecond debate, whether it were poſſible to attack the enemy, and in what place: Againſt which it was alledged, that their chiefeſt force was at preſent in the *Vergea*; but ſuppoſing it was not, no *Farinha* was to be got there, becauſe they were ſupply'd with it themſelves from far diſtant places. That the *Farinha* fields neareſt to the *Receif* were about *St. Lawrence*, at leaſt five leagues from thence; that the neareſt *Farinha* fields to the ſouth were about *St. Antonio* and *Moribeka*, where by reaſon of the ſtrength of the enemy, and the great diſtance from us, there was no probability of encompaſſing our deſign; and that the *Farinha* fields to the north were likewiſe at ſuch a diſtance from the ſea-ſide, as could not in any likelyhood anſwer our expectation. It was farther taken into conſideration, whether ſome forces might not be ſpared in *Itamarika*, but it was carried in the negative, becauſe ſince the *Braſilians* were ready to depart for *Rio Grande*, it was not adviſeable to expoſe the reſt of our troops there to a hazard. After ſerious deliberation, what forces poſſibly could be raiſed out of the forts, (their places being in the mean while to be ſupplied by the inhabitants) it was found that the *Affagados* could furniſh about 70 or 80 men, the quinquangular fort, and *Maurice*'s town the ſame number, and that of *St. Antonio Vaez* about 50. But, conſidering that the city militia of the *Receif* conſiſted only of ſix companies of 70, or at the moſt 80 men each, and that they were obliged to be upon the guard every night there (the place being without a garriſon) if a conſiderable number of them ſhould be employed in the forts, this muſt needs expoſe the capital place, which the enemy chiefly aimed at, to an imminent danger. The ſeamen being not above 250 in all, could likewiſe not be employed in that ſervice, unleſs we could leave our ſhips quite unmann'd and uſeleſs. So that after many arguments on both ſides, it was agreed to chuſe the ſecureſt way, and according to the orders of the council of XIX in *Holland*, to expect the ſuccours from thence with patience, and in the mean while to provide for the ſecurity of our forts.

The ſame day the council received letters from Mr. *Walbeck*, that ſome of the *Braſilians* of *Itamarika* had deſerted, a rumour being ſpread among them, that we intended to leave them to the mercy of the *Portugueſe*, which had put all the reſt into a great conſternation, but that Mr. *Dortmund* had convinced them to the contrary. 1646.

Mr. *Walbeck* and *Dortmund* had in the mean while repreſented to the *Braſilians*, that they being many in number, and conſequently very ill provided for at this juncture, whether it were not beſt for them to go for ſome time to *Rio Grande*. They were at firſt averſe to his propoſals, for fear of being deſerted by us, nevertheleſs the urgent neceſſity of providing for their ſuſtenance, and to ſhew their compliance with the governments orders, were ſo reconciled with them, as to reſolve to go to *Rio Grande*, provided they might be furniſhed with convenient tranſport-ſhips, proviſions, and ſome ammunition for their defence, and fifty men of regular troops. Mr. *Dortmund* having again ſollicited for proviſions, ſome were ſent (ſufficient for fourteen days) immediately, with ſome gunpowder, bullets, and other ammunition.

The Braſilians *reſolve to leave* Itamarika.

Accordingly above 1200 *Braſilians*, moſt women and children, whoſe huſbands and fathers had been ſlain in our ſervice, embark'd aboard the *Omlandia* and ſome yachts, a pound of ſalt-cod fiſh being allow'd to each for the whole voyage without bread. At their arrival in *Rio Grande* they were ſo emaciated by famine, that they appear'd more like dead carcaſſes than living bodies, and laid hold of every thing they could meet with to ſatisfy their greedy ſtomachs, ſo that in a little time they conſumed all the *Farinha* that was left there.

Mr. *Linge*, by his letters from the 25th of *June* ſent advice to the council, that there appear'd no enemy at that time in *Parayba*, but that ten *Tapoyers*, vaſſals of king *John Duwy*, being come into *Rio Grande*, had ſhewn themſelves extremely diſſatisfied at the murther of *Jacob Rabbi*, whereupon it was reſolved to reconcile that king to our intereſt by the following preſents:

Preſents ſent to king John Duwy.

200 gilders in ready money.
1000 Ells of *Oſnabrugh* linnen cloth.
100 gallons of *Spaniſh* wine.
Two caſks of brandy.
40 gallons of oil, and a barrel with powdered beef.

The Braſilians *depart from the forts near the* Receif.

The *Braſilians* in garriſon in the fort, the *Bruin*, the *Quinquangnlar*, and ſome other forts, being diſſatisfied at their being detained there for eight months laſt paſt, petitioned the council the 12th of *June*, to be ſent back into *Rio Grande*.

The opinion of the two majors being aſk'd thereupon, they adviſed, that conſidering they did no extraordinary ſervice there they might well be ſpared; ſo that it was reſolved the 14th of *June* in council, to pay them their arrears, and to ſend them back

1646. back to *Parayba* and *Rio Grande*, to inhabit their villages as before.

In the *Quinquangular* fort, the company of *Immanuel Barros* was order'd to keep guard inſtead of the *Braſilians*, who were commanded to depart the 20th of *June*. The 11th, 12th, 13th and 14th of *June*, the enemy ſhot in the night-time very fiercely againſt the fort *de Affagados*, a redoubt call'd *Kirk*, and the houſe *Boaviſta*.

The 15th of *June* it was propoſed to the council by admiral *Lichthart*, and the two majors, *Beyert* and *Piſtoor*, to beat up the enemies quarters in the houſe of *Immanuel Kavalkanti*, and in the *Baretta*, with the following troops.

The company of captain *Killian Taylor*, 40 men.

The company of captain *Nicholas Nicholſon*, of 70 men, which were to be joined by captain *de Niger* with 30 men out of the fort *Frederick*, with lieutenant *Mos* from the fort *Erneſtus* with 10 men, and lieutenant *Katnar* from the fort *Prince William* with 20 men.

In all 200 men.

A project to beat up the enemies quarters.

About 100 volunteers were ſuppoſed to be raiſed from among the citizens, under the colonel *Walbeck*, and *Immanuel Baros* with his Negroes, conſiſting in 50 men, theſe joined with the other 200, would make up a body of 350 men, to be commanded in chief by major *Piſtoor*, and to be conducted by ſea by admiral *Lichthart* to their landing place, *viz.* the regular troops to the ſouth of the *Baretta*, and the Negroes upon the iſland on the north-ſide, from whence they might break thro' the marſhes to the *Affagados*, and ſo further to the houſe croſs the river, where they were to make a falſe attack, whilſt the troops landed at the *Baretta*, aſſaulted them from before; the admiral, with his tranſport veſſels, to lay ready all this while to receive them, and to ſecure their retreat upon all occaſions. This propoſition being approved of by the council, partly to animate our ſoldiers, partly to get at leaſt ſome proviſions for the ſick, it was reſolved to be put in execution the next day, but the wind proving contrary, and afterwards the tides being unſeaſonable for the convenient landing of our men, this project was laid aſide, eſpecially when inſtead of 100 volunteers, ſcarce 25 offered themſelves for this ſervice, notwithſtanding the council gave them all imaginable encouragement, by promiſing them to receive the ſame treatment as the other ſervants of the company had, in caſe they ſhould be wounded or come to ſome other misfortune.

Is laid aſide.

In the mean while, the enemy having been informed by ſome of our deſerters, that by the departure of the *Braſilians* from *Itamarika*, the garriſons there were much weakned, they thought fit to lay hold of this opportunity, to land ſuch a force there, as ſhould be beyond our power to drive from thence. The 15th of *June*, with the break of day they ſurprized our ſpy ſhip there, call'd the *Sprew*, with ſeveral barks and boats at the entrance call'd *Paſſoos*, (*Markers*) they got three priſoners, the reſt eſcaping with the loſs of two of their comrades kill'd. 1646.

The ſhip before *Tapaſima* was ſet on fire by our own people, leaving the galliot, that lay hard by, to the enemy, after they had taken out all her men, who went aboard the yacht call'd the *Golden Doe*, lying before the north entrance. They landed with about 2000 men in chalops and other tranſport veſſels, and *Andrew Vidal* and *John Ferdinand Vieira*, writ the ſame night the following letter to Mr. *Dortmund*, commander in chief of *Itamarika*, which they ſent by a boy they had taken priſoner in the *Sprew*.

The Portugueſe land on Itamarika.

Their letter to Mr. Dortmund.

Moſt honourable and moſt brave,

YOU are doubtleſs not unacquainted with the reſolution of the inhabitants of this country to retrieve their former liberty; to effect which they neither want power nor any other means; but their chief aim being to encompaſs their deſign without effuſion of blood, we thought fit to let you know that we are ready to attack you in this iſland with all our forces, unleſs you will prevent it by a treaty. For being ſenſible that you are paſs'd all hopes of relief, we were willing to adviſe you to treat with us, according to the cuſtom of war, uſed in ſuch caſes; that, in caſe hereafter things ſhould fall out contrary to your expectation by the fury of the conquering ſword, you may not lay the fault thereof at our doors; for which reaſon it is, that we offer to you and the reſt of the commanders there, all their arrears due to them from the company. Whereupon we expect your anſwer to-morrow.

From our head quarter, *June* 15, 1646.

Andrew Vidal de Negreiros.
John Ferdinand Vieira.

The 17th of *June* the council received advice from Mr. *Dortmund* of their landing, deſiring prompt ſuccours, without which he would not be in a condition to maintain the iſland againſt them. It was therefore taken into debate, whether it were poſſible for us to bring together ſuch a force, as without much hazard might be able to force the enemy from thence, but 'twas carried in the negative.

For

1646. *Consultations about the relief of* Itamaraka.

For it was alledged, that without manifeſt danger, not above 200 ſoldiers could be taken out of the forts of the *Receif*, which number was not ſufficient to attack the enemy, who had already entrench'd himſelf there, with hopes of ſucceſs: And, conſidering that theſe forces muſt be tranſported thither by ſea, we wanted ſhips (there being at that time not above two barks at the *Receif*) both to convoy them thither, and to cut off the communication with the continent to the enemy. Beſides, that at leaſt fourteen days proviſions were required for this expedition, in caſe the enemy ſhould ſtand his ground, which at this juncture was not to be done, unleſs we would leave the magazines of the *Receif* quite empty; there being then no poſſibility of attempting its relief, the next thing under conſideration was, whether the entrenchments on the hill might be defended or not? Againſt the maintaining of it was objected; that without freſh ſupplies of proviſions this fort could not hold out a week, eſpecially ſince the enemy, by cutting off the pipes of the ſpring that furniſhed them with freſh water, would ſoon put them under a neceſſity of coming to ſurrender; when it was evident, that they might poſt themſelves betwixt the fort of *Orange* and this hill, and conſequently prevent their receiving any ſupplies from thence.

Whether the fort on the hill was to be defended.

Beſides that the hill being of a conſiderable compaſs, was the more difficult to be mention'd by our forces, the fort itſelf being irregular, and but ſlightly fortified on that ſide, eſpecially where the old church-wall, making up part of the courtain, would not be proof againſt the enemies cannon, and conſequently expoſe the whole fort, with the garriſon, to the mercy of the enemy: So that it being beyond all diſpute in the enemies power to cut off all communication with the fort *Orange*, it was unanimouſly reſolved and ordered, to leave the ſaid entrenchments, and to retire with the garriſon, and what proviſions and ammunition they had, into the fort *Orange*, before their retreat was ſtopt by the enemies troops; it being paſt all doubt, that in caſe they could maintain themſelves in that fort, they could at all times, if they were maſters of the field, recover the hill and the whole iſland.

Some gunners turn'd traitors.

The council were the more forward in coming to this reſolution, becauſe they had received certain information, that the enemy, who knew the importance of the fort *Orange*, had gain'd ſome of the gunners and volunteers of the fort by preſents, who had engaged to aſſign them a place where it was eaſieſt to be attack'd, whereabouts they were to charge the cannon with gunpowder only, to facilitate their attack: Two of the gunners were hang'd the 23d of *June* for this treachery, the reſt made their eſcape to the enemy. For the better preſervation therefore of this fort, our people left the entrenchments upon the hill the 21ſt of *June*, where the enemy poſted a ſtrong body of their troops immediately after. The council likewiſe ordered the yacht the *Heemſtede*, to cruiſe in conjunction with the *Golden Doe*, before the north entrance of the iſland, to keep open free communication for us with our garriſon, and to prevent the enemy from receiving any ſuccours that way; and at the ſame time ſome proviſions were ſent thither for the uſe of the garriſon.

1646. *Were hanged.*

But whilſt things were thus tranſacting with various fortune, tho' for the moſt part to our diſadvantage, and the ſo long expected ſuccours from *Holland* not arriving, the want of neceſſaries encreaſed more and more every day in the *Receif*, to ſuch a degree, that whatever was found fit for ſuſtenance, either in the publick magazines, or with private perſons, was apply'd to the common uſe; which however amounting to no more than one pound of bread a week for each ſingle perſon, many died for hunger; their legs beginning to ſwell firſt, which was the forerunner of certain death: Cats and dogs, of which we had great quantities, were look'd upon as dainties at that time; and you might ſee the Negroes digging the half-rotten bones of dead horſes out of the ground, and to gnaw them with incredible eagerneſs; neither was the want of freſh water leſs inſupportable, by reaſon of the heat of the climate, and the conſtant uſe of ſalt meats, all ſprings that were dug being brackiſh. The poor ſlaves, who had the leaſt ſhare of what was left, look'd ſo gaſhly and wild with their eyes and jaws ſunk, as appear'd terrible to the moſt undaunted of men. At laſt (notwithſtanding all the care taken by the council) things came to that paſs, that the allowance of one pound of bread *per* week was fain to be taken away from the inhabitants, and allotted the ſoldiers; who, by the enticements of the *Portugueſe* beginning to deſert apace, had two pound of bread allow'd them, as long as there was any left; but when all was ſpent, and no remedy was to be found againſt this lingring evil, it was propoſed by the council, and unanimouſly reſolved, rather to die bravely than to ſtarve, and to fight their way through the enemy. The ſoldiers were to lead the van, the women, children, ſick, and other unable people to keep in the middle, and the members of the great council, with the inhabitants to defend the rear: The *Jews* were

Great famine in the Receif.

1646. were above all the reſt in a deſperate condition, and therefore reſolved rather to die with ſword in hand than be burnt alive, which is their doom in *Portugal*.

But when we were juſt reduced to the laſt gaſp, all horſes, cats, dogs, and rats being conſumed, and a few quarterns of *Farinha* ſold at the rate of betwixt 80 or 90 gilders *per* quartern, which however could not ſuffice for above two days longer, on the 22[d] of *June*, (a day never to be forgotten) we ſaw two veſſels with *Dutch* colours making all the ſail they could towards the *Receif:* They had no ſooner caſt there anchors, and giving us the ſignal by the diſcharge of three guns each, that they came from *Holland*; but you might have read in all our faces the ſudden joy we conceived at this relief in our laſt extremity: *The* Receif *releived.* There was no body that could ſtand upon his legs for want of bread, but did crawl to the harbour, where you might hear the cries of the people weeping for joy at a great diſtance. Theſe two ſhips, call'd the *Falcon* and *Elizabeth*, were freighted for the chamber of *Amſterdam*, and had left the *Texel* the 26[th] of *April*; they brought us the welcome news, that we might hourly expect the whole convoy. The captain of the *Elizabeth* told me himſelf, that having a very fair wind one day, he ſaid to his crew, *I am ſure they are in great extremity at the* Receif, *God ſend us fair wind and weather to relieve them in time*, which happened thus accordingly. The captains were each preſented with a golden medal, with the following inſcription; *The Falcon and Elizabeth did relieve the* Relief.

Mr. Bas *ſent to* Itamarika. The 23[d] of *June*, Mr. *Bas*, a member of the council was ſent to *Itamarika*, to aſſiſt in the defence of the fort; by his letters of the 28[th] he adviſed, that the enemy continued ſtill in his poſt on the hill, and that he had ſent abroad ſome ſpies to get intelligence. The 7[th] of *July*, the ſaid Mr. *Bas* return'd to the *Receif* with the companies commanded by captain *Blewcock* and *Cunrad Held*, leaving the two companies of *Reinard Sikkema* and *Dignus Byſterman* there in garriſon. The enemy had ſome days before, after having blown up the fort on the hill, and ſet fire to their camp, left the iſland, carrying along with them all the cannon, and among them two braſs ones. For when they ſaw that we were reinforced with ſeveral ſhips from *Holland*, they did not think fit to abide there till we ſhould ſtop their paſſage back by our veſſels; neither were they inſenſible, that without being maſters of the fort *Orange*, they could not promiſe themſelves the poſſeſſion of the iſland, the ſouth entrance being commanded by the ſaid fort, and the north paſſage by our yachts. 1646.

The Portugueſe *leave* Itamarika.

The 29[th] of *June*, the council received advice from our head quarter at the houſe of *John Leſtan*, in *Rio Grande*, that two ſons of king *John Duwy*, with 23 *Tapoyers*, were ſent thither by their father, to aſſure our people of his good inclination and ſervice; but they refuſed to come into the fort *Keulen*, before they had ſpoken with *Rudolph Baro*, who had been ſent for upon that account. About this time ſeveral merchants ſet out ſome privateers, but as this could not be done without great charge, and there were but few ſhips at ſea of the *Portugueſe*, this turn'd to no great account, and conſequently continued not long. A very odd accident happened to me much at the ſame time: For ſome of the labourers, who were employed to unload a veſſel belonging to the company, were got ſo drunk, that they had kill'd a man, and hurt ſeveral others, by letting a pipe of wine fall upon them: I went thither to prevent any further diſorder, but was no ſooner entred the ſhip, when on a ſudden I found the ſilver galoons upon my coat turn black, and myſelf bereaved of my ſight, which however I recovered by degrees in a few days after, the cauſe of which I attributed to the ſtrong exhalations of the wine, that had been cloſed up for a conſiderable time before. Much about the ſame time a difference aroſe betwixt the officers of the army and the city militia, about the chief command of the head guard in the *Receif*, which the city officers laid claim to.

An accident happens to the author.

But to return to our ſo long expected ſuccours.

The reiterated letters from the council of the *Dutch Braſil* to the ſtates general, and the directors of our company, wherein they preſented their dangerous condition to them, had had ſuch an influence upon the firſt, that they adviſed the directors of the company, to ſend us a reinforcement of 5 or 6000 men, and a good fleet; for which purpoſe they ſent them 25 companies of their regular troops, and gave leave for the raiſing as many more, as in all mounted to 4000 land ſoldiers, beſides ſeamen and volunteers.

A fleet equipt in Holland *for the relief of* Braſil. This fleet conſiſting of a good number of brave ſhips, was ready to ſet ſail in *November* 1645, but by reaſon of a ſudden and hard froſt, were detained in the road of *Ulyſſingen*, till *February* 1646. One Mr. *Bankert*, admiral of *Zealand*, had the chief command of this fleet, and at the ſame time the following five gentlemen, who were appointed members of the great council of the *Dutch Braſil*, and were to relieve the old ones, were ſent to their ſtations there;

to

1646. to wit *Walter Schonenburgh* preſident, *Michael Van Goch* Penſionary of *Vlyſſingen*, *Simon Van Beaumont* fiſcal of the city of *Dort*, *Henry Hacks*, and Mr. *Trowens*, two great merchants of *Amſterdam*, and Mr. *Heremite* a lawyer of *Dort*, their ſecretary. One *Sigiſmund Shoppe*, formerly under count *Maurice*, and who had commanded the land forces of *Dutch Braſil*, was now ſent in the quality of commander in chief of theſe forces; he was a moſt experienced captain, and who always kept a ſtrict diſcipline among the ſoldiers.

Never did any fleet ſent from *Holland* to *Braſil* meet with ſo many unfortunate accidents as this, during the ſix months they were at ſea. For within two days after they had left the *Dutch* coaſt, they were forced to caſt anchor in the *Downs* oppoſite to *Newport*, where they loſt two of their ſhips by ſtreſs of weather. After a ſtay of three days, the winds being ſomewhat allayed, the ſquadron under Mr. *Van Goch* ſet ſail again, but was two days after again forced into *St. Helens* in the iſle of *Wight*: Three days before their arrival a rich *Dutch* ſhip, valued at two millions of livres, then lately come from *Braſil*, was loſt among the rocks, ſo that of 300 perſons, no more than 30 were ſaved. Here they were detained by foul weather and contrary winds ſeven weeks, when another *Dutch* ſhip coming from *Braſil*, chanced to caſt anchor near them, and told them, that their countreymen in the *Receif* were drove to the laſt extremity; nay, that perhaps the place was ſurrendered by this time, they having no more than two months proviſions left at the time of his departure. Hereupon it was reſolved to continue their voyage with the whole fleet, notwithſtanding the winds were againſt them; but on the coaſt near *Portland* were again overtaken by a violent ſtorm, in which they ſaw a *Scotch* ſhip with 200 perſons in her periſh. The fleet under Mr. *Van Goch* came with much ado to an anchor behind a rock, where they ſtaid till the fierceneſs of the tempeſt being allayed, they proſecuted their voyage. But ſcarce were they got through the channel, juſt as they were entring the *Spaniſh* ſea, but a difference aroſe betwixt Mr. *Van Goch* and Mr. *Beaumont* about the flag, the *Zelanders* (in a council of war held for that purpoſe) allotting the precedency to Mr. *Van Goch*; whereas the *Hollanders* pretended the ſame to belong to Mr. *Beaumont*; but Mr. *Van Goch* perſiſting notwithſtanding to claim the precedency, Mr. *Beaumont* gave a ſignal to the *Holland* ſhips to follow him, and ſo bid adieu to Mr. *Van Goch*, who after a troubleſome and tedious voyage, in which he loſt many of his men by ſickneſs, and ſpecially by the ſcurvy, he arrived the 14th of *July* with his ſhip in the road of the *Receif*, being the firſt of the five new lords of the council that arrived in the *Dutch Braſil*. The 31st of *July* 1646, the ſhip the *Bluecock*, and the *Vlyſſingen* of *Zealand*, came likewiſe to an anchor there; in the firſt came Mr. *Trowens*, and in the laſt colonel *Sigiſmund Shoppe*.

Some ſhips arrive from Holland, *at the* Receif.

1646.

The 6th of *Auguſt* the ſaid colonel gave an account to the members of the council, how purſuant to their orders, he was advanced with 450 men as far as the fort of *Olinda*, to diſcover the countenance of the enemy, and to take ſome priſoners; that they had made a ſhew of attacking us, but after ſome ſlight ſkirmiſhes retired, and with a body of their troops marched thro' *Bracer de St. Jago*, to cut off our retreat; but our people forced them to retreat again with the loſs of ſeveral of their men killed and wounded; whereas we had but one wounded during the whole action, beſides colonel *Shoppe* himſelf, who received a ſlight hurt on his leg.

The 8th of *Auguſt* the *Arms of Dort*, and in it Mr. *Beaumont*, arrived before the *Receif*, he was conducted the next day with all imaginable reſpect to the *Receif*.

The 12th late in the evening Mr. *Walter Schonenbergh*, preſident of the new council, and *Henry Hacks*, arrived in a bark from the north in the *Receif*, where they were received by all the citizens and ſoldiers in arms; they had been forced to leave their ſhip called the *Middleburgh*, before the north entrance of *Itamarika*, as likewiſe the *Dolphin*, loaden with proviſions on account of the chamber of *Zealand*, both which were ſeen the 30th of *July* off of *Olinda*, but being forced back by contrary winds, the laſt of theſe two did not come to an anchor near the *Receif* till the 13th of *Auguſt*.

More ſhips arrive from Holland.

The ſame day a certain negro deſerter coming to the *Receif*, brought information that the enemy intended to erect a fort on the paſs of the *Baretta*, to prevent our excurſions into the open countrey; whereupon it was reſolved, with unanimous conſent of Mr. *Schonenbergh* and the whole council, as likewiſe with the approbation of colonel *Shoppe* and admiral *Lichthart*, to prevent the enemies deſign by fortifying and maintaining the ſaid paſs, as being the only inlett we had left for the recovery of the whole *Dutch Braſil*, all the other paſſes being ſo ſtrongly fortified by the enemy, as not to be attempted without great hazard.

Accordingly the ſaid colonel *Shoppe* marched the ſame night with all the forces he could bring together, ordering the boats laden with materials for the intended fortifications, to follow him the next tide.

Colonel Shoppe *marches to the* Baretta.

1646. The colonel at his arrival having ſoon chaſed the enemy from thence, and poſſeſſed himſelf of the houſe of the *Baretta*, ſent for immediate orders the council, to know whether he ſhould continue in that poſt all night; who, with the approbation of the new preſident *Schonenbergh*, diſpatcht Mr. *Bulleſtrate* thither immediately to take a view of it, and to make his report accordingly; he returned the 14th againſt night, and reported to the council, that he had found the work there very far advanced already, and the fortifications in ſuch a ſtate, that they would ſoon be in a poſture of defence againſt any attempts from the enemy.

The 13th of *Auguſt Rudolph Baro*, who, as we told you, was ſent with ſome preſents to *John Duwy* king of the *Tapoyers*, brought a letter from the ſaid king dated the firſt of *July*, to the council, wherein he thanked them for their preſents, and deſired they would be pleaſed to ſend him ſome iron weapons, he being then in war with the *Pojuku*'s, and that after he had humbled them, he would march with all his forces againſt the *Portugueſe*.

By this time the preſident *Walter Schonenbergh*, and the other members of the new great council being arrived at the *Receif*, and having delivered their commiſſions from their high and mightineſſes the ſtates-general, his highneſs the prince of *Orange*, and the council of XIX. conſtituting them joint governours of the *Dutch Braſil*, the late members of the ſaid council, to wit, *Henry Hamel*, *Bulleſtrate*, and *Peter Bas*, ordered all the colleges and other perſons of note to be called together, to be preſent at the inſtallment of the future lords of the council.

Accordingly all the members of the court of juſtice, and of the finances, next the magiſtrates and commiſſaries of *Maurice's town*, then the miniſters and church council, together with the ſea and land officers, the heads of the *Jews*, and laſt of all the factors and book-keepers of the company, being aſſembled, Mr. *Walbeck* told them in the name of the council, that Mr. *Henry Hamel*, Mr. *Bulleſtrate*, and *Peter Bas*, had called them together, to lay down in their preſence the reins of the government, and to ſurrender the ſame to Mr. *Schonenburgh* and the reſt of the lords appointed by their high and mightineſſes, by his highneſs the prince of *Orange*, and the council of XIX. for the ſupreme management of the government of the *Dutch Braſil*; returning them their hearty thanks for the ſervices each in his reſpective ſtation had done to the government, and for their conſtant fidelity during theſe inteſtine commotions, exhorting them to perſevere in the ſame obedience to the new council; whereupon the new preſident and other members, having received the congratulations, firſt of the old council, and then of the other colleges, they from thence forward tranſacted every thing by their own authority, tho' they in all affairs of moment took the advice of the ſaid members of the old council, during their ſtay in *Braſil*; for which purpoſe they deſired them the 20th of *Auguſt*, to appear every day at eight a-clock at their aſſembly, and to aſſiſt them with their counſel for the better management of the affairs of the company. The 19th of *Auguſt* Mr. *Trowens* died late at night. 1646.

The members of the old council ſurrender the government.

The 3d of *September* was appointed for a general muſter of all the forces in garriſon in the forts near the *Receif*. Mr. *Heck* and commiſſary *Zweers*, were ordered to take a review of thoſe in the fort *Erneſtus*, *Wardenburgh* and *Boaviſta*. Mr. *Beaumont* and *Moucheron* in the fort of *Anthony Vaez* and *Maurice's Town*, Mr. *Van Goch*, *Hamel*, and *Alrich* at the *Receif*, and of thoſe belonging to the artillery. Mr, *Raetsfield* and *Crowvanger* at the *Baretta* and adjacent quarters. Mr. *Volbergin* and commiſſary *Stricht* in the forts *William* and *Frederick Henry*. Mr. *Bulleſtrate* and *de Witt* in the fort *Bruin* and the land and ſea fort. *A general review.*

The 4th of *September*, a pardon being agreed upon by joint conſent of the old and new council, the ſame was the 6th day ſent by a drummer to the enemy, with a letter to the *Portugueſe* commanders from the *Bahia*, deſiring them to withdraw their forces.

The 10th of *September* being appointed for a review of the militia of the *Receif* and *Maurice's Town*, the ſame was found to conſiſt of 700 men; they received the thanks of the old council for their faithful ſervices during the preſent inteſtine war, and then returned their thanks to them for their prudent management of the government.

The 13th of *September* the letters written by the *Portugueſe* colonel the 11th of *September*, in anſwer to ours of the 6th, were read in the great council, filled with untruths and fictions of their own invention. They pretended that they were prevented by the inhabitants from retiring to the *Bahia*, beſides that they wanted tranſport veſſels, their ſhips being detained in the bay of *Tamandare*, and that they muſt expect the king's orders for that purpoſe.

They took alſo a great deal of pains to magnify their ſtrength. The 12th and 13th of *September* ſeveral letters were diſperſed abroad by the *Portugueſe*, directed to juſtice *Daems*, to *Matthew Bek*, *Balthaſar de Fonſeca*, *Duarte Sarayva*, *Caſpar Francis da Co-*

ſta,

1646. *ſta*, being all merchants, and written by *John Fernand Vieira*; in which they again exaggerated their own number, and ſpoke very deſpiſably of ours, threatening, that in caſe they ſhould be forced to quit the countrey, they would deſtroy all with fire and ſword, as they had already done in ſome parts of *Parayba*. The contents of theſe letters were as follows.

A letter from Vieira *to ſome merchants in the* Dutch-Braſil.

EXperience has without queſtion convinced you ſufficiently of the reaſons that moved us to undertake this war, and the ſucceſs we have met with is an ample teſtimony that God was pleaſed to inflict this puniſhment upon our enemies, for the many outrages committed againſt the inhabitants of this countrey. This is however in a great meaſure to be attributed to the general conſent of the ſaid inhabitants, who having now forced themſelves from the tyrannical yoke of their oppreſſors, ought to expect from me, who, tho' unworthy, am appointed the chief manager of this war, to be back'd in ſo brave a reſolution. I would not have you be ignorant of our ſtrength, which, in compariſon of yours, exceeds all that can be ſaid upon that head; I will only tell you that as by our quitting the captainſhips of Parayba *and* Goyana, we are conſiderably encreaſed in number, ſo it is moſt evident from thence, that the inhabitants choſe rather to loſe their poſſeſſions, than to endure any longer the indignities that were put upon them, which was the true cauſe of their inſurrection, and not (as it is given out among you) becauſe they were unable to ſatisfy their creditors; becauſe they left more than what would have paid their debts. But if it ſhould happen ſo, that the ſaid inhabitants ſhould not be able to maintain themſelves by force of arms, they are reſolved to lay all the other captainſhips deſolate in the ſame manner.

Having therefore well weighed the reaſons which ſeem to promiſe us a good iſſue of this war, I thought myſelf obliged as a friend, to adviſe you that that party is back'd by reaſon and the unanimous reſolution of many thouſands; for, I can aſſure you, we are at leaſt 14000 ſtrong beſides the negroes and Tapoyers, diſperſed in ſeveral places from Rio Grande as far as Rio St. Franciſco. Kamaron commands 600 muſqueteers, Henry Dias 800 negroes, 200 Minos and 700 Tapoyers; and thoſe of the Sertan are at our devotion, whenever we are pleaſed to call for them; but above all the reſt we have God on our ſide. We are not ignorant, that before the arrival of Mr. Sigiſmund Shoppe your whole force conſiſted not in above 600 men, and that the ſuccours come along with him do not amount to above 1200 more; moſt of which 1645. are boys, and the reſt either dead or ſick. You ſee I am well acquainted with your ſtrength, having kill'd and taken priſoners about 2600 of your beſt ſoldiers, and 500 Braſilians, beſides the wounded that were carried to the Receif; when our troops had no other arms than pointed ſticks and clubs. Theſe are bleſſings from heaven, for if we were able to perform theſe things without powder and ball, what may not be expected from our forces, now they are ſtrengthened with good troops, and provided with ſufficient arms and ammunition? All which I confirm to you upon my word, to be nothing but the real truth, and had it not been in reſpect of thoſe colonels ſent from the Bahia, and of his majeſty of Portugal, I had by this time been maſter of the Receif, or ſome of the forts, or at leaſt I might have done much greater miſchief: But if matters are not brought to a happy concluſion, I am reſolved to act like a deſperate man, and not to leave any ſugar-mills, cattle or negroes in the countrey, but will rather turn all to ruin and deſtruction, before we will be compelled to ſubmit again to your obedience.

As theſe preſents may ſerve as a warning to you, ſo, I hope you, and the reſt of the merchants will not delay to enter with us into ſuch articles of agreement, as may be moſt conducing to the preſervation of your Poſſeſſions; for I would have you call to mind that there are many ingenios (mills) reduced at preſent to ſuch a ſtate, as not to be likely to be in a condition to be uſed theſe ten years next to come. The Vargea is in no better condition than Parayba and Goyana, and the cattle (without which the mills cannot ſubſiſt) deſtroy'd in moſt places.

Colonel Sigiſmund Shoppe, I ſuppoſe, pretends to keep the field againſt us, as he did in the laſt war, but he will find himſelf egregiouſly miſtaken, becauſe the inhabitants will not be of his ſide, for if I ſhould hear of one that was, I would cauſe him to be hanged immediately. You alledge that we are vaſſals of the company, but when was ever any conquered nation treated thus as we were, worſe than the vileſt ſlaves, of which you are ſenſible as well as we; ſo that being forced to break our chains, we don't owe you any further obedience. If we had not been in hopes of this opportunity, we would long before have implored the aſſiſtance of the king of Spain or France; and if thoſe had fail'd us, to have had recourſe to the Turks and Moors. I deſire you not to throw away this letter, becauſe experience will convince you of the truth of it; and that we ſhall purſue the ſame methods here, as we have done in other places; wherefore I would have you not give credit to any body, except to thoſe that come in perſon from thoſe places; I having told them nothing but the bare truth, which

you

1646. *you will find in effect thus: In the profecution of this war, I hope you will conſider, what is moſt for your intereſt, in which I am ready to ſerve you; for tho' your governors don't direct their letters to me, 'tis I that have the chief management of this war, and under my command the power of the colonels came from the* Bahia, *extending no further, than over thoſe troops they have brought along with them.* A Reyal de bon Jeſus September 11 1646.

On the 10th *of this Month, the before-mentioned colonels having ſent an anſwer to a letter directed to them from your council, by one of our captains; ſeveral enſnaring queſtions were ask'd him concerning the preſent war, which he perhaps not anſwering according to their expectation, they replied more like drunken cowards than ſoldiers; if they will be pleaſed to come out and tell me theſe things, I will try whether their ſwords are as nimble as their tongues are, and teach them what reſpect is due to the meſſengers of thoſe perſons who have the ſupreme command here. This I write to you at preſent, but ſhall not fail in due time to make my words good by the ſword, of which your people feel the daily effects as often as they dare to come out of their forts. Pray be not deceived, for* Braſil *is not allotted to you; not queſtioning but that God will bleſs our arms, and if we happen to die, we ſhall loſe our lives in the defence of our holy religion and liberty; and all thoſe that have refuſed to accept of our offers, will pay for it with the loſs of their lives, poſſeſſions and debts.*

A Reyal, Sept. 12, 1646.

Signed,

John Fernand Vieira.

The 14th of *September* a man of war, call'd the *Ter Veer*, equipped by the chamber of *Zealand*, (aboard of which was colonel *Hinderſon*) arrived before the *Receif*, after a voyage of 14 weeks. The 24th of *September* the enemy cauſed ſome pamphlets to be diſperſed, promiſing in very haughty terms a general pardon, and a compoſition of their debts, in caſe we would leave the iſland. The 27th of *September* colonel *Shoppe* returned with ſome troops from *Goyana*, by the way of *Itamarika*; I had not met with any enemy, but had found all the ſugar-mills burnt in the firſt place, but the ſugar-reed and farinha fields in a pretty good condition; we received afterwards further information, that the ſugar-mills of *Goyana*, were not quite burnt down. The 27th of *October* a conference was held betwixt the old council and Mr. *Van Goch*, unto whom they imparted their advice concerning ſeveral matters relating to the ſtate of the *Dutch-Braſil*, and eſpecially to the planting of the *mandioka* or *farinha* roots, and the killing of cattle, which they adviſed to be done with great circumſpection, *Braſil* being not able to ſubſiſt without a conſiderable number of oxen, which were continually employed in carrying of ſugar-reeds, wood and other neceſſaries to the mills. 1646.

Colonel Shoppe *returns from* Goyana.

A conference betwixt the old council and Mr. Goch.

For the planting of *farinha* roots they propoſed *Itamarika*, *Rio Grande* and *Parayba*, which countries were thought ſufficient to ſupply their preſent occaſions; provided it were done before the ſeaſon was elapſed.

In the mean while colonel *Shoppe* having made ſeveral, but for the moſt part, unſucceſsful attempts upon the enemy; our forces were thereby ſo diminiſhed, that we were not in condition to made head againſt the *Portugueſe* near the *Receif*; which made our council take a reſolution to endeavour the recovery of *Rio St. Franciſco*, the execution of which being committed to the management of colonel *Hinderſon*, proved more fortunate for us, he meeting with little reſiſtance thereabouts.

The Dutch *attempt the recovery of* Rio St. Franciſco.

Accordingly the 24th of *October* the following ſhips; count *Eano* admiral, *Loanda* vice-admiral, the *Arms of Dort* rear-admiral, the *Bluecock*, the *Watchful-Dog*, the *Greyhound*, *Eagle*, the *Star*, *Heemſtede* and the *Flight*, with eight barks, ſet ſail under the command of admiral *Lichthart*, and colonel *Hinderſon* to the ſouth. The 17th of *November* the council received advice, that our troops under colonel *Hinderſon* were ſafely landed at *Koraſippa*, and marching from thence to *Rio St. Franciſco* and the fort *St. Maurice* had met with no oppoſition from the enemy, who had begun to raiſe the ſaid fort. That they had been ſeconded by the ſmall veſſels, which had followed them up the river, which our forces had paſſed, and were marched to *Seregippe del Rey*, having left ſome behind to repair the fort; and that four *Portugueſe* had requeſted their pardon, which was promiſed them. Whilſt our forces were employed thereabouts, I was ordered thither to take care of the neceſſary proviſions (of which there was great plenty) for our troops; having accordingly cauſed my cargo to be embarked aboard a ſhip call'd the *Brownfiſh*, *Francis Frantz* maſter.

Mr. Nieuhoff *ordered hither.*

I ſet ſail the 24th of *November*. We were carried with a brisk gale as far as the mountains call'd by our people the *Saddle-hills* from their ſhape, the coaſt all thereabouts being white ſand downs. About half an hour after ſun-ſet we ſaw our ſelves off of the Bay of *Tamandare*, and from thence continued our courſe with a fair wind, which in two days after brought us happily to the entrance of that great river, which

1646. is ſo broad at the beginning that a ſix-pounder can ſcarce reach croſs it; it falls with a very ſoft current into the ſea, its waters being low in the winter, but encreaſe in the ſummer, perhaps by reaſon of the ſnows that are melted by the heat of the ſun. About 50 leagues from its mouth is a great cataract or water-fall, ſurrounded by a great many iſlands; the ſea at its entrance meeting in tempeſtuous weather with the current, are ſo boiſtrous, that they ſtrike terror into the ſtouteſt mariners, and carry away great pieces of the continent along with them. We entered the ſaid river, but were forced to caſt anchor immediately after ſun-ſet, for want of an eaſt wind to carry us higher up, which commonly begins to blow thereabouts at three in the morning. The countrey appeared very pleaſant on both ſides, and we ſaw abundance of wild beaſts near the river-ſide, and ſeveral huts made of ſtraw. We were detained near 24 hours upon a ſand-bank, which after we had paſſed, we came at laſt to the village called *Penedos*, ſituate upon a high hill; here we landed with our boats, and found a few houſes which were rebuilt by our people, the reſt being burnt by the enemy before their flight. In the fort was formerly (in the time of the *Portugueſe*) a church, which we turn'd into a magazine; it was ſurrounded with a goodly wall, the river paſſing by it on the north-ſide, where the hill is very ſteep.

Admiral Lichthart *dies.*

The 30th of *November* admiral *Lichthart* was ſeized with a ſudden and violent illneſs, occaſion'd by his drinking too much cold water, after he had over-heated himſelf before; he was carried into a boat with three ſoldiers under the command of an officer, lower down the river, but ſoon after loſt his ſenſes, and in my preſence expired. The next day his corps being put in a coffin was carried aboard the *Golden-Star*, being conducted by the chief officers there preſent, and four companies of ſoldiers to the river-ſide, who gave three ſalvo's with their muſquets, as did the cannon from the fort and ſhips, in order to his interment at the *Receif*.

Mr. Nieuhoff *in danger of being drowned.*

Towards evening as I was going aboard our ſhip the boat overturned by the ſwiftneſs of the current, and had I not been a good ſwimmer, I had infallibly been drowned; the maſter threw out a great cable over-board, by the help of which, and God's mercy I got ſafely into the ſhip. The ſoldiers in the mean while ſcower'd the countrey, and brought 700 oxen, (of which there was great plenty) and 300 calves into our quarters, having been at paſture in one of the adjacent Iſlands of the river, under the guard of ſome ſoldiers; they were not extraordinary fat, but tolerable good meat.

The ſoldiers huts were for the moſt part planted on the north-ſide of the hill, which being compoſed of branches and leaves of trees took fire accidentally the 3d of *December*, with ſuch fury, that in a quarter of an hour the whole quarter was in a flame, notwithſtanding that the alarum was given immediately, by the beating of drums and the ſounding of trumpets; ſome ſoldiers that were then ſwimming in the river, loſt all their cloaths by this accident. It was well it happened by day; for if it had been in the night it would have put us under a great conſternation, it being generally reported, that it had been done by treachery. 1646. *A fire in the ſoldiers quarters.*

There was at that time a plentiful crop of tobacco upon the circumjacent fields, but was not quite fit for reaping, which muſt be done at a certain ſeaſon, before the low grounds overflow'd. The colonel deſired me to provide thoſe who had loſt all, with new cloaths, and to deduct it out of their pay; but I told him, that I being only a factor, could not do it without ſpecial order from the council, ſome having but little pay due to them. The 25th of *December* we received intelligence that the enemy began to appear in a conſiderable body, whereupon the companies of captain *Couſin*, *Schut*, *Gyſeling*, *la Montayne*, and of a *Braſilian* captain, call'd *Tomee*, were ſent in queſt of them, with orders to ſet their ſtables on fire, and bring the cattle to our quarters. The next following *Monday* word was brought us, that our troops were ſo narrowly encloſed by the enemy, that it was feared ſcarce one of them would eſcape with life. Whilſt we were in a great conſternation, not knowing what reſolution to take, a *Braſilian* brought us the unwelcome news, that our whole body was routed and diſperſed, and captain *Schut*, *Couſin* and *La Montayne*, kill'd upon the ſpot. He had ſcarce finiſh'd his doleful relation before a *German* ſoldier, who had eſcaped the fight, by his bleeding wounds and his words gave us a confirmation of what had been told us before, with this addition, that captain *Gyſeling*'s lieutenant, *La Montayne*'s enſign, and one *Kilmet*, belonging to captain *Schut*, had fought their way through the enemy, with about 30 ſoldiers, and would ſoon be here. This miſhap was chiefly attributed to the fool-hardineſs of our troops, who contrary to colonel *Hinderſon*'s command, having at once diſcharged all their muſquets againſt the enemy, fell in pell-mell, without any regular order, with ſword in hand upon the enemy, which the enemy perceiving, retreated back and drew them into an ambuſh. Towards night we ſaw ſeveral ſoldiers miſerably wounded with darts come to our quarters, ſome who had

1646. thrown away their arms, were forced to caſt lots for their lives, the misfortune of which fell upon a *Dutchman* and a *Braſilian*, who being tied to a ſtake to be ſhot to death, were however pardon'd by the colonel. Captain *Gyſeling*'s lieutenant, who came without his arms to the fort, was ſent immediately to the *Receif*, where his ſword was broke over his head, and he declared incapable of ſerving the company for the future, notwithſtanding he had done them faithful ſervice for ſeven years laſt paſt.

The Dutch *defeated in* Rio St. Franciſco.

By this time I was ſent for to the *Receif*, ſo that after having taken my leave of the colonel and Mr. *Dames*, I embarked on board the *Bat* the 16th of *December*, and we were the ſame evening with a fair wind and ſtream carried to the mouth of the river. It being a fine moon-light night we catch'd abundance of *Zaggers* as we call them, a fiſh of a very good taſte, and continued our courſe with a briſk gale: Not far from the rivers mouth we met with four of our ſhips, who told us they were to fetch proviſions, but in caſe they could not, were to return forthwith to the *Receif*. The 18th we advanced but little, the ſhips being not out of ſight of us, near the rivers mouth, but did catch more fiſh than we were able to eat. The 20th we were likewiſe becalmed, and we perceived the moon to be half eclipſed for the ſpace of two hours. The next following day we ſailed ſo near to *St. Antonio*, that we could ſee them walking along the ſea-ſhore. Towards night we diſcovered *Porto Calvo*, about 30 leagues from *Rio St. Franciſco*. We were often becalmed, but catched abundance of *King's-fiſh* and *Codds*, and ſaw fires in many places along the coaſt. The 24th of *December* we came ſo near to the cape of *St. Auſtin* that we diſcovered five ſhips and ſeven row-barges in the harbour; we might have reached ſome of thoſe that went aſhore with our ſhot, had it not been for the ſand-bank which hindred our nearer approach. About noon we came before the *Receif*, but it was ſo foggy that we could ſcarce diſcover the water fort, nevertheleſs we ventured in, and I got aſhore immediately, with an intention to give an account of the ſtate of affairs in *Rio St. Franciſco* to Mr. *Schonenburgh*, being conducted thither by colonel *Shoppe*, who happened to meet me immediately after my landing.

Mr. Nieuhoff's *return to the* Receif.

The 27th of *October* the enemy had laid two ambuſhes in the way to the fort *Prince William*, beyond the redoubt *Kiik*. They did not ſtir till towards noon, when perceiving a company of our ſoldiers marching along the dike, they fired ſo briſkly upon them, that they killed 11, wounded 12, and took three priſoners; yet not without the loſs of ſome on their ſide.

The enemy lay an ambuſh.

1646. In the mean while the *Tapoyers* being much exaſperated at the murder of the beforementioned *Jacob Rabbi* their commander, had left our party; the council did what they could to appeaſe them, impriſoned and baniſhed *Garſman* the author of it, and confiſcated his eſtate, notwithſtanding which, the *Tapoyers* could not be prevailed upon to join with us as before.

The Tapoyers *leave our party.*

Debate concerning an enterpriſe againſt the enemy.

The 18th of *November* Mr. *Van Goch* entred into a conference with the members of the old council, whether it might not be feaſible to embark what forces we were able to ſpare on board our great ſhips, and to attempt to make a powerful diverſion to the enemy by attacking them in ſome place or other. But thoſe of the old council having repreſented to him the danger of this enterprize if it ſhould miſcarry, whilſt they were blockt up in the *Receif*, the further debate thereof was deferred till the next day. It was then propoſed, upon ſecond thoughts, that in caſe we could bring all our forces together, ſomething of moment might be undertaken without manifeſt hazard, whereby to oblige the enemy to withdraw his forces from the *Receif*; but Mr. *Van Goch* apprehending no ſmall danger in caſe we miſcarried, they came to no reſolution for that time.

Another about refuſing of quarter.

It being found by experience that all our promiſes of pardon had proved ineffectual, it was propoſed by Mr. *Van Goch* the firſt of *December*, whether it were not moſt expedient to give no quarter for the future; unto which it was anſwered, that very ſeldom quarter had been given by us, and few priſoners were taken, and that the enemy had likewiſe killed moſt of our people that were fallen into their hands, but they judged it not convenient to refuſe quarter to all without diſtinction, which would induce ſuch of the inhabitants as had remained quiet hitherto, to betake themſelves likewiſe to their arms.

The 23d of *November* we laid an ambuſh for the enemy near the fort of *Affagados*, who being by ſome few ſent out for that purpoſe, engaged in a ſkirmiſh, and purſuing our men with great eagerneſs under the cannon of the fort, were ſet upon by thoſe lying in ambuſh, who killed and wounded many of them.

The 12th of *December* the corps of the late admiral *Lichthart* was interr'd, one company of the city militia, and two of ſoldiers appearing in arms upon that occaſion, gave him three ſalvoes with their muſquets.

News from Rio St. Franciſco.

The 30th of *December* the *Eagle* yacht brought letters to the council, dated in *Rio St. Franciſco* the 4th of *December*, intimating, that in an iſland a little above the fort

1646. fort, one colonel *Rebellia* was arrived with 200 men from the *Bahia*; and that they expected another reinforcement; as well from thence as from the *Vargea*; that our people being sent higher up the river, had attackt some of the enemies troops; but they made their escape to the other side, leaving their arms and clothes behind them.

1647. The 2d of *January* 1647, colonel *Shoppe* who had been with 300 fusileers in *Goiana*, returned to the *Receif*, giving an account that he had taken a view of all the rivers thereabouts, but met with noenemy.

Shoppe returns from Goiana.

The 5th of *January* the council received an account of the beforementioned action in *Rio St. Francisco*, *viz.* Five companies of our forces being sent to *Orambou*, to beat up the enemies quarters; they met with a body of 100 men, whom they attackt and put to flight; but soon after our forces were attackt by a much stronger body, who put them to the rout, with the loss of 150 men; of our officers one captain was killed, and five taken prisoners, *viz.* captain *Samuel Lambart*, *La Montagne*, *Gerrit Schut*, *Kilian Taylor*, *Daniel Koin*, and three lieutenants, *Joost Koyman*, *Anthony Baliart*, *Jeronymus Hellemen*, and one ensign.

The 8th of *January* Mr. *Van Goch*, in the name of the new council, advised with those of the old, that it being resolved among them to send for a considerable number of their forces out of *Parayba*, in order to gather a body of troops for some important design, they desired to be informed concerning the present condition of the said captainship; and whether the city of *Parayba* and *St. Andrew* might be defended by a small garrison; whereupon those of the old council replied, that the town of *Fredericia* had no fresh water but what they must fetch at a miles distance, and consequently might be cut off by the enemy; the same thing might be done at the passage leading to the river-side; besides, that there was no fortifications belonging to the place but the monastery, which was of no great consequence, and the *Guarte Domaiges* church, which had been fortified by the enemy in this war. As to *St. Andrew* it was no more than a sugar-mill about four hours distant from the city of *Parayba*, situate upon the bank of the river; that the communication of this place with the fort of *St. Margaret* might easily be cut off by the enemy, as being likewise about four leagues from thence, but it might be relieved from the water-side, and yet not without great difficulty. Mr. *Van Goch* told them he would make his report thereof to the council.

Consultations concerning the state of Parayba.

The 12th of *January* the council received advice, that the enemy were with a strong body of troops entred *Parayba*, and advancing very near to the sugar-mill of *St. Andrews*, had in the night time surprised some *Dutch* and *Brasilians*, to the number of 50 men, women and children, of which they had killed some, and ript up the womens bellies. 1647.

The 13th of *January* some pamphlets were again dispersed by the enemy, containing in substance, that since the inhabitants of the *Receif* were now beyond all hopes of further relief, it would be their surest way to come to an accommodation; for they resolved to venture all before they would lay aside their design; but if all failed they would destroy the whole countrey, and so leave it: They exhorted them not to be deceived by the insinuations of those who belonged to the company, and called them rebels; they being no more to be stiled so than the *Dutch* themselves, who had asserted their liberty against *Spain*.

The 17th of *January* four negroes belonging to one *Isaac de Rassier*, who had been taken prisoners some days before in *Parayba*, came over to us into the *Receif*, and brought advice, that the enemy, after having tarried but a little time in that captainship, where they had killed five *Dutch* men and some *Brasilians*, were retired from thence.

Advice from Parayba.

The 22d of *January* early in the morning, the enemy began to batter the wooden fort near the *Baretta*, from a battery on the bank of the south side of the river which he continued the whole day, but desisted at night; the garrison having been reinforced about noon with five companies of soldiers, and some provisions; because Mr. *Hamel*, one of the members of the old council, did represent to Mr. *Van Goch*, that tho' the fort itself was so inconsiderable, as scarce to be worth the trouble of defending it by a good garrison, yet at this juncture, when the enemy had made his first attempt upon it, it would not be advisable to desert it, for fear of giving encouragement to the enemy to attack the other forts; but that on the contrary, as long as they did meet with a brave resistance here, they would not be so forward to attempt others; especially since we had the conveniency of relieving them with boats at high-water, with low-tide by land by the way of the sandridge; and that we might annoy the enemy with the cannon from our yachts in his trenches, as we had done that day. About the same time a map was ordered to be made, shewing the true situation of the *Receif*, with the turnings and windings of the adjacent rivers and marshes, as far as the *Baretta*, for the better instruction of the council.

The wooden fort battered.

The 24th of *January* in the morning, news was brought that the enemy had raised the siege

Raise the siege.

1647. siege of the fort of the *Baretta* the night before, and carried off all their cannon, being ſenſible that as long as they could be annoyed from the ſea-ſide, and we be able to reinforce them daily with freſh troops, they could promiſe themſelves but ſlender ſucceſs: But beſides that our people were to ſtruggle againſt the enemy and famine, they were frequently troubled with deſertions, many of our ſoldiers, nay even to the ſergeants and other officers, who begun to deſpair of our eaſe, running over to the enemy, even at that time when the beforementioned ſhips the *Faulcon* and *Elizabeth* were in ſight of the *Receif*.

Now the members of the old council began to prepare in good earneſt for their return to *Holland*, they had already in *December* 1646, ſollicited Mr. *Schonenburgh* preſident of the new council, to order ſome ſhips to be got ready to tranſport them thither, and the *Vlyſſingen* had been appointed for that purpoſe; but the ſame being not as yet returned from cruſing, they applied themſelves the 25th of *January* 1647, to Mr. *Van Goch*, and told him, that whereas according to their commiſſion, one of them ſhould return after the expiration of three years, they had continued in *Braſil* theſe ſix years, Mr. *Kodde* having indeed been ordered to return about that time, but his place not being ſupplied by another, he died before his departure: That they had for theſe three years laſt paſt, ſollicited their return, and had two years ago received promiſes of being relieved by others; which had not been performed till within theſe few months, to the great prejudice of themſelves and their families: Mr. *Van Goch* promiſed them to take effectual care to have the ſhips got ready, and to ſend for the ſhip the *Vlyſſingen*, in order to their return home. At the time of the acceſſion of the new council to the government, and the departure of *Henry Hamel*, *Adrian Bulleſtrate*, and *Peter Bas*, late members of the great council, the following forts remained ſtill in the poſſeſſion of our *Weſt-India* company.

The members of the old council ſollicit their return.

A catalogue of the forts in the hands of the Dutch.

The fort *Keulen* at the mouth of *Rio Grande*, provided with 28 braſs and one iron cannon.

The redoubt of *St. Antonio*, on the north-ſide of the river of *Parayba*, with ſix iron pieces of cannon.

The fort *Reſtangues* in an iſland of the ſame name within the river *Parayba*, with four braſs and five iron pieces of cannon.

The fort *Margaret* on the ſouth ſide of the river *Parayba*, with 14 braſs and 24 iron pieces of cannon.

The fort *Orange* in the iſle of *Itamarika*, with 6 braſs and 7 iron pieces of cannon.

Noſſa Senhora de Conceptiano, an old battery upon the hill of *Itamarika*, with two braſs and eight iron pieces of cannon. 1647.

The redoubt called *Madame de Bruin*, three iron pieces of cannon.

The fort *Wardenburgh*, alias the *Triangular Fort*, betwixt the *Bruin* and the *Receif*; the firſt provided with four braſs and five iron pieces of cannon; the laſt with 14 braſs guns.

The *Land Fort*, alias *St. John*'s, with 11 iron guns.

The *Water Fort*, at the mouth of the river of the *Receif*, with ſeven braſs guns.

The fort *Erneſtus*, with 5 braſs and 3 iron pieces of cannon, and the battery with five braſs and two iron pieces of cannon.

The *Receif*.

Maurice's Town upon the iſland of *Anthony Vaez*.

The fort *Frederick Henry*, alias the *Quinquangular Fort*.

The redoubt of ſtone near this fort.

The redoubt *Kiik*, betwixt the fort *Frederick Henry* and the fort *Prince William*.

The fort *Prince William* upon the river *Affagados*.

The forts then in poſſeſſion of the *Portugueſe*, and taken by them from the *Dutch*, are theſe;

Forts in the hands of the Portugueſe.

Seregippo del Rey, *Rio St. Franciſco*, and *Porto Calvo*, being reduced by famine, were raſed by the *Portugueſe*, being ſenſible that our people could not maintain themſelves there without erecting of new ones, which was not to be done without a vaſt charge. Near the point of *Tamandare*, the place where the *Portugueſe* from the *Bahia* firſt of all landed their men; and where afterwards their fleet was beaten by ours, the enemy laid the foundation of a fort for the ſecurity of that harbour, where ſhips of great burden might ſafely ride at anchor.

A conference about Rio. St. Franciſco.

The 23d of *January*, Mr. *Beaumont* was ſent by the new council to confer with the late members concerning the preſent condition of *Rio St. Franciſco*, and what was beſt to be done there: They anſwered him as before, that the fort as it was now, could do but little ſervice, and that therefore it would be worth our conſideration, whether the propoſals made by them in writing, might not now be put in practice. The ſaid Mr. *Beaumont* further propoſed, whether it would not be requiſite to erect an earthen redoubt for the defence of the *Baretta*; unto which thoſe of the old council replied, that conſidering the vaſt charge and the ſmall benefit which could be expected from it, the ſame might be more conveniently built in ſome place or other, to facilitate our paſſage into the open countrey. *Beaumont* was of opinion, that there-

And the Baretta.

by

1647. by the enemy would be prevented from advancing to the fort *Frederick Henry*; but the old members told him, that notwithſtanding we had now a fort on the *Barcttu*, we could not hinder the enemies coming upon that iſland near the fort, unleſs we would keep a conſiderable force there for that purpoſe; that we need not fear their tranſporting any cannon thither, becauſe their retreat might be cut off at high tide; neither could they from thence do any miſchief to the *Receif*, it being evident, that the ſhot of our biggeſt cannon in the fort *Frederick William* could not reach the ſaid iſland. The ſame evening Mr. *Van Goch* and *Hack*, came to tell the members of the old council, that the *Hollandia* and *Ulyſſingen* would be ready in a little time, in order to conduct them to *Holland*, the *Ulyſſingen* being ordered forthwith to return from the *Bahia*, whither ſhe was ſent a cruizing.

The Receif *cloſely blockt up.*

By this time the enemy had block'd us up ſo cloſely in the *Receif*, that on the land ſide we durſt ſcarce look without the gates; and a certain *Portugueſe* had prepared us a worſe entertainment, having invited all our chief commanders abroad to his daughters wedding, during which time the enemy were to have ſurprized the city; but this deſign being timely diſcovered by ſome *Portugueſe* and *Jews*, miſcarried.

The Portugueſe *rebuild a fort.*

About the 15th of *October*, the *Portugueſe* began to rebuild the fort *Bon Jeſus*, as it is call'd by them, but by us *Altena*, on the other ſide of the river. We had ſome notice of it by deſerters, but could not diſcover the truth of it, becauſe they kept us from advancing that way by their cannon, and the place was ſurrounded on all ſides with woods; but as ſoon as they had cauſed them to be cut down, we diſcovered it both by ſight and the roaring of their cannon, which thundring inceſſantly againſt the city, cauſed ſuch a conſternation, as is not eaſy to be expreſs'd, moſt people ſheltring themſelves in vaults, to avoid the fury of the enemies cannon. Of this I ſaw a moſt miſerable ſpectacle in a certain young lady, a niece of the late admiral *Lichthart*, who being come to viſit one of her acquaintance, lately married, had both her legs ſhot off by a cannon bullet, which at the ſame time kill'd the new married woman upon the ſpot. At the outcry of theſe miſerable wretches, I ran thither inſtantly, my houſe being juſt by, where I was an eye-witneſs of their miſery, the poor young lady graſping my legs with ſuch an agony, that ſhe could ſcarce be pull'd off with all the ſtrength I had; it being a moſt doleful ſpectacle for me to ſee the floor covered with the legs and arms of theſe miſerable wretches; the poor young lady died like-

A miſerable ſpectacle.

wiſe within three days after. It was not long after that I narrowly eſcap d the ſame misfortune; for whilſt I was talking with ſome of the inhabitants of the city, as I was going the rounds, two of them were kill'd by a cannon bullet, and another had both his hands ſhot off as he was lighting his pipe. Nay we were forced to remove all the ſhips out of the harbour for fear of being ſunk. Colonel *Shoppe*, in the mean while, had made himſelf maſter of and deſtroyed *Taperika*, 2000 *Portugueſe* only having ſaved themſelves by flight; but by the many unſucceſsful encounters we had with the *Portugueſe*, our forces decreaſing daily, whereas theirs encreaſed, colonel *Shoppe* was ordered to command colonel *Hinderſon* to leave *Rio St. Franciſco*, and to join him in *Taperika*; but this ſtood us but in little ſtead, being not long after obliged to leave likewiſe *Taperika* for the relief of the *Receif*. All our force conſiſting of about 1800 men, being now come to the *Receif*, (where they had not proviſions for above ſeven months left) it was ſeveral times taken into conſideration, what was beſt to be done at this juncture. Colonel *Shoppe*, with ſome other officers, were of opinion not to hazard an engagement, our forces being ſo much inferior to the enemy, but to ſtay for a more favourable opportunity; but it was carried by the majority to venture a general ſalley for the relief of the *Receif*, the chief command thereof being given to colonel *Brink*, becauſe colonel *Shoppe* was not as yet cured of his wounds he had received in a late encounter. Our forces marched towards evening as far as *Guerapes*, a place fatal to us the year before by the defeat of our people, the fields thereabouts being as yet covered with their bones. The *Portugueſe* no ſooner perceived us to be upon the march, but they left the fort *Altena*, of which we having got notice, poſſeſs'd ourſelves of it immediately, and thus drew the thorn out of our foot. But the 16th of *May* prov'd the moſt fatal of all we had ſeen for many years before in *Braſil*. For though our forces attack'd the enemy with bravery, and maintained the fight with great obſtinacy for ſome time, yet the enemy, fluſh'd with their number and late ſucceſs, with 2500 of their beſt men, at laſt forced our men to give way, and afterwards to fly, being purſued by 150 *Portugueſe* horſe; ſo that both in the fight and flight, we loſt above 1100 men, among whom were colonel *Brink*, and almoſt all the reſt of our commanders: We loſt alſo 19 colours, and all our cannon and ammunition we had carried along with us. It was not till five days after before leave could be obtained to bury our dead,

1647.

A general ſalley made by the Dutch.

Are routed.

1647. which began to corrupt and ſtink moſt nauſeouſly, by reaſon of the burning heat of the ſun. This was the laſt effort we were likely to make in the field; all our future care being for the preſervation and defence of the *Receif*, unleſs we ſhould be ſupplied with freſh ſuccours from *Holland*; but the fame arriving but ſlowly, moſt people began to fear, that in caſe God Almighty did not ſend us ſome unexpected relief, we ſhould be at laſt forced to leave that place likewiſe to the mercy of the enemy: The great council laying the fault of our late misfortunes upon the council of war, and theſe again upon them, alledging, that the ſoldiers were ill provided for, and wanted their pay. As for myſelf, being ſenſible that things would be worſe and worſe every day, I thought it the ſafeſt way for me alſo, to deſire a paſſport for my return to *Holland*, which at laſt, with much ado I obtained, and ſo prepared every thing for my voyage. But before I leave *Braſil*, I ought to give you a ſhort account of the products of the ſaid country. 1647.

The captainſhip of *Pernambuko* and *Braſil* in general, being not only well ſtored with cattle, but alſo with ſeveral ſorts of herbs, trees and fruits, we will give you a ſhort view of them, and begin with the *Mandiiba*, and its root, call'd *Mandioka*, unto which the *Braſilians* ſtand chiefly in- Mandioka root.



debted for their ſuſtenance. The moſt parts of *America* are ignorant hitherto of wheat or any other grain, inſtead of which nature has furniſhed them with a certain ſhrub, the root of which dried and powdered, and afterwards boil'd and bak'd as we do our bread, is the common food of the inhabitants of *America*. This ſhrub grows in vaſt plenty every where, being by the *Braſilians* called *Maniiba* and *Mandiiba*, and its root *Mandioka*. There are divers kinds of it, diſtinguiſhed by the *Braſilians* by different names, but the root is in general called *Mandioka*. Their leaves are ſmall, green and long, pointed at the end, which grow upon large ſtalks or branches, each of which has five, ſix, or ſeven leaves, growing in a cluſter, reſembling a ſtar, call'd by the *Braſilians Manikoba*. The ſtock or ſtem is diſtinguiſhed by certain knots, not above an inch thick, but generally ſix, ſometimes ſeven foot high, from whence ſprout forth ſeveral branches, which producing again leſſer ſtalks, bear the before-mentioned leaves: It bears a ſmall flower of a pale yellow colour, and of five leaves only, with ſmall ſtalks within, which at laſt turn to ſeed. The root *Mandioka* reſembles our parſnip in ſhape, being two or three foot long, and about a man's arm thick, but grows thinner towards the bottom. Its outward rind reſembles that of a haſel-tree,

but

1647. but its ſubſtance is white, affording a milky ſharp juice, which is pernicious to beaſts. This ſhrub grows in dry, barren and ſandy ground, its nature being ſo averſe to moiſture, that they are obliged to plant it only in the ſummer months, where it is moſt expoſed to the ſun. For this purpoſe it is, that the inhabitants cut down the woods on the hills and in the plains, which they burn, and ſo prepare the ground for the production of this root: Theſe fields are by the *Braſilians* called *Ko*, by the *Portugueſe Roza*, or *Chokas*, and by our people *Roſſen*. Theſe fields are turn'd up into ſmall round hills like mole-hills; the *Portugueſe* call them *Montes de Terra Cavada*, or *Hollowed Hills*; the *Braſilians Kujo*. Theſe hills they make about two foot and a half aſunder, each being about three foot in circumference, and half a foot high, that the rain-water may be carried off with the more eaſe. In each of theſe hills they commonly plant three ſmall taks of this ſhrub, of about nine, ten inches, or a foot long, without leaves, notwithſtanding which they grow and ſoon bear freſh leaves, and in time produce new roots, which cannot be tranſplanted, becauſe no ſooner are they taken out of the ground, but they begin to putrify and ſtink. After theſe taks have been about ten days in the ground, they begin to bud and produce as many freſh taks as they have knots; each of theſe taks is about a finger long, from whence ſprout forth many leſſer ones of a purple colour. The fields muſt be three or four times a year cleared of the weeds, which grow in great plenty amongſt it, and choak it up before it comes to its full growth. The ſmall taks and leaves of theſe ſhrubs are mightily infeſted by the *Piſmires*, and likewiſe coveted by the wild-goats, oxen, horſes and ſheep, for which reaſon they are very careful to fence theſe plantations with ſtalks and branches of trees: The bees, coneys, and ſome other *Braſilian* creatures are mighty fond of the root, which takes no harm, tho' the ſhrub be ſtript of all the leaves, provided the root itſelf be not touch'd. This root does not come to its full perfection till a year after the planting of the taks, tho' in caſe of neceſſity they may be drawn in ſix months, but afford but little *Farinha*. Each ſhrub produces two, three, four, nay ſometimes twenty roots, according to the goodneſs of the ground, and after they are come to full maturity, will keep two or three years under ground; but it is much more ſafe to take them up at the years end, for elſe many of them will rot; nay, if the ſeaſon happens to prove very wet, they muſt of neceſſity be drawn tho' they are but half ripe. The root, after it is taken out of the ground, 1647. will not keep above three days, but ſtinks, take what care you can; for which reaſon they ſeldom draw more at a time than they can make immediately into *Farinha* or meal. That kind of *Mandioka*, commonly called *Mandibuka*, grows faſter and ripens ſooner than any other, and affords the beſt *Farinha*; it thrives beſt in ſandy and hot grounds. But that kind which is moſt generally uſed is called *Mandiikparata*, and grows indifferently in all grounds. The *Farinha* is prepared thus: The root after it *How the* Farinha *is prepared.* is taken out of the ground is purged from its outward rind by a knife, and waſh'd in fair water: Then the end of the root is held cloſe to a wheel of about four or five foot diameter, which being covered round the edges with a copper or tin plate full of ſharp ſmall holes, not unlike a nutmeg-grater, and the wheel being turn'd round continually, grates the ſaid root into ſmall particles, which fall into a trough underneath. The wheel is by the *Braſilians* called *Ibecem Babaca*, and by the *Portugueſe Roda de Farinha*, or the flower wheel; the trough the *Braſilians* call *Mukaba*, and the *Portugueſe Koohe de rater Mandihoka*. But the poorer ſort are fain to be contented with a hand-grater, called *Tapiti*. The root thus grated is put into a bag, made of the rinds of trees, about four inches wide, called by the *Portugueſe Eſpremendouro de Mandihoka*. This bag with the root is put into a preſs, and all the juice preſt out, (it having a venomous quality) which is by the *Braſilians* called *Maipoera*, or *Munipuera*, and by the *Portugueſe Agoa de Mandioka*, i. e. *The water of Mandioka*. The next thing to be done is to beat the root through a ſieve, called by the *Braſilians Urupema*; and then to lay it upon a copper plate, or earthen pan, over the fire, and to ſtir it continually with a wooden ſpoon or ſpattle till it be quite dry. This pan or veſſel the *Braſilians* call *Vimovipaba*, and the ſlice *Vipucuitaba*. The *Farinha*, before it is quite dry, is called by the *Braſilians Vitinga*, and by the *Portugueſe Farinha Relada*; but when it is compleatly dried and fit for keeping, the *Braſilians* call it *Viata* or *Viccia*, and the *Portugueſe Farinha Seca*, or dry meal; or *Farinha de Guerra*, war-meal, becauſe it is moſt uſed in time of war. For the more it is dried the better it keeps, but never keeps good above a year, the leaſt moiſture being apt to taint it; which is the reaſon, that both the *Portugueſe* and we, in imitation of the *Braſilians*, bake biſkets of it upon a grate iron, with hot coals underneath, for the magazines.

The juice *Manipuera*, which is preſs'd

1647. out of the root *Mandioka*, put into a veſſel, gets in two hours time a white ſettlement at the bottom, call'd by the *Braſilians Tipioja*, *Tipiaka*, and *Tipiabika:* This dried, affords a very white meal, called *Tipiocui*, which bak'd into cakes as before, call'd by them *Tipiacika*, taſte as well as wheaten bread. This juice is alſo boil'd to pap, and eaten, and ſerves likewiſe inſtead of ſtarch or paſte. The *Portugueſe* take this pap, mix it with ſugar, rice, and orange flower-water, which they make into a conſerve of a delicious taſte; they call it *Marmelada de Mandihoka*. The juice *Mandiga* or *Manipuera*, is of a ſweetiſh taſte, which is the reaſon the beaſts covet it, but commonly die ſoon after they have drunk of it, it being pernicious, nay mortal, both to man and beaſt. If the juice be kept twice 24 hours it produces worms, called by the *Braſilians Tapucu*; yet it has been found by experience, that this juice loſes its pernicious quality after it has ſtood 24 hours, there being many of *Braſilians* who boil and drink it without any harm. The root *Mandioka* is likewiſe immediately after it is taken out of the ground, ſliced in pieces, and laid in freſh water for four or five days, when it begins to be ſoft, it is called *Puba*, or *Mandiopuba* and *Mandiopubo*. This the wild *Braſilians*, inhabiting the deſerts and woods, roaſt in the aſhes and eat; becauſe it is done without much trouble. The ſame *Mandiopuba*, toaſted before the fire, is called *Kaarima*, which being afterwards beat to powder with a wooden peſtel in a mortar, they call *Kaarimaciu*; of this they make a pap with boiling water, which ſeaſoned with ſome *Braſilian* pepper, or *Nhambi* flowers, affords a very good diſh, eſpecially with the addition of ſome fiſh or meat, when it is called *Minguipitinga* by the *Braſilians*, who look upon it as one of their beſt dainties. It is alſo very wholſome, for this *Kaarima*, and the flower *Tipiaka*, boil'd in orange-flower-water, and ſugar, to the conſiſtency of a ſyrup, affords a very good antidote. They make alſo a kind of ſtarch of the flower called *Kaarima*, which they call *Minguapomonga*; as likewiſe very fine cakes, by mixing it with water, butter, and ſugar. There is a kind of meal prepared from the dregs of the *Mandioka*, or *Mandiopubo* root, thus ſteept in water, call'd by the *Braſilians Vipuba*; and *Viabiruru*, and by the *Portugueſe Farinha Freſca*, or freſh flower, and *Farinha d'Agoa*, or water flower. It is very well taſted, but will not keep above 24 hours. But if you make it up with water into balls or rolls, and let them dry in the ſun, they will keep good for a conſiderable time: Theſe they call *Viapua* and *Miapetika*. The *Tapoyers*, and almoſt all the other *Braſilians* prepare it thus, and afterwards mix it with another meal, called *Viata*, which affords it a more agreeable taſte. 1647.

The *Mandioka* root is likewiſe prepared thus: After it has been cleanſed and cut in thin ſlices, they beat it with a wooden peſtel, and ſqueeze the juice of it out with their hands only, which being dried, they call *Tina* and *Mixakuruba*; another way of preparing the *Mandioka* root is, to cut it into pieces, of about two fingers long, and two inches thick, which without being ſqueezed, is expoſed to the ſun, and afterwards beat to powder in a wooden mortar, call'd by the *Braſilians Tipirati*, by the *Portugueſe Farinha de Mandioka crua*, or the flower of raw *Mandioka:* The pieces before they are beaten to powder are very white, and may be uſed inſtead of chalk. Out of this flower they make very good white bread and biſkets, call'd *Miapeta*, the laſt of which are chiefly uſed in the camp, becauſe they will keep a great while.

Out of the root *Aipimakaxera*, the *Braſilians* boil a certain pleaſant liquor not unlike our whey, call'd by them *Kavimakaxera*. The ſame root, chaw'd and mixed with water, furniſhes them with another liquor they call *Kaon Karazu*. The cakes made from the flower of this root, laid in a caſk with water, till it ferments together, affords them likewiſe a ſort of ſtrong and very good beer.

All theſe different kinds of *Mandioka* roots, if they be eaten freſh prove mortal to mankind, except that call'd *Aipiamakaxera*, which roaſted, may be eaten without danger, and is of a good taſte. But all ſorts of beaſts, both wild and tame ones, don't only feed upon the ſaid roots and leaves, without the leaſt hurt, but alſo grow fat with them, notwithſtanding that the juice of both is mortiferous as well to men as beaſts. The Negroes and *Braſilians* bruiſe the leaves of the *Mandüba* in a wooden mortar, which being boil'd, they put oil or butter over it, and eat it like as we do our ſpinage; this is ſometimes done by the *Portugueſe*, likewiſe and the *Dutch*, who make a kind of ſallet of the ſame leaves. The *Braſilians* prefer the bread made of the *Mandioka* root before ours, but it is not ſo natural to the *Europeans*, it being, if uſed in a great quantity, pernicious to the nerves and ſtomach, and corrupts the blood. About three buſhels of this meal, (at the rate of two gilders *per* buſhel) will ſuffice a ſtrong labouring man for a whole month, and a piece of ground planted with this root, produces four times the quantity, as if it had been ſown with wheat. There is a certain kind of *Mandioka* root call'd *Pitinga*,

1647. *tinga* by the *Braſilians*, the flower of which cleanſes and heals old ulcers. This root is likewiſe found in the iſle of *St. Thomas*, and in thoſe of *Hiſpaniola*, *Cuba*, and others thereabouts, and in moſt parts of the continent of *America*; the inhabitants of which call it *Yuka* and *Kaſſave*, and thoſe of *Mexico Quauhkamoth*, and the bread which is made of the flower, *Kazabis*, *Kazabi*, or *Kakavi*. The *Mandioka* root is originally the natural product of *Braſil*, and from thence tranſplanted into other parts of *America* and *Africk*. Its flower furniſhes all the inhabitants of *Braſil*, as well the *Portugueſe* and *Dutch*, as the natives and negroes with bread, which next to wheat is the beſt of all, ſo that our ſoldiers would rather chuſe to have their allowance in *Farinha*, than wheaten bread out of the magazines. Since the war in 1645, the price of the *Farinha* was riſen to three or four gilders *per* buſhel, which, as it tended to the utter deſtruction of the ſugar-mills, ſo by ſpecial orders from the great council of the *Dutch Braſil*, all the inhabitants of the open country were enjoined, under a ſevere penalty, to plant a certain quantity of *Mandioka* yearly, in proportion to their abilities, by which means the price of the *Farinha* was ſo conſiderably abated, that three buſhels were ſold for two ſhillings ready money, at the *Receif*, and for leſs in the country.

Kaaeo *or* Herba viva. *Braſil* produces a certain herb call'd *Kaaeo* by the *Braſilians*, by the *Europeans* in *Latin*, *Herba viva*, becauſe it ſeems to ſhrink when you touch it, and ſo it does likewiſe about ſun-ſet; its ſeed has been tranſmitted into *Europe*, where it grows to its full perfection.

Kalabaſſes. The *Kalabaſſes* are a kind of pompions, their rind, if dried, being ſo thick and ſtrong, as to ſerve for materials for cups, porringers, and ſuch like utenſils. But what is moſt ſurprizing is, that they always grow of a different ſhape, ſome being long, others round, others oval, ſome thick before, others at the end. They bloſſom and bear fruit once a month, the bloſſom being yellow, mix'd with green; the pulp is white at firſt, but turns to a violet colour; they are of a tolerable pleaſant taſte, but very unwholeſome, by reaſon they are too aſtringent.

The tree Imaraku. The tree call'd *Imaraku* by the *Braſilians*, is of a middle ſize, its trunk round, and its bark grey, covered with ſmall thiſtles of the ſame colour. Its branches ſprout forth on the top, with broad leaves of an oval figure, edged likewiſe with ſmall thiſtles or thorns. There is alſo another kind of *Imaraku*, much larger than the former, call'd *Kakabu* by the *Braſilians*, and *Kardon* by the *Portugueſe*. This ſprouts forth 1647. firſt of all in the form of a large octangular leaf, upon which grow croſswiſe many thorns; this produces other leaves of the ſame kind, each being three, nay ſometimes ſix foot long, and of the thickneſs of a man's arm. By degrees the firſt leaf turns into a woody ſubſtance, of a greeniſh colour, but ſomewhat ſpungy; thoſe leaves that grow next to this ſtem are inſtead of branches, which produce other leaves. The ſtem bears only one large white flower, the fruit of which is of an oval figure, and of about twice the bigneſs of a hens-egg, of a dark brown colour, and fit for uſe. This tree grows to a great height. There is alſo another kind of *Imaraku*, being altogether the ſame with the former in reſpect of its largeneſs, bloſſom and fruit, except that its leaves are of a triangular figure.

Pako Kaatinga. What the *Braſilians* call *Pako Kaatinga*, the *Portugueſe* commonly call *Canodo Mato*, or wild reed or canes. The ſtem or ſtalk is like that of other canes, about an inch thick, containing a white marrow or pith, of a ſweetiſh taſte, on which grow leaves of eight or nine inches long, and three inches broad, ſhaped like a tongue, ſmooth and pale green on one, and covered with a white woolly ſubſtance on the other ſide. The fruit of which is not unlike a pine-apple, about ten inches long, growing on the top of the ſtem; it is divided into ſeveral partitions, which opening by degrees, a pale grey flower appears betwixt each, containing underneath twenty or more grains of a black ſhining ſeed. The ſtalk chew'd draws the rheum from the head, and breaks the ſtone in the bladder. It is look'd upon as an excellent remedy againſt the involuntary emiſſion of the ſeed throughout *Braſil*, and cures it in eight days time.

The tree and fruit Kasjou. All over *Braſil*, but eſpecially in the iſle of *Itamarika*, grows a certain tree call'd *Kasjui* or *Kasjou*, bearing a fruit of the ſame name. Its leaves are dark green, broad and round, interſperſed with many ſmall veins. It bears two different bloſſoms and fruits. The white bloſſom which appears in the lower branches, produces a juicy ſpungy fruit like an apple, of a very cooling and aſtringent quality: But the red bloſſom on the top a kind of cheſnut. The *Braſilians* draw no ſmall advantage from this tree; out of the apples they make a very good cyder, call'd by them *Kasjouwy*, which is ſouriſh, but if mix'd with ſugar, makes it as pleaſant as *Rheniſh* wine, and has this excellency, that tho' it ſoon ſeizes the head, yet it paſſes off without any harm. The other fruit they eat like as we do our cheſnuts.

Among the products of the *Weſt* and

1647. *Eaſt-Indies* is a tree call'd *Papay*, by the *Javaneſes* and *Dutch*, and *Pinoguacu* or *Mamoeira* by the *Americans*; and ſometimes intitled with the name of the *Melontree* by our people, by reaſon of the reſemblance of its fruit to our melon. This tree is of two different kinds, to wit, the male and female. It grows and periſhes again in a ſhort time; its trunk being ſo ſpungy that it may be cut as eaſy as a cabbage ſtalk; the leaves it bears are very large and broad, not unlike our vine leaves, growing on long ſtalks round the top of the tree, and covering the fruit, which hangs in a knot, and is green at the firſt, but turns yellow at laſt, reſembling in ſhape a pear, but of the bigneſs of our ſmall melons, unto which its pulp reſembles both in colour and taſte, when come to maturity, but whilſt they are green, they are boil'd with meat, and give it a tart taſte.

Pinoguacu *or* Papay.

Chili Lada *or* Braſil *pepper.*

The red pepper, known by the name of *Braſil pepper*, and call'd *Chili Lada* by the *Braſilians*, grows on knotty ſtalks of about five or ſix foot high; the rind being a dark green, diſtinguiſhed with white rings, from whence ſhoot forth ſmall crooked branches of a hands breadth in length, bearing a ſmall white flower, which produces a green huſk, and turns red by degrees as it ripens, with a certain ſeed within it, being as hot and biting upon the tongue as the common brown pepper, and ſo does the huſk. In the *Eaſt-Indies* they preſerve it, and call it *Aetzar*, and uſe it raw in their fiſh ſauces. In *Braſil* they cut two or three of theſe huſks whilſt they are green in ſlices, and mix them with oil and vinegar, or ſome limon juice, to acuate their appetite, but it is too hot for thoſe that are not uſed to it, which is allayed by a good quantity of ſalt. This kind of pepper grows likewiſe in the *Eaſt-Indies*, in the iſland of *Java*, in *Bengala*, and ſeveral other places. I have ſeen it alſo in ſome of our gardens in *Holland*. There is another ſhrub which grows frequently in the *Eaſt-Indies*, not unlike this in ſhape and bigneſs, which bears a yellow flower; it is call'd *Halika Kabus* by the *Arabians* or *Alkekengi*, and ſufficiently known in theſe parts. The flower produces a ſmall bladder which contains the fruit and ſeed, they are not ſo big as ours. The *Indians* and *Chineſe* mix it with a certain fruit call'd by them *Poma d'Oro*, *Tamatas* by the *Portugueſe*, and *Melanſana* by the *Italians*; they alſo eat it with *Chili Lada* or *Braſilian* pepper. The *Portugueſe* cut the *Poma d'Oro* and the huſk of the *Braſilian* pepper in thin ſlices, which being mix'd with oil and vinegar, they eat as a ſallat, and look upon it as a proper remedy to cut the rough flegm of the ſtomach, a diſtemper very common in thoſe parts. The *Braſilians*, as well as the *Dutch*, chaw this pepper for the ſame purpoſe, but it is very burning upon the tongue. 1647.

Sugar-canes or reeds.

The ſugar canes or reeds, call'd by the *Braſilians Viba*, are the product both of the *Weſt* and *Eaſt-Indies*, but grow in great plenty throughout all *Braſil*, but eſpecially in the captainſhip of *Pernambuko*. They are of two different kinds, one bearing ſmall, the other larger leaves. The laſt, which is accounted the beſt, ſprouts up into a long ſtem of the thickneſs of a child's arm, the leaves growing all on the top in a cluſter, being of an oval figure, and a dark blue colour. The rind is diſtinguiſhed by certain joints or knots; the other kind bears ſmall leaves from the top to the bottom. The ſugar-canes are propagated from their ſmall ſprouts, which being put in the ground like our vines, grow up to the height of twelve foot, if they are planted in good ſoil, and are kept free from weeds. Six months after they have been planted, a brown ſeed appears on the top, then it is fit to be cut; for if they ſtand longer in the ground their juice diminiſhes, dries up, and turns ſour. The juice, if taken immediately after it is drawn, cauſes a looſeneſs. The low grounds are much more convenient for the planting of ſugar-reeds than the hills, eſpecially near the river ſide, where the banks are often over-flown by the ſtream. There are a certain kind of winged worms, call'd *Guirapeakoka* by the *Braſilians*, and *Pao de Galinha* by the *Portugueſe*, which are great enemies to the ſugar-canes, eſpecially in moiſt grounds, where they gnaw and conſume the roots. The ſugar, which is the product of theſe canes, is not procured without a great deal of toil and labour, in which for the moſt part are employed ſlaves, under the tuition of certain overſeers, appointed by the maſters of the ſugar-mills, who were for the moſt part *Portugueſe*, the *Dutch* being hitherto not arrived to the utmoſt perfection in that art. In the captainſhip of *Pernambuko*, many fine *Ingenho*'s or ſugar-mills, with their adjacent plantations were erected for this purpoſe, amounting in all to above 100 in number, and the labourers, negroes, and other *African* ſlaves thereunto belonging, to near 40000. The whole yearly product of ſugar of the *Dutch Braſil*, is computed to be betwixt 200000 and 250000 cheſts.

Indigo.

In the year 1642, one *Gillin Venant* brought ſome indigo ſeed from the *American* iſlands into *Braſil*, who having certain lands aſſigned him near the ſmall river *Mercera*, and being provided with all other conveniencies by the ſpecial command of the

Sugar reeds

Sugar reeds

The Tree and Fruit of Katsiou

Papayen

Indigo

Brasil Pepper

Fruit of Katsiou

Fruit of Palalas

1647. the great council, erected ſeveral plantations for the producing of *Aniel* or *Indigo*: But it being found by experience, that the piſmires conſumed moſt of the leaves, the ſaid Mr. *Venant*, by employing many labourers and negroes, to deſtroy theſe piſmires with burning and digging, at laſt ſo well cleared the ground, that the *Indigo* came to its full perfection, ſeveral patterns of which were ſent into *Holland*. Mr. *Venant* having made an agreement with Mr. *Chriſtopher Eyerſhettel* to inſtruct him in the moſt neceſſary points relating to the coagulating the indigo, he was treating with the great council concerning certain grounds for the planting of indigo, ſo that there was a fair proſpect of bringing this deſign to a conſiderable perfection here, if the ſame had not been prevented by the inteſtine war.

The wild *Aniel*, which grows in *Braſil* in great plenty, has a great reſemblance to the true indigo in outward appearance, but affords no good colours. Some pretend to have ſeen alſo a kind of wild cochenille in *Braſil*, and the ground would produce good ſtore of cotton, but that the inhabitants draw much more profit from the ſugar-plantations.

Drugs. Some ginger is likewiſe planted in *Braſil*, but not in ſuch quantities as to be tranſported into other parts, no more than the *Mechoaconna*, *China* and ſome other medicinal roots; and the *Herba de Cubra* or *Herba de Noſſa Senhora*, which is look'd upon as an infallible remedy againſt the gravel; and the root called *Paquoquanha*, which is the univerſal medicine of the *Braſilians*. There are alſo many tranſplanted hither from other parts, as ginger, tobacco, rice, cotton, turkey-wheat, *Aniel*, or indigo, and the ſugar-reeds were firſt of all tranſported by the *Portugueſe* from the *Canary Iſlands*. The fruits in daily uſe among the inhabitants, are *Ananas*, *Bananas*, *Mangaba*, *Akaju*, *Arakou* great and ſmall, *Guajaba*, divers kinds of *Murukuja*, *Ibapiranga*, *Mazaxanduba*, *Akaja*, *Aratiku*, *Guitakori*, *Biringela*, *Mamaon*, *Coco-nuts*, and ſeveral ſorts of *Indian* figs. The roots chiefly in uſe, are the *Batatas*, *Nhambi* and *Umbi*, and the *Indian* acorns, call'd *Tembi*, which are of a delicious taſte.

Fertility of Braſil. The whole country of *Braſil* is extremely fertile and pleaſant, being watered by many rivers and ſtanding waters, moſt of which ariſe from the hills, and paſs through ſpacious plains, the laſt of which are clayey and marſhy grounds, (call'd *Vargea*'s by the *Portugueſe*) which produce all ſorts of fruit: but eſpecially ſugar-canes in great plenty. Their meadows and paſture grounds do not appear ſo pleaſant in the ſummer as in the rainy ſeaſon, when they are very 1647. green; wheat and rye grow ſoon rank here, which is occaſion'd partly by the nature of the ſoil, partly by the heat of the ſun; to prevent which they never let their grounds lie fallow, and manure them with ſand indead of dung. The ſame muſt be obſerved with all other foreign ſeeds here, that require to be kept a conſiderable time under ground. In *February* and *March* (which is the rainy and winter-ſeaſon of this climate) they ſow their ſeeds, and that towards evening, not by day time, or about midnight. They take great care not to plant any thing too deep under ground; for whatever is planted beyond the ſun-beams, ſeldom produces any fruit, which our people have learned to their coſt. There is a remarkable difference betwixt the ſeeds and fruits which are produced on the hills, and thoſe of the marſhy grounds, as to their time of ripening; tho' the coco and palm-trees are tranſplanted here without the leaſt regard to their age, bigneſs, or the ſeaſon, and grow very well. Moſt of their own trees and ſhrubs bear flowers and fruits throughout the whole year, ſo that at one and the ſame time, you enjoy the benefit of the ſpring, ſummer and winter; the like is obſervable in the vines, citron, limon, and other trees, brought by the *Portugueſe* from *Angola* into *Braſil*, and in ſeveral roots pot-herbs, and other fruits, tranſplanted thither by the *Dutch*. Thoſe who covet ripe-grapes throughout the whole year, do only prune their vines at divers times, which produce a fine grape, and a wine as ſweet as moloſſes. The worſt is, that they are much infeſted by the piſmires, which ſuck all the juice, and leave nothing but the husks to the owners; ſeveral other ſorts of trees have been tranſplanted thither from *Holland*, which thrive extremely, and bear very good fruit.

The ſtanding waters of *Braſil* are for the moſt part covered on the ſurface with green ſhrubs and herbs, that they appear rather like land than water, and feed both land and water fowl. At the entrance of moſt of their rivers, (where you meet with vaſt quantities of oiſters and crabs) the countrey is ſo overſtock'd with a certain kind of a tree call'd *Guaparaba* or *Mangle* by the *Braſilians*, that they render it impaſſable for travellers. In ſhort, the whole *Braſil* is well ſtored with trees, ſhrubs and uſeful woods, there being ſcarce a place, either in the vallies or riſing grounds, which are clayey, or among the hills, which don't produce ſomething that is uſeful, and that in ſuch plenty, that the *Portugueſe* after their firſt arrival here, were forced to cut their way through theſe trees with incredi-

1647. ble pains and charge. The hills furniſh alſo great ſtore of wood, which is of a very good ſcent, and is uſed by dyers; as for inſtance the *Braſil* wood, which is from hence tranſported into *Europe*.

Braſil wood.

The ſtem or trunk of this tree is knotty, of a very agreeable ſcent, and ſometimes two or three fathoms thick: Its leaves are dark-green, and ſmall, thorny at the end, and grow on ſmall ſtalks; the bark, which is about three inches thick, is generally taken from the trunk, before it is fitted for ſale: It ſprouts from its own root, and produces neither bloſſom nor fruit. Moſt of theſe trees grow about 10 or 12 leagues from the ſea-ſide, where they cut them down, take off the bark, and carry them upon waggons to the ſea-ſhore, from whence they are tranſported into *Europe* for the uſe of the dyers chiefly; the *Braſilians* call this tree for its excellency's ſake, *Ibirapitanga*. After the *Dutch* had conquered part of *Braſil*, they found great ſtore of this wood ready cut and fitted for uſe by the *Portugueſe*, who ſold it to the *Dutch* company; ſince which time it was cut down promiſcuouſly by the *Portugueſe* as well as the *Dutch*, and ſuch vaſt quantities of it were tranſported in 1646, and 1647, that the members of the great council of the *Dutch-Braſil*, Mr. *Henry Hamel*, *Bulleſtrate* and *Codd*, being made ſenſible of the deſtructive methods that were made uſe of in cutting this wood, which muſt in time have tended to the utter extirpation of theſe trees, did by their proclamation regulate theſe abuſes. They have another kind of very fine wood in *Braſil*, called by the *Portugueſe*, *Pao Santo*, as likewiſe thoſe call'd *Gitayba*, *Vio Wood*, *Maſſaranduba*, cedar, and divers others woods fit for cabinet-work. The tree call'd *Tataiba* by the *Portugueſe*, the wood of which the *Portugueſe* call *Pao Amaretto*, affords a yellow colour for the Dyers. The bark of the tree *Araiba* is of an aſh-colour, but boil'd in water gives a red tincture. The tree *Jakauranda*, or *Jaturiba*, or the white-cedar, as well as ſeveral other Trees, furniſh the inhabitants with materials for building, being very hard and durable. The *Braſilians* make alſo matches and a kind of hemp out of the bark of ſome trees.

The Timbo *or* Tipo.

The moſt barren places of *Braſil* do produce a certain kind of trees without leaves, which they call *Timbo* or *Tibo*; out of theſe they make hoops, by reaſon of their flexibility, and the bark ſerves the ſhip-carpenters inſtead of hemp.

Their fuel.

The *Braſilians* light their fires by ſtriking two pieces of wood, of the trees *Karaguata Guacu* and *Imbaiba* together, as we do with our flint-ſtones and iron. The firſt is a tree of an admirable nature: Its ſtem grows 14 or 15 foot high, which being come to its full perfection, bears yellow flowers on the top, and abundance of large long and thick leaves. Out of the ſtem they make ſticks to hang their mattreſſes on, the leaves afford the fiſhermen ſtuff for yarn to make nets of; and out of the leaves iſſues a certain unctuous liquor, which ſerves inſtead of ſoap. The trees and woods of *Braſil* are never ſeen to be covered all over with leaves at a time; but whilſt ſome caſt their leaves, you ſee others bring forth new ones; nay, ſometimes one tree is half covered with leaves, and bare on the other ſide. *Braſil* likewiſe abounds in ſhrubs and reeds, ſome of which creep along the grounds, whilſt others twiſt themſelves up to the top of the higheſt trees, which affords a very agreeable ſpectacle at a diſtance, and a pleaſing ſhadow to men and beaſts, tired with the heat, hunting, or any other exerciſe. 1647.

Oranges.

Among other fruits, *Braſil* produces very fine oranges of divers kinds; the other vegetables, which beſides the *Mandioka* root, ſerve for the ſuſtenance of the inhabitants, are rice, millet, *Patatas*, *Ananas*, *Bananas*, melons, pompions, water-melons, cucumbers, beans, figs, *Bakovas*, *Marakuja*, *Mangavas*, *Arataku*, *Ape*, cabbages, radiſh, lettuce, purſlain, parſley, chervel, carrots, *&c.*

The Akaju.

Nothing is ſo much in requeſt among the *Braſilians*, as the *Akaju*, a kind of wild apple, which furniſhes them both with food and drink, being very juicy; ſo that this tree ſeems by kind nature to have been planted here for the peculiar comfort of the inhabitants: It ſpreads its branches round about in a great compaſs, but does not grow to that height as many other trees in this countrey: Its wood, which is very ſolid, is very fit for the building of ſhips, from whence iſſues a very clear gum in the ſummer-ſeaſon. Its leaves, which are red, reſemble thoſe of our walnut-trees, eſpecially when they firſt ſprout forth in the ſpring, but are of a much finer ſcent, which they never loſe but by being diſtill'd. The bloſſom is a flower conſiſting of five ſmall leaves, which grow to the number of about a hundred in one cluſter; each of theſe flowers has a ſtalk, with a ſmall head in the middle. At their firſt coming out, which is in *September*, they are very white, but turn ſoon after to a roſe colour; they are very odoriferous, and fill all the circumjacent grounds with their agreeable ſmell. This tree bears a double fruit, *viz.* an apple, and a cheſnut: The apple is of an oval figure, very juicy; its pulp ſpungy, full of kernels, and of a tartiſh taſte. The juice taints linen with a

1674. certain colour, ſuch as we call iron-molds, which is never to be taken out, but returns as often as theſe trees ſtand in bloſſoms; it is of a whitiſh colour after it is firſt preſt out, and tartiſh, but changes both its colour and taſte by fermentation, and becomes very ſtrong. The rind of the apple, which is very thin, is white mixt with red. The cheſnut, which grows on the top of the apple in the ſhape of a lambs kidney, is covered with a thin ſkin, over which grows a thick aſh-colour'd ſhell, full of a hot, ſharp and burning oil, which bites the tongue; To correct which, they roaſt the cheſnut in the aſhes, break the ſhell with a hammer, and eat the pith or kernel, which taſtes better than a common cheſnut, and will keep good for ſeveral years. The *Braſilians* are ſo fond of this fruit, that they often fight for it; then they encamp among theſe trees, and remove not 'till they have conſumed all thereabouts, unleſs they are forced thereunto by the enemy. They number the years of their ages by this tree, becauſe it bears fruit but once a year, which ripens towards the latter end of *December* or in *January*, there being none to be found on the trees after *February* in *Pernambubo*. About the time the ſun returns back from the tropick of *Capricorn*, it commonly rains in *Braſil*, which the inhabitants call the *rains of Akaju*, for, if the ſame happens to be moderate, they promiſe themſelves great plenty of this fruit. The cheſnuts are hot in the ſecond degree; if eaten raw with wine and ſalt, they taſte like walnuts, but if roaſted or preſerved with ſugar, they are of a delicious taſte. The oil which is taken out of the ſhell, is an excellent remedy againſt the hair-worm; it is hot in the third and fourth degree, and frequently applied to cancers and other malignant ulcers. The gum, powdered and taken in a convenient vehicle, opens the obſtructions of the womb. The juice of the apple furniſhes them with good cyder.

Palm-trees. There are many ſorts of palm-trees to be met with in *Braſil*, ſome of which grow wild, ſome are planted and cultivated by the inhabitants. Among the firſt the palm-tree call'd *Pindava* by the *Braſilians*, which grows very tall, claims the preference, of which there are whole woods to be ſeen in the open Countrey. In the more remote and unfrequented places, grows a certain palm-tree called *Karanatham* and *Anachekairi* by the *Braſilians*, and by an *Arabick* word among the *Portugueſe*, *Tamar*, or date, which this fruit reſembles. The tree grows as high as a common date-tree, its wood is red and very ſolid, but of no great uſe. The bark is grey, which from the ground upwards to a certain part of the tree is diſtinguiſh'd by many ſcales, which are largeſt at the bottom, and ſmall by degrees, 'till about the middle of the tree they quite diſappear; theſe ſcales being nothing elſe but the remnants of the branches, which fall off by degrees, as the tree grows higher; and continue only towards the top, ſpread round about the ſtem, like the *African* date-tree, but much finer. Each of theſe branches is about two or three foot long, flat on two ſides, and cover'd with ſmall thorns, they grow to a vaſt thickneſs. At the end of each branch grows one ſingle leaf, which is very large and green, pleated like a fan, and about the middle divided into ſeveral other leaves, like thoſe of the common date tree; each of theſe laſt is about two foot long. Betwixt thoſe branches, on which grow the leaves, ſpring forth other branches of four or five foot in length, and theſe again are full of other white ſprouts, which bear flowers, with three pale yellow leaves; theſe produce a fruit of the bigneſs of an olive, which is green, bitter and not eatable, but turn black when they ripen, which is in *February*. The *Braſilians* call this fruit *Tirade*, and eat it raw; but our people never took any fancy to it. With the leaves they cover their huts, and make baskets of them. The palm-tree call'd *Pindava* by the *Braſilians*, has inſtead of the bark a white and rough wooden ſubſtance, which contains a ſpungy ſulphurous ſubſtance, out of which the *Braſilians* prepare a ſtrong lee. This tree is for the reſt but of ſmall uſe, being rather eſteemed for ornaments ſake, by reaſon of its height and fine ſpreading branches, which however furniſh the inhabitants with leaves to cover their hutts, and to make baskets of; the *Portugueſe* plant them near their walks and arbours, and round their churches. The leaves of this tree do not hang downwards like thoſe of the coco-tree, but ſtand upright. Juſt by theſe leaves ſprout forth certain branches, on which hang bunches of flowers, which produce the fruit, reſembling in ſhape and bigneſs one of our largeſt hen-eggs, being ſharp at the end, and faſten'd to the bunch on the other like the pine-apple. The outſide is of a green yellow colour, inclining to a cheſnut; being compoſed of a hairy ſubſtance like that of the coco-nuts, but not near ſo thick, ſcarce exceeding in thickneſs two egg-ſhells. Under this ſhell is an inſipid ſaffron yellow pulp, which however is uſed by the negroes, who eat it with *Farinha*. Within this pulp is a hard nut, of an oval figure, not unlike the coco-nut, of the ſame thickneſs, but without holes; it contains a pith or kernel, as white and big as a walnut, but is not near ſo ſweet as the coco-nut; they are eaten both by the natives and ſtrangers, who are furniſhed 1647

1647. with them throughout the whole year, and call'd by the *Braſilians Inajamira*, *i. e.* the ſmall coco-nut. The kernels of theſe nuts furniſh them likewiſe with a white cooling oil, which is uſed inſtead of our oil of roſes, and when freſh drawn mix'd among their ſallets, but when decay'd, in their lamps. The ſhell affords an oil of the ſame nature, but not altogether ſo cooling. Out of the top of the tree flows a fine and odoriferous gum, uſed here inſtead of *Gum Arabick*; they alſo pick a certain pith or marrow out of the top, which has a taſte like our walnuts, and when eaten with bread and ſalt is accounted very nouriſhing.

Coco-trees.

There alſo grow coco-trees in *Braſil*, call'd by the natives *Inajaguacuiba*, and the fruit *Inajaguacu*. They are very different from the juſt now mentioned *Pindava* tree, their trunk or ſtem being ſeldom ſtraight, but commonly crooked, ſometimes from 7 to 14 foot thick, and 50 foot high; it is without branches, having only 15 or 20 leaves round the top, each of 15 foot long. They have alſo good ſtore of the common date-trees both male and female. The vaſt quantity of piſmires wherewith *Braſil* abounds, are great enemies to all the products of their grounds, which they endeavour to deſtroy by fire and water; it is farther to be obſerved, that ſome fruits as well as creatures, which are accounted venomous in *Europe*, are commonly eaten in *Braſil*, as on the other hand certain things are poiſonous there, which are not in *Europe*. For they have a kind of froggs and ſome fiſhes which are extremely poiſonous; whereas a certain ſort of great piſmires and adders, toads, worms and wild rats are eaten by the natives, without any harm.

The food of the Braſilians.

The moſt univerſal food of the *Braſilians*, is the flour made of the *Mandioka* root, called by them *Vi*, and *Farinha de Mandioka* by the *Portugueſe*, as has been ſhewn more at large before. They feed alſo upon the fleſh of ſeveral wild beaſts and birds, crabs, craw-fiſhes, fruits, herbage; their meat whether boiled or roaſted they eat half raw. They boil in earthen pots called *Kamu*, which they make themſelves. Their fleſh they roaſt thus; they dig a hole in the ground, the bottom of which they cover with leaves of trees, and upon them lay the meat to be roaſted, which being covered with the ſame leaves, they throw ſand or earth upon them. Upon this they light a good fire, which they continue till they think it ſufficiently roaſted. If they hit it right it eats very well, exceeding in goodneſs all other roaſted meats, they call it *Biaribi*. Their fiſhes whether roaſted or boiled they eat with *Inquitaya*, that is, ſalt and pepper. They boil their crabs or craw-fiſhes without ſalt, and eat them with *Inquitaya*. Small fiſhes they wrap in leaves, and roaſt them in the aſhes. They take the flour of the *Mandioka* root with their 3 hindermoſt fingers of the right hand, and ſo throw it into the mouth; in the ſame manner they do with beans and ſuch like things; they eat often both day and night, they having no ſet times for their meals, without the leaſt noiſe, or any drink, which they reſerve till after they have done. They ſeldom uſe any ſpoons, but inſtead of that their fingers, or ſome oyſter-ſhell or other ſerves their turn. The fleſh of ſeveral wild beaſts is much in eſteem among the *Braſilians*; as for inſtance, that of the greater and leſſer wild-boars; they have a bunch like a camel on their backs, and are very good food, as well as the fleſh of the river pigs, called *Kapiverres* by the *Portugueſe*, which is of a very agreeable taſte, 1647.

Their drink.

The moſt general and moſt wholeſome liquor uſed among the *Braſilians*, is their river or fountain water, which by reaſon of its coolneſs is a great refreſhment to ſuch as are tired by the heat, or the fatigues of other exerciſes; this is chiefly to be underſtood of their ſpring-water, which, though uſed here in great quantities, never cauſes any griping in the guts, or other inconveniencies in the bowels, but on the contrary occaſions a good appetite, and is ſoon evacuated by ſweating.

The waters of the rivers *Paray* and *Paratybi*, are accounted a good remedy againſt the ſtone and gout, which is the reaſon that many arrive to the age of above 100 years, who drink nothing but thoſe waters, and are never troubled with any of thoſe diſtempers; for thoſe who are advanced in age are as nice in the different taſtes of thoſe waters, as the *Europeans* in their wines; and they look upon thoſe as indiſcreet who uſe the waters without diſtinction. For, ſince moſt of their ſprings ariſe among the high eaſtern hills, they receive no addition either from the ſnows or any metallic bodies, and being well digeſted and purged from their dregs by the heat of the ſun-beams, they are very clear and wholſome; tho' it muſt be confeſs'd that in the winter months ſome waters, by reaſon of the rains, are not fine and cool as during the ſummer-ſeaſon. The negroes make ſometimes a naſty mixture of black ſugar and water only, without the leaſt fermentation, which they call *Garapa*; this as it is very cheap, ſo both men and women ſit at it for 24 hours together, ſpending their time in drinking, ſinging and dancing, but ſeldom quarrel, unleſs they have conceived ſome jealouſy of one another. Sometimes they add to it ſome leaves of the *Akaju*-tree, which by rea-

1647. ſon of their hot quality make it the more heady. The *Portugueſe* and *Dutch* frequently made a kind of ſorbette of water, ſugar and lemons. Others pour water upon certain herbs, others put a lemon only in water. But beſides theſe, the *Braſilians* know how to make wines or cyder out of ſeveral roots and fruits, which they drink at their merry meetings; eſpecially of the *Bakovas*, *Ananas*, *Mangaba*, *Janipaba*, *Karaguata*,&c. For tho' the vines here bear grapes 3 times a year, nevertheleſs are they not ſufficient to furniſh them with wine. They make a kind of cyder, called by them *Kooi*, of the apple *Akaju*; theſe they ſtamp in a wooden mortar and ſqueeze the juice out with their hands, which after it is ſettled they ſtrain; it appears at firſt like milk, but turns to a pale colour in a few days; its taſte is tartiſh, and apt to ſeiſe the head if drunk in any quantity; after ſome time it turns ſour, and makes very good vinegar. The wine or liquor called by the *Braſilians* *Apy*, is made two different ways: Firſt, the ſlices of the root *Aipimakakara*, a kind of *Mandioka*, are chewed by old women till they are as fluid as a pap, which they call *Karaku*; this they put into a pot, and boil it with a good quantity of water, ſtirring it continually till they think it fit for expreſſion, which done, they call it *Kaviaraku*, and drink it luke-warm. Or elſe they take the ſame root purged and ſliced in thin pieces, which they ſtamp and boil with water as before, which produces a whitiſh liquor, not unlike our butter-milk or whey; they drink it likewiſe warm, its taſte being agreeable enough; they call it *Kacimakaxera*, tho' both kinds are generally comprehended under the name of *Aipy*. The liquor called *Pakoby* is made out of the fruit of the tree *Pakobete*. What the *Portugueſe* call *Vinho da Millo*, is a liquor called *Abaty* by the *Braſilians*, and made of barley or *Turkey* wheat, called *Maiz* by the *Indians*; the liquor *Nandi* has alſo derived its name from that excellent fruit called *Nana* of *Ananas*, being the ſtrongeſt of all their wines or cyders. There is another ſort of liquor called *Vinho da Batatas* by the *Portugueſe* becauſe it is made of the root *Batatas*: The natives call it *Jetici*. Thus the liquors called *Beeutingui* and *Tipiaci* are both made out of the *Farinha* of the *Mandioka* root, *viz.* of the *Beju* and *Tepioja*.

The *Braſilians* are alſo great admirers of *French* or *Rheniſh* brandy, called by them *Kacitata*, and ſwallow it very greedily as often as they can come at it. They are no leſs fond of tobacco, the herb of which they call *Petima*, and the leaves *Petimaoba*. After they have dried the leaves in the air, they lay them before the fire, to render them the more fit for cutting. They ſmoke 1647. in pipes made of the ſhell of the nut *Pindoba*, or of the *Urukuruiba*, *Jocara*, *Aqua*, or ſuch like; to wit, they cut a hole in one end of the ſhell, take out the kernel, and after they have poliſhed them, put a wooden pipe or a piece of reed in the hole. The *Tapoyers* uſe very large pipes made of ſtone, wood or clay, the holes of which are ſo big that they contain a handful of tobacco at a time. Sometimes the *Braſilians* make uſe of our *European* pipes, called by them *Amrupetunbuaba*, and *Broken Katunbaba* by the *Portugueſe*, and *Katgebouw* by the *Dutch*. Whenever the *Tapoyers*, eſpecially thoſe inhabiting the villages, deſcended from the *Tapoyers* called *Kariri*, prepare the liquors *Akavi* and *Aipy*, it is done at the ſame time; then a day being appointed for a general merry meeting, they meet early in the morning at the firſt houſe in the village they belong to, where they conſume moſt of the liquor, and make themſelves merry with dancing; this done they go to the next houſe, where they play the ſame game, and ſo from houſe to houſe, till nothing be left or they can drink no longer. When they find themſelves overcharged with liquor, they ſpew and fall to drinking again, and thus he who can ſpew and drink moſt, is accounted the braveſt fellow of the company.

On the coaſt of *Braſil*.

Salt-pits. On the north-weſt coaſt of *Braſil* are ſeveral conſiderable ſalt-pits: That near the houſe called the *Deſert*, is about three or four leagues diſtant from the river *Aguarama*, of which one branch extends to the eaſt, and diſcharges its water in this ſalt-pit with a ſpring-tide, which is here commonly with the new-moon. It is about 550 paces from the ſea-ſhore, and receives no other water but from the river *Aguarama*. There is no bay or harbour near it, but only a flat ſandy bottom for about half a league diſtance from the ſhore, where you may anchor at three fathom deep. The land-wind which conſtantly blows on this coaſt, commonly ceaſes towards evening, ſo that the veſſels take the opportunity of the night to load ſalt. This ſalt-pit produces every month a certain quantity of ſalt, provided they be careful to ſhut their ſluices as ſoon as the ſame is filled with water, for elſe they are in danger of loſing what they had got before, by the next high-tide. To the eaſt of this ſalt-pit are the famous rocks called *Baxos*, which at low-water may be ſeen from thence; they extend about three leagues deep in the ſea, but don't begin till about a league from the ſhore, betwixt which and the rocks there is a paſſage, where you have ten foot depth at low-water. It ebbs here with the loweſt tide about eight foot, and a weſt-

1647. a weſt-ſouth-weſt-wind raiſes the water to the higheſt.

About five or ſix leagues to the weſt of the houſe called the *Deſert*, is the great ſalt-pit *Karwaratama*, which receiving its water from the ſea, and being detained by ſluices, produces very good ſalt in three weeks time. Five leagues further to the weſt is the river *Maritouva*, the ſecond in rank in thoſe weſtern parts, but has not above twelve foot water at high-tide. On its eaſt point, not above half a league within the mouth, is a very convenient ſalt-pit: Theſe ſalt-pits are computed to be manageable with the aſſiſtance only of 10 or 12 negroes, 10 chriſtians, and about 30 *Braſilians*, and to afford 2000 tuns of ſalt *per annum*, which may be tranſported from thence into the other parts of the *Dutch Braſil* in ſmall barks, during the ſummer ſeaſon. About half way betwixt *Rio Grande* and *Siara*, as likewiſe in *Siara*, near the river *Wapanien*, are likewiſe ſeveral *Salina*'s or ſalt-pits.

Traffick of Braſil.

The chief traffick of *Braſil* conſiſts in ſugar, braſil-wood, and ſuch like; as alſo in tobacco, hides, preſerves, ginger, and cotton, which grows wild here, ſome indigo was likewiſe planted there before my departure; but among theſe, the ſugar and braſil-wood are ſtaple commodities. For ſince the tobacco began to be tranſported into *Holland* from the *American* iſlands, the planting of it was neglected in *Braſil*, where labourers wages being exceſſive high, they could draw much more profit from the ſugar, of which, according to computation, betwixt 20000 and 25000 cheſts were yearly made only in the ſugar-mills of the *Dutch Braſil*, if the harveſt proves very good.

The peopling of Braſil.

The inhabitants of *Braſil* may at preſent be divided into free-born ſubjects and ſlaves; and theſe again conſiſt of divers nations, both natives and foreigners. The free inhabitants of *Braſil* were the *Dutch*, *Portugueſe*, and *Braſilians*, the laſt the natives of the countrey. But the *Portugueſe* did not only ſurpaſs all the reſt, at leaſt ten to one in number, during my abode in *Braſil*, but alſo were in poſſeſſion of all the ſugar-mills and lands, except what was poſſeſs'd by a very few *Dutch*, who had applied themſelves to ſugar-planting, but were for the moſt part ruined by the inteſtine war, being forced to leave all behind them in the country: Beſides thoſe of the free inhabitants, who

Free inhabitants of Braſil.

made it their buſineſs to manure the grounds, there were many merchants, factors, and handicrafts men: The merchants ſold their commodities generally with vaſt profit, and would have queſtionleſs been rich men, had they not vented their goods upon credit to the *Portugueſe*, who were reſolved never to pay them, as the event has ſufficiently ſhewn. The handicrafts men were able to get three, four, five, nay ſix gilders a day, ſo that many returned very rich to *Holland*. Thoſe that kept publick houſes and chandlers ſhops were likewiſe great gainers here, and carried off abundance of ready money. The officers in the company's ſervice whether civil or military, were likewiſe punctually paid, which made many who had lived in the countrey before the beginning of the civil war, and had ſerved the company before, take ſervice again, who were all entertained according to their reſpective qualities and former ſtations. 1647

The Jews.

Among the free inhabitants of *Braſil* that were not in the company's ſervice, the *Jews* were the moſt conſiderable in number, who had tranſplanted themſelves thither from *Holland*. They had a vaſt traffick beyond all the reſt, they purchaſed ſugar-mills and built ſtately houſes in the *Receif*. They were all traders, which would have been of great conſequence to the *Dutch Braſil*, had they kept themſelves within the due bounds of traffick,

The ſlaves of Braſil.

The ſlaves of *Dutch Braſil* were either negroes or natives of the countrey; the laſt of which were either bought in *Maranhaon* being priſoners of war, or from the *Tapoyers*, who likewiſe had made them captives, and otherwiſe, according to their cuſtom, would have put them to death. For it being reſolved immediately, at the firſt entrance of the *Dutch* in *Braſil*, that none of the natives ſhould be made ſlaves (except they were either bought from the *Tapoyers* or brought from *Maranhaon*) the *Braſilians* were ſettled in certain villages to enjoy their own liberty under certain limitations, and permiſſion was given them to aſſiſt the *Portugueſe* in the management of their mills and grounds, for certain wages appointed for that purpoſe; by which means many *Alicas* or villages were filled with *Braſilians* in *Parayba* and *Rio Grande*, who during the time of our government enjoyed the ſweets of a perfect liberty.

Negroes.

Vaſt numbers of negroes of divers nations were entertained in the *Receif*, and the open countrey, for the manureing of the ground, and working in the ſugar-mills of the *Portugueſe*, which could not be done without them, by reaſon of the extremity of the heat of the climate, and the incredible toils they are fain to undergo; ſo that in my time near 40000 negroes were employed in the ſugar-mills betwixt *Rio Grande* and *St. Franciſco*. Moſt of theſe negroes are brought hither from the kingdoms of *Congo*, *Angola*, and *Guinea*; a black ſhining ſkin, flat noſe, thick lips, and ſhort curled hair, is their chief beauty. The luſtieſt and moſt



Negros Playing upon Kalabasses

1647. moſt laborious uſed in time of good trade, to be ſold in *Braſil* for 70, 80, or 100 pieces of eight, nay ſometimes for 1400 or 1500 gilders, but theſe underſtood ſomething more than ordinary: But when trade began to decay, they were ſold for 40 pieces of eight. There was ſcarce a *Hollander* of any ſubſtance but what had ſeveral of theſe ſlaves. They are moſt miſerably and beaſtly treated by the *Portugueſe*, though at the ſame time it muſt be confeſs'd that it is abſolutely neceſſary they ſhould be kept under a ſtrict diſcipline; for they are full of rogueries, ſuperſtitious to the higheſt degree, and ſorcerers: They would often pretend to tell us what ſhips were at ſea from *Holland* for *Braſil*, tho' they were yet on the other ſide of the line, and how to recover ſtolen goods. I remember I happened once to be at a friend's houſe of mine, when I ſaw an old negro enter the kitchen, who came thither to cure a negro ſlave of his illneſs, which he told us was occaſioned by witchcraft. He made the patient riſe from his chair, and taking a piece of wood from the fire-hearth, he ordered him to lick three times with his tongue that end which was burning hot with the glowing coals. The ſame end of the wood he afterwards extinguiſh'd in a baſon of water, and rubb'd the coals in it, till it turn'd as black as ink. This he ordered the ſick negro to drink off at a draught, which he did accordingly, and was immediately ſeized with a ſlight griping in the guts. This done he rubbed both his ſides, and taking hold with his hand of a piece of fleſh and fat above the hip, he made an inciſion there with a knife he pull'd out of his pocket, of two inches deep, out of which he drew a bundle of hair and rags, with a little of the black water that was left he waſhed the wound, which ſoon after was healed, and the patient cured. They are very dextrous at ſwimming and diving, and will fetch a ſingle piece of eight from the bottom of the ſea, where it is very deep. They are alſo excellent fiſhermen, and get a great deal of money by it. They tie three or four great pieces of wood together, this they manage with one oar, and upon it go a good way into the ſea, where they catch great quantities of fiſh with their hooks, and ſo return. It happened in my time, that a certain negro, who was very expert in fiſhing, was ſold three times in a little while; this he took ſo much to heart, that the next time he went thus out a fiſhing, he tied a ſtone to his leg and drowned himſelf. Another negro having conceived a hatred againſt his maſter cut his throat, cut out his tongue, and made a houſe-of-office of his mouth, according to his own confeſſion; he was broke alive upon the wheel, which he endured with an incredible obſtinacy. A negro woman was brought to bed in my time of a child, the hair and ſkin of which were not black, but red. I ſaw alſo a young lad born from negro parents, whoſe ſkin was white, and his hair and eye-brows the like, but curl'd, with a flat noſe like the other negroes. Sometimes I have ſeen old negroes with long grey beards and hair, which looks very fine. 1647.

The Braſilians. The natives of *Braſil* conſiſt of divers nations, diſtinguiſhed by their proper names, to wit, the *Tubinambos*, *Tobajaras*, *Petiguaras* and *Tapuijas*, or *Tapuyers*, or *Tapoyers*. The three firſt uſe one and the ſame language, and differ only in the dialect; but the laſt are ſubdivided into ſeveral nations, differing both in manners and tongue. The *Braſilian* men, which lived among us and the *Portugueſe*, are middle-ſized, ſtrong and well made, with broad ſhoulders. They have black eyes, a wide mouth, with black curl'd hair, and a flat noſe; the laſt of which is not natural to them, but the parents, looking upon it as a great beauty, ſqueeze their childrens noſes flat, whilſt they are very young. They paint their bodies, and ſome likewiſe their faces with divers colours; they have generally no hair about the mouth, tho' ſome have black beards. Their women are likewiſe of a middle ſtature, well limb'd, and not ill-featur'd; they have likewiſe a black hair, but are not born black, but by the heat of the ſun-beams, acquire by degrees a yellow brown colour. The *Braſilians* come ſoon to maturity, and arrive to a great age, and that without diſtempers; they alſo ſeldom become grey, which is likewiſe obſervable in many *European* inhabitants here, who come to the age of 100 or 120 years. This muſt be chiefly attributed to the temperature of the climate, which is ſuch, that in former times many *Spaniards* that laboured under ſome lingring diſtemper, whether in *Spain* or the *Eaſt-Indies*, uſed to come to *Braſil* to partake of the benefit of that excellent air and water; 'tis true, moſt of the children of foreigners are troubled with lingring ſickneſſes, ſo that ſcarce one in three arrives to a ſtate of manhood; but this muſt not be attributed to the air, but rather to the bad nouriſhment. Few cripples or crooked people are to be met with among the *Braſilians*, they being generally very ſtrait and nimble, which is the more admirable, becauſe they never do their children up in ſwathing cloths, except their feet, looking upon it as unwholſome.

Before the *Dutch* got footing in *Braſil*, the *Portugueſe* had made all the natives their ſlaves, and look'd upon it as the greateſt

1647. piece of policy quite to extirpate them, which they did ſo effectually, that whereas about 100 years ago, the captainſhips of *Rio Grande* alone could raiſe 100000 fighting men, ſcarce 300 were to be met with in 1645 and 1646, which had created a mortal hatred in the *Braſilians* againſt the *Portugueſe*; tho' it muſt alſo be confeſs'd, that the late war and ſome epidemical diſtempers did ſweep away many of the natives. The remainders of them liv'd in certain *Aldens* or villages aſſigned them for that purpoſe, where they had their plantations; beſides which they ſerved the *Portugueſe* in their ſugar-mills for a certain monthly pay, which furniſhed them with clothes and other neceſſaries. Their huts are made only of wooden ſtalks, covered with palm-tree leaves. They can't endure the yoke of ſlavery, nor any toil, eſpecially the *Tapoyers*; they live very quietly among one another, unleſs they get drunk, when they ſometimes ſing and dance day and night. Drunkenneſs is a vice belonging to both ſexes here, of which they are ſo fond, as to be paſt remedy, tho' this occaſions often quarrels and other enormous vices among them. They are likewiſe much addicted to dancing, which they call *Guau*; they have ſeveral ways of dancing, one of which is call'd *Urukapi*; they commonly ſing whilſt they are dancing. The children divert themſelves with divers ſorts of games, one is call'd *Kurupirara*, another *Gualbipaie*, and a third *Guaibiquaibibuku*. They will ſleep ſometimes a whole day and night, and would not ſtir then if they did not want victuals. Near their hammocks they keep a fire day and night, in the day to dreſs their victuals, in the night to allay the rawneſs of the air, which here is colder than in moſt parts of *Europe*, becauſe day and night is almoſt of an equal length here throughout the year. 1647.

Their clothing. The inland *Braſilians* of both ſexes, go quite naked without the leaſt covering. But thoſe inhabiting nearer to the ſea-ſhore, who converſe with the *Dutch* and *Portugueſe*, wear only a ſhirt of linnen or callicoe; tho' in my time, ſome of the chiefeſt among them began to take a pride to cloth themſelves after the *European* manner. The wife

The habit of ye inland Brazilians



conſtantly follows her huſband whereever he goes, even in the war. He carries nothing but his arms, but the poor woman is loaden like a mule or ſumpter-horſe. For beſides a great baſket which is tied to her back, (call'd by them *Patigua*) ſhe has another upon her head, with all the houſhold ſtuff in it, or a great baſket with flower; beſides which ſeveral other ſmaller veſſels hang on both ſides, wherewith they take up water for their drinking. The child is carried in a piece of callicoe, which is faſtned

1647. to her, and hangs down from her right ſhoulder. It lies there with its legs wide open, one being ſtretch'd croſs the mother's belly, the other over her ſhoulder. After all this, ſhe carries a parrot or ape in one hand, and leads a dog in a ſtring with the other. Thus they proceed on their journey, without any farther proviſion except a ſmall quantity of *Farinha*; the hedge or open fields ſerve inſtead of inns, which furniſh them with neceſſary food, as the rivers and ſprings with drink; and ſo does the tree call'd *Karageata*, which contains always ſome rain-water within the hollowneſs of its leaves, to the great relief of travellers, who in ſome barren places, do often not meet with a river or ſpring for 12 leagues together. Towards night they hang their hammocks on trees, or elſe faſten them to ſtalks neatly; they make a fire to dreſs their victuals, and againſt the rain defend themſelves with palm-tree leaves. When they are at home, the huſband goes commonly in the morning abroad with his bow and arrow, to ſhoot ſome wild beaſt, or catch birds, or elſe to the ſea-ſide, or next river a fiſhing, whilſt the women are employed in the plantations; ſome women go abroad with their huſbands and carry home the prey. The wild beaſts are caught by them in a different manner; ſome they kill with arrows, others they catch in pits dug for that purpoſe, and covered with the leaves of trees, under which is hidden ſome carrion, the ſcent of which draws them to the pit; this they call *Petaku*. They make alſo certain wooden traps, and uſe divers other ways of catching the wild beaſts, each of which they diſtinguiſh by their proper names. To catch birds they uſe three ſorts of ſnares or nets, call'd by them *Jukana*; the firſt ſort catches the birds by the feet, this they call *Jukanabiprara*; the ſecond entangles them by the neck, which they call *Jukanajuprara*; the third enſnares their bodies, call'd by them *Jukanapitereba*. They kill the fiſhes with arrows, or catch them with fiſhing hooks, their baits being commonly worms, crabs, or ſome ſmall fiſhes. They bait the water where they intend to fiſh, with the leaves of *Japikai*, or with *Timpotiana*, *Tinguy*, or with *Tinguiri*; ſometimes with the fruit call'd *Kururuape*, the root *Magui*, or the bark of the tree *Anda*, which make the fiſh ſwim on the ſurface of the water like dead, when they take them with a kind of a ſieve, call'd by them *Urupema*, made of cane or reed, which they call *Uruguiboandipia*. Their ſea-fiſh they catch with iron hooks, the bait being ſome carrion; they go a good way into the ſea, only upon three pieces of wood faſtened together, which they call *Igapeda*, and the *Portugueſe Jangada*; the wood is commonly of the tree *Apiba*.

Their houſhold ſtuff

The *Braſilians* are not burthened with much houſhold-ſtuff, their hammocks being their chiefeſt care in this kind; they call them *Ini*, are wrought of cotton like net-work, of about ſix or ſeven foot long, and four broad. When they are going to ſleep, they faſten them either to two beams of their huts, or elſe in the open air to two trees, and ſome diſtance from the ground, for fear of ſome obnoxious creatures, and to avoid the peſtiferous exhalations of the earth. The *Tapoyers*, call'd *Kariri*, have very large hammocks, of 12 or 14 foot long, which contain four perſons at a time. The *Portugueſe* women make ſome very fine hammocks, wrought with divers figures in them. In lieu of diſhes and cups they uſe the *Kalabaſſek*, cut in the middle, which are painted without with a certain red colour, call'd *Uruku*, and within with black. Their cans, cups and mugs, are likewiſe *Kalabaſſes* of divers kinds, call'd *Kuite*, *Jaroba*, and *Kribuka*. One of the biggeſt of theſe *Kalabaſſes* hold 30 or 35 quarts; this the *Braſilians* call *Kuyaba*, but when cut thro' the middle it is called *Kuipeba*. The poorer ſort make certain knives they call *Ituque*, of ſtone, as alſo of cane, which they call *Taquoaquia*, but the better ſort uſe *Dutch* knives. Their baſkets they make of palm-tree leaves, they call them *Patigua*; they have alſo ſome made of reed or cane, theſe are with one general name call'd *Karamemoa*. They make alſo large broad baſkets of reeds and branches twiſted together: Theſe they call *Panaku*, and are chiefly uſed for the carrying of the *Mandioka* root. In their journeys they always make uſe of the *Patigua*, but the *Panaku* is uſed by the ſlaves and negroes in the *Receif* for the conveniency of carriage.

Their weapons.

The arms of the *Braſilians* are only bows, arrows, and wooden clubs. Their bows, which they call *Guirapara* and *Virapara*, are made of very hard wood, called *Guirapariba* and *Virapariba*: The bow-ſtrings are made of cotton twiſted, and by them call'd *Guirapakuma*; the darts they call *Uba*, and are made of wild cane. The points of theſe darts are either of wood hardned, or of fiſh teeth call'd *Jacru*, or of bones or cane well ſharpned; ſome have ſeveral points, others but one.

Their way of accounting their age.

Being not in the leaſt acquainted with arithmetick, they compute the number of their years and age by the cheſnuts which grow on the fruit *Akaju*, which cheſnuts they call *Akaguakaya*, as likewiſe *Akajuti* and *Itamabara*, of which they lay one by every year, this tree producing fruit but once each ſeaſon, *viz.* in *December* and *January*;

1647. *nuary.* They begin the computation of their years with the riſe of a certain ſtar, call'd by them *Taku*, or the *Rain-ſtar*, which is always there in *May*; they alſo call the year by the ſame name.

Their religion. The moſt barbarous of the *Braſilians* inhabiting the inland countries, ſcarce know any thing of religion, or an almighty being. They have ſome knowledge remaining of a general deluge, it being their opinion, that the whole race of mankind were extirpated by a general deluge, except one man and his own ſiſter, who being with child before, they by degrees re-peopled the world. They know not what God is, nay, they have no word expreſſing the ſame, unleſs it be *Tuba*, which ſignifies as much as ſomething moſt excellent above the reſt; thus they call the thunder *Tubakununga*, *i. e.* a noiſe made by the ſupreme excellency, for *Akununga* implies as much as a noiſe. They are unacquainted with heaven or hell, tho' they have a tradition among them, that the ſouls don't die with the bodies, but that they are either tranſplanted into devils or ſpirits, or elſe enjoy a great deal of pleaſure with dancing and ſinging in ſome pleaſant fields, which they ſay are behind the mountains. Theſe fields are enjoyed by all the brave men and women, who have kill'd and eaten many of their enemies; but ſuch as have been idle, and never did any thing of moment, are tortured by the devil, unto whom they give many names, *viz. Anhanga*, *Jurupari*, *Kurupari*, *Taguaiba*, *Temoti*, *Taubimama*. They have however ſome ſort of prieſts among them whoſe buſineſs is to ſacrifice, and to foretel things to come; theſe are eſpecially conſulted when they are to undertake a war or journey; they call them *Paye* and *Pey*. They dread ſpirits to the higheſt degree; they call them *Kuripira*, *Taguai*, *Macachara*, *Anhanga*, *Jurupari*, and *Marangigona*, tho' under different ſignifications: For *Kuripari* implies as much as the God of the mind or heart. *Macachara* the God or patron of travellers; *Jurupari* and *Anhanga* ſignify the devil; *Marangigona* implies as much as the *Manes* or remainders of the ſoul after death, which are ſo much dreaded by the *Braſilians*, that ſome of them upon an imaginary apparition of them, have been ſtruck with ſudden death. They don't perform any worſhip or ceremony to thoſe ſpirits, except that ſome pretend to appeaſe their wrath by certain preſents they faſten to certain ſtakes fix'd in the ground for that purpoſe. Some of the *Braſilians* acknowledge the thunder for the ſupreme being, others the *Leſſer Bear* in the firmament, others ſome other ſtars. The *Potiguaras*, a nation among the *Braſilians*, are accounted ſuch ſorcerers, that they bewitch their enemies even to death: They call this manner of witchcraft *Anbamombikoab*. The *Braſilians* that lived among the *Portugueſe* and *Dutch*, did in ſome meaſure follow the chriſtian doctrine, but ſo coldly, that few, when they come to an advanced age, ſhew much zeal for it; becauſe the fundamental articles of our faith are not eaſily imprinted in them, unleſs in their tender years, and when they are remote from their parents. However ſeveral of the *Dutch* miniſters, *viz.* Mr. *Doreſlaer*, and after him Mr. *Thomas Kemp*, have had good ſucceſs in converting many of the *Braſilians* in the *Aldeas* or villages where they preached, the laſt of theſe two being well verſed in the *Braſilian* tongue. Neither were *Dionyſius Biſcareta*, an honeſt old *Caſtilian*, and *Johannes Apricius*, leſs remiſs in performing their duty to inſtruct theſe infidels. There were likewiſe three *Dutch* ſchoolmaſters among them, who taught their young people to read and to write, but theſe were forced to leave their *Aldeas* or villages during the laſt inteſtine commotions raiſed by the *Portugueſe*. 1647.

Their diſtempers and remedies. Many diſtempers which are common in *Europe* are unknown in *Braſil*: They uſe nothing but ſimple remedies, and laugh at our compoſitions. They are very dextrous in applying their remedies, eſpecially their antidotes: They draw blood by ſuction with horn cups, by ſcarification, or opening a vein; inſtead of a lancet they uſe the tooth of a lamprey, call'd by them *Kakaon*, without which no body ſtirs abroad. So ſoon as any one of their acquaintance is fallen ill, they all meet, each offering his remedy, which he has found good by his own experience: Then they begin to cut and ſlice the moſt muſculous parts of the body, either with the thorns of the tree *Karnaiba*, or with fiſhes teeth, till they have drawn as much blood as they think fit, and for that purpoſe ſuck the wounds with their mouths, by which means they pretend to draw all ill humours from the affected part. Vomiting they procure by means of the leaves *Karnaiba*, which being twiſted together, they force down the patients throat. When all theſe pretended remedies prove ineffectual, they proceed to no others; but after ſome conſultation, quite deſpairing of his recovery, knock him on the head with their clubs, looking upon it more glorious to be thus bravely delivered from their miſery, than to expect death till their laſt gaſp. They exerciſe as much barbarity upon the dead carcaſſes of their friends as of their enemies; upon the firſt out of love, againſt the laſt out of revenge; for they tear them to pieces with

1647. their teeth, and eat the flesh like a dainty bit.

Their child-bearing. The *Brasilian* women are extremely fruitful, have very easy labours, and rarely miscarry: For no sooner is a woman delivered, but up she gets to the next river, and without any farther help washes herself there: In the mean while the husband keeps the bed for the first 24 hours, and is made as much of as if he had been lately brought to bed. The mothers lament the death of their infants with howling and crying for three or four days.

How they welcome their friends. They receive their friends after a long journey with open arms and tears, and beating their foreheads against their breasts, in remembrance of the misfortunes they have undergone during their absence. Tho' the *Brasilians* were always supposed to be descended from the race of men-eaters, yet by their conversation with us and other nations, many of them have laid aside their barbarity, and are become as affable and civilized as most of the *European* nations.

The Tapoyers. The *Tapoyers* inhabit the inland country of *Brasil* to the west of these countries in the possession of the *Portuguese* and *Dutch*, betwixt *Rio Grande* and the river *Siara*, as far as *Rio St. Francisco*. They are divided into several nations, distinguished both by their language and names: For the *Tapoyers* bordering upon the utmost confines of *Pernambuko*, are called *Kariri*, under their king *Cerioukejou*; the next to them the *Karirivasu*, whose king was *Karapoto*; then the *Kariryou*, and so farther the *Tararyou*; the last of which were best known unto us, *Janduy* or *John Duwy* being their king; tho' some of them lived under the jurisdiction of one *Karakara*. Divers were govern'd by other kings, *viz. Prityaba*, *Arigpaygn*, *Wahasewajug*, *Tsering*, and *Dremenge*. Those under king *John Duwy* inhabit to the west beyond *Rio Grande*, but change their habitations pretty often: About *November*, *December*, and *January*, when the fruit *Kajou* begins to ripen, they come towards the sea-side, because little of it is to be met with in the inland countries. The *Tapoyers* are very tall and strong of body, exceeding both the *Brasilians* and *Dutch* both in strength and tallness by the head and shoulders. They are of a dark brown colour, black hair, which hangs all over their shoulders, they only shaving it on the forehead as far as to the ears. Some are shaved according to the *European* fashion; the rest of their bodies they keep without hair, even without eye-brows. Their kings and great men are distinguished from the vulgar by the hair of their heads and their nails; the first their kings wear shaved in the shape of a crown, and have very long nails on their thumbs; but the king's relations or other officers of note, wear long nails on all their fingers, except their thumbs; for long nails is accounted a peculiar ornament among them. The *Tapoyers* are very strong; prince *Maurice* being one time in a humour to try their strength and skill in fighting with a wild bull, caused one to be brought within his outward court, which was surrounded with pallisadoes, in order to engage two *Tapoyers* appointed for that purpose. There was a great concourse of people to see this spectacle, when on a sudden two *Tapoyers* (the rest with their wives being only spectators) came in stark naked, without any other arms but their bows and arrows. The bull saw them no sooner enter, but he made towards them, who being extremely nimble, avoided the strokes he made at them with great dexterity, and in the mean while so gall'd his flanks with their arrows, that the beast roar'd most terribly, and being all in a foam, set upon them with all his vigour, which they avoided by retiring every foot behind a tree that stood in the middle of the court, and from thence continued to pierce his sides with their darts, till finding the beast begin to languish by the loss of blood, one of the *Tapoyers* got upon his back, and laying hold of his horns, threw him upon the ground, and being seconded by his comrade, they both kill'd the bull, roasted him under ground, with a fire above it, according to their custom, and feasted upon the meat, with the other *Tapoyers* there present.

1647.

Their clothing. The *Tapoyers* of both sexes, from the king to the common fellow, go quite naked, only that the men hide their privities, by tying the yard in a little bag or net made of the bark of trees; this they close up with a small ribbon call'd *Takoaynhaa*; when they want to piss they unty it, and are more cautious in exposing their privities, than some of the *Europeans*: In the same manner do the rest of the *Brasilians* inhabiting the inland countries. The women of the *Tapoyers* cover their privities only with a handful of herbs, or a small branch of a tree, with the leaves on them: This they thrust barely under a small cord or rope which is fastned round their middle like girdles: In the same manner they cover their backsides; but so carelessly, that both before and behind, great part of both is exposed to view; they change it every day. The men wear also a kind of garland made of the feathers of the bird *Guara* or *Kaninde*, upon their heads, from which certain feathers of the tail of the bird *Arara*, or *Kamud*, hang down behind upon the back; some only tie



tie a cotton ſtring round their hands, in which ſome red or blue feathers are faſtned behind; this they call *Akanbuaçaba*. They have alſo cloaks made of cotton-thread, and woven like a net; in each of the holes they ſtick a red feather of the bird *Guara*, and intermix them with black, green, and yellow feathers of the birds *Aakukaru*, *Kazinda*, and *Arara*, which lie as cloſe together as fiſh ſcales: There is a kind of cap on the inſide of this cloak, which with the reſt covers the head, ſhoulders, and the body, ſomewhat below the middle, ſo that it is worn both for ornament and conveniencies ſake, it being proof againſt the rain; they call theſe cloaks in their tongue *Guara Abuku*. They alſo faſten certain combs of birds with wild honey to their foreheads, theſe they call *Aguana*.

If their fathers or mothers die, they pull every hair out of their heads; they have holes in their ears ſo big, that you may thruſt a finger into them; in this they wear either a bone of an ape call'd *Nambipaya*, or elſe a piece of wood, wrapt up in cotton-thread. The men have holes in their under lips, in which they wear either a cryſtal, ſmaragd or jaſper, of the bigneſs of a haſel-nut: This ſtone they call *Metara*, and if it be green or blue, *Metarobi*; but they are moſt fond of the green ones: They have alſo holes in their cheeks on each ſide of the mouth; in theſe the married men wear a piece of wood of the bigneſs and thickneſs of a good gooſe-quill: Sometimes they wear a ſtone in it call'd *Tembekoareta:* In the holes of their noſtrils, ſome have alſo ſuch like ſticks of wood, which they call *Apiyati:* Their bodies are all over painted with a certain juice of brown colour, ſqueezed out of the apple *Janipapa*; this is even uſed among the women and children. Beſides this, they ſtick feathers of divers colours with wild-honey or maſtick to the ſkin of their bodies, which make them appear at a diſtance like large birds; this they call *Akamongui*. Thus they adorn their arms with garlands made of red and yellow feathers of ſeveral birds, call'd *Aguamiranga*; ſometimes they mix corals among them, which they call *Arakoaya*. They make alſo a kind of bracelets of the rind of the fruit *Aguay*; theſe they wear round their legs, and make a noiſe when they are dancing. Their ſhoes are made of the bark *Kuragua*, and call them *Miapakabas*. Some nations of the *Tapoyers* uſe no bows or arrows, but throw their darts with their hands, but the *Kariri* have bows. Their clubs are made of very hard wood, are broad on the top, and full of teeth or bones, well ſharpned

at

1647. at the end. Round the handle they wind a piece of callicoe, or ſome other ſtuff, and at the end a buſh of feathers of the tail of the bird *Arara*; ſuch another buſh is faſtned round the middle; they call them *Atirabebe* and *Jatirabebe*. Their trumpets which they call *Kanguenka*, are made of mens bones; but thoſe called *Nhumbugaku*, which are much larger, are of horn; they have alſo another ſort made of cane, called *Meumbrapara*. The *Tapoyers* are not ſo good ſoldiers as the reſt of the *Braſilians*, for upon any ſmart encounter they truſt to their feet, and run away with incredible ſwiftneſs. They neither ſow nor plant, not as much as the *Mandioka* root, their common food being fruits, roots, herbs, and wild beaſts, and ſometimes wild honey, which they take out of the hollow trees. Among all other roots they are extremely fond of a certain kind of wild *Mandioka* root, which riſes up to the height of a ſmall tree. Its ſtem and leaves reſemble the other *Mandioka* root, but it is not near ſo good; the inland *Braſilians* call it *Cuguaçuremia*, but thoſe inhabiting near the ſea-ſhore *Cuaçumandiiba*.

They eat alſo mens fleſh; for if a woman happens to miſcarry they eat the child immediately, alledging, that they cannot beſtow a better grave upon it than the belly, from whence it came. The *Tapoyers* lead a kind of vagabond life, like ſome of the *Arabians*, though they always remain within their certain bounds, within the compaſs of which they change their habitations according to the different ſeaſons of the year; they dwell for the moſt part among the woods, and live upon hunting, in which perhaps they excel all other nations; for they will ſhoot a bird flying with their arrows. So ſoon as a woman has conceived, ſhe abſtains from her husband; after ſhe is brought to bed, ſhe goes into the next wood, where ſhe cuts the child's navel-ſtring, with a ſhell, boils it afterwards with the after-burthen, and eats them both. She waſhes her ſelf and the child every morning and evening, neither does her huſband keep her company, as long as ſhe gives ſuck, unleſs he has but one wife. If a woman be diſcovered to have had an unlawful commerce with another man, her huſband turns her away, but if they are catch'd in the act, he may kill them both. The mothers take extraordinary care that the nuptials of their daughters are not conſummated 'till after they have had their monthly times, which they give notice of to their phyſicians, and theſe to the king, who then gives them licenſe to go to bed with the bridegroom, who pays his acknowledgment to her mother, for the care ſhe has taken of her daughter. 1647. If a young maiden be marriageable, and yet not courted by any, the mother paints her with ſome red colour about the eyes, and thus carries her to the king, who orders her to ſit down near him upon a carpet, and blows the ſmoak of tobacco in her face. After which he thruſts his yard into the woman's privities, and if any blood comes forth, he licks it up, which is eſteem'd a ſingular honour among them. For the reſt of the *Tapoyers*, are the worſt of all the other *Braſilians*, being ignorant of any thing that relates to God or religion; neither will they receive any inſtruction of that kind. They have certain prieſts or rather ſorcerers, who pretend to foretel things to come, and to raiſe ſpirits, which they ſay appear to them in the ſhape of a fly, or any ſuch like inſect: When theſe ſpirits diſappear, the women make moſt horrible cries and lamentations, in which conſiſts the main point of their devotion. They avoid night journies, for fear of ſerpents and other venomous creatures, neither will they ſet on a journey 'till the dew be dried up by the ſun-beams. Several nations of the *Tapoyers*, eſpecially thoſe under king *John Duwy*, liv'd always in a good correſpondence with the *Dutch*, unto whom they afforded at divers times conſiderable aſſiſtance; tho' they did not ſubmit to their juriſdiction, but were governed by their own kings. King *John Duwy* had 60 children by 50 wives, tho' ſometimes he had not above 14 wives at a time; theſe *Tapoyers* having a mortal hatred to the *Portugueſe*, uſed to kill them wherever they could meet with them. And thus much may ſuffice concerning the manners, way of living, cloaths, *&c.* of the natives of *Braſil*; I will now proceed to give you an account of my voyage back into *Holland*.

1649. Being ſenſible, as I told you before, that things grew worſe and worſe every day with us here, I with much ado got leave to depart, and accordingly the 23[d] of *July* 1649 I went aboard the ſhip call'd the *Union*, mann'd with 80 ſailors, under the command of captain *Albert Jants*, a native of *Groningen*. We ſet ſail the ſame day in company of the *Blue-Eagle*, and a yacht call'd the *Braſilian*. We left the city of *Olinda* to the ſouth-weſt in the evening; the 25[th] we were under 3 degrees 6 min. with a north-north-eaſt courſe, we ſail'd that day about 28 leagues. The next day we paſs'd the line, with very fair weather and wind; we continued our courſe without any remarkable accident 'till the 1[ſt] of *Auguſt*, when about noon we found our ſelves under 9 deg. 46 min. having ſail'd 29 Leagues in the laſt 24 hours. The ſame evening

The author's return to Holland.

we

1649. we ſaw the firſt time the north-pole ſtar, after we had paſs'd the line. The 2d of *Auguſt* we ſail'd 22 leagues with a freſh gale, and found our ſelves under the 11th deg. 13 min. We continued this our courſe with a fair wind, 'till the 16th of *Auguſt* when we were becalmed, we did not advance above 60 leagues that day, being under the 26 deg. we found it exceeding hot. The 20th of *Auguſt* we had but a ſlender ſouth-eaſt wind, we found our ſelves under 29 deg. 45 min. we were much troubled with heat, for want of the cool winds, that the knives in the cabin were ſo hot, that nobody could hold them in his bare hands, nor any one could touch the deck of the ſhip with his hands or feet. We continued our courſe thus 'till the 29th, when being under 38 deg. 46 min. we made about eight leagues that day. The 3d of *September* being under the 40th deg. 18 min. we eſpied a ſail which we found to be a veſſel bound for *Virginia*. Towards evening we were forced to ſtay ſometime for the *Braſilian* yacht, ſhe having loſt one of her maſts. The next following day in the morning we diſcover'd the iſland of *Corfu*, whither we directed our courſe.

The Flemming *iſlands.*

Corfu and *Floris* are two of the nine iſlands, the *Dutch* commonly call the *Flemming Iſlands*. The biggeſt is *Tercera*, being about 16 leagues in compaſs. It is very rocky, but fruitful, producing a conſiderable quantity of oxen, and abounding in canary and other birds. Here is a ſpring that turns wood into ſtone, and ſeveral hot-ſprings, in which you may boil an egg. The ground ſeems to be full of concavities, which is the reaſon of the many earthquakes here, which over-turn and deſtroy houſes, men and beaſts. The iſland call'd the *Peake* has a rock which reaches to the very clouds, and which as ſome ſuppoſe, may be parallel'd for its height to the peake of the *Canary Iſland* itſelf. Betwixt the coaſt of *Braſil* and the ſaid Iſlands, the compaſs bears due ſouth and north. We were gone eight degrees farther to the weſt, than we intended. About noon we found our ſelves under 40 deg. and 34 min. We continu'd our courſe without any remarkable accident, 'till the 16th of *Sept.* when we ſuppoſed our ſelves to be not far from land, which we diſcovered the ſame evening to the north north-eaſt of us. The 17th we were becalm'd, and catch'd more fiſh than we were able to eat. The 18th we diſcover'd the *Iſle of White* to the north of us, whereabouts one of our ſhips was ſeparated from us; not long after we ſaw the point of *Dover*. The 19th we paſs'd by *Dunkirk* and *Oſtend* with a brisk gale, and about noon ſafely arrived in the road of *Fluſſingen*. I got immediately aſhore, and after having refreſhed my ſelf for five days, I went to *Middleburgh*, where I likewiſe continued five days. From thence I continued my journey over *Dort*, *Rotterdam*, *Delft* and *Harlem* to the famous city of *Amſterdam*, from whence I undertook this *Weſt-India* voyage 1640. From *Amſterdam* I went to *Zwell*, the birth-place of my father *John Nieuhoff*, and ſo to *Benthem*, my native countrey, where I met with my parents in good health, after ſo many fatigues of a tedious voyage; whilſt I was at *Benthem* my father died 1651, the 15th of *May*, in the 85th year of his age, being lamented by all, by reaſon of his good qualifications.

The author arrives at Fluſſingen.

1643.

He arrives at Benthem.

Some troubleſome people laid the loſs of the *Dutch-Braſil* at the door of the members of the great council, *viz. Henry Hamel*, *Adrian Bulleſtrate* and *Peter Jande Bas*, who left *Braſil* 1647. It was alledged that the before-mentioned contracts made with the *Portugueſe* had given them great opportunity of a revolt; for which it was ſaid the ſaid members had received great ſums of money; but it being evident that the ſucceeding members of the great council having taken cogniſance of that affair before their departure, *Nov.* 6, 1646, and in *March* 1647, they were fully cleared of theſe accuſations, the ſame having been tranſacted by ſpecial orders of the council of XIX. in *Holland*; beſides, that the revolts which were about the ſame time in agitation in *Angola*, *Africa*, and the iſland of *Ceylon* in the *Eaſt-Indies*, where no ſuch contracts were made, do ſufficiently teſtify that the foundation of this inteſtine war was laid in *Portugal*, long before the contracts were ſet on foot. What is more ſurpriſing is, how the *Portugueſe*, conſidering we were pretty well provided with forts and garriſons, durſt think of ſuch an attempt; but the reaſon is plain, for what they wanted in ſtrenghth or otherwiſe, they were ſupplied with from the *Bahia*.

What induced the Portugueſe *to rebel.*

The motives that induced the *Portugueſe* to this revolt, were the recovery of their liberty, the difference of their language and manners from ours; but eſpecially of religion, which our people endeavoured to eſtabliſh in *Braſil*; theſe with ſome other concurring circumſtances, ſuch as our preſent weakneſs and the diſpoſition the ſtates were in at that time, to be fairly rid of *Braſil*, gave them ſufficient encouragement for this attempt. It has been the opinion of ſome, that the firſt ſparks of this rebellion might ſoon have been quench'd by ſeiſing ſome of the heads of the *Portugueſe* faction; but it being apparent from the records, that nothing was left unattempted upon that account, tho' without

1649. any conſiderable ſucceſs, the ſame cannot be imputed to the neglect of the government; the true reaſons of the loſs of *Braſil* were the ſlender garriſon, and the inconſiderable number of *Dutch* inhabiting there; nothing being more obvious, than that a conquered country muſt be maintained, either by a ſufficient military force, or ſtrong colonies; the laſt of which was the conſtant practice of the ancient *Romans*, who beſides this back'd them with good armies to keep the conquered nations in obedience. Another way of eſtabliſhing themſelves in a conquered country, tho' a very barbarous one, was introduced by the *Spaniards* and *Portugueſe* in *America*, who by deſtroying the ancient inhabitants, and planting colonies of their own, ſaved themſelves the charge of keeping many forts and garriſons for their defence. Neither of theſe was ſufficiently obſerved by the *Dutch*, after their conqueſt of the *Dutch-Braſil*; for according to their agreement made with the *Portugueſe*, the laſt were left in the entire and quiet poſſeſſion of all the ſugar-mills, plantations, and grounds thereunto belonging, whereby the *Dutch* ſubjects were in a manner excluded from getting any conſiderable footing in the open countrey, eſpecially, ſince ſuch of the ſugar-mills as happened to fall into the companies hands, by forfeiture or otherwiſe, were ſold promiſcuouſly to both nations, and commonly at ſuch exceſſive rates, that the *Dutch* durſt ſeldom venture upon them; the taxes laid upon every thing belonging to the ſugar-mills, and upon the ſugar itſelf, being ſo great, that little profit was to be reap'd from thence, unleſs the ſugar ſold at a very dear rate; whereas on the contrary, we ought after the example of the *Spaniards*, to have endeavoured to draw our ſubjects into *Braſil*, by the granting of conſiderable immunities of honour and other advantages. The military force of the *Dutch* in *Braſil*, was likewiſe not duely regarded; for whereas according to a juſt eſtimate made in 1641, by count *Maurice*, 7076 men were abſolutely requiſite to maintain the *Dutch* garriſons there, the ſtates of *Holland* inſtead of following his directions, did after the concluſion of the ten years truce with *Portugal*, order the great council of the *Dutch-Braſil*, to reduce their forces there to 18 companies of 150 men each; and tho' ſeveral remonſtrances were made upon that head to the contrary, the truth of which was verified by the event; yet the ſuccours ſent from *Holland* arrived ſo ſlowly, that after my departute things grew worſe and worſe every day, and the *Dutch* had loſt all their ſtrong holds 1654. For the *Portugueſe* began to blow up the *Receif* by ſea, with 16 ſhips, and to beſiege it by land 1653, in *December*, with ſuch ſucceſs, that our people being conſtrain'd by hunger, and the garriſon refuſing to fight, were forced to ſurrender the place with all its circumjacent forts to the enemy; ſince which time the *Portugueſe* have remained in the entire poſſeſſion of *Braſil*; the ſame being confirmed to them by the peace made the 6th of *Aug.* 1660, betwixt *Portugal* and the ſtates of the united provinces, in which, among others theſe following points were agreed upon.

Reaſons why Braſil *was not ſufficiently peopled by the* Dutch.

Their want of forces.

Loſe all Braſil.

That the crown of *Portugal* ſhall be obliged to pay to the ſtates the ſum of 80 tuns of gold, either in ready money or ſugar, tobacco or ſalt, or elſe aſſign the ſaid money upon the *Portugueſe* cuſtoms.

That the places taken on each ſide ſhould remain to thoſe, who were then in poſſeſſion of them.

And that a free trade ſhould be allowed to the *Dutch* in *Portugal*, *Africa* and *Braſil*; without paying any more cuſtoms than the native *Portugueſe*.

Mr. *JOHN NIEUHOFF's*

REMARKABLE

VOYAGES

AND

TRAVELS

TO THE

EAST-INDIES.

1653. AFTER a ſhort ſtay in my native country, I reſolved to take a view of the *Eaſt-Indies*, and accordingly embarked at *Amſterdam*, on board the ſhip call'd the *Calf*, carrying 24 guns, under the command of *Cornelius Juſt*. The 23[d] of *Auguſt* 1653, we ſet ſail from the *Texel*, in company of four ſhips more, *viz.* the *Peace*, the *Lamb*, the *Golden Drake*, and the *Naerden*, ſteering our courſe towards the north of *Ireland*, not thinking it ſafe to paſs thro' the channel of *England*. *The author's departure to the* Eaſt-Indies. The 24[th] we ſteer'd our courſe north by weſt, under 54 deg. 46 min. toward evening we caſt anchor at 13, and in the night found 17 fathom water. We continued the ſame courſe the 25[th], under 55 deg. 59 min. 23 fathoms water, and from thence farther till the 29[th], under 28 deg. 24 min. Then we took a north-eaſt courſe with a briſk gale. The 30[th], with break of day we diſcovered at about 6 leagues diſtance *Hetland*, lying at the northern point of *Scotland*, and found ourſelves about noon under 60 deg. 3 min. latitude, and 18 deg. 49 min. longitude. The 1[ſt] of *September* we were under the latitude of 62 deg. 40 min. and 19 deg. 2 min. longitude: We ſteer'd our courſe with a briſk gale to ſouth-weſt by weſt, betwixt the *Fairo* iſlands and *Hetland*. The 4[th], being overtaken by a violent ſtorm, we loſt ſight of one of our ſhips call'd the *Lamb*, under 60 deg. 11 min. We continued the ſame courſe till next day, when about noon we diſcovered the iſle of *Kilda*, under 59 deg. at 6 leagues diſtance to the ſouth-weſt of us, the iſland lying to the weſt of *Scotland*. Thus we purſued our voyage for the moſt part with ſtormy weather till the 13[th], when we loſt our ſmall ſail at the prow of the ſhip: We found ourſelves about noon under 50 deg. 1 min. the weather continuing very ſtormy, but on the 17[th], under 46 deg. 27 min. all our rigging was torn to pieces by a violent ſtorm, in which we got out of ſight of all our company. The 19[th] we deſcried two ſail which we gueſs'd to be our own, as one of them prov'd afterwards to be the *Lamb*. The 20[th] we continued our courſe with a briſk wind to the ſouth-weſt, and under 43 deg. 25 min. diſcovered the *Cabo Finis terræ*, or the point of the lands end of *Spain*, at about 5 leagues diſtance as we ſuppoſed. The ſame evening we met with the ſhip the *Lamb*, which as the maſter informs us, had loſt ſight of the ſhip the *Peace*, in the laſt ſtorm, and had her main-maſt and all her ſails brought by the board. Thus we ſailed forward with a ſtrong gale till the 30[th], when we found ourſelves under the 30 deg. 20 min. and diſcovered the *African* coaſt about five leagues to the ſouth-weſt of us, with a variable wind. The 2[d] 1653. *The iſle of* Kilda.

1652. of *October*, we continued the ſame courſe under the 28 deg. 51 min. of latitude, and 57 deg. of longitude; all along the iſle of *Lancerotta*, one of the canary iſlands, we deſcried a ſhip, but were not near enough to ſee what ſhe was. The next day we found ourſelves about 40 leagues to the north north-eaſt of the iſlands *Fretevanture* or *Forterentum*, under 27 deg. 45 min. and ſail'd thus in 24 hours, 40 leagues among the *Canary* iſlands. The 7th a briſk north wind carried us near 20 leagues forwards to the 19 deg. 14 min. In the evening we found but 14 fathoms water, and a ſmall bird ſettled upon our ſhip, tho' we judged our ſelves above 100 leagues from land. The 9th we were under 17 deg. 41 min. and towards evening ſaw land to the ſouth-weſt of us. The 10th with break of day we diſcover'd the iſle of *St. Vincent*, one of the ſalt iſlands, about five leagues to the ſouth-weſt; we ſteering our courſe ſouth-weſt, betwixt this iſland and that of *St. Anthony*. About noon we caſt anchor in the bay of *St. Vincent* at four fathom water, in a ſandy bottom, and provided ourſelves the ſame day with a whole boat full of freſh water and ſeven goats; I went in another boat to the iſle of *St. Anthony*, to fetch ſome freſh proviſions, but could get none. The 15th our ſhips crew catch'd 10 tortoiſes, and thoſe of the *Drake* as many. The 18th I was ſent aſhore to complement the governor of *St. Vincent*, who received us very kindly, and furniſh'd us with an aſs to carry us back to the harbour. All this while we catch'd abundance of fiſh; and the 20th ſent ſome on ſhoar with ſome toys, which they exchanged with the inhabitants of *St. Vincent*, for oranges, limons, bekoras and pompions. The ſame day the ſhip the *Roſe*, bound for *Braſil*, came to an anchor in the ſame bay. Mr. *Wiltſchut* the elder, commander in chief of the land-forces, came on board us, being much ſurpriſed to meet with me there. Being by this time provided with as many neceſſaries as we were able to get, we were ready to ſet ſail, but were detained by contrary winds 'till the 25th. The iſle of *St. Vincent* is a rocky and barren iſland, affording nothing but a little graſs for the ſuſtenance of wild goats. It is about five leagues in circuit, under the command of a *Portugueſe* governor, who was then a *Mulat*, one born of a chriſtian father and a negro mother.

1653.

The iſle of St Vincent.



The inhabitants here are negroes, tranſplanted hither from ſeveral parts to catch wild goats, the skins of which they ſend to *Portugal*, and the fleſh they can't conſume they

1653. they throw away. They lead a wretched life without women. All their water is brakiſh, and of a taſte like ſalt-peter, except what they gather at the foot of the higheſt rock in bags of goat-ſkins, which being always covered with clouds on the top, ſends a conſiderable quantity of rain water down to the bottom by ſmall natural channels. The governor's reſidence is on the other ſide of the great rock, not far from the ſea-ſhore, near 3 leagues from the harbour. His officers live in hutts cover'd with tortoiſe-ſhells, among trees, the ſhadow of which defends them againſt the exceſſive heat of the ſun-beams: I went in company of ſome belonging to our ſhip, up to the top of the higheſt rock to take a view of the countrey; my companions ſtay'd about half way, but I with much a-do got to the top, where I had a full proſpect of the iſland, but loſt my hat by the violence of the wind, and was forced to lay upon my belly, for fear of tumbling down the precipice. The inhabitants relate a ridiculous ſtory of a king's daughter turn'd into a ſerpent here. As I was coming down and met with the reſt of my companions in the place where I left them, we ſaw at ſome diſtance a great number of crows, which made us haſten thither, and found them buſy in picking the fleſh of a living tortoiſe which was turn'd upon her back; we found above 300 eggs within her, which one of our company kept for his own uſe, but the fleſh was carried on board for the uſe of the ſick.

The iſland of St. Anthony.

The iſland of *St. Antony* lies at about 3 leagues diſtance, juſt oppoſite to *St. Vincent*. On the foot of the eaſt-point of this iſland, is a ſmall ſandy bay, fit for ſmall veſſels only, call'd by the *Portugueſe*, *Et Pracaden Siniao*, whereabouts are about 30 hutts inhabited by *Portugueſe* and negroes, who ſuſtain themſelves moſt by fruit; of which they had no great ſtore formerly, but of late years they have great plenty, which were tranſplanted thither by the induſtry of the *Portugueſe*; the iſle being full of high barren rocks. The vines bear here twice a year, as well as moſt other fruit-trees; they abound in wild-fowl of all ſorts, but eſpecially in wild-goats. We found the heat ſo exceſſive about noon, that it was inſupportable: At our firſt arrival, they refuſed to ſupply us with refreſhments, but after ſome time they began to be more pliable, and furniſh'd us with what fruits we wanted.

The ſalt iſlands.

Theſe iſlands commonly call'd the *Salt Iſlands*, being ten in number, are thus call'd from the great quantity of ſalt they produce, and lies about 160 leagues from the *African* coaſt, being firſt diſcovered by the *Portugueſe* 1572, who inhabit there to this day.

We ſet ſail again the 26th with a moderate north-north eaſt wind, and paſs'd by the *Ilha Blanco* or *White-iſland*; ſo call'd from its *white colour*, being the laſt of the ten, under 15 deg. 11 min. At firſt we had a brisk gale, but were ſoon becalm'd, and advanced very little that day and night. The next following day we had a more proſperous wind, and diſcovered land the next morning, at about 10 leagues diſtance, under 14 deg. 16 min. The 3d of *November*, we advanc'd no more than 3 leagues, becauſe the wind ſlacken'd under the 8 deg. 11 min. Thus we continued our courſe, but very ſlowly till the 18th, when we found our ſelves under 5 deg. being forced much farther to the eaſt than we expected: We were continually afflicted with calms till the 1ſt of *December*; ſo that oftentimes we did not make above 3, 4 or 6 leagues a day, and without meeting with any thing remarkable, found our ſelves under 2 deg. 15 min. The 8th in the morning we paſs'd the line, and the next day were under 50 min. ſouthern latitude, and under 353 deg. 10 min. longitude: Here we were overtaken by a violent *Travado* from the eaſt, with violent ſtorms and rains, which much endamaged ſome of our ſmall ſails, being about noon under 1 deg. 37 min. We often ſaw ſmall black clouds, which in an inſtant increaſed prodigiouſly, and were the certain fore-runners of tempeſts. For the reſt we had favourable wind and weather all this month, and found our ſelves under 33 deg. 52 min. of ſouthern latitude, and under 358 deg. 36 min. longitude, the ſun ſetting 14 deg. 3 min. north-eaſt; in the mean while our ſhip's crew began to be much afflicted with the ſcurvy for want of freſh water. The 1ſt of *January* we ſail'd with a moderate gale under 34 deg. 58. min. about 39 leagues in 24 hours. The 3d we purſued our courſe eaſt to the north, under 35 deg. 38 min. latitude, and 6 deg. 29 min. longitude: The 6th we continued the ſame courſe with a very brisk gale under 35 deg. 4 min. till the 22d, with ſtrong winds and tempeſtuous weather; when in the morning under 31 deg. 36 min. we diſcovered land at about 3 leagues diſtance, to our no ſmall ſatisfaction; we found 58 fathoms water and a rocky bottom; and in the afternoon 55 fathom ſandy ground; we were forced to return deeper in ſea, and in the afternoon approached nearer the ſhoar, but were forc'd to turn back again into the main. The next day about 7 or 8 leagues from the continent, we found a ſandy bottom at 80 fathoms depth, and ſaw abundance of birds; we had very miſty weather for ſome time, during which we loſt the *Drake*. The 25th towards evening we got ſight again of the

1653.

Drake

S.t Anthony



S.t Vincent



1653. *Drake* about 7 or 8 leagues from the ſhore, under 32 deg. 38 min. without being able to fathom the bottom of the ſea. We continued this ſailing to and from the ſhoar till the 28th, but could not make the *Cape of good Hope*, tho' we advanced within a league of the land among the rocks, not without great danger, being then under 32 deg. 58 min. we were therefore oblig'd to chooſe the main again, to our great diſſatisfaction, being ſo diſabled by ſickneſs, and eſpecially the ſcurvy, that we had ſcarce hands enough left to manage our ſhip: Our ſurgeon was a *German* by birth, a very able perſon, but never uſed to the ſea before, was ſo much ſurpriſed at it, that he confeſs'd he never had ſeen the like, and that few of them would recover; but I told him, that in caſe we could make the cape, he would find a remarkable alteration in a weeks time, as ſoon as they touch'd the land, and receiv'd ſuitable refreſhment, which accordingly proved true. The 29th and 30th it was very tempeſtuous weather, when we loſt ſight again of the *Drake*; we were forced to keep the open ſea 'till the 2d of *February*, when we found our ſelves under 34 deg. 39 min. ſouthern latitude, and 36 deg. 32 min. longitude. The 3d being overtaken by a ſtorm from the ſouth-eaſt, we were forced to leave the ſhore again, which continued the next day with ſuch violence that we loſt our main-ſail. The 4th we purſued our courſe with a brisk gale under 33 deg. 40 min. when we again diſcovered land at about 6 or 7 leagues diſtance. Towards evening we came within a league of *Daſſen (Doe Iſland)* at 60 fathoms depth, but were forced to put to ſea again, the ſhore being all along very rocky here: Thus we made to and from the ſhore 'till the 8th, when we ſaw the *Table Mountain* about 9 leagues to the ſouth-weſt of us, and the iſle of *Daſſen* 2 or 3 leagues to the N. W. we found hereabouts 30, 36 and 40 fathoms water, about half a league from the ſhore in a ſandy bottom; we did all we could to make the *Robben Iſland (Rabbet Iſland)* but being becalm'd, were fain to put to ſea again. The 9th we were not above 2 or 3 leagues from the *Table Mountain*, and about noon being favour'd with a brisk S. W. wind got happily into the *Table Bay*, where we caſt anchor at five fathoms depth in a ſandy bottom. Here we met with the galliot the *Fox*, *John Zymentz* maſter. Mr. *Rietbeck*, *Dutch* governor of the *Cape of good Hope*, ſent us immediately a chaloop with fiſh on board, and a pilot to conduct us into the harbour. We had loſt 8 of our ſhips crew in this voyage, and had about 40 ſick, beſides which the reſt were ſo much afflicted with the ſcurvy, that unleſs we had received ſome ſeaſonable refreſhments, we could ſcarce have held it out much longer. I went immediately a-ſhore in company of the captain *Cornelius Juſt*, and brought back good ſtore of muſtard-leaves which were dreſs'd for the ſhip's crew. Much about the ſame time the fiſcal came a-board us, to forbid all commerce with the *Hottentotes* or natives, and to carry a ſhore, without ſpecial leave from the governor; we were alſo ſupply'd with more freſh water, which is very good and eaſy to be got thereabouts. The 12th we ſaw the ſhip the *Drake* making the bay, but was forced to caſt anchor behind the *Robben Iſland*, by reaſon of the violence of the wind; we were then buſy in fiſhing, but the wind blowing hard from the land ſide, could catch none. The 14th the tempeſt being ſomewhat allay'd, we approach'd as near the ſhore as we could; when we got ſight of the top of the *Table Mountain*, which is very often covered with ſmall clouds, a certain preſage of tempeſtuous weather. The ſame day we went to our former employment of fiſhing, and catch'd as much in one draught as the chaloop was able to carry, the governor having 14 wheelbarrows full for his ſhare. They were for the moſt part mullets, which ſwim in ſhoals along the ſhore of this bay. It was not 'till then the *Drake* came into the harbour, having loſt 20 of her crew and 50 ſick, and the reſt being ſo much diſabled by the ſcurvy, that according to their own confeſſion, if it had laſted thus 14 days longer, they muſt have left the ſhip to the mercy of the wind and ſea: We were all this while very buſy in fiſhing as often as the weather would permit; but the 19th it blew ſo hard, that we were forced to make uſe of all our Anchors. The 22d we ſpent in providing ourſelves with freſh water and fuel, the laſt of which our carpenters cut down near the banks of the *Salt-River*. The 23d I, in company of ſome others, went croſs the mountain as far as the *Freſh-River*, to ſee whether we could meet with ſome wild-fowl, we ſaw ſome negroes with about 300 head of cattle, but at the firſt ſight of us they retired. The fields hereabouts were all covered with white lilies and tulips; we ſaw alſo abundance of partridges. Being informed that a *Rhinoceros* was fallen into the boggs, the governor *Rietbeck* ſent ſome fuſileers thither to kill him, but the muſquet ball not being able to penetrate his thick hide, they were forced to cut a hole in it firſt, and ſo to ſhoot it to death; the horn is preſerved there to this day, and ſometimes uſed inſtead of a cup. The 1ſt of *March* we had very fair weather, notwithſtanding which, few of our ſhip's crew were fond to go on ſhoar, every

Violent ſcurvy.

They arrive in the Table Bay.

The ſhip the Drake *enters the bay.*

They take a view of the country.

A Rhinoceros *kill'd.*

1653. every thing being there at an exceſſive rate; as for inſtance, a quartern of *Arack* was ſold for ſix-pence; of brandy for twelve-pence; a water-melon about the bigneſs of a coco-nut for half a crown. The next day being informed that a whale was got on ſhoar in the *Salt-River*, the governor and his lady, our maſter of the ſhip and I, went thither to ſee it, it was a very large one; we got upon the back of it, whilſt the trumpet ſounded merrily, and the negroes were buſied in cutting great pieces of the fleſh which they buried in the ſand in order to eat them. The 6th the governor ſent ſome of his ſoldiers to the *Hottentots*, to endeavour to exchange ſome of their cattle for copper, tobacco-pipes and ſuch like baubles, but they retired at firſt ſight. The 9th it was very calm and fair weather, which made moſt of our crew go on ſhore to waſh their linen, having received orders to be ready to ſail the next day; for which reaſon alſo good ſtore of cabbage and two ſheep were brought a board, a ſlender proviſion for ſuch a number of men, but it was impoſſible to get more for that time. During our ſtay here, we fetch'd daily two ſacks full of cabbage and muſtard-leaves, which being boiled with bacon, was ſerved twice a day, this being the beſt refreſhment we were able to get.

The Cape of Good Hope.

The *Cape of Good Hope* is ſituate under 34 deg. 20 min. ſouthern latitude, which jetts out into the ſea like a demi-iſland being to the north joined to the continent by a ſtrait neck of land, with a bay on each ſide, very convenient for anchorage.

Table Bay.

The *Table Bay*, which has borrow'd its name from the *Table Mountain*, is about 4 leagues in compaſs, ſo that a whole fleet of ſhips may ſafely enter, or go out with any wind, except the north-weſt wind. Near the ſhore of this bay, upon the banks of the *Freſh-River*, the *Dutch Eaſt-India* company has erected a quadrangular fort, call'd the *Good Hope*, well provided with artillery and a good garriſon, in which, at this time, Mr. *Rietbeck* was commander in chief; and had his habitation there, with a well-planted garden of about 15 acres round about it.

The fort.

Upon the banks of the *Salt-River* is likewiſe a ſmall redoubt. Behind the fort of *Good-Hope*, all along the banks of the river, are many fine plantations or gardens, which produce cabbages and ſuch-like herbages, being cultivated by certain *Hollanders* who have ſettled there, and pay only a ſmall annual acknowledgment to the governor for the uſe of their grounds, which are for the moſt part clay, and conſequently fruitful, tho' in ſome parts they are likewiſe rocky and ſandy. Near the ſea-ſhore is great ſtore of ſmall wood, tho' the natives aſſure us, that deeper in the countrey they have trees of a vaſt bigneſs. 1653. Their gardens produce likewiſe olives, oranges, apricocks and peaches; the fields graſs and ſome herbs and flowers; nay, they would bear very good wheat, rye, rice, and barly, were they manur'd as they ought to be. Their field herbs are great and ſmall, ſome with knotty roots, houſleek and ſome other pot-herbs, beſides tulips and white-lilies, *&c.* They have alſo here a certain root which the *Hottentots* roaſt and eat inſtead of bread, and ſometimes make flour of them; ſome taſte like our potatoes or cheſnuts, tho' they have others that are much ſweeter, not unlike our anniſeed. The *Dutch* have planted many thouſands of vines on a hill adjacent to the fort, they bear very plentifully, but the wine is of a crab-like taſt. The worſt of all is, that the winds which ariſe from the clouds in the mountains, blow in the ſummer, eſpecially about *July*, with ſuch violence, that they tear up all by the roots, at which time it is very dangerous landing at the cape. For the reſt the air is very wholeſome here, being always clear, and neither too hot nor too cold. Their winter is in *June* and *July*, when it freezes ſometimes, that you may ſee Ice of the thickneſs of the back of a large knife. In *October*, *November*, and *December*, there blows always a ſouth wind, which produces a cool air, as the north wind does in *Holland*; and in this ſeaſon they are troubled with violent rains, which however render their ground very fruitful.

What creatures are at the Cape.

This countrey likewiſe abounds in all ſorts of wild and tame creatures: They have here birds they call *Pinguwyns*, *Flamingos*, *Antenayas*, *Alkatraces*, *Fayſons*, *Gavoytoyns*, *Garagians*, &c. The *Pinguwyns* are ſhort-legged, and may ſoon be taken, but are not to be forced from their neſt without a good ſtick, becauſe they will bite and defend themſelves there to the utmoſt. They abound alſo in partridges and pheaſants, geeſe, quails, crows, ſparrows of divers kinds, rock-ducks with yellow necks, teal, wood and water ſnipes, and a kind of demi-ducks; there is alſo a ſort of black birds here of the bigneſs of a ſmall gooſe or large duck, call'd by us cormorants, wild peacocks, blue, white and black cranes. The white ones are indifferently large, the black ones of the bigneſs of our ſea-gulls, living for the moſt part in the marſhes; they have a kind of reed-birds with red necks and legs, monkeys, hawks of divers kinds, ravens, magpies and very large oſtriches, which can reach with their long necks a man on horſe-back. They are gray, and run with their wings ſpread as ſwift as a horſe; they live upon herbs, but ſometimes devour likewiſe ſtones, copper and iron. They

Betwixt page 149 & 150.

A Mapp of the Cape of GOODHOPE with its true Situation.

MARE ÆTHIOPICUM.

Table Bay

A Rock

Table Mt.

Wind Mt.

Lyon Mt.

Saddle Mt.

Leopards Mt.

Barron Grounds

Barron Grounds

Downs

A Ridge of Stony Rocks

Very Good Grounds

Grönds not fitt for Tillage

Good Pasture ground in this Valley

Inaccessable Mountains

Wood valley

Table bay

Robben Isle

Dassen Isle

Zout-Pan

A Road where our People took through ye Countrys

the Line where they intended to have cutt through the ground

Whale Rock, so called from the huge Whales often seen there

Duytsche mylen 15 in een graet.

Eng. & Fren. Lea. 20 in one deg.

1653. have likewiſe certain birds not unlike our geeſe, which lay eggs without yolks, as big as a common gooſe egg. They are ſo full, and taſte ſo much like fiſh, that they are not eatable. Another kind of geeſe they have ſomewhat leſs than ours, tho' their legs are larger, with grey ſpots all over their bodies; they are not to be tam'd, becauſe they kill any other bird that comes within their reach.

The Pinguwyns. Formerly the ſea-ſhore uſed to abound with certain birds call'd *Pinguwyns*, both black and white; their ſkin is very hard, and are of the bigneſs of an ordinary gooſe. They live both upon land and in the water; they have a fin on each foot, which makes them ſwim very ſwiftly after their prey the ſmall fiſh, which is the reaſon their fleſh is of a rank taſte, and ſcarce eatable, unleſs it be ſeven times boil'd in freſh water, and afterwards fry'd with butter; they make their neſt, and lay their legs in hollow places in the ſand.

The Flamingos. The *Flamingos* is a very fine bird, reſembling a crane, but with a crooked bill. They are pale red, tho' ſome of their feathers are half white and half black, but the uppermoſt feathers which cover the reſt, are of a roſy colour.

Their oxen are very fat and thick ſet, with long crooked horns, tho' ſome have their horns bent back cloſe to the neck; others have no horns at all, they are generally a foot and a half taller than our oxen.

Sea Cows. Among other creatures they have here thoſe they call *Sea Cows*, being much bulkier than an *European* ox. They are without horns, but have long ears and round eyes, with a ſhort tail, thick legs and feet like an elephant. They have no hair upon their bodies, but prodigious large teeth. They feed upon graſs, which they find in the marſhes near the lakes, where they duck under water as long as they pleaſe, ſo that they are ſeldom to be ſeen or catch'd. The fleſh is like other beef, but ſomewhat coarſer; when it is ſalted, it appears and keeps like the ordinary *Dutch* ſalted beef.

They have likewiſe here what they commonly call *Iron Pigs*, with long ſpikes, which by drawing the ſkin together, can ſhoot at thoſe that come too near them with ſuch force, as to wound them mortally. A dead lion was once found here, with ſuch a ſpike ſticking in the breaſt, which had queſtionleſs cauſed his death. The ſkin is hung up, and to be ſeen in the fort to this day. They abound alſo in hares, wild goats and rabbits; and deeper in the country they have tygers, lions, wolves, leopards, *Rhinoceros*'s, deer, cows, calves and rock-does. They have plenty of ſheep, which the inhabitants exchange for copper, tobacco, tobacco-pipes, and ſuch like baubles. They bear no wool, but hair like our goats; their legs are long, and the tail conſiſts of one long and thick piece of fat, which weighs ſometimes 20 pound and above. 1653.

On this cape is alſo a certain creature call'd a *Jackal*, being betwixt a fox and a dog, with grey hair; it roars frightfully in the night time, being very greedy after men's fleſh, ſo that it will dig ſometimes ten foot deep to come at a dead carcaſs: It is ſaid to be the moſt quick-ſcented of all creatures, and by its ſcent to diſcover any carrion that is near at hand to the lion. Among others, they have likewiſe a certain wild beaſt in ſhape and bigneſs like an elephant, but with two horns on the top of the noſe; its tail is likewiſe like that of an elephant, but has a buſh of black hair on the head where it joins to the neck, with two ſtrait and round horns, with ſhort mouſe-coloured hair all over the body. On the top of the *Lions Mountain*, (ſo call'd from its reſemblance to a ſleeping lion) are great numbers of baboons, which are ſo unlucky, that they will ſometimes with ſtones, force thoſe who aſcend the mountain to turn back. However, moſt of your ravenous beaſts, ſuch as lions, leopards, wolves, jackals and tigers, are but rarely to be met with near the ſea-ſhore, where they are almoſt rooted out by the inhabitants; a certain reward being ſet for every one that kills any of theſe beaſts, of which ſeveral ſkins hang up in a gallery of the fort. They have alſo ſea and land tortoiſes in great quantities, and the woods furniſh them with plenty of honey, which the bees hide in the deepeſt hollowneſs of the trees. Neither are they without dogs, which are commonly of a red colour, and have ſhort tails. *The Jackals.*

There is here a certain kind of fiſh call'd by the *Dutch* the *Hottentots* fiſh, becauſe the *Hottentots* are very dextrous in taking them. They are very fine fiſhes, and taſte like our cods. Formerly they uſed to catch abundance of ſeals, but now moſt of their fiſhes are unknown to us. In the *Table Bay* are alſo whales in abundance, but they are too lean to afford any conſiderable quantity of oil. Near the ſea-ſhore you meet with the fiſh call'd by *Latines Torpedo*, by the *Grecks* in the ſame ſenſe *Naroe*, by the *Spaniards* *Hugia*, and by the *Dutch Krack Fiſh* or *Lazy Fiſh*, not becauſe of its lazineſs in ſwimming, but of its hidden qualities, which as is reported, conſiſts in this, that when it finds itſelf in diſtreſs, it ſends forth a certain juice, which ſeizes the fiſhermen with a cramp in all their limbs. The inhabitants here are call'd *Hottentots* by the *Dutch*, by reaſon of their ſtammering. *The* Hottentots *fiſh.* *The fiſh* Torpedo. *The* Hottentots *and their habits.*

The men here appear for the moſt part naked,

1653. naked, having only a kind of a cloak made of doe, ſheep, or rabbit ſkins ſowed together, hanging from their ſhoulders down to their buttocks, faſtned under the chin with a ribband, with the rough ſide outward in the ſummer, and the ſame turn'd inſide in the winter. When they are travelling they wear over this another cloak with the rough ſide outwards. Their ſhoes are made of *Rhinoceros* ſkin without any heels, tied together on the middle of the feet with two leathern ſtraps. In the night time, or in rainy weather, they wear caps of lamb ſkins with the woolly ſide inwards. Their privities they cover with a piece of tiger's ſkin or ſuch like, which is tied behind with two leather ſtrings. In their hair, which is ſhaved in ſome places of the head, they twiſt ſmall copper plates, horns, and pieces of coral. The women wear cloaks of lamb ſkins like the men, with the rough ſide inwards, tho' ſomewhat longer; beſides which they cover their bellies and buttocks, as alſo their privities, with another four-ſquare ſkin. On their heads they wear caps of doe, ſheep, and rabbit ſkins, tied round about with a broad ſheep-ſkin ſtrap. Their ſhoes are the ſame with the men. Such men or women as are rich in cattle, greaſe not only their bodies and faces, but likewiſe their cloaks and caps with ſuet, but the poor wear no cloaks at all; ſo that greaſineſs is among them both an ornament and a token of riches. In both ears they wear ſtrings of coral, each weighing commonly four ounces; about their necks copper beads, round the arms they wear an ivory ring, and a ſtrait copper ring about their wriſts. When the women go abroad, they commonly have an empty leathern bag hanging down from their ſhoulders, in which are only ſome baubles, but if they have a young child it is carried in this bag. They wear ſtinking guts twiſted twice or thrice round their legs for an ornament, or elſe dried guts, which ſerve them as a defence againſt pricking of thorns, and make a rattling noiſe when they are dancing and merry making. The men wear them likewiſe about the neck, and hang their tobacco-pipes and other toys in them.

Their arms. The arms chiefly uſed among the *Hottentots* are javelins, being ſticks of 3, 4, or 5 foot long, pointed at the end with a ſharp broad piece of iron; theſe they make themſelves, and uſe them with great dexterity. They have alſo ſome bows and arrows, but are as yet quite ignorant of the uſe of fire arms. When they go abroad they carry this javelin, call'd by them *Aſſagaye* in one, and an oſtrich feather, or a ſmall ſtick with a wild cat's tail on the end, in the other hand, wherewith they defend themſelves againſt the gnats and other inſects.

1653. The *Hottentots* are very naſty and aukward in eating, for they are ignorant of any thing that relates to cookery, but devour raw pieces of fleſh or carrion, as greedy as dogs. The guts themſelves they ſwallow down without waſhing or dreſſing, after they have only ſqueezed them a little. For want of carrion they eat dead ſtinking fiſh, ſuch as they meet with near the ſea-ſide, muſſels and ſuch like. They kill no cattle except it be rendered uſeleſs by ſickneſs or age, except it be a ſheep againſt a wedding dinner. The fleſh of ſea-dogs or rabbits is a dainty with them, which they devour either quite raw without cleanſing, or ſometimes broil it a little upon coals. They cut and eat the bacon of dead whales which happen to be caſt aſhore with great eagerneſs; nay they drink the oil which is drawn from thence by the heat of the ſun, like water. Some bury pieces of this bacon in the ſand for their future uſe. However their beſt and daily food are certain roots, not unlike our large potatoes, which the women dig up near the rivers and in ſome other places, thoſe they eat either broil'd or boil'd. They are very eager after our wheat or rice bread which is baked there, and willingly exchange it for cattle. 1653. *Their food.*

Their drink. Their chief drink is water, or milk which their cattle affords them. 'Tis incredible how fond they are of brandy or *Spaniſh* wine, but a ſmall quantity makes them drunk, when they baul out fearfully, and are very unruly.

Their complection. Thoſe inhabitants near the cape are of a brown olive colour, like the *Mulats*, which however is not their natural complection, but acquired by art, for they broil certain herbs with greaſe, wherewith they beſmear their bodies and faces to make them ſwarthy, it having been found by experience, that a girl, which was carried into the fort immediately after ſhe was born and brought up there, proved of the ſame complection with the beſt of our *European* women. They are of opinion, that in caſe they don't frequently beſmear themſelves thus from that time of their birth, they ſhall be ſubject to the dropſy, a diſtemper to which many of the *Africans* are moſt ſubject, as the *Abyſſines* have one thigh ſwell'd twice as thick as the other. Upon the arrival of our ſhips on the cape, they get into the cook's room, and with the fat and black of the kettle, beſmear their hair and faces to make them ſhine the better; this being look'd upon as a great piece of beauty among them, tho' it makes them ſmell very rank, eſpecially if they put greaſe into the gaſhes which they make in their ſkin for that purpoſe, when you may ſmell them at 100 yards diſtance.

Their conſtitution and habit of body. They are generally lean, ſhort and ugly, yet

1653. yet they have black quick eyes, and very good white teeth. Their noſes are ſomewhat flat, tho' not always, and the lips, eſpecially the uppermoſt, very thick. Their foreheads are broad but wrinkled, and the hair of the men is curl'd and ſhort like lambs wool, but very naſty and greaſy. The women have thicker hair than the men, the laſt of which pull out all their hair upon their chin. The men have very well made legs, but ſlender calves, and are ſo nimble as to be able to out-run a ſtrong bull, and ſtop him in his full career. The women eſpecially have very fine and ſmall feet, with flat bellies and round buttocks; their hands are very well ſhaped, but their fingers and nails very long. The mens privities or yards are very large, but have only one ſtone; for ſo ſoon as a male child is born, the mother cuts out the right ſtone to make it the more fit for running, and afterwards gives it ſome ſea-water and tobacco. The women, eſpecially thoſe that are married, have long breaſts which are always bare, and when they are ſuckling their infants, hang backwards over their ſhoulders. The inſide of the womens privities are ſo relaxed that they hang out. Their chiefeſt riches conſiſt in their cattle, which they never kill but when forced thereunto, either by ſickneſs or age of the beaſt.

Their tongue. They ſtammer much in their ſpeech, and bluſter out their words like a turky-cock; they make uſe of no letters, neither do they know what writing and reading is; ſome however have been taught to ſpeak, read and write *Dutch*, which ſhews them to be apprehenſive enough. For the reſt of the *Their ſtupidity.* *Hottentots* are ſo very ſtupid, that they are not able to form to themſelves the leaſt idea of attacking or defending a ſtrong hold; a houſe of brick, ſuch as is proof againſt fire, being as profitable againſt them as the beſt fort, for if you encloſe them in a houſe, and only ſhut their doors and windows faſt, they are as ſafe here as in the ſtrongeſt priſon, having not the leaſt ſenſe to open them for their deliverance, in which they are inferior to beaſts, which commonly endeavour to deliver themſelves from bondage. Notwithſtanding the *Hottentots* are ſo ſtupid, and in my judgment, the moſt wretched nation upon earth, there are ſome among them that want not cunning, eſpecially if they are brought up to it; an inſtance of which we ſaw in our time in two young fellows, who were carried from hence to *Batavia*, where they were inſtructed in ſpeaking, reading and writing of *Dutch*. One of them was employed as a ſervant by the general director, *John Maet Zuicker*, and after ſome time was ſent back to the cape to ſerve as an interpreter there. I met with him at my firſt return from the *Eaſt-Indies*, among the *Hottentots*, and aſk'd him whether he would not rather be with us where he lived much better? he told me, he would rather be with his own countrymen. I underſtood afterwards, that this fellow had proved the occaſion of great miſchief and differences among the *Hottentots*, and that ſeveral had been kill'd in the quarrel on both ſides. At laſt he fell again into the hands of the commander of the cape, who baniſh'd him to the *Robben Iſland*, where he died. Theft they puniſh with a baſtinado, and ſo they do murther, not out of any regard to God Almighty, but for cuſtom's ſake. They talk of one *Hunumma*, who has the diſpoſal of rain and fair weather, but they pay no adoration to him. 1653.

Their marriage. Marriage is in pretty good eſteem among them, tho' a man marries as many wives as he pleaſes. The maid, as ſoon as ſhe is betrothed, performs the oath of fidelity in the following manner: The mother cuts of the firſt joint of her daughters little finger, which is tied to her future huſband's finger, this they bury, and afterwards kill a cow for their wedding dinner. The maids are diſtinguiſh'd from the married women by green twigs which are twiſted round their legs; theſe are taken off at the wedding day, and inſtead of them the dried guts of the cow kill'd for the wedding dinner put on; theſe when they dance make a noiſe, which ſeems very agreeable to them.

They have ſomething of religion. 'Tis true the *Hottentots* are the moſt barbarous upon earth; notwithſtanding which, I can't agree with thoſe that will not allow of any religious worſhip among them; it being the opinion of all learned men, that no nation is ſo barbarous but what has ſomething of religion, be it true or falſe. For they adore the moon with unuſual outcries; and it is not improbable but that they pay the ſame devotion to the ſun, becauſe they follow its courſe as much as is poſſible, by changing the paſture of their cattle; for when the ſun comes to the tropick of *Capricorn*, it has been obſerved that they feed their cattle on the ſouth-eaſt ſide of the rivulet, but when the ſun returns to the tropick of *Cancer*, they go to the north-ſide; if it happens to rain very hard, they ſhelter themſelves in their huts, ſeem to be fearful, and don't creep out till it be fair weather. Then they begin to be very merry, lifting up their heads and eyes to heaven, which is interpreted by us as a kind of thankſgiving; for when they are aſked why they hide themſelves during the rain, they anſwer, that the *Great Captain* being incenſed againſt them, does puniſh them with this element, which he knows to be contrary to their nature. By this *Great Captain* they queſtion-

1653. leſs underſtand the ſupreme Being; for if you ſpeak to them of God, they are unwilling to hear it, and puniſh ſuch among them as make uſe of it; alledging that it is not ſufficient to expreſs the glory of the ſupreme Being. If you talk of the devil they point to the ground Concerning the reſurrection, they are of opinion, that thoſe that die near the cape, ſhall ariſe again behind the mountains: But perhaps all this they may have learned from the *Portugueſe* and *Dutch*. They frequently ſkirmiſh with one another, commonly for the conveniency of paſtorage, ſo that ſometimes ſix or ſeven are left dead upon the ſpot.

Divers nations of the Hottentots.

The *Hottentots* are divided into ſeveral nations, known by different names. Thoſe inhabiting near our fort are by the *Dutch* call'd *Capemen*, but in their own tongue *Chouriequa*; they are the moſt cunning of all the reſt, by their frequent commerce with the *Dutch* and other *Europeans*; they live for the moſt part upon roots, fiſh and muſſels. Somewhat deeper in the country live thoſe commonly call'd *Tobacco Thieves*, becauſe they uſed to ſteal the tobacco out of the fields, which is the reaſon the *Dutch* plant no more tobacco there; in their own tongue they are call'd *Korrochaukon*. There is another ſort call'd *Chemakwa*, much more potent and richer than the *Capemen*, yet don't approach in power to the *Cochukwas*, who living ſtill deeper in the country, are accounted many thouſand ſtrong, and have vaſt herds of cows and ſheep; they were then under the juriſdiction of two captains, the firſt call'd *Odoſoy*, the other *Monomana*. The firſt of theſe two had married the ſiſter of our interpreter's wife in the fort, and being invited thither by Mr. *Rietbeck*, the governor, he at laſt, after much enquiry concerning his quality, for fear of demeaning himſelf, gave him a viſit. They rid out together a hunting, when *Odoſoy* had the misfortune to be ſet upon by a fierce lion, who certainly would have torn him to pieces, had not his followers kill'd the lion with their javelins; however he did not eſcape without being ſorely wounded on the neck, the fleſh was all torn from one of his ſhoulder blades, and his face all miſerably maul'd: Being judged paſt recovery, the governor offered him his own ſurgeon, but he would not accept of him, truſting more to thoſe of his own nation; tho' the ſkill of theſe ſurgeons among the *Hottentots* reaches no farther than to cure a green wound, which they ſcarce ever perform without leaving a great dent or ſeam. They carry their remedies about them, and commonly have a parrot or ſome ſuch creature (not unlike our mountebanks) along with them. Their herbs they keep in tortoiſe ſhells, but the roots, claws, teeth, and horns of beaſts (theſe being the ingredients of their phyſical preparations) are faſtned to a ſtring, which they in the ſame manner as our tooth-drawers hang about the neck. 1653.

There is another nation of the *Hottentots* call'd by the *Dutch Sardiniamen* or *Saldanhas* (from a bay of that name) the natives call them *Krijegoekwa*. Some of the *Hottentots* relate, that to the north-eaſt of thoſe call'd *Kochukas*, there is a potent nation dwelling in ſtone-houſes, that they are not black, and governed by the ſame laws as we are. Some ſuppoſe them to be a people inhabiting the mountains of the moon, but conſidering they are ſaid to underſtand gold and ſilver, and to agree in many other things with the *Europeans*; our people judge them to be a colony of the *Portugueſe* that have tranſplanted themſelves thither from *Mozambique*. The *Dutch* have ſeveral times attempted to find out a paſſage thither by land, but without ſucceſs, having always been forc'd to turn back for want of water. They alſo talk much of two other nations call'd *Heukumqua* and *Grocman*. The *Hottentots* or inhabitants here are not ſubject to one head, and what reverence they pay to their captains, is more out of cuſtom than any ſenſe of duty; they have no fix'd habitations, but lead a vagabond life like the antient *Scytes* and *Arabians*, carrying their wives and children along with them. They are not very deſirous of gold and ſilver, unleſs ſome few that converſe with the *Dutch*, and know the conveniency of buying from them what they ſtand in need of; for otherwiſe copper is in the greateſt eſteem with them. Boats they have none, being extremely fearful of water, and therefore venture ſeldom farther than to their knees. They are of a very lazy temper; moſt of their traffick conſiſts in cows and ſheep, which they exchange for copper and corals; but after the bargain is ſtruck, they expect an additional preſent of tobacco, pipes and brandy, which has been introduced among them by foreigners. The ſeamen do alſo ſometimes ſwap with them for oſtrich feathers, and ſmall tortoiſe ſhells call'd *Harego*. It is to be admired how they ſhould make ſo much account of copper, which they daily tread under their feet, it being certain that very good copper mines are to be found hereabouts. The *Dutch* have at divers times attempted ſeveral land journeys into the country; as for inſtance, in the year 1660, when they diſcovered two nations, *viz.* the *Illunha* and *Namakkawa*; they ſuppoſed to have not been very far from the *Portugueſe*, becauſe they thought to have heard a cannon ſhot at a diſtance. The inland country ſwarms with wild fowl, ſuch as wild geeſe, ducks and teal, but they are ſo ſhy as not 1653.

1647. to come within reach of a gun, which is the reaſon that the governour's huntſman ſets up ſmall huts of green boughs, from whence he ſhoots them, this being the only way to come at them. Among the mountains are abundance of rocks, and ſome of them contain freſh water in their concavities. Several of our people as they were going one day up the mountains to take a view of the circumjacent country, found a certain rock-ſtone of four fathom long, and one and a half broad, being hollow in the middle, of the depth of a quarter of a yard, where they met with good ſtore of fine freſh water. Here are oſtriches of an extraordinary bigneſs; they are ſo ſwift as to outrun a horſe when they ſet up their wings, and thus by the help of the wind are forced forward, no otherwiſe than a ſhip under ſail. Their large legs and feet are a great addition to them, by the help of which they trot on with ſuch a force and nimbleneſs that like a horſe running down a hill, they are ſcarce to be ſtopt. The ſame way of ſetting up their wings has been obſerved in the tame ſwans. But before we leave this cape, I will give you a ſhort account of the *Lions Mountain*, the *Table Mountain* and *Table Bay*, as likewiſe of the *Robben Iſle*.

The Table Mountain. There are two very high mountains near this cape, *viz.* the *Table Moutain* and the *Lions Mountain*. The firſt is ſo call'd from its flatneſs on the top like a table, being about two leagues high, but ſmall in circumference, and for that reaſon of very difficult acceſs. It is divided from another adjacent mountain, call'd the *Devil's Mountain* by a vaſt cliff. Towards the ſea-ſide it is bare, without any graſs or trees, but on the land-ſide you ſee very agreeable woods, with many tall ſtrait trees fit for building; and towards the foot abundance of leſſer trees for fuel. Among the reſt are a great ſtore of wild almond-trees, but the fruit is very bitter; and if we may believe the *Hottentots*, poiſonous; wild pine-trees are here likewiſe in abundance, they grow very tall, but bear nothing but a huſk.

Table Bay. The *Table Bay* is ſituate under 34 deg. and ſome min. about 5 leagues more to north, this being the moſt ſouthern point of *Africa*. It is a very fine bay, tho' on the ſouth-ſide of the *Robben Iſland* are ſome rocks call'd the *Whale*; a large ſhip may anchor in this bay, from 9 to 7 fathom water, but yachts at 4 or 5 fathom in a good ſandy ground. There is however no truſting to a ſingle anchor, by reaſon of the bluſtring ſouth-eaſt winds which blow often here.

Robben Iſland. At the entrance of the *Table Bay* you ſee the *Robben Iſland*, thus call'd from the vaſt quantity of *Sea Robben (Sea Rabbits)* which are found here. It is not very high, and about two leagues in circumference. In the towns ſome rabbits have been put by the inhabitants which thrive very well. The ground produces a certain herb in great plenty; it has yellow leaves almoſt like cowſlips, which fatten the ſheep exceedingly. 1653.

Daſſen Iſland. To the north-eaſt of the *Robben Iſland* lies the *Daſſen Iſland*, under 34 deg. 33 min. It has got its name from the vaſt numbers of *Daſſen (Does)* which formerly were found there, but are of late years much diminiſh'd. It is about a league in compaſs, and produces likewiſe many ſea rabbits and *Pinguwyns*. It is inhabited by four families only with their ſlaves, whoſe chief employment it is to breed pigs and poultry, and to draw oil from the ſea-rabbits, which they ſell to the inhabitants living in and near the fort. Before the bay of *Saldanha* are ſeveral ſmall iſlands, where thoſe of the *Daſſen Iſland* have their liberty of fiſhing and hunting; they catch vaſt quantities of partridges, mullets and other fiſh. The two chief rivers of this cape are the *Salt* and *Freſh Rivers*. Beſides theſe there is another rivulet, which ariſing from among a neighbouring wood, exonerates itſelf in the *Salt River*. It is not above 12 or 14 foot broad, but very deep. Not far from the ſource of this, ariſes another rivulet among the marſhes near the *Wood Bay*. It runs ſouth-eaſt thro' the downs, (which extend as far as *Cabo falſo*) and diſembogues itſelf into the ſea.

The Cape ſubject to ſtorms. No place in the world is more ſubject to ſtorms than the *Cape of Good Hope*, ſo that it would be impoſſible for ſhips to abide here, had not nature provided againſt theſe inconveniencies by the ſeveral commodious bays that are here. Among thoſe the bay of *Saldanha*, commonly call'd *Sardinia*, is none of the leaſt conſequence, where ſhips may ride ſafely at anchor without the leaſt danger, and were it not for the want of freſh water, it might claim the preference before the *Table Bay* itſelf. The winds blow generally throughout the year very hard here, but eſpecially the ſouth-eaſt wind, which blows from *October* to *April* (call'd the *South-Eaſt Monzon*) and tears ſo terribly thro' the clift, (betwixt the *Table* and the *Devil's Mountain*) that except the country and ground were very ſmooth and hard here, it would be impoſſible for any ſhip to ride it out; from *April* until *October*, the north-weſt wind blows with not much leſs violence, (call'd the *North-Weſt Monzon*) but yet not altogether ſo fierce as the ſouth-eaſt wind, there its violence is more obſervable on the land-ſide of the clift. The main difference betwixt theſe two winds here is, that the ſouth-eaſt wind always produces dry weather, whereas the north-weſt wind brings rains,

1653. rains, which are very pernicious to the fruit.

By what ſigns to diſcover the nearneſs of the cape.

So ſoon as you come near the ſight of the cape, under the 34 deg. of ſouthern latitude, you meet with certain ſigns and tokens, by which you may diſcover whether you are far from land or not. I don't much wonder that ſome of the ancient authors who have given us an account of the *Indies*, affirm, that when they were at a loſs to find out whether they were near land or not, they uſed to let fly ſome birds, and according to their flight, to direct their courſe. Tho' this is out of date now, yet certain it is, that the birds are the beſt guide as to thoſe who ſail to the *Eaſt-Indies:* For at a great diſtance from the cape, whilſt you are yet in the open ſea, you meet with a peculiar kind of ſmall ſea-gulls, which foretel you your approach to this cape. But as theſe come abroad ſometimes above 100 leagues or more at ſea, they are but uncertain forerunners, but when you ſee another kind of large ſpotted ſea-gulls appear, by thoſe that are acquainted in theſe ſeas call'd *Cape-Birds*, with ſpeckled wings, you may hope to ſee land in a very ſhort time, and if you meet with ſome turtle doves, this puts it beyond all doubt. If you find anchorage at 40 or 50 fathoms depth, in a white ſandy ground mix'd with red, you may conclude yourſelf to be upon the ſandridge of the cape *d'Aguillas*, tho' you ſee no land. If you come to the weſt of the *Cape of good Hope*, you will find, beſides the aforemenioned *Cape-Birds*, certain hollow roots growing among the rocks in the ſea, the leaves of which ſwim upon the water; the *Portugueſe* call them *Trombas*, and they are to be met with in vaſt quantities in the *Table Bay*, juſt under the fort, which the chaloops and boats are very careful to avoid, they being ſo entangled together, that there is no breaking thro' them with oars: It is likewiſe found in the ſeas of *Japan*, and in great eſteem among the inhabitants, who make pickles of theſe leaves, and uſe them as the *Europeans* do cucumbers, or the *Indians* their *Actsjar*.

The *Hottentots*, a barbarous generation, were ſo ill-natur'd at that time, that they would not exchange an ox or any other ſort of freſh proviſions with us, nay they made the ſpring or places where we uſed to fetch our freſh water, muddy; we fell rough upon ſome of them, but they being much ſtronger than we, pelted us with ſtones and made us retire; I was at that time with a gun upon the *Table Mountain*, but could not come time enough to their aſſiſtance; but the next day ſeveral of us went well arm'd to give them another viſit, and to fire at them in caſe they pretended to make any oppoſition, but they no ſooner diſcovered our arms, but fled w th wife, children, and their cattle. 1653.

Their departure from the cape.

After we had ſtay d there about three days aſhore, we ſet ſail the 13th of *March* from the cape, ſteering our courſe weſtward, in hopes to get ſight of the ſhip the *Drake*; but not meeting with her, we choſe the open ſea, and advanced about 60 leagues from the *Table Bay*, under 34 deg. 20 min. ſouthern latitude. We contiuued our voyage with pretty good ſucceſs till the 18th, when about noon we found ourſelves under 38 deg. 26 min. ſouthern latitude, and 33 deg. 27 min. longitude. The compaſs ſhew'd due ſouth and north. The two next following days proved very rainy and bluſtring, and the 27th it thundred and lightned very hard, with ſtrong winds and much rain, which ending at laſt in a violent ſtorm, oblig'd us to take in all our ſails, under 39 deg. 20 min. ſouthern latitude. The 1ſt of *April* we found ourſelves far to the north, being forced by the ſtream, and the weather continued windy and rainy, as it had been ever ſince the 27th of *March*; we found ourſelves then under 39 deg. 21 min. of latitude, and 95 deg. 30 min. of longitude, and had ſail'd 36 leagues in the laſt 24 hours. The ſame night the winds began to riſe to that degree, that we were fain to take in our main ſail, which continued to the 3d, when the compaſs was changed to 15 deg. N. W. The 7th we ſail'd 44 leagues with a moderate gale, under 38 deg. 13 min. The rains and ſtrong winds continued till the 13th in the morning, when it began to clear up, and ſail'd that day and night 46 leagues under 36 deg. 30 min. latitude, and 98 deg. 42 min. longitude. Then it began to be bluſtery weather again. The 15th we found the riſing of the ſun at 24 deg. N. W. this being the firſt time ſince the 4th of the laſt month, by reaſon of the ſtrong weather. About noon we were under 35 deg. 14 min. of latitude, and 104 deg. 40 min. longitude; having ſailed 34 leagues in 24 hours. Towards evening it began to be calm, but continued not long, the winds and rains infeſting us by turns, till the 1ſt of *May*, when we found ourſelves under 12 deg. 18 min. latitude, and 124 deg. 46 min. longitude: We then proceeded in our voyage with a good briſk gale till the 3d, when in the night we were overtaken with a violent *Travado* with thunder and lightning, which continued till the next following day. The 6th of *May*, early in the morning, we deſcried the coaſt of the iſle of *Sumatra*, about 4 or 5 leagues from us, and to the leeward a ſail under 5 deg. 22 min. In the night the wind blowing from the land-ſide, we were forced to take

They get ſight of Sumatra.

1653. take our course to the south. By the 9th we had not advanc'd above 6 or 7 leagues along the coast of *Sumatra*, being continually pestred with *Travadoes*, thunder and lightning; all our endeavours were to get above the flat point of the streights of *Sunda*. The 12th we had pretty fair wind and weather, and about noon found ourselves under 6 deg. 5 min. In the afternoon we sail'd forward with a moderate gale, within a league and half of the forementioned point to the N. N. E. of us, where we found 16 fathom water. The next day we found ourselves about three leagues from the said point. The 14th we saw the *Imperial Island*, at about three leagues distance, and the next following day discovered to the south-east to east, about 5 or 6 leagues from us the *Princes Islands*, under 60 deg. 45 min. where we were becalm'd all the rest of the day. The 17th we found ourselves under 17 deg. 10 min. about two leagues from these islands, and toward the evening saw the utmost point of land of the isle of *Java*, at 4 or 5 leagues from us; the 18th we were becalm'd again, and the following day advanc'd within two leagues of the point of *Java*; and 2 or 3 leagues of the *Princes Islands*. We endeavoured to have pass'd betwixt them, but were prevented by a *Travado* from the east. The 20th being under 60 deg. 41 min. we were at 6 leagues distance from the said islands, and kept in sight of them the 21st and 22d, with an intent to pass by them on the 23d, but being becalm'd came to an anchor the same night at 30 fathoms depth; the stream did run here very strong to the S. W. The 24th we were directly opposite N. N. E. to the isle of *Java*, and the same evening, a boat with all sorts of refreshments came aboard us from thence, which was very welcome to us, after so tedious a voyage: We came soon after to an anchor at 30 fathoms water, the stream running so strong here, that we were forc'd to remain here this and the next following day; during which time, several other boats with fresh provisions came aboard us. The 26th we set sail again, but by reason of the violence of the stream could not advance far, so that we were forced to cast anchor again, at 25 fathoms depth, where we continued all the next day. The 28th we set up our sails again, but were forced soon after to cast anchor, having the *Iulo* (the isle) *Baly* to the N. E. Great *Pulo modi* to the E. and the lesser *Pulo modi* to the S. of us. Towards evening we set sail again, but whatever we did could not reach the road of the so long wish'd-for city of *Batavia*, being forced to come to an anchor about half a league from the isle of *Rotterdam* at 11 fathoms water. The 30th we put up our sails once more, but with no better success, being oblig'd to cast anchor again, which put us in mind of what befel us lately on the *Cape of good Hope*, where we met with the same ill success before we could double the cape. However, the wind turning fair in the afternoon, we arrived the same afternoon about four a clock, (after a very tedious voyage, in which we had many sick) before the city of *Batavia*, where we cast anchor at four fathoms and a half depth. The next day I went ashore, and took up my lodgings in that famous city, at one Mr. *Gerard Utsens*, till further orders. In the mean time I was very curious in taking an exact view of this city and the circumjacent country: Whilst I tarried at *Batavia*, an embassy was sent from the general director *John Maetzuicker* and the other directors of the *East-India* company, to the *Cham of Tartary*, who some few years before had conquered the most potent empire of *China*, to treat about a free commerce betwixt the two nations, which had several times before been attempted and fought for by the *Dutch*, but was as often refused by the *Chinese*. *Jacob de Keisar* and *Peter de Goyer* being appointed ambassadors, two yachts, *viz.* the *Kaukerk* and *Bloemendael*, man'd with 90 men, and provided with several fine presents for the emperor were got ready for their transport, and I was ordered to go aboard the *Bloemendael* in the quality of steward.

The Imperial Island.

The Princes Islands.

1653.

They arrive at Batavia.

The ambassadors embark'd the 14th of *July* 1655, and set sail the same day from the road of *Batavia*. The 4th of *September* they arrived in the city of *Kanton*, and the 4th of *May* 1656, in the city of *Nanking*, and the 16th of *July* at *Peking*. After some stay there, they returned the 21st of *November* to *Nanking*, to *Kanton* the 28th of *February* 1657, and came into the road of *Batavia* the 21st of *March*, where they gave an account of their negotiation to the *Dutch* council of the *Indies*: Of all which I have given you an ample account in my *Chinese* voyage, publish'd first in *Low Dutch*, and since translated into several other languages, and printed at *Amsterdam* for *Jacob Meurs*, with many cuts and draughts of places, living creatures, fruits and other remarkable things.

Mr. Nieuhof sent to China.

After my return from thence, eight ships were ordered to be equip'd and loaden for *Holland*. viz. the *Pearl*, *Prince William*, the *Orange*, the *Crowned Lion*, *Achilles*, *Malacca*, the *Ulysses* and *Hector*. The command in chief of this fleet was conferred upon Mr. *Koenes*, then first director of the council of the *Indies*, who embark'd aboard the *Pearl* of 700 tuns, man'd with 180 men, and provided with 26 guns. At his

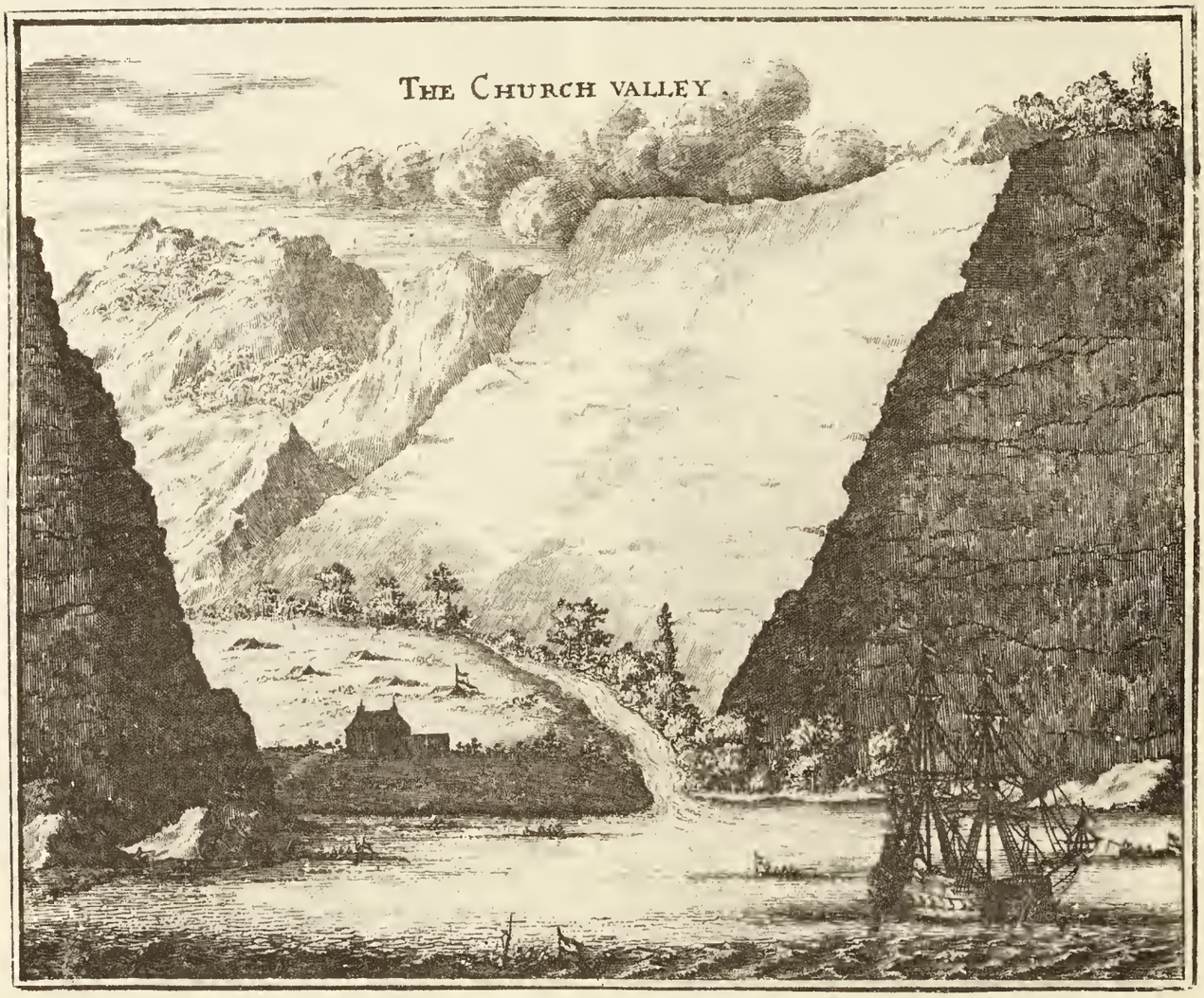
1658.

1658. *He returns from* Batavia *towards* Holland. *Arrival at* St. Helens.

requeſt I went aboard along with him in the *Pearl*, which carried the flag, in order to my return into *Holland*, tho' my appointed time was not expired here. We ſet ſail the 22d of *December*, and the laſt day of *March* 1658, arrived ſafely without any remarkable accident, (except that we met with ſome *Travados*, which ſoundly toſt our ſhip) at the iſle of *St. Helens*.

1658. *The iſle of* St. Helens.

The iſle of *St. Helens*, is ſituate under 16 deg. 15 min. of ſouthern latitude, at a great diſtance from the continent, lying at leaſt 350 leagues from *Auguſta*, the next place of all. It is very ſurpriſing to conceive ſo ſmall an iſland at ſo vaſt a diſtance at ſea, round about which there is ſcarce any anchorage, by reaſon of the vaſt depth of the ſeas. It is about ſeven leagues in circum-



ference, covered all over with rocky hills, which in a clear day may be ſeen 14 leagues at ſea; the valleys being ſtor'd with all ſorts of trees: So that tho' this iſland is not very large in its compaſs, yet it comprehends a large tract of ground by reaſon of thoſe hills. It has many fine valleys, among which the *Church-Valley* and the *Apple-Valley* are the moſt remarkable. In the *Church-Valley*, you ſee to this day the ruins of a chapel, formerly belonging to the *Portugueſe*; the whole valleys are planted with lemons, oranges, and pomegranate-trees. At that time the iſland was deſtitute of inhabitants, but ſince the *Engliſh* have made a ſettlement there. After the *Portugueſe* left it, a certain hermit, under pretence of devotion, uſed to kill great numbers of wild goats here, and ſell their ſkins, which the *Portugueſe* having got notice of, they removed him from thence. At another time certain negroes with two female ſlaves were got into the mountains, where they encreaſed to the number 20, till they at laſt were likewiſe forc'd from thence. The valleys are exceſſive hot, but on the hills it is cool enough: tho' the heat is much tempered by the winds and frequent rain ſhowers, which fall ſometimes ſeveral times in a day; which, with the heat of the ſun-beams, renders the ſoil very fruitful. It abounds in fine and cool ſprings, which fall down from the tops of the hills, the water being as clear as cryſtal, and exonerating itſelf at laſt into the ſea, it is very pleaſant to behold the ſeamen at their arrival here, to drink, waſh and bath themſelves in theſe ſpring waters. Moſt of the fruits and beaſts which are produced here in great plenty, have been firſt brought hither by the *Portugueſe*;

1658. *tugueſe*; as for inſtance, orange-trees, (of which you may ſee whole woods) pomegranate-trees and others, which bear fruit throughout the whole year. Here are likewiſe, muſtard-leaves, parſly, ſorrel, purſlin, wintercreſſes and other ſuch-like herbs, which are very good againſt the ſcurvy; neither is this iſland deſtitute of trees, but ſuch as are not fit for timber, but only for fuel. It abounds likewiſe in beaſts; wild goats are here in vaſt numbers, but very difficult to be taken, by reaſon of the many rocks. Tame hogs were brought hither by the *Portugueſe*, which have multiply'd to admiration, but are degenerated into wild ones, and are not eaſy to be kill'd for the aforemention'd reaſon. Thus it is with the partridges, wild pigeons and peacocks, which are here in vaſt plenty, but are ſo ſhy, that ſo ſoon as they ſee any one approach, they fly from one hill to another croſs the valleys, ſo that you muſt be an hour before you can come at them again, which when you have done, you are in danger of loſing your labour, for they return commonly from whence they came. The only way to catch them, is to go abroad with a good company. It produces no ravenous or poiſonous creatures, except large ſpiders and flies. All about the iſland you ſee vaſt multitudes of ſea-gulls, which feed on the fiſhes in which the ſea abounds. Here you meet likewiſe with ſeveral colours fit for dyers, eſpecially with a moſt excellent red colour, and with very fine white ſalt, made out of the ſea-water by the heat of the ſun-beams. By reaſon of its great diſtance from the continent, the ſeas hereabouts are covered with fiſhes, ſuch as mackarel, carps, *&c.* They are not to be catch'd with nets by reaſon of the vaſt depth, but with a hook, or only an iron nail bent, you may catch as many as you pleaſe; craw-fiſh, crabs, oyſters and muſſels are likewiſe to be found in vaſt quantities near the ſea-ſhore. After we had ſufficiently refreſh'd our ſelves here, and provided what neceſſaries we thought fit, or could get, we left this iſland the laſt day of *May*; We continued our former courſe, and without any remarkable accident, came in ſight of *Holland*, and the 6th of *July* 1658 arrived happily at *Amſterdam*. I took up my lodgings at my brother *Henry Nieuhoff*'s, whom as well as moſt of my other friends, I had the good fortune to find in good health. Many of the moſt curious perſons of that place came daily to ſee me, to take a view of the *Chineſe* characters, and other draughts I had brought along with me.

They depart from St. Helens.

Arrive in Holland.

After I had tarried for three months in *Holland*, and diſpatch'd my buſineſs both here and in *Zeland*, I delivered the journal of my late voyage into *China* to my brother, in order to have it review'd and printed, at the requeſt of ſeveral perſons of quality; with an intention to take a ſecond voyage to the *Eaſt-Indies*, with the firſt fair opportunity, which was ſoon after offered me by the directors of the *Eaſt-India* company. 5 ſhips lay then ready for the *Eaſt-Indies* under the command of Mr. *Adrian Aelmonde*, *viz.* the *Arnheim*, burthen 500 tuns, with 40 guns and 430 men, *John Tymenſz* maſter; the ſecond the *Pearl* and three yachts; I was ordered aboard the firſt. We ſet ſail all together from the *Ulie* the 22d of *Dec.* 1658. The ſhip the *Arnheim* at her entrance into the ſea, ſtruck upon the ſands and was in ſome danger of being ſtav'd, and another ſhip run foul upon her, by which ſhe loſt part of her gallery; but by God's ſingular mercy, we got clear again the next high tide, and continued our voyage with the reſt. 1658.

Nieuhoff's *ſecond voyage to the* Eaſt-Indies.

The 16th of *March* 1659, we arrived ſafely at the *Cape of Good Hope*, where we caſt our anchor. The 22d, the *Pearl* with the other three yachts came likewiſe to anchor in the ſame bay. The firſt thing we did was to take care of our ſick, of which we had not very many, but 12 died in the voyage; we went every day aſhore to fetch freſh water, fuel, and what proviſions we were able to get; ſometimes we catch'd good ſtore of fiſhes. One day ſeveral of us went aſhore to ſhoot ſome wild fowl; but advancing pretty high up the *Table Mountain*, we unawares eſpy'd a ſleeping lion, at no great diſtance from us, which made me ſoon retreat, telling my companions it was dangerous to awake a ſleeping lyon, who were glad as well as I, to make the beſt of their way backwards. 1659.

Arrives at the Cape of Good-Hope.

After a ſtay of 14 days at the cape, we ſet ſail again, and with a much more proſperous gale, than I had in my laſt voyage, arrived ſafely on the coaſt of *St. Java*, where juſt as we got ſight of that iſland, Mr. *Adrian Aelmonde* died, to our great grief; his corps was carried to *Batavia*, where it was honourably interr'd.

He leaves the Cape.

The 18th of *July* 1659, we came to an anchor before the city of *Batavia*, after a voyage of about 7 months; during which, there happen'd ſcarce any thing worth taking notice of. After I had delivered up the merchandiſes under my charge, and my accounts: I took a turn to the weſtern coaſt of *Sumatra*, *viz.* to *Jambe* and *Padane*, which produce abundance of pepper, ſome gold and ſalt-peter, and returned the 10th of *December* to *Batavia*.

His arrival at Batavia.

Not long after I was ordered on board the ſhip *Henrietta Loviſa* bound for *Amboyna*, *Gerard Gerardſon* a native of *Fluſſingen* maſter,

1659. *Goes to Amboyna.* maſter, laden with rice and proviſions. We ſet ſail from *Batavia* the 23d of *Dec.* 1659, and in a month after got among the rocks near the point of *Bimaer*, being forced thither by a whirlpool, which turn'd our ſhip within the compaſs of three times the length of the ſhip, as ſwift as the nimbleſt horſe could run; we were within a few yards of having been ſtruck againſt a rock, but had the good fortune to eſcape without much damage, and after ſome *Travadoes* at laſt got into the road of *Amboyna*, not without great difficulty, by reaſon of the ſwiftneſs of the ſtream there, and caſt anchor at 36 fathoms depth. We were very kindly received by Mr. *Jacob Huſtard* the governor of *Amboyna*, a man of ſingular probity and conduct. After the ſhip was unladen, and I had delivered my cargo, the governor and I reſolved to take a tour in the ſmall circumjacent iſlands. Among the reſt we viſited the iſland of *Buero*, where the inhabitants made us heartily welcome after their way, and drank to us merrily in cups made of the leaves of trees.

The iſle of Bouro or Buero. The iſle of *Bouro* or *Buero*, is ſituate about 24 leagues off *Amboyna*, being near 30 leagues in compaſs. The ſea, eſpecially on the ſouth ſide, of a vaſt depth, from whence the ſhore riſes by degrees, and ſurrounds the whole iſland like a ſteep wall. The ſouth wind produces both high and low water here. In the iſland of *Buero* are mountains which reach to the very ſkies: Near the bay of *Tamahoo* are high mountains of the ſame name, the blue tops of which penetrate thro' the clouds, and may be ſeen at 28 leagues diſtance at ſea; tho' it be very difficult to diſtinguiſh them from the clouds. The bay of *Tamahoo* is ſurrounded with theſe mountains. Hereabouts you ſee neither houſes, huts, nor inhabitants, but only woods and wilderneſſes. A certain river exonerates itſelf into this bay, the banks of which are on both ſides full of green trees. On the north-eaſt ſide of the iſle *Buero*, in another bay, called the bay of *Kayelle*, which in ſome places is two leagues broad. The ſea-ſhore of this bay is very pleaſant, by reaſon of the many woods and wilderneſſes. Here you ſee great ſtore of green ebony wood-trees, but the wood is ſomewhat knotty. Within the marſhy grounds, adjacent to the middle of the bay, is a whole wood of trees as hard as iron, and of a reddiſh colour; the *Dutch* call them *Lary* trees. 1657. *The Bay of Kayelle.*



The conſtitution of this iſland. The iſland *Buero* is very fertile and abounding in trees near the ſea-ſhore. It produces *Coco* and *Bananas* trees, *Pynany*, green ebony wood-trees, potatoes, beans, *Katjang* (a certain kind of peaſe) millet or indian-wheat, tobacco, lime-trees, and di-

vers

1659. vers ſorts of herbs. In the mountains are civet-cats, and the inhabitants have a peculiar eaſy way of taking the civet from them, which they ſell very cheap. In ſhort, the whole countrey is full of fertile grounds and pleaſant woods, and is watered with many freſh water rivers; the worſt of all is, that it is much ſubject to earthquakes.

In the iſle of *Buero* lives, among other beaſts, a certain ſtrange creature, which by the *Indians* is counted among the number of monſters. It is of the bigneſs of a large dog, or of a roe-buck, of a dark brown and gray colour, the hair like our gray-hounds; the head and mouth like a hog, with ſmall eyes and ears, the tail curls twice or thrice, and the legs and claws like thoſe of a roe-buck. The fleſh is both by the inhabitants and ſtrangers look'd upon as a dainty, and as good as veniſon. The circumference of its mouth and jaws is as big as a large calf's head, with very ſtrong jaw-bones; on both ſides backwards to the throat, are about 12 teeth, but in the fore-part of the undermoſt jaw-bone, 6 teeth and 2 large ones in the upper part, which are covered by the mouth. From the middle part of the undermoſt jaw-bone iſſue forth two large teeth which pierce the mouth. They are a foot long each, about an inch thick, and ſomewhat crooked like thoſe of the wild boar. Out of the upper jaw-bones ſpring forth two horns, on each ſide one, of an inch thick, a quarter of a yard long, ſmooth like teeth, and turn'd like a hook at the end, which makes it appear at firſt ſight as if it were armed with 4 horns.

On the north-eaſt of the iſle of *Buero* are the following villages, *Waiſelonga*, *Fogi*, *Wainite*, *Tamahou*, *Palmatte*, *Hokonima*, *Bara*, *Liciela*, *Waiſamma*, *Ilat*, and *Romaite*; The eight firſt of theſe villages were in 1653, burn'd to the ground by the *Dutch*, with all their boats, the inhabitants having revolted againſt them. This iſland is under the juriſdiction of the king of *Tarnate*. In the year 1660, the *Dutch* built a fort with four ſmall baſtions, provided with convenient habitations for the uſe of the garriſon in this iſland, to keep out thoſe of *Makaſſar*. It was nam'd *Mandarſhaa*, after the then king of *Tarnate*. The natives of *Buero* are purſuant to their capitulation made with the *Dutch*, obliged to inhabit round about the bay of *Kayelle*, where they are poſſeſs'd of about 14 villages under the *Dutch* protection: Their houſes are neatly built of cane, and ſome have convenient appartments; and for the improvement of the adjacent grounds, are obliged to cut down and burn the trees and woods, and to turn them into fields, gardens and orchards. Before that time, they lived only in wretched huts built along the ſea-ſhore among the woods. They 1659. are very black, and like moſt of the inhabitants of the other neighbouring iſlands, almoſt naked both men and women, having only a piece of ſtuff to cover their nakedneſs from the waſte down to the knees; but girls and boys till they are twelve years old, go quite naked. A young fellow that has a mind to marry a certain maid, may ſoon obtain her, by making a ſmall preſent of eatables, or any other thing of no value to her parents. As ſoon as a woman is brought to bed, ſhe goes ſtreight to the next river, where ſhe waſhes both her ſelf and the child, and ſo returns to her uſual employments, in the mean while the huſband is attended and made much of in the wife's ſtead. They bemoan their dead neighbours and friends with lamentable out-crys, but after the corps is buried, they dance, ſing, feaſt and make merry. Their graves are made of brick-work, with ſtones and clay, to preſerve them againſt the wild-beaſts. The common food of the natives is *Zagow*, millet, rice and dry'd fiſh. They are for the moſt part mahometans, tho' ſome retain much of paganiſm, and adore the crocodiles. In the year 1650, one *Madira* governor for the king of *Ternate* in the iſle of *Amboyna*, having taken up arms againſt the *Dutch* in *Amboyna*, the inhabitants of *Buero*, as well thoſe under the king's as *Dutch* ſubjection, join'd with *Madira* with ſo much obſtinacy, that they choſe rather to die than to leave *Madira*; and in 1652 kill'd four ſea men belonging to a veſſel call'd the *Gooſe*, who ventured too far into the woods. Mr. *Arnold Flaming van Outſhorn* being, 1652, ſent with a ſtrong ſquadron of ſhips to *Batavia*, and from thence to *Amboyna* and *Buero*, to bring the inhabitants to reaſon; having underſtood their barbarous proceedings, burn'd all their boats, and the before-mention'd villages. The king *Mandarſhaa* came along with him in perſon, having before concluded a peace with the *Eaſt-India* company at *Batavia*.

After we had taken a full view of this iſland, we returned to *Amboyna*, where the governor gave a ſplendid entertainment to the chiefeſt officers of the company, and ſome of the courtiers belonging to the kings of *Amboyna*. After dinner we play'd together, and they ſeem'd ſo well ſatisfied, that it might eaſily be ſeen there was a good correſpondence betwixt them and the company at that time. In the mean while my ſhip having been loaden with 16 tuns of cloves and ſome other commodities, I took my leave from Mr. *Huſtard* the governor, and the 3d of *May* directed my courſe back towards *Batavia*. Under the government of this Mr. *Huſtard* were at that time all the

The author's departure from Amboyna.

1659. *Molucco* iſlands, whoſe buſineſs it is to keep a ſtrict eye over them, for fear they ſhould export cloves. But before I quite leave the iſle of *Amboyna*, I will give you a deſcription of its ſituation, and what elſe is worth our obſervation there.

The iſle of Amboyna. The Iſle of *Amboyna* or *Amboyno* is by ſome numbred among the *Molucco* iſlands, becauſe it produces great ſtore of cloves like the *Molucco* iſlands. It is ſituate under 3 deg. ſouthern latitude, about 24 leagues from the iſle of *Banda*, and conſequently nearer the coaſt of *Malacca*, than any of the *Molucco* iſlands. It is 24 leagues in circumference, being divided almoſt in two parts, by a vaſt bay or rather gulph. It has a very fine bay where ſhips may ride ſafely at anchor near the ſhore; about two leagues within this bay, is the *Dutch* fort called *Victoria*. It appears like two iſlands joined together by a neck of land. About 60 or 70 years ago, there were 57 goodly villages or great plantations, inhabited by *Indians* and chriſtians, (ſome of which were of good ſtrength,) but many of them have been laid deſolate, or at leaſt are much decay'd by the inteſtine wars.

The village Way. Among the reſt *Way* was a very fine plantation on the north-ſide of the iſland, half a league from the ſea-ſhore, built upon a rock, and defended by a good breaſt-work; notwithſtanding which, it was 1630 ſurpriſed by one *Kimelaha*, the inhabitants were chriſtians. Near this village are abundance of clove and *Zague* trees, and all along the ſea-ſhore are ſeveral other plantations of leſs note, all well provided with clove and *Zague* trees. The village of *Way* has this conveniency, that it is well provided with freſh ſprings, a thing of the utmoſt conſequence in thoſe hot countries.

Nouſſanive. The village *Nouſſanive* was ſituate upon a river on the weſt-ſide under the cannon of the fort *Victoria*, being divided into three plantations. The countrey thereabouts abounds in clove-trees; the plantations of which extend as far as to the utmoſt point of the weſtern cape, and on the other ſide, as far as *Ayer Kahouba:* The king or captain of this diſtrict uſed to be formerly preſident of the council of *Amboyna*.

Hittoe. The village of *Hittoe* is very ancient, and built near the ſea-ſide, under the redoubt belonging to the *Dutch* company, being the capital of the whole diſtrict of *Hittoe*.

Wawami. *Wawami*, the head village of all, lies above a league from the ſea-ſhore, upon a hill near an *Engliſh* mile high, unto which leads but one paſſage, which in the midſt is defended by ſtrong palliſadoes, and the top of the hill (which is of an oval figure) by a ſtone wall. Betwixt the hill and the fort ſlides along a pretty river. Formerly this was a noted place of retreat for the inhabitants, who uſed to ſhelter them ſelves here. 1659.

Mouſala. The village *Mouſala* is built upon a mountain about a league and a half high, being ſo ſtrong by nature, as to be counted impregnable; notwithſtanding which, it has been reduced by the victorious arms of the *Dutch Eaſt-India* company, under whoſe juriſdiction they now live.

The following plantations or villages were in 1630, under the juriſdiction of the *Dutch Eaſt-India* company.

Roſſenive. The diſtrict of *Roſſenive* which comprehends *Roſſenive*, *Amahoeſoe* and *Hattoe*. *Roſſenive* had in 1630, one *Andrew Roſſenive* for their king or captain; *Amahoeſoe* one *Domingos Coſta Makkake*, *Poeta* and *Hattoe*, one *Leſſemeſſe*. Theſe villages were better inhabited than moſt of the reſt, the inhabitants making profeſſion of the chriſtian religion, yet not without ſome mixture of *Mahometaniſm*, except thoſe of *Amahoeſoe*, whoſe captain was a good chriſtian, and lived much better than the reſt; which ſhews that the chief defect lay in their kings; for *Andrew Roſſenive* was none of the beſt livers, tho' he could very artificially play the hypocrite; he had no wife but many concubines; and tho' he was often admoniſh'd to marry, he continued obſtinate in the ſame courſe, which gave great ſcandal as well to the inhabitants as to the other kings and captains. The common people of this town were always more ready for the ſervice of the company than thoſe of the other villages. For the villages *Roſſenive*, *Amahoeſoe* and *Hattoe* are obliged to ſupply and manage one half of the governours *Korrakoren*, (or ſmall veſſels of war) as the villages of *Kielang*, *Nakko* and *Hattela* are bound to ſupply the other half.

Kielang. *Kielang* was one of the moſt conſiderable villages on the ſouth-ſide of the mountain of *Laytimor*, not far diſtant from the ſea ſhore, but of no great ſtrength. Near it are very good ſprings and great ſtore of clove-trees. Under the diſtrict of *Kielang* are the villages of *Kielang*, *Nakko* and *Hattela*. In the year 1630, *Manuel de Silva* was king or captain of *Kielang*, but ſurrendered the government to his eldeſt ſon; he was a very good natur'd honeſt man, and had the ſecond place in the *Dutch* council. *Anthony Pays* was captain of *Nakko*, and *Anthony Lopes* of *Hattela*, they were all three very good chriſtians.

Ema. Under the diſtrict of *Ema* are the villages *Oekorilla*, *Lewary* and *Routon Laſary*; *Manuel* was captain of *Oekorilla*, *Simau* of *Ema*, and one *Anthony Routon* of *Laſary*. Theſe are obliged to furniſh a *Karrakore* of four *Nadjos* for the ſervice of the company.

They

Between page 102. 103.



1659. They are very honeſt and faithful, and profeſs themſelves of the tribe of *Olilymas*, except *Routon Laſary*, which belongs to the tribe of the *Oliſivas*.

Soya. To the diſtrict of *Soya* belong the villages of *Ahoeſen*, *Oeritettoe* and *Amantelloe*. Theſe are obliged to find a *Korrakore* of 4 *Nadjos*, are pretty ready in the ſervice, and profeſs all chriſtianity, and ſo does the king with all his *Orangkeys:* They are of the tribe of the *Oliſivas*. *Laurenzo de Sylva* is king of *Soya*, *Anthony Ahoeſen* of *Ahoeſen*, and *Jeronymo Teholopoe* of *Oeritettoe*, and *Amantelloe*.

Hative. Under *Hative* belong the villages *Taviery*, *Hokkonaloe* and *Mardykka*; they furniſh *Karrakore* with 4 *Nadjos*. They are good ſoldiers and chriſtians, and their heads come frequently to the communion. Their chief heads are *Laurenzo Marcus* captain of *Hative*. *Pedro Anthonio* of *Taviery*. *Laurence Mendos*, chieftain of *Hokkonaloe* and *Mardykka*. The inhabitants of *Mardykka* are the remnants of the *Portugueſe*, and ſome other ſlaves ſet at liberty: 1630 they conſiſted of 100, or 120 men fit to bear arms, who did conſiderable ſervice to the ſtate of *Amboyna*; they were very good chriſtians and faithful, and furniſh'd an extraordinary *Korrakore* of 4 *Nadjos*; they accounted themſelves to be of the tribe of the *Oliſivas*, their chieftain was then *Anthony de Coſto*.

Halou. To *Halou* belongs the village *Hative-Kiſchileet*, they are pretty well peopled, and chriſtians, and furniſh a *Karrakore* of 4 *Nadjos*; *Diego Paty* was captain of *Halou*, and *Adam Marano* of *Hative-Kiſchileet*.

Pouta. *Pouta* has only two ſmall villages belonging to it, *viz. Kapa* and *Chery*; their captains were *Stephen Terſera* of *Pouta*; *Manuel Lopes* of *Kapa*, and *Andrew Pardia* of *Chery*.

Oettomary. The inhabitants of *Oettomary* did revolt three times, but were in 1626 reduced to obedience by the then governor Mr. *Gorkum*, they were then under the tuition of *Don Pedro de Oettomary* their captain, who was a very honeſt perſon, and ever ſince that time they have adhered faithfully to the company. They are generally ſtout ſoldiers and good chriſtians, for they frequent the chriſtian congregations, and add more children to our ſchools than the other villages do. They furniſh a *Korrakore* with 4 *Nadjos*, and are of the *Oliſivas*. The four villages of *Ourien*, *Larik*, *Wakkacſive*, and *Aſſelou* ſtand likewiſe under the juriſdiction of the company; they are all blacks and ſtout fellows, they belong to the *Oliſivas*, and acknowledge *Hittoe* for their captain, yet under the protection of the company. They furniſh a *Korrakore* of 4 *Nadjos*. Thus the two villages of *Alang* and *Lillebay* belong to the company: The inhabitants are 1659. chriſtians, except 3 or 4 families at *Alang*. Of the laſt, one *Salvador* was captain, and of *Lillebay*, *Baſtiaen Kaſtango*. The inhabitants are likewiſe of the tribe of the *Oliſivas*.

Theſe ſix villages are obliged to furniſh the *Dutch Eaſt-India* company with a great quantity of cloves; to wit 300 *Bahar per annum*; vaſt numbers of clove trees having been planted hereabouts, about 1630, which are come to full perfection ſince, and produce vaſt ſtore of fruit. Thus 1636, the planting of clove trees was ſo far encouraged on the ſouth-ſide of this iſland, that each family was obliged to plant, at leaſt, ten trees every year, the ground being very fit hereabouts for this purpoſe; they were alſo not negligent in planting coco and other fruit trees. *Kamariay*, *Seriwawan* and *Kayrato*, are three villages near the ſea-ſhore; the inhabitants are abſolutely devoted to the ſervice of the company, and appear ſometimes with an *Orangay* at the head of them at the fort. They adhere to thoſe of *Mardykka*, and belong to the *Oliſivas*.

Near the point of the bay are four villages, *Quelipapoety*, *Amaſſee*, *Marykque*, and *Savoukque*. The firſt furniſhes a *Korrakore* with 3 *Nadjos*, the three laſt a *Korrakore* of 4 *Nadjos*. In the village of *Amaſſee* lived at that time two young lads, ſons of the *Orangkay*, who formerly had been hoſtages with the *Dutch* governors for ſeven years, but now were got into the government of theſe villages, and ſeem'd well inclin'd to the company's intereſt.

Mountains in Amboyna. The iſle of *Amboyna* has many high and ſteep mountains, call'd *Gounen* by the natives, which have ſeveral fair villages built on the top, and are irrigated with very clear and freſh-water ſprings. The vallies ſerve for walking-places, by reaſon of the many fine trees that are planted there, as the mountains ſerve the inhabitants for a ſhelter againſt their enemies in time of war, being for the moſt part inacceſſible. There is a certain rock here, call'd the *Elephants Rock*, from its ſhape and bigneſs, from whence iſſues forth a rivulet as clear as cryſtal, which ſlides gently thro' the adjacent verdant plain, whence is a very pleaſant walk up to the rock.

The air of Amboyna. However the air of *Amboyna* is none of the wholeſomeſt. There rages in this and the reſt of the *Molucco* iſlands, a certain diſtemper, both among the natives and ſtrangers, which by its ſymptoms reſembles altogether the *French* pox (for which reaſon the *Dutch* call it the *Pox of Amboyna*) except that this is communicated without any carnal conjunction. In the face, arms and legs, nay all over the body, appear certain cruſty boils, which

1659. which either turn ſchirrous, or if they come to a ſuppuration, a ſlimy, tough but ſharp matter iſſues from thence, reſembling in all its circumſtancee the *French* pox, except that they are not ſo painful, neither corrode the bones. This diſeaſe is attributed to a peculiar conſtitution of the climate and the air, and the exceſſive uſe of ſea-fiſhes, and coco nuts called *Zago*, and of the liquor called *Saguweer*. At firſt this diſtemper is eaſy enough to be cured, but if it takes root, not without great difficulty. They commonly apply the ſame remedies as we do in the *French* pox, in the ſpleen and dropſy: to wit, the decoctions of chica, ſarſaparilla, and guajacum, and purge them ſoundly betwixt whiles.

Its conſtitution. The iſle of *Amboyna* is pretty fertile; it produces millet, tobacco, coco-nuts, potatoes, pinang, oranges, lemons, citrons, ſugar, bamboo canes, and ſeveral other fruits. Some places here afford likewiſe nutmegs, but in no great quantity, neither have they ſo good as thoſe in the iſle of *Banda*, neither do they grow wild here, but the trees are planted in orchards. Neither are they deſtitute of divers ſorts of beaſts, eſpecially roe-bucks and hogs, and have great ſtore of fiſhes; but the chief products of *Amboyna* are cloves, which grow wild here; they are called *Nagalen* (nails) by the *Dutch*, from their ſhape, being flat on the top and ſharp at the end: They call them alſo *Geroffel nagelen*, perhaps from the *Greek Karyophyllon*. In the *Molucco* iſlands they call the cloves *Caampe* or *Chanpe*; in the iſle of *Java Sianeke*, and in *Malacca*, *Synken* or *Thinka*; the *Arabians*, *Perſians*, *Turks*, and moſt of the *Indians*, call them *Kalafur*.

The clove-tree. The clove-tree grows up in form of a pyramid, its branches ſprouting forth cloſe together. This tree is of the bigneſs of our cherry-trees, but in the whole reſembling moſt to a large laurel-tree, the leaves being very near of the ſame ſhape; the bark on the ſtem is of a greyiſh colour like that of the olive-tree. In the midſt of each leaf is a large vein which ſends forth many leſſer branches; theſe leaves grow on long ſtalks, ſometimes ſingle, but for the moſt part in cluſters; thoſe that grow near the extremities of the branches are of a purple colour, but the reſt dark green, if they are rubbed betwixt your hands they ſcent as ſtrong as the cloves themſelves, and ſo do the branches. On the extremities of theſe branches grow certain ſprouts which produce certain buds, and thoſe again flowers, ſometimes 10 or 20 in a knot, which at laſt produce the fruit, which are tough whilſt they are growing, but hard when come to maturity. At firſt they are green, then appear of a pale red colour, as if the trees were covered with ſcarlet, affording a very agreeable ſight to the beholders, becauſe there is often more fruit than leaves on the trees. The bloſſom is white at firſt, not unlike our cherry bloſſom, each leaf of the flower having three ſmall ſtreaks, then they turn green, afterwards red, and laſt of all dark yellow inclining to black. They reſemble in ſhape a nail, with a ſmall hollowneſs in the head, in which remains a thin ſkin which falls off as ſoon as it is touched. The cloves are very hard of ſubſtance; when they ſee more bloſſoms than leaves, they foretel great plenty of fruit; the bloſſoms ſmell much finer and ſtronger in dry than in rainy weather, and the firſt is looked upon as the moſt fruitful, it being common in a dry ſeaſon to ſee more bloſſoms than leaves, though even in ſuch a ſeaſon the clove-trees don't hit always alike, for every third or fourth year it is obſerved that they don't bear ſo plentifully as otherwiſe, juſt as if the tree at that time did remit its vigour ſpent the preceding years. The cloves are gathered once a year, *viz.* from the middle of *September* or beginning of *October* till *February*, this being the beſt ſummer ſeaſon here. Some are gathered, the reſt beat down with canes like flails; but this laſt way is not ſo ſafe as the other, for unleſs they be very careful, they bruiſe the tender ſprigs of the tree, which renders it the leſs fruitful the next following year, tho' the ſeaſon be never ſo good. Before they begin to gather, the ground under the tree is cleared of weeds, that they may not loſe part of the fruit. What cloves are left upon the trees grow very large as they ripen, much bigger than the reſt, but are not ſo fit for uſe. The next following year they drop from the tree, and though they are not ſo aromatick as the others, they are uſed for ſeed, and produce new trees, for which reaſon they are called the mother-cloves; for after they are dropt upon the ground they will take root, and in 8 or 9 years time it will come to the perfection of a good tree, and prove as fruitful as the reſt; but if theſe ſprouts be tranſplanted once in two or three years, they will bear more and better fruit. They ſay the clove-tree will hold good 100 years; the fruit immediately after gathering is dark yellow inclining to black, but if dry'd turns quite black, and if they dip them firſt in ſea-water it preſerves them from being worm eaten. Thus prepared they are laid up in ſtore-houſes and are tranſported to other places, where they are picked and the ſtalks taken from them, which are ſold ſeparately. The *Dutch* call theſe ſtalks *Nagelgruis* (the rubbiſh of cloves) and the *Portugueſe Baſton*. Cloves are hot and dry, of a biteriſh biting taſte, but eſpecially when they

are

Betwixt page 164, 165.

CLOVE TREE

1659. are dry'd. They ſeem to conſiſt of a gummous ſulphurous ſubſtance, with a ſtrong drying and attractive quality; as for inſtance, when the *Indians* are to deliver a certain quantity of cloves, they put in the warehouſe, where they are, a tub full of water, which is in a ſhort time attracted by the cloves, to the no ſmall benefit of the ſeller, it being obſervable that the cloves weigh as much the heavier as the water that was put there weighed before. The *Dutch* put this likewiſe often in practice. Some are of opinion that the cloves by their extraordinary drying and attractive quality, draw all the moiſture of the ground round about the tree to that degree that no weeds or graſs can grow there; but this is a vulgar error, the bareneſs of theſe ſpots of ground being not to be attributed to the cloves, but to the owners themſelves who weed and keep them clear, thereby to afford the more nouriſhment to the trees, and not to loſe part of the fruit when they are gathering or beating them from the trees.

'Tis true, the clove-trees are planted for the fruit ſake, nevertheleſs the bloſſoms, leaves, ſprigs, nay the gum itſelf that iſſues from the tree, are not deſtitute of an aromatick virtue, and afford very good medicines; the *Indian* and *Portugueſe* women diſtil out of the green cloves and leaves, a water and a ſpirit which is very odoriferous and cephalick; and an excellent remedy againſt the palſy, called by the natives *Beribery*. Againſt the ſame diſtemper they preſerve alſo the cloves with ſugar, and draw an oil both of cloves and leaves. Cloves boiled in milk are accounted a great provocative, they are very cordial, and if chewed take away a ſtinking breath. They make a pickle of the green cloves, which are not ſo hot as the reſt, and provoke the appetite. Perſons of quality put green cloves in vinegar, which is a great ſtrengthener of the ſtomach. The *Indians* call the vinegar *Atzjar*.

Royal clove. There is another kind of cloves but not commonly known, being very ſcarce and dear. The *Indians* call them *Tvinka Papoha*, or curled cloves, tho' they might rather be called ear-cloves, becauſe they ſprout forth like the corn ears. The *Dutch* call them *Royal Cloves*, becauſe they are in ſuch high eſteem among the kings of the *Molucco* iſlands, not ſo much for their excellent taſte and ſcent (in which they ſurpaſs all others) but for their ſcarcity's ſake; for if we may believe them, no more than two ſuch clove-trees are as yet found out, and that in the iſle of *Makjan* only: One of theſe two trees exceeds the other in bigneſs, but both are like the common clove-trees, except that they are much taller, and the cloves bigger and of a different ſhape from the common clove, as may be ſeen by the draught. 1659.

In the iſland of *Ceylon* are likewiſe abundance of wild clove trees, but bear no fruit. It is credibly affirmed that in former times the inhabitants of the *Molucco* iſlands were ignorant as to the uſe of the cloves, till ſome *Chineſe* coming that way found out their goodneſs, and from thence tranſported them to *China*, and ſo farther to the *Indies*, *Perſia*, *Arabia*, and other parts. The iſlands *Ternate*, *Makjan*, *Moſier* and *Batsjan*, did likewiſe in former days abound in clove trees, but purſuant to an agreement made with the kings of the iſlands ſome years ago, the ſame have been rooted out.

Wild palm-tree called Zagou. In the iſle of *Amboyna* grows likewiſe the wild palm, or *Zagou* tree, otherwiſe called *Papedo*. This tree reſembles the other palm or coco trees, the leaves hanging downwards on the branches, the lowermoſt of which periſh commonly: This tree bears but one fruit, which is of no uſe. The inhabitants make bread of the pith of the young trees; for on the top of the tree grows a certain head like a cabbage, in which is incloſed a certain white flower called *Zagou*, and the bread made of this flower *Zagou manda*. This flower they mix with water, and let it riſe a little, then they put it in earthen pots, put burning coals all round about it, and ſo bake it. This bread, whilſt it is new, taſtes very ſweet, and is of a very agreeable ſcent, but ſoon grows dry, and is brittle and ſhining like glaſs. They alſo mix this *Zagou* with water, and boil it like pap, into which they ſqueeze one or two lemons, and ſo ſtir it about with a ſtick; it is very cooling, and of an agreeable taſte. They eat it with a ſtick, which they put into the pap, and turn it round, till a ſufficient quantity of the pap, which is very glutinous, almoſt like turpentine, adheres to the ſtick, and ſo put it into the mouth. Out of theſe young trees they draw, like out of the coco-trees, a liquor; they cut one of the branches near the top, and in a hole made for that purpoſe, put a piece of hollow *Bamboo* cane, (which in theſe parts are uſed inſtead of tubs, pails and mugs) thro' which in a ſhort time, iſſues forth a great quantity of liquor as ſweet as honey, call'd by the natives *Zagouweer* or *Zageuweer*, but is ſomewhat harſher than the liquor drawn from the true coco-tree.

In the iſle of *Amboyna* they put a certain bitter root, call'd by a general name *Oubat* into this liquor, which preſerves it for ſome time, for elſe this *Zagouweer* turns quickly as ſour as vinegar, and is then uſed for ſuch. They diſtil alſo a certain liquor of it call'd *Arak*. This *Zagouweer* is the

1659. common drink, and ſold in publick houſes for a farthing a glaſs, but uſed in great quantity, proves very obnoxious to the nerves, eſpecially whilſt you are hot, when it muſt be taken with great precaution, elſe it will infallibly cauſe the gripes in the guts and palſies, call'd by the natives *Beribery*, which leaves a paleneſs in peoples faces for ever after. Sometimes they can draw 30 quarts of this liquor in 24 hours out of one ſingle tree. In the iſle of *Java* there are likewiſe ſome of theſe *Zagou* trees, but the liquor is, as far as I know, not valued at *Batavia*. They draw the liquor out of theſe trees till they die, and I was told that there was ſome of theſe trees in the woods of *Amboyna*, which will give as much liquor in 24 hours, as a man is able to carry away upon his ſhoulders. Some other iſlands belong to the iſle of *Amboyna*, to wit, the adjacent large country of *Ceram*, the iſles of *Manipa*, *Quelang*, and *Amblau*.

Amboyna *under whoſe juriſdiction.*

The iſle of *Amboyna* is divided into two parts; one of which is under the juriſdiction of the *Dutch Eaſt-India* company; the other under the king of *Ternate*. Unto the company belongs the country of *Laitimor*, where is the fort of *Victoria*, and the wooden fort *Wantrou*, and on the paſs of *Bagoale*, the redoubt call'd *Middleburgh*. The three iſlands *Homa*, *Honomoa*, and *Nauſalaut*, which produce great quantities of cloves: The whole coaſt of *Hittoe* with the redoubts, the *Amſteldam* at *Hila*, the *Rotterdam* at *Larike*, and the *Leoden* at *Hittoe* and *Lamma*; and ſeveral ſmall wooden forts at *Ourien*, *Lebelehu*, *Ceit*, and *Way*. Under the king's juriſdiction are the country and coaſt of *Ceram*, the iſles *Amblau*, *Manipa*, *Bonoa*, and ſome others.

The fort Victoria.

The fort *Victoria*, (the ſtaple of the company here) lies five leagues deep in the country, being defended by four bulwarks, a good ditch, and a conſiderable garriſon, with ſuitable proviſions and ammunition. During my ſtay here, there was a large crocodile in the ditch, which did vaſt miſchief to the wild fowl belonging to Mr. *Huſtard* the governor, who took great delight in them. Some ſoldiers and others were ordered to place themſelves whereabouts they ſuppoſed the crocodile had his lurking place, but could not meet with it; till at laſt the crocodile on a ſudden leaped towards the ſecretary of the governor, whom he had certainly devoured, had not the reſt that were near at hand, with ſticks and half pikes kill'd the beaſt immediately, which was extraordinary large. Round about the caſtle live ſeveral *Dutch*, *Chineſe*, and other nations. Within and without the fort is a church, where divine ſervice is held both in the *Dutch* and *Malacca* tongue.

1659. The men wear large whiſkers, but little hair upon their chin; they only cover themſelves with a ſlight piece of ſtuff round the buttocks and belly. The women tie their hair up in many knots: He that intends to marry a young maid, buys her from her father for money; but if ſhe proves barren, the marriage is null and void: In former ages the natives were a moſt barbarous people, men-eaters and pagans. Now a-days they are for the moſt part *Mahometans*, the reſt are *Chriſtians*, ſome *Roman Catholicks*, ſuch as were converted by the *Portugueſe*, others profeſſing the *Proteſtant* religion, which was firſt introduced there in 1647. The *Dutch* have erected ſchools in all the villages to inſtruct the youth in reading and writing, and in the fundamentals of the chriſtian religion. The natives are generally brave, but very deceitful and treacherous; they are naturally addicted to lazineſs, and are ſo obſtinate, that they chuſe rather to die than to leave their antient cuſtoms. They make uſe of certain ſmall veſſels in time of war. They are very ſwift in their motion, and managed by *Pagagen* or oars. They call theſe veſſels *Korrakore*, and are ſhaped like a dragon, the head repreſenting the forecaſtle, and the tail the ſtern. They have alſo ſome leſſer boats call'd *Paros*. Their houſes are built of *Bamboe* canes and *Zagou* trees; they ſleep likewiſe in bedſteads made of *Bamboe* canes, or ſometimes upon mats only.

1659. *Manners and cuſtoms of the* Amboyneſe.

Their weapons are bows and arrows, half pikes, javelins, ſcimeters, targets and firelocks, all which they manage with great dexterity, as well as the darts. They have alſo a kind of hollow pipes, out of which they ſhoot great numbers of ſmall poiſon'd arrows; the wounds made with them prove commonly mortal, unleſs the poiſon be removed immediately by cutting it out.

Their weapons.

The women of *Amboyna* are very laſcivious, and extremely deſirous of the chriſtians; if they find themſelves diſappointed in their expectation, or that they are left by their gallants, they have a way of infecting them with a certain poiſon, the operation of which is ſo ſlow, that they die a lingring death, neither can they cohabit with any other woman, unleſs they receive proper antidotes from the ſame woman that poiſoned them. Many *Chineſe* live in *Amboyna*, tho' for the moſt part among the *Mahometans* at *Hittoe*, *Lochoe*, and in *Ceram*. In the year 1636, at the requeſt of king *Hittoe*, three or four *Chineſe* were permitted to ſettle under him, with this limitation however, that they ſhould pay the uſual taxes to the *Dutch* receiver-general of *Amboyna*; afterwards one *Chineſe* was allow'd to live in each village, to provide them with

Their women.

1659. distill'd *Arack*. About the year 1636, the slaves belonging to the *Dutch* had got a custom to run away from their masters, and to shelter themselves among the *Mahometans*, but several being punished with death, pursuant to a proclamation published for that purpose, the rest were so terrified thereat, that no such thing was heard of for a great while after. Certain negro christians dwelt likewise in *Amboyna*, commonly call'd *Mardiikers*.

Courts of justic in Amboyna.

There are three courts or councils belonging to the *Dutch* in *Amboyna*; first the court martial, secondly the civil court of justice, and thirdly the great council or council of state.

The court martial used to meet every *Monday* and *Thursday*, composed of the governor, the head factor, and under factor of the company, a captain, a lieutenant, one of the eldest sergeants, and a secretary; these took cognizance of all matters relating to the soldiers and garrisons.

The civil court of judicature was kept in the town, consisting of four officers of the company, of four of the chiefest inhabitants, and of four or five *Orankays* of the council of state; besides which they had two clerks, one a *Dutchman*, and the other a native of *Amboyna*, and two attendants. The head factor in the castle was president here; they took cognizance of, and gave sentence with the governor's approbation, in all civil and criminal cases, neither had the villages any right of exercising of justice without them.

The council of state, or the *Orangkays* of the chamber, who in conjunction with the governor, and his councellors, were to deliberate concerning all publick affairs, such as the equipping of *Korrakoren*, or the management of a war against an enemy, had their seats appointed thus.

Andrea, king of *Rossenive*.
Manuel, the old king of *Kielang*.
Laurentz de Sylva, king of *Soya*.
Simaon Ema, captain of *Ema*.
Laurenzo Marcus, captain of *Hative*.
Diego Pati Halloe, captain of *Halloe*.
Anthony da Costa, captain of the *Mandiikers*.
Don Pedro, captain of *Vettomoery*.
Salvador Paty Alang, captain of *Alang*.
Simon Baguala, captain of *Baguala*.
John Barkabessier, captain of *Way*.
Stephen Tercera, captain of *Pouta*.
Pedro Anthonio, captain of *Tacieri*.
Fernando Latoehalat, captain of *Rossenive*.

How Amboyna *came under* Ternate.

In former ages the island of *Amboyna* was subject to its own kings, till it was reduced under the obedience of the kings of *Ternate*, which according to the relation of the inhabitants happened thus:

Many years ago reign'd a king in *Ternate* call'd *Babou*, son of *Chieroen Diamelou*, who having been the first that introduced *Mahometism* there, was in great esteem with the *Mahometan* priests, who to this day pay a great veneration to his memory. In the mean while, some differences being arisen betwixt the villages of *Warnalete* and *Makatit*, belonging to the district of *Warnoela*, and the last being unable to cope with those of *Warnalete*, they underhand sought for aid by king *Babou*; who having granted their request, sent a good fleet of *Korrakoren*, under the command of his councellor *Samarou*, to the cape of *Saragi*, betwixt *Erang* and *Lissidy*, where they came to an anchor; the inhabitants of *Cambello*, who as well as those of *Erang* and *Lissidy*, had submitted to king *Babou* against those of *Makatit*, advised the inhabitants of *Warnalete* to go to meet *Samarou*, and to purchase his favour by some presents, which being done accordingly, they all attack'd, in conjunction with *Samarou*, those of *Makatit*, and forced them to submission; but *Samarou*, not thus satisfied, reduced all the circumjacent islands under his king's obedience; so that this island owed the loss of its liberty to the intestine divisions of its inhabitants; *Samarou* returning home victorious, was receiv'd with great demonstrations of affection by king *Babou*, who in reward of his service, honour'd his son *Robohongy* with the title and dignity of *Salahakkum* or Stadtholder of these conquer'd countries, having before been dignified with the title of *Kimelaha*, which his successors in the stadtholdership have retained ever since, tho' it be certain, that not *Kimelaha* but *Salahakkum* signifies a stadtholder in their tongue. After the death of *Robohongy*, his eldest son *Adja* succeeded him in the stadtholdership, who was succeeded by his brother *Bassi Frangi*. After him came *Frangi*, who for his treachery was beheaded by *Sabadiin* of *Louhou* his brother's son. *Leliatte*, son to *Bassi Frangi*, then thrusts himself into the government without consent of the king, and following the footsteps of his predecessor, receiv'd the same reward. He was succeeded in the stadtholdership by *Madira*, son of *Sabadiin*, the seventh in order, our company having made use of all their interest with *Hamsia*, king of *Ternate*, to procure him that dignity, in consideration of the singular kindnesses they had received from his father. But they soon found themselves mistaken in their choice; for this *Madira*, of the antient race of the *Tomogolo*'s, of which *Samarou* was the first, rebell'd 1650, against the king, and with the assistance of the inhabitants, made himself master of several strong holds; to wit, *Amblau*

Madira *rebels against the king of* Ternate.

1659. *blau*, *Manipa*, *Liſſidy*, *Hatua* the leſſer, *Aſſahoudy*, *Laala* and *Nouſſatelo*, plunder'd all that oppoſed him, and kill'd about 80 perſons belonging to the *Dutch* company. One *John Pays*, captain of *Hatuwe*, *Tawiro* and *Houkonalo*, living near the fort of *Amboyna*, was ſhrewdly ſuſpected to have had a hand in this conſpiracy, which *Simon Kos* (who commanded in the abſence of *Arnold Outſhorn* at *Amboyna*) having got notice of, ſecured him in the fort till the arrival of Mr. *Outſhorn*, when the war broke out with great violence on both ſides.

How the Portugueſe *became maſters of* Amboyna.

The *Portugueſe* made themſelves maſters of *Amboyna*, 1546, in the following manner: At the time when *Anthony Galvan* was governor of *Ternate*, a great fleet of ſmall veſſels belonging to the iſland of *Java*, *Banda*, *Macaſſar* and *Amboyna*, was ſent to the *Molucco* iſlands to fetch cloves; *Galvan* being advertis'd thereof, and fearing leſt they ſhould by this means ſpoil the ſpice trade of the *Portugueſe*, armed about 25 *Korrakoren*, with 40 *Portugueſe*, and 400 auxiliaries; theſe, under the command of *Jacob Supi Azevidi*, admiral of the ſea *Molukſe*, ſteer'd their courſe towards *Amboyna*, where meeting with the *Indian* fleet, they attack'd and routed them, taking many of their ſhips, with good ſtore of great cannon, and a conſiderable ſum of ready money; *Azevedi*, willing to improve this opportunity, landed in *Amboyna*, the inhabitants of which being terrified at their laſt defeat, did for the moſt part ſubmit to the *Portugueſe*, and receiv'd ſuch laws as they thought fit to preſcribe to them; which done, *Azevedi* loaden with glory and ſpoils, return'd as a conqueror to *Ternate*. After that time, the *Portugueſe* uſed always in their voyages from *Malacca* to the *Molucco* iſlands, and in their return from thence, to provide themſelves with freſh water at *Amboyna*, till 1603, this iſland was taken by the *Dutch* from the *Portugueſe*, who got a vaſt booty there, tho' the *Dutch* are not very fond of living in *Amboyna*, being a place of no great plenty.

We ſet ſail, as I told you before, the 3d of *May* from *Amboyna*, and with a briſk and proſperous gale arriv'd the 29th before *Batavia*.

No ſooner was our ſhip unloaden, but I received orders to go aboard the ſhip *Achilles*, *John Vander Werven* maſter, to *Japan*. Every thing being got in readineſs for our intended voyage, I took my leave from the directors of the company, and the 28th of *July* ſet ſail with 15 ſhips more, Mr. *John Vander Laen* being commadore, with orders to ſail to *Teywan*, to attack the city *Makao*, (a populous place, and defended by a garriſon of 600 men) and to obſerve *Koxingas*. But ſcarce were we come within ſight of the iſle of *Anyam*, when we were overtaken by ſo terrible a tempeſt, that I can ſafely affirm, I never ſaw the like in my life, and that it is paſt my ſkill to expreſs it; the waves riſing ſometimes to that height, that the very tops of our maſts could not be ſeen, the winds ſometimes falling flat upon our ſhips, and preſſing them down flat under the abyſs, ſo that we expected every moment to be ſwallow'd up by this mercileſs element, eſpecially when we ſaw the yacht *Gorkum* (in which was *Francis Lanſman*, formerly my companion in our *China* voyage) in a moment periſh before our eyes, without the leaſt poſſibility of ſaving one man. At laſt, however thro' God's infinite mercy the fury of the winds began to allay, when with much ado we got with our ſhips, which were much damag'd by the ſtorm, into the harbour of *Teyvan* the 20th of *September*. The ſeaſon for our intended voyage to *Japan* being paſt, as forced againſt my will to unload my ſhip here, and the deſign againſt *Makao* being laid aſide for that time, becauſe *Koxinga* was abroad with a powerful force: We ſet ſail with the whole fleet for the iſlands call'd *Piſkadores*, and came the 3d of *October* to an anchor in the *Church-Bay*: Here I received orders to prepare myſelf for a voyage into *Perſia*, aboard the ſhip the *Leerdam*, loaden with ſugar, which I did accordingly.

1659. *A moſt violent ſtorm.*

The iſlands of Piſkadores *or* Pehu.

The iſlands call'd *Piſkadores* or fiſher-iſlands, and by the *Chineſe Pehu*, are ſituate under 23 and 24 deg. northern latitude, about 12 and 13 leagues from the iſle of *Teywan*. They have ſeveral good harbours, and two commodious bays, where ſhips may ride ſafely at anchor at 8 or 9 fathoms water. At the entrance of this bay are the ruins of two antient ſtone forts, one built by the *Dutch*, the other by the *Chineſe*; and betwixt both is another fort. The country thereabouts is not hilly, abounds in graſs, yet pretty ſtrong. It contains many populous villages; theſe iſlands being all well ſtor'd with inhabitants, with fat cattle, eſpecially cows, and birds of all ſorts, eſpecially with an incredible number of fine large cocks. During the rainy ſeaſon they gather freſh water in ciſterns or ponds, but in dry weather the water is ſaltiſh here. The country produces likewiſe potatoes and many other fruits in abondance, and here are always to be ſeen great numbers of *Chineſe* veſſels, which come ſome for fiſhing, ſome for traffick. At the entrance of the *Church-Bay*, ſtands to the north-ſide a *Chineſe Pagode*, where is very good anchorage, and a convenient place for ſhelter to thoſe that are bound to *Teywan*, there being no other ſafe harbour for great ſhips hereabouts. The

1659. islands *Piskadores* are many in number; two are the most famous; one call'd the *Piskadore* or *Fisher Island*, the second *Pehou* or *Pehu*.

The south-east side of the *Fisher Island* is so bare, that it produces not a tree; to the west of it is another small island, and the passage betwixt both so shallow, that a yacht is not able to pass that way. To the south of this lies another island, call'd by the *Dutch* the *Troublesome Island*, because there is no anchorage for ships here. About a league from thence to the west is a rocky island, or rather two small rocky islands, divided by so many rocks, that there is no passage or anchorage near them.

Return to Teywan. After we had dispatch'd our business here, we set sail again for the island of *Teywan*, Mr. *Conject* was at that time governor of this isle, who having not without reason conceiv'd a jealousy at the vast number of ships and men, the *Chinese* had brought together in the river of *Quincheu*, or in the isle of *Ey* and *Queymuy*, on the coast of *China*, I was dispatch'd thither the 31st of *October* with the two yachts the *Graveland* and *Mary*, with express orders, to demand from *Koxinga* whether he was for peace or war, and not to tarry longer than ten days for a categorical answer. I tarried aboard the vessels to take care of them, whilst my collegue went to speak with *Koxinga:* Our limited time being near expired, I went ashore in a boat, ordering our vessels to be upon their guard. The banks of the river were so crouded with people, that I had much ado to pass thro' them; by good chance I met with a *Chinese* who understood *Portuguese*, who was so complaisant as to go along with me to the place, where my collegue and his attendants lodg'd; but they being gone abroad to see *Koxinga* muster his forces, I was oblig'd to take the same way; we address'd ourselves to him, desiring a speedy and positive answer, the time of our stay being expired. He gave us for answer, that being at present busy in mustering his forces, he would give us his resolution to-morrow, in a letter directed to the governor of *Teywan*, which he did accordingly: In this letter he told him, that he had not the least thoughts of any war against the company, but that he would cultivate a good correspondence with them. To remove all occasion of jealousy, he sent several merchant ships to *Teywan*, which however did not remove the suspicion they had conceived of him there, especially after we on the 22d of *December* gave a verbal account of his vast preparations in the fort of *Teywan*. His letter was as follows.

Nieuhoff sent to Koxinga.

Koxinga's answer.

1659.

KOXINGA's letter.

BEING at a great distance from you, I could not but receive your letter with a more than ordinary satisfaction, which I perused more than once, to inform myself the better of your intentions. You mention some false rumours, but at the same time seem to give credit to them. In my father Yquam's *time, the* Dutch *possess'd themselves of a certain place in the isle of* Teywan, *with his consent for the convenience of trade, which I have not in the least interrupted, and therefore judge you to be obliged to me upon that score. I have of late years been so deeply involved in a war with the* Tartars, *that I have had no leisure to trouble my head with an inconsiderable island that produces nothing but grass: It being not my custom to disclose my designs, but rather if I aim at the east to point to the west; how can you suppose to be inform'd of them by rumours? The reason why so few of our ships come to that island, is, because they cannot trade thither with any profit, the customs being so heavy. It was but this year the* Tartars *made a strong invasion into the low lands of* China, *in hopes to put an end to the war with one blow, but they were so bravely received, that they were forced to retreat with the loss of* 100 *of their commanders, and a great number of their men; we then retired into the islands of* Ey *and* Queymuy, *in hopes to draw them thither, and so to catch them in the trap. Concerning your complaints of having been treated in a hostile manner in the island of* Piskadores, *if it be really so, it has been done without our knowledge. I sent back an immediate answer, together with your presents, to the letter sent to me from* Batavia *four years ago; by which I understand, that you intended us but a very slender satisfaction, for the* Joncken *or ships, and the loading and money aboard them detained by you, notwithstanding which, I did not think fit to urge this business any further, for fear of occasioning a rupture betwixt us; it shall be my endeavour, as soon as the* Tartarian *war is brought to a conclusion, to encourage trade as much as possible may be, and don't question but you will on the other hand contribute to it, as far as lies in your power.*

Given in the 14th year, the 19th day of the 10th month of the reign of king *Indick.*

After the reading of *Koxinga*'s letter, it was resolved by the majority of voices not to engage in a war against *Koxinga*; most being of opinion, that at this juncture he would not undertake any thing against the company, tho' the governor Mr. *Conjet* was of a contrary sentiment, which proved too true afterwards. Thus all the thoughts of

1659. war being laid aſide, the continuation of commerce with him being judged, as indeed it was, to be of more preſent advantage to the company, all the ſhips there were ordered to their reſpective places, and I among the reſt, ſet ſail aboard the ſhip the *Leerdam*, loaden with ſugar for *Gamroa* in *Perſia*.

The iſles of Ey *and* Queymuy. The before-mentioned iſlands, *Ey* and *Queymuy*, are high rocky iſlands; the city of *Eymny* is ſituate upon a high hill, pretty deep in the countrey, being ſurrounded with a ſtone wall, without which you ſee the ruins of an antient tower, and a *Chineſe Pagode* or temple.

The city of *Queymuy* lies upon a river at a pretty diſtance from the ſea, being the capital of the iſle from whence it has borrowed its name. It has very large ſuburbs, which begin on the river ſide. Not far from thence, deeper into the country, is a ſtrong caſtle, defended by a very high wall, formerly the reſidence of *Koxinga*. The country round about is rocky, and not very fertile, except that the valleys afford a little graſs for cows; for the reſt, the inhabitants feed moſt upon fiſh, and ſome live by traffick.

The Chineſe *ſhelter themſelves in theſe two iſlands.* It was not long before the *Chineſe*, being forced by the *Tartars* to quit the continent of *China*, and *Koxinga*, ſtrengthned with near 25000 fugitives, and about 500 veſſels, they reſolved to ſhelter themſelves in the two before-mentioned iſlands of *Ey* and *Queymuy*, and finding himſelf in a condition to undertake ſomething againſt us; he embark'd 20000 of his beſt men aboard a great number of *Chineſe Joncken* or veſſels, and the 30th of *May* 1661, appeared within a league of the fort *Zelandia* in the iſle of *Teywan*, ſteering his courſe directly to the ſhore, where his countrymen, living in that iſland, were ready to receive him, with their carts and other neceſſaries; and ſoon after, poſted a conſiderable number of his veſſels betwixt the fort and the redoubt call'd the *Province*. This put our people under no ſmall conſternation, they being not provided either with veſſels or forces, to encounter ſo formidable a power. However captain *Pedel* and *Aldorp*, the firſt with 240, and the ſecond with 200 men, were ſent out to endeavour to prevent the enemies landing, and 4 ſhips, *viz.* the *Hector*, the *Graveland*, the *Finch*, and the yacht *Mary*, were ordered to fall upon their fleet, which was put in execution immediately. About 60 of the *Chineſe Joncken*, each with 2 great guns in the forecaſtle, came up with our veſſels, but were ſo warmly received, that two of them were ſunk, and the reſt ſo much diſabled, that they were all glad to retire, except ſix only, which kept cloſe together, and ſhot ſo furiouſly upon us, that they ſeem'd all to be on fire; the *Hector* took fire by an accident, and ſo together with the *Joncken* that lay aboard her, blew up into the air. The other three ſhips, notwithſtanding this fought it out bravely, and killed above a 1000 *Chineſe* beſides thoſe wounded in the engagement. The yacht *Mary* was alſo ſet on fire, but was ſaved by the indefatigable care and labour of the ſeamen. On the land-ſide captain *Pedel*, having divided his forces into two bodies, and exhorted them to ſtand it out bravely, gave the enemy a very warm ſalute with his firelocks, which kill'd many of them as they were landing; notwithſtanding which, they were ſo far from giving ground, as we flattered ourſelves they would have done, that they ſent whole ſhowers of arrows among our people, and at the ſame time ſent a ſtrong detachment to the right, which taking compaſs round a hill, attack'd us in the flanks, which ſo terrified our ſoldiers, that they threw down their arms, and wading thro' the water got into a pilot's boat, and ſo aſhore, leaving the captain with 19 men only, to the mercy of the enemies; upon which, immediate orders were ſent to captain *Aldorp* to retire with his forces to the fort; the enemy landed without any farther oppoſition, and in 4 hours time cut of all communication betwixt the redoubt, the province, and the fort, and betwixt this and the open country; moſt of the inhabitants afterwards joining with them againſt us. *Koxinga* being ſoon informed of our preſent condition, in very ignominious terms ſummon'd the fort, threatning to put all to fire and ſword if we did not ſurrender immediately. It was then taken into conſideration, whether, conſidering the enemy had cut off all communication with the redoubt the *Province*, and his great ſtrength, it were not adviſeable to treat with *Koxinga*, and to offer the ſurrender of one of the forts, provided we might preſerve a free trade, rather than to loſe all; which being agreed upon, and at our requeſt a paſſport granted for that purpoſe by *Koxinga*, we ſent *Thomas Yperan*, head factor of the fort, and Mr. *Leonardus* the fiſcal, as our deputies to him, to ſalute him in the name of the governor and the council, and to wiſh him ſucceſs in all his undertakings, provided they were not intended againſt the intereſt of the company. In their letter they told him, that they could have wiſh'd to have ſeen him in another poſture here, and that they were ſurprized to find him in arms, without the leaſt declaration of war, that if he had any real cauſe of being offended, they were ready to give him ſatisfaction, and to cultivate a good underſtanding with him. The deputies

Koxinga *attacks* Teywan.

The Dutch *endeavour to prevent his landing.*

Engagement betwixt the Dutch *and* Chineſe.

The Dutch *fly.*

The Chineſe *victorious.*

Deputies ſent to Koxinga.

1659.

1659. ties had expreſs orders, that in caſe *Koxinga* would not hearken to any accommodation, without the ſurrender of both the forts, they ſhould treat no farther, and tell him that the company was in a condition to revenge this injury. With theſe inſtructions they went the 3d of *May* to *Koxinga*'s camp, which was then about 12000 ſtrong, and buſy in the ſiege of the redoubt *Province*. They were armed with three different ſorts of weapons; the firſt with bows and arrows, which they manage with great dexterity; the ſecond with ſcimeters and targets only, wherewith they cover themſelves, and ſo break in upon an enemy, when they are ſeconded by their pikemen, whoſe arms are backſwords and pikes of three or four foot long, with broad and ſharp irons at the end.

The deputies received into the camp.

The deputies were at their firſt entrance into the camp, received by one of their chief commanders, and conducted into a ſpacious tent, where they ſtay'd till *Koxinga* was at leiſure to admit them to audience. Whilſt they ſtay'd there, ſeveral of the enemies troops march'd by their tent, and as far as they could perceive, the ſame at ſeveral times, to make the greater oſtentation of their ſtrength. *Koxinga* was in the mean while employed in combing his black ſhining hair, a great ornament among the *Chineſe*, which done, the deputies were introduced into his tent, which was all hung with blue, he himſelf ſeated in an elbow chair, behind a four ſquare table; round about him attended all the chief commanders clad in long robes without arms, and in great ſilence, with a moſt awful countenance. On both ſides towards the door, his life-guards were placed in very good order. The deputies addreſs'd themſelves to him in low *Dutch*, and delivered their letter, which being tranſlated into the *Chineſe*, *Koxinga* anſwered.

KOXINGA's anſwer.

THat he was ſenſible that the good correſpondence the Dutch East-India *company had hitherto cultivated with him, as well as with all the other* Indians *princes, was no longer durable than they found it conſiſtent with their own intereſt; which always ceaſed as ſoon as they found their account in it; that it was contrary to his cuſtom to divulge his thoughts or deſigns, yet he could not diſſemble that it was by reaſon of the war he was engaged in againſt the* Tartars, *he had not taken poſſeſſion of this iſland, which as it always belonged to the* Chineſe, *ſo it was not injuſtice that now they ſtood in need of it themſelves, they might retake it from foreigners, who were only ſettled there by permiſſion. That he was not come there to engage in a war with the* Dutch, *but only to take poſſeſſion of his own. That he was willing they might take away all that belonged to them, that they might demoliſh the forts and carry away their cannon; for which purpoſe he was ready to lend them as many of his ſhips and men as they wanted, notwithſtanding they had ſo lately attacked him both by ſea and land, when he had given them ſufficient proofs of his ſtrength.* He told them further, *that they were very proud and haughty in pretending to defend ſo inconſiderable a fort* (meaning the redoubt the province) *with ſo ſmall a force againſt his numerous army, which he threatned to deſtroy, ſo as not to leave one ſtone upon another:* He boaſted *that if his forces were united he was able to conquer heaven and earth*; concluding, *that they muſt take a very ſhort reſolution.* 1659.

Our deputies gave for anſwer, *That ſince the* Dutch *had left the* Piſkadore *iſlands; this iſland was ſurrendred into their hands by contract; but that if he* (Koxinga) *had any pretenſions upon the company, they were ready to treat about it, and give him ſatisfaction.* But after ſeveral conteſts, finding him quite averſe to hearken to any accommodation, unleſs they could ſurrender all, they departed, proteſting that the company would ſhew their reſentments in due time, and ſo ſet up the red flag.

The deputies leave the camp.

Before their departure from the camp they had obtained leave of *Koxinga* to go through the fort the *Province* in their return home; here they found things in a very indifferent poſture, and the fort not in a condition to hold out above a week longer, all their powder and ball being ſpent, there being not enough left to withſtand an aſſault: This, with the weakneſs of the place, induced the deputies to conſent that they might capitulate with the enemy, provided they could get liberty to transfer the garriſon into the fort.

Come into the fort the Province.

Arrive at the great fort.

The deputies arrived the ſame day in the great fort, where having given an account of their tranſactions, the governour *Conjet* and the reſt of the commanders ſeeing all the communication betwixt them and the redoubt the *Province*, nay with the whole iſland entirely cut off by the enemy, were at a great loſs what to reſolve upon at ſuch a juncture as this: After mature deliberation, the only hopes they had left was, to defend the fort *Zelandia* till ſuch time they could be relieved from *Batavia*, which conſidering the northern *Monzon*, might perhaps take up a whole twelve months time. However it was reſolved to defend this fort to the laſt extremity, notwithſtanding the redoubt the *Province* had been forced to ſurrender, the garriſon with all the cannon being fallen into the enemies hands, who had made them priſoners of war.

Reſolved to defend this fort to the laſt.

1659. *They leave the city.*

To prepare themſelves for a more vigorous defence, all that were able to bear arms were taken into the fort, and the city ſet on fire, which however could not be executed ſo ſpeedily, but that the enemy preſerved ſome ware and other houſes, by timely quenching the flame, which ſerved them for places of ſhelter. Soon after they began to batter the fort with 28 pieces of cannon, but their cannon as well as their men being expoſed to our ſhot, we plied them ſo warmly with cartrages, and other ſuch like materials, that the ſtreets thereabouts were all covered with the dead carcaſſes of the *Chineſe*, and the reſt were forced to ſhelter themſelves in the by-lanes, leaving their cannon to our mercy, ſome of which were rendered unſerviceable. On the other ſide of the fort 6000 *Chineſe* advanced boldly under our cannon, and attacked our works hand to hand, but were beaten back with great loſs to an adjacent hill; upon which the beſieged made a vigorous ſally, and nailed up all their cannon. It was then propoſed to make a general ſally, but conſidering the diſproportion betwixt us and the enemy, who were advanced under our cannon, it was judged too dangerous, for fear, if we ſhould miſcarry, the enemy might force their way at the ſame time into the fort. The next day the beſieged made another ſally, and carried off a ſix pounder into the fort. The enemy finding all his attacks unſucceſsful, kept the fort cloſe blockt up, and in the mean while made the open countrey feel the effects of his rage; they made all the *Dutch* inhabitants, eſpecially the miniſters and ſchoolmaſters, priſoners, becauſe as they pretended, two certain miniſters had under hand encouraged their pariſhioners to kill all the *Chineſe* living among them, not queſtioning but the reſt would follow their example; but as it commonly happens in things of this nature where many are privy to a deſign, this had been diſcovered by ſome out of fear, or hopes of reward, for which the ringleaders ſuffered a moſt miſerable death, being crucified by the *Chineſe*, and their croſſes erected in their reſpective villages.

The Chineſe *batter the fort.*

The Chineſe *repulſed.*

A Dutch *ſhip taken by the* Chineſe.

Some *Dutch* ſea-men had no better ſucceſs, for 13 of them being taken in a *Dutch* ſhip by a *Chineſe* veſſel near the *Piſkadore* iſlands, theſe were put on board a *Chineſe* veſſel mann'd with 30 men, who were to carry them to *Koxinga*'s camp. So ſoon as the *Dutch* ſea-men came within ſight of the *Dutch* fort, they reſolved to fall upon the *Chineſe* (not above one half of them being above deck at a time) and ſo to carry off the ſhip the next following night; but a *Frenchman* belonging to our ſhips crew, whether out of fear, or hopes to recover his liberty, did betray their deſign to the *Chineſe*, who immediately gave the ſignal to ſome other ſhips near them to come aboard, which being done accordingly, they made them all priſoners, and forthwith ſent them to *Koxinga*'s camp, where they had their noſes, ears, and hands cut off, and in this miſerable condition were ſent into the fort for a terror to the reſt; they were committed to the ſurgeon's care, who performed his part ſo well, that not one of them died.

The Dutch *deſign to carry off a* Chineſe *ſhip.*

1659. *Miſcarry.*

Among the reſt of the *Dutch* priſoners taken by the *Chineſe* in the open countrey, was one Mr. *Hambrocock* a miniſter; this man was ſent by *Koxinga* to the governour of the fort, to perſuade him to a ſurrender, upon condition, *viz.* that they ſhould depart ſafely with all that belonged to them and the company; but if he refuſed, he might have a ſufficient occaſion to repent it at leiſure; and that *Koxinga* would revenge himſelf upon the *Dutch* priſoners: With theſe inſtructions Mr. *Hambrocock* came into the caſtle, being forced to leave his wife and children behind him as hoſtages; which being a ſufficient argument to him that in caſe he did not ſucceed in his negotiation, they muſt expect nothing but death at *Koxinga*'s hands, yet was he ſo far from perſuading the garriſon to a ſurrender, that he encouraged them to a brave defence in hopes of relief; and as a farther encouragement, aſſured them that *Koxinga* had loſt many of his beſt ſhips and ſoldiers, and began to be weary of the ſiege, fearing leſt we ſhould hold it out till we received ſuccours from *Batavia*.

A meſſage ſent from Koxinga *to the beſieged.*

Mr. *Hambrocock* having made an end of what he had to propoſe, the council of war left it to his choice, whether he would rather ſtay with them or return to the camp, where he could expect nothing elſe but preſent death, every one entreated him to ſtay; he had two daughters within the caſtle, who hung about his neck overwhelmed in grief and tears, to ſee their father ready to go where they were ſenſible he muſt be ſacrificed to the rage of a mercileſs enemy; he repreſented to them, that having left his wife and two other children as hoſtages in the camp, nothing but preſent death could attend them if he returned not; and ſo untwiſting himſelf from his daughters arms, and exhorting every body to a reſolute defence, he returned to the camp, telling them at parting, that he hoped he might prove ſerviceable to his poor fellow priſoners.

Koxinga's *meſſenger returns.*

He gave an account to *Koxinga* of his negotiation, and that the beſieged were reſolved not to treat, unleſs they were to remain in poſſeſſion of the caſtle, which was not at all reliſhing to *Koxinga*, who now began to be afraid of an uproar; the inhabitants having ſlain ſeveral of the *Chineſe*,

1645. which exaſperated him to that degree, that having cauſed induſtriouſly a rumour to be ſpread abroad that the priſoners did under hand encourage the inhabitants of *Formoſa* to rebel, he ordered all the *Dutch* male priſoners to be ſlain, which was done accordingly; ſome being beheaded, others killed in a more barbarous manner. The dead carcaſſes after they were ſtripped quite naked, were to the number of 500, thus buried 50 and 60 in a hole; of all the reſt, only the ſupervisor of the countrey with 25 others, were ſaved and carried to *China*, tho' they even did not ſpare the women and children, many of whom were likewiſe ſlain, tho' ſome of the beſt were preſerved for the uſe of the commanders, and the reſt ſold to the common ſoldiers: Happy was ſhe that happened to fall to the lot of an unmarried man, being thereby freed from the importunities of the *Chineſe* women, who are very jealous of their huſbands. They were however afterwards, purſuant to the capitulation, ſent back to *Batavia*. Among the ſlain were Mr. *Hambrocock*, Mr. *Mus*, and Mr. *Arnold Winſhaim*, three miniſters, and many ſchoolmaſters, who were all beheaded.

The Dutch *priſoners killed by* Koxinga.

Whilſt theſe things were tranſacting here, the *Dutch* in *Batavia* had got notice of this invaſion by the *Mary* yacht, which in ſpite of the contrary ſeaſon had found means to get thither, and to give them an account how matters ſtood with us. Ten ſhips were immediately got ready with 700 ſoldiers aboard them, which ſet ſail in *June* 1661, under the command of *Jacob Kou*, and not long after arrived at the iſle of *Formoſa*. This unexpected relief as it put the enemy into no ſmall conſternation, ſo it encouraged our men to make a more vigorous defence than ever; and tho' the wind blew very hard, theſe ſhips found means to land ſome men and ammunition; but the winds increaſing more and more, were forced to chooſe the main, to the no ſmall grief of the beſieged, and did not return till about a month after; when the ſhip called the *Urk* being forced upon a rock on the coaſt of *Formoſa*, was ſplit, and her men ſaved, from whom the enemy having underſtood our ſtrength, and ſome other circumſtances, they began to be better ſatisfied, becauſe they had imagined this ſuccour much more formidable than really it was.

Succours ſent to Formoſa.

The beſieged make a ſally.

However the beſieged took a reſolution by making a vigorous ſally to diſlodge the enemy from the city of *Zelandia*, and to deſtroy their ſhips. The 16th of *September* was appointed for this enterpriſe, but whilſt ſome ſhips were engaged, the wind beginning to ſlacken, the reſt could not come up; our men endeavoured to attack the *Chineſe* in their boats, but being expoſed to their ſhot, without being able to do them much harm, ours had the worſt on't ſome of the boats being overſet, others ſunk, the reſt ſaving themſelves by flight. Two of our ſhips got upon the ſands and were both ſet on fire. In this ſea engagement the *Dutch* loſt about 130 men, but the enemy a great many more; however this unfortunate action put a ſtop to the intended ſally, and orders were ſent to the garriſons of the two northern forts, to withdraw into the caſtle, the garriſon of which was conſiderably diminiſhed by the many ſkirmiſhes, in which the enemy got but little advantage, and loſt many of their beſt men; which put a check for ſome time to their deſign, eſpecially when they underſtood that we had ſent all women, children, and other uſeleſs perſons to *Batavia*, the better to enable us to make a vigorous defence.

1659.

The Dutch *worſted.*

Much about the ſame time the governor received letters from the *Tartarian* ſtadtholder of *Hockſieu*, who requeſted ſome ſhips and forces, to drive the remaining forces of *Koxinga* out of the countrey, promiſing to come afterwards with his whole power to the relief of *Formoſa*. Hereupon *Jacob Kou* was ſent thither with five ſhips well provided with men and ammunition; but being overtaken by a ſtorm, loſt all his anchors near the *Piſkadores*, which obliged him to ſend back three of his ſhips to the iſland of *Teywan:* With the other two he returned to *Batavia*, where he met with but an indifferent reception.

The Tartars *promiſe ſuccours.*

The beſieged finding themſelves by this diſaſter bereaved of a conſiderable number of men and ammunition, began to deſpair of holding it out much longer; ſo that many deſerted, and among the reſt a certain ſerjeant, who gave *Koxinga* not only an account of our weakneſs, but alſo encouraged him not to let ſlip this opportunity to force us to a ſurrender. *Koxinga* having well weigh'd the matter, attacked us with his whole force more vigorouſly than ever, and in *January* 1662 raiſed three batteries, mounted with 28 great cannon, upon the ſandy grounds near the fort; the *Dutch* foreſaw the danger that muſt needs enſue from this near approach of the enemy's batteries, and did all that they could, either with cannon or firelocks, to diſturb them in their works, but theſe not hindring, their men continued to batter the walls till they had made a breach; then they made two ſeveral attacks, but were as often repulſed with great loſs, the ground being all over covered with dead carcaſſes. This diſaſter taught them to be more cautious, and ſo inſtead of ſtorming, they continued to fire inceſſantly their guns with ſuch a fury that they laid a whole redoubt level with the ground,

1662.

The Chineſe *renew the attack againſt the fort.*

Are repulſed.

1662. so that our men finding it no longer tenible, nailed up the guns, and laid some barrels with gunpowder under it, which blowed up a considerable number of *Chineſe* into the air. *Koxinga* himself was in danger of having been among them, had he not been forewarned by the before mentioned serjeant, who told him that it was too dangerous to venture himself in a place so lately left by the enemy. Here *Koxinga* raised a large battery upon a rising ground, from whence he hoped to lay the body of the castle level with the ground. The *Dutch* on their side were not idle to do what possibly could be expected for their defence, with cannon shot, granados and otherwise; they raised their brest-works, and put great packs of linnen and stuffs into the breach; notwithstanding which the enemy played incessantly upon them, and against night had made so large a breach as was judged sufficient to make a general assault. Then it was the besieged began to deliberate what was best to be done in this exigency, whether, since there was no longer abiding in the castle, they should make a sally and force their way to the enemy, or whether they should abide the assault: The most were for a capitulation, there being not the least hopes left of making a sally with any success, and to resist the whole force of the *Chineſe* in a place without defence, exposed to the enemies shot, was looked upon no less than to sacrifice themselves to their enemies; these considerations were so prevailing at last, that it was unanimously agreed to capitulate, and to surrender the castle upon articles; this was put in execution immediately, a truce of five days being agreed on for that purpose, at the expiration of which, after great contests it was agreed, *That every thing belonging to the company should be delivered up to* Koxinga. *That all the inhabitants, soldiers and prisoners, should have free liberty to retire to* Batavia *with all their moveables, for which purpose they should be provided with suitable conveniencies.* Thus the besieged after having endured a siege of nine months, with the loss of 1600 men, returned to *Batavia*, where the governour and members of the council of *Formosa*, after all the hazards and incredible fatigues they had been forced to undergo, were put in prison, and their goods confiscated; the governour himself being not long after condemned to a perpetual imprisonment in the isle of *Ey*; but was at the intercession of his highness the prince of *Orange*, and by orders from the directors of the *East-India* company in *Holland* discharged, and returned to his native countrey 1676. Since we have had frequent occasion to speak of the island of *Formosa*, I will give you a short account of it.

The Dutch *defend themselves to the utmost.*

The fort of Zelandia *surrendred.*

1662. *The isle of* Formosa.

The isle of *Formosa* is situated under the 23 deg. 30 min. northern latitude. It is of an oblong figure, being not very broad in proportion to its length, which is 125 leagues. It is full of hills, but intermixed with many fertile vallies; producing great store of grass, and watered by many fine rivers. The countrey produces abundance of rice, but especially sugar, vast quantities of which are exported from thence. Most of the *Indian* fruits are to be seen here, of which more hereafter, as also several sorts of *Dutch* fruits, herbs, and roots, transplanted thither from *Holland*, as peaches, apricots, and such like; cows, oxen, hogs, wild goats, hares, and rabbets, but especially stags are here in great plenty, but the last are somewhat of a lesser size than those of *Europe*, and without horns; the inhabitants catch vast numbers of them meerly for their skins sake, the flesh being not esteem'd here, except their tongues. They have also great store of elks here, which being very strong they use in their carts instead of horses or oxen. One time the master of our ship and I being invited to dinner at his sister's that was married to a native of *Formosa*, they sent us a carr drawn by bufflers; the master of the ship who understood better how to govern the ship than those beasts, would needs supply the carr-mans place, but prickt the bufflers so unmercifully (according to the custom of the countrey) that they run away with us: for some time we kept stedfast in the carr, which overturning at last, threw us at a great distance, but to our great good fortune, without any considerable harm; we walkt the rest of the way on foot, leaving the ordinary carr-man, a native of *Formosa*, to recover the bufflers, which he did at last, and brought them home. Neither do they want partridges, wild pidgeons, and other wild fowl; there are also tygers and bears to be met with, but I never heard of any other ravenous wild beasts here. The mountains are full of brimstone, which questionless occasions so many earthquakes, unto which this isle is much subject. Some are of opinion that these mountains contain likewise gold and silver, some essays of this nature having been made with good success, but it was never attempted to dig for it. This island is destitute of good harbours for great ships, which are forced to ride at anchor in the road of some isles about twelve leagues, from thence. The countrey is very populous, for besides the natives of *Formosa*, above 25000 *Chineſe* forced out of *China* by the *Tartars*, have at several times settled themselves here.

Nativ. Formos.

The natives of *Formosa*, especially the men, are of an olive colour, fat, strong, well-limbed and nimble, some being able

1662. to out-run a wild boar or ſtag; they leap upon the back of them and ſo cut their throats. The mountainers are of a leſſer ſize. The women are not altogether ſo large as the men, but very ſtrong bodied, and are cloathed after the ſame faſhion; they have black ſhining hair, which they tye together in a knot on the top of the head.

Their cloathing. The men throughout the ſummer appear for the moſt part quite naked, but thoſe who do not, eſpecially in the winter, wear a kind of ſilk or callico cloth, which they wrap about their bodies, and button it under the arms; the womens hangs ſomewhat lower down below the knees. Stuffs made of dogs hair are in great eſteem with them. They cut off the dogs hair, like as we do our ſheeps wool, ſpin and weave it afterwards. They are generally very friendly and faithful to the *Europeans*, and don't eaſily break a contract; they are very apprehenſive, and will give a good judgment of matters; many of them were already converted to the chriſtian religion by the induſtry of the miniſters and ſchoolmaſters, which were planted almoſt in every village, there being no ſmall hopes that the whole iſland would in a little time have embraced chriſtianity, had not the conqueſt of *Koxinga* overturned this good deſign.

Their food. Their bread is made of ſeveral roots, but rice is in the greateſt eſteem; tho' they ſow no more than for their own uſe, and that ſcarce ſufficient. Their drink is here, like all over the *Indies*, water, though they prepare likewiſe a ſtrong liquor of rice in the following manner: They juſt parboil the rice and then beat it to a pap, then ſeveral old women chew a certain quantity of rice, which they ſpit out into a veſſel, and mix it with the reſt, to make it ferment. After they have put it into earthen pots, they pour water upon it, and after they have covered it very well, ſet it to ferment for two months, till it is well ſettled and clear, this produces a very ſtrong liquor, which will keep good 20 years, and grow ſtronger every year. When they go abroad into the fields, they take of this liquor along with them to drink, and the ſettlement for their food; moſt of the rice here being conſumed in theſe liquors.

The women manage the ground. Contrary to the cuſtom of moſt other nations, the women cultivate the grounds here, and manage the rice, ſugar, ginger, and other fruits of the earth; the men being employed in nothing but hunting and warlike exploits, unleſs they be very old, when ſometimes they will give a helping hand to the women in the field. At leiſure time the women catch crabs, oyſters, and ſhrimps, which they much admire.

The men are mighty eager in hunting. Whole villages join together, and ſurround a great tract of ground, where they kill all they meet with, and divide it, few of the wild beaſts eſcaping their hands at that time. They alſo catch wild boars and ſtags with ſnares faſtned to canes; which the wild beaſt no ſooner touches but one or other of the legs is entangled in the ſnare, where they kill it immediately. They have alſo certain cane darts of ſix foot long, with ſeveral bent hooks at the one, and a bell at the other end, this they throw at the ſtags or other wild creatures, which being fixed in the body they trace it by the ſound of the bell till it begins to loſe its ſtrength by the loſs of blood, and ſo kill it. 1662.

The men employed in hunting.

Their houſes. Their houſes are but one ſtory high, but very large, built of cane, with many doors looking to all four corners of the winds, and ſometimes more; they always raiſe their houſes three or four foot high from the ground, looking upon it otherwiſe as unwholeſome.

Their utenſils. Their houſes are adorn'd with painted callico hangings, with wild boars and ſtags heads; with bows, arrows, clubs, pickaxes, and other warlike inſtruments, but eſpecially with the ſkulls and bones of their enemies, which they look upon as the chiefeſt ornament of their houſes: They eat and drink for the moſt part out of wooden veſſels, or ſuch as are made of bamboo-canes, but have ſome earthen pots to dreſs their victuals in, and for ſome other particular uſes.

Their government. This iſle has no king or general governor, each village being a kind of a petty common-wealth; their government conſiſts of twelve perſons, which muſt be at leaſt 40 years of age, and are choſen out of the chiefeſt among them; they continue for life; all their power conſiſts only in conſulting what is moſt expedient for the common good, the reſult of which is propoſed to the aſſembly of the whole village, who receive it with a great deal of ſedateneſs, and after the breaking up of the aſſembly they debate among themſelves what is beſt to be done; if they approve of the propoſition made to them, it has the force of a law, if not, it is of no conſequence. They are alſo much addicted to follow the directions of their propheteſſes or ſhe prieſts; at a certain ſeaſon of the year, they are obliged to go quite naked for three months, otherwiſe (ſay they) we ſhall want rain. At another certain time they are debarr'd from wearing ſilk or other fine cloths, or if they do, their council has power to ſtrip them of them, and to tear them to pieces before their faces, unleſs they redeem them by a certain number of ſtags-ſkins, rice or ſtrong liquor. Corporal puniſhments are unknown

1662. unknown to them; beſides this prerogative of conſulting and puniſhing, they are upon the ſame level with the reſt.

Age in high eſteem among them. Age is the only thing in extraordinary reſpect among them; this they ſhew in giving way, either in the ſtreets or at table, to their elders, who are alſo firſt ſerved, and ſpeak before the reſt.

Their marriage. The men never marry before they are 50 years of age, but the women as ſoon as they are marriageable. The natives of *Formoſa* don't ſuffer their hair to grow below their ears, before they come to the ſtate of manhood, when they let it grow as long as it can. If a young man has a mind to marry a certain maid, he ſends one of his friends with the ordinary marriage preſents, which are commonly a *Chineſe* ſuit of cloths, bracelets of twiſted reeds, ſome broad rings of iron or braſs, and ſuch like baubles of an inconſiderable value; if the maid accepts of the preſents, the match is made. Whilſt they are young they don't dwell together in the ſame houſe, which is not allow'd of 'till the huſband be 50 years of age. But as ſoon as the young married man has an inclination to meet with his wife, he comes privately into her hut, which is commonly in the field, and lays himſelf down in the place where ſhe commonly ſleeps, where ſhe comes to him, but is ſure to ſend him away again early in the morning. All the children begot betwixt them, before both the huſband and wife be arrived to the age of 37 years, are kill'd; for after the woman is ſure ſhe is with child, one of their ſhe prieſts lays the big bellied woman upon her back, and ſqueezes her ſo long with her hands and feet till ſhe miſcarries, not without great hazard and pains, which they willingly undergo, becauſe they reckon it a great ſin to keep any children, begot before that time, alive, but preſerve them carefully afterwards. The mother keeps the infant cloſe by her till it be two years old, when it is ſometimes permitted to ſee the father. Their marriages are as ſoon diſſolv'd as they are contracted, and that upon very ſlight occaſions; but if the huſband parts from his wife without any reaſon, he loſes his marriage preſents, but in caſe of adultery, or that the woman is out-rageous, his marriage preſents muſt be reſtored unto him; the women enjoy the ſame prerogative, both parties being afterwards at liberty to marry where they pleaſe, which ſometimes happens twice or thrice a year. They make no great account of fornication, provided it may be done in private, but are very cautious of committing inceſt.

Juſtice. Here are no courts of juſtice, every one being at liberty to take ſatisfaction for murther, theft or adultery committed againſt him. If a man be robb'd, and knows who the thief is, he goes ſtreight to his houſe and fetches either by fair or foul means as much from thence as he thinks will ſufficiently repay his loſs, which however occaſions great diſputes, nay murther. He that has kill'd another flies for it till he has given ſatisfaction to the deceaſed's kindred, which conſiſts commonly in ſome hogs and ſtags-ſkins, then he may return unmoleſted. Adultery, when diſcovered, is commonly made up with two or three hogs, according to the ability of the cuckold-maker, which done the cuckold lives both with him and his wife in good correſpondence. Sometimes one or more villages engage in war againſt one another, and ſurpriſe thoſe that work in the field, whom they kill, and carry their heads and what booty they can get, to their houſes; this they often do in the night time; if they have had good ſucceſs, they rejoyce after their return home, with eating and drinking to great exceſs. Thoſe who have behaved themſelves well in ſuch an expedition, are eſteemed before the reſt. 1662.

Their weapons. Their weapons are long and broad ſhields, inſtead of targets, wherewith they cover their bodies, ſhort and broad ſcymeters which do great execution, darts pointed with iron: they have alſo bows and arrows, but uſe no firelocks. As far as ever I could learn, they have no writings or books; their pagan idolatry is tranſmitted from the parents to their children by word of mouth; they believe the world to have neither beginning nor end, and that the ſouls of ſuch as have done well, ſhall be rewarded hereafter. As ſoon as they are dead, the friends erect a kind of ſcaffold before the door of the houſe, where they place the dead carcaſs ſurrounded with ſmall ſtandards; near by they ſet a veſſel with water for the ſoul to bath it ſelf in, and to waſh away all its ſins; as for inſtance, to have brought children into the world before 37 years of age; to have worn rich cloaths in the forbidden ſeaſon; to have catch'd oyſters, crabs and ſuch like inſignificant things; but murther, man-ſlaughter, adultery, fornication, theft, and ſuch like horrid crimes, they look upon as ſmall treſpaſſes only, which may be expiated by a certain quantity of rice, ſtags-ſkins and ſtrong liquors.

Religion. They have ſeveral Gods, but adore two in particular; when it thunders they ſay the great man is angry with his ſpouſe, and for that reaſon refuſes to ſend them rain, for which reaſon they adore his ſpouſe; the other they ſay, is of a malicious nature, and therefore adore him, for fear he ſhould hurt them. They have no other but female prieſts, they ſacrifice pigs, ſtags and fruits; during which the ſhe prieſts cry out, and

fall

1662. fall into extaſies afterwards, with tremblings all over their bodies, as if they were poſſeſs'd by an evil ſpirit, and then they pretend the idol diſcovers his ſecrets to them: The ſtanders by, which are for the moſt part women, in the mean while get drunk with ſtrong liquors. Theſe female prieſts aſcend to the top of their temples, where they expoſe themſelves quite naked, and waſh their bodies in the ſight of the people. They pretend to foretel good or ill fortune, to baniſh the devil, and to purge unhallowed places. It was formerly a cuſtom in ſome certain villages, that if any of the natives lay ſick, paſt all hopes of recovery, they uſed to tie a rope about his neck, and ſo pull him up and let him down again, till they had cured his diſtemper by a certain death. They dry their dead carcaſſes over a fire, which occaſions a nauſeous ſcent, whilſt the kindred, relations and friends paſs away the time with eating, drinking and dancing for ſeveral days together. The dry'd corps is kept two years after, and then buried in the houſe. This was the ancient government of the iſle of *Formoſa*, but ſince the *Dutch Eaſt-India* company has got footing there, they have introduced other laws among them, and inſtead of their councils, conſtituted one of their chief men as ſupervisor in every village, who adminiſtered juſtice, and was accountable to the governor of the iſland. Thus much of *Formoſa*, 'tis time to return to our voyage.

The author goes to Malacca.

After we had left *Teywan*, the 11th of *December*, we arrived the 30th of the ſame month without any remarkable accident, before the city of *Malacca*, where we dropt anchor, and found Mr. *John Tiiſs* to be chief director there for our *Eaſt-India* company.

The countrey and city of Malaga.

The kingdom of *Malacca*, otherwiſe *Maleja* or *Maleca*, thus called after its capital city, is ſituate upon the ſame tract of ground or demi-iſland, which comprehends the kingdoms of *Martevan*, *Quedam*, *Pera* and ſome other countries extending it ſelf as far as *Sumatra*, the ſtreights of which border upon it to the weſt and ſouth, as the kingdoms of *Pan* and *Johor* do to the eaſt. The kingdom of *Malacca* is by ſome hiſtorians taken for the *Golden Cherſoneſe* of *Ptolemy*, tho' at preſent it is no demi-iſland. There are ſome who affirm, that in former ages *Malacca* was join'd by a ſtreight neck of land to the iſle of *Sumatra*, inſtead of which you ſee now a branch of the ocean, which divides its ſelf into two navigable channels; the firſt of which is call'd the ſtreights of *Sinkapura*, becauſe it borders on the eaſt ſide of the cape of that name; the other is call'd the channel of *Saban*, from an iſland that lies to the weſt of it. This country extends for about 64 leagues in length, all along the ſea-coaſt, beginning at the iſland of *Cambilan* or *Zabilan* as far as the iſle of *Beitan*, its utmoſt boundary on that ſide, or rather it ends in the cape of *Sinkapura*, 20 leagues from *Malacca*. 1662.

Its capital city.

Its capital city is likewiſe call'd *Malacca*, being the ſame, in former time call'd *Takola*; it lies under 2 deg. 30 min. of northern latitude, oppoſite to *Sumatra*, in a bay at the aſcent of a hill, on the weſt-ſide of the river *Muar* (otherwiſe call'd *Gaze* and *Tyga* and *Kroſant*, or as the *Dutch* expreſs it *Kriiſorant*) which having its riſe deep in the countrey, divides the caſtle from the city, and waſhing its walls, falls with a rapid current into the ſea. Croſs this river is a ſtrong bridge built of ſtone, with ſeveral arches: This city is very large in compaſs, being not many years before ſurrounded with a wall of ſquare ſtones and baſtions, by the *Dutch*. It is very populous, the houſes being built very cloſe, tho' it has ſome very broad and handſome ſtreets, which are planted on both ſides with trees. In the midſt of the city is a hill with a very fair church dedicated to *St. Paul*, on the top of it, where divine ſervice is perform'd in *Dutch*: The ſteeple, church and monaſteries founded here by the *Portugueſe*, are much decay'd. Moſt of the houſes here are built of ſtrong bamboo canes, which are very durable in dry weather, tho' there are alſo ſome ſtone houſes here; they are generally not very large, and low, provided with ſmall appartments and ſlenderly furniſh'd.

Malacca *when taken by the* Portugueſe.

The city of *Malacca* was in 1610 taken by *Albuquerque* the *Portugueſe* general, in the following manner: One *Manuel*, an *Arabian*, or rather *Mahometan*, by birth, being at that time king of *Malacca*, entred into a league with *Albuquerque*, which he ſoon broke after, putting all the *Portugueſe* to the ſword. *Albuquerque* ſoon after appeared before the city, and attack'd it unexpectedly, whilſt the king and his courtiers were feaſting at the wedding of his daughter; the *Portugueſe* ſet fire to one end of the city, notwithſtanding which, the inhabitants defended themſelves like deſperate men, even the women untiling the houſes, and giving what aſſiſtance they could for the defence of the place; but at laſt the *Portugueſe* having fought their way thro' the arm'd elephants, they entred the city, forcing the king to fly into the wilderneſs, where he died. They got a vaſt booty and above 200000 crowns in money. The *Portugueſe* were very careful to fortify the town by a ſtrong caſtle, and built ſeveral fine churches and monaſteries; they had

1662. had five parochial churches, and monaſteries in great numbers. Among the reſt, the jeſuits had erected a noble college here, with magnificent appartments; they were very liberal, and received all ſtrangers travelling to thoſe parts. There was a church here dedicated to our lady, where they ſay *Xaverius* preached often, and performed great miracles. Upon a high hill, within the city, the capuchins had a monaſtery; whilſt the *Roman* catholicks were in poſſeſſion of it, it was erected into a biſhoprick, under the archbiſhop of *Goa*. Not many years before the *Portugueſe* made themſelves maſters of it, it was no more than a village, but by the *Javaneſe* made a city.

Malacca *attack'd by the* Dutch. The *Dutch* admiral *Corielius Matclief* 1605, appeared with 11 ſhips and 1300 ſoldiers before the city of *Malacca*, where at that time *Don Furtado de Mendoza*, a brave ſoldier, was commander in chief: The firſt thing he did was to ſieze upon 4 ſhips that lay in the road; afterwards he ſet fire to the ſuburbs, and batter'd the place for two or three months, which occaſioned great famine and mortality within the city. But the *Portugueſe*, who were ſenſible of the importance of this place, ſent a conſiderable fleet from *Goa* to their relief, which engaging with ours, a ſmall fight enſued, in which the *Portugueſe* and *Dutch* loſt two ſhips each; at laſt the *Portugueſe* finding the *Dutch* reſolved to board them, retired under the caſtle, but were ſo cloſely purſued by *Matclief*, that he ruined their whole fleet, conſiſting of 16 galleots, 14 galeaſſes, and 14 ſmaller veſſels, with 3000 men on board them.

The Dutch *take* Malacca. The king of *Johor* beſieged the city of *Malacca* in 1606, with 60000 men, the *Portugueſe* having maintained themſelves there till 1640, when the *Dutch* after a ſiege of ſix months made themſelves maſters of it; after the *Portugueſe* had been in poſſeſſion of it 130 years. The *Dutch* found here beſides a vaſt booty, a great cannon which carried a ſhot of 64 pounds weight, ſince which time the *Dutch* have left no ſtone unturn'd to ſtock this city with all ſorts of neceſſaries as well as with inhabitants, both *Dutch* and *Indians*. The origin and progreſs of *Malacca* is this, deſcribed by *Barros* and ſome other hiſtorians.

The origin of Malacca. The foundation of *Malacca* was laid about 250 years before the arrival of the *Portugueſe* in the *Indies*. About that time one *Sangeſinga* reign'd in *Sinkapura*, ſituate under 30 min. of northern latitude, and in the neighbouring countrey of *Java*, one *Paravisa*, who at his death left two ſons under the guardianſhip of his own brother, their uncle; but he having found means to murder the eldeſt, uſurped the throne; at which ſome of the noble *Javaneſe* being highly diſguſted, did with *Paramiſora*, their late king's youngeſt ſon, fly to *Sinkapura*, where they met with a kind reception from *Sangeſinga*, but it was not long before *Paramiſora*, in combination with his *Javaneſe*, murder'd *Sangeſinga*, and put himſelf in poſſeſſion of his kingdom. The king of *Siam* being highly exaſperated at the treachery committed againſt *Sangeſinga*, his vaſſal and ſon-in-law, forced the *Javaneſe* to quit the countrey, who being now obliged to ſeek for a new habitation, ſettled themſelves near the river *Muar*, where they built a ſtrong hold, call'd *Pagopago*; beſides the *Javaneſe*, *Paramiſora* was follow'd by 2000 others, ſuch as they call *Cellati*, who live upon fiſhing and robbing; but tho' they had been very inſtrumental in reſettling him in *Sinkapura*, he did not think fit to receive them within the body of his new built city; which made them ſettle their colony about three or four leagues from the river *Muar*, not far from whence *Malacca* now lies; where they join'd with the inhabitants, who were half ſavages; ſince which time their language is call'd the *Malaga* language. But when they began to be ſtreighten'd for room, ſome of them ſettled themſelves about a quarter of a league from thence, on a hill call'd *Bitan*, ſurrounded with a large plain: *Paramiſora* being taken with the conveniency and pleaſant ſituation of this place, abandon'd *Pagopago*, and tranſplanted his colony near this place, which afterwards was call'd *Malacca*, *i. e.* a baniſh'd perſon, in memory of the exiled *Javaneſe*; and in proceſs of time, all the traffick of *Sinkapura* was transferr'd to *Malacca*. *Saquan Dorſa*, ſon of *Paramiſora*, ſucceeded him in the kingdom, and having ſubmitted himſelf as a vaſſal to the king of *Siam*, reduced the whole countrey of *Sinkapura* to the eaſt, as far as *Puto* on the iſle of *Zambilan*, which lies weſt of *Malacca*, a tract of land of forty leagues in length. The ſucceſſors of *Saquan Dorſa* found means to ſhake off by degrees the yoke of the king of *Siam*, and to make themſelves ſoveraign kings, eſpecially after they were by the *Perſians*, and thoſe of *Surat*, brought over to the mahometan religion. The king of *Siam* 1502, about 9 years before the *Portugueſe* became maſters of *Siam*, did attack the king of *Malacca* with a fleet of 200 ſail, aboard of which were 6000 ſoldiers, under the conduct of *Laoſamava Privan*, his admiral and governor of *Ligoor*, but his fleet was miſerably ſcatter'd by a tempeſt, and many of his ſhips fell into the hands of the mahometans by treachery.

Its traffick. The harbour of *Malacca* is one of the fineſt in all the *Indies*, being navigable at all the ſeaſons of the year, a conveniency belong-

1662. belonging ſcarce to any other in the *Indies*. It it moſt conveniently ſituated for traffick, for there you may to this day ſee vaſt numbers of merchants ſhips coming from *Bengal*, *Coromandel*, *Banda*, *Java*, *Sumatra*, *Siam*, and in ſhort from all parts of the *Indies*. Whilſt the *Portugueſe* were in poſſeſſion of it, this city was very famous for its traffick and riches in gold, precious ſtones, and all other rarities of the *Indies*; *Malacca* being the key of the *China* and *Japan* trade, and of the *Malacca* iſlands and *Sunda*. In ſhort *Malacca* was the richeſt city in the *Indies*, next to *Goa* and *Ormus*. Before the *Dutch* had made themſelves maſters of *Malacca*, a ſhip was ſent every year thither from *Portugal*, which ſetting out a month before their *Eaſt-India* fleet, and taking its direct courſe thither, without ſtaying in any place, except in caſe of neceſſity, uſed to freight there, and return with a richer cargo than any other ſhip ever did.

Great paſſage thro' the ſtreights of Malacca.

All the ſhips that came from the north, *viz.* of *China*, *Japan*, *Siam*, *Cambodia*, *Tonking* and *Manilha*, and are bound for the weſt, to wit to the coaſt of *Coromandel*, *Bengale*, and other places thereabouts, as likewiſe thoſe coming from the weſt to the north, muſt paſs thro' the ſtreights of *Malacca* or *Sinkapura*, and conſequently by *Malacca*, as I told you before. The *Portugueſe* uſed to take 10 *per cent.* cuſtom of all ſhips paſſing that way, whereby they got vaſt riches, but the *Dutch Eaſt-India* company has aboliſh'd this, looking upon it as an unreaſonable impoſition, and are contented to traffick there. *Malacca* is a countrey producing but very little it ſelf, but muſt be look'd upon as the ſtaple of the *Indies*, whither all precious commodities are brought from *China*, the *Molucca* and other neighbouring iſlands, from *Bengal*, *Coromandel*, *Banda*, *Java*, *Sumatra*, *Siam*, *Pegu* and other places. The iſland of *Sumatra* furniſhes them with gold, pepper and other merchandiſes; from *Ligoor*, *Pera*, *Queda*, *Outjang* and *Salang* they have vaſt quantities of tin, which is brought up thoſe places by the factors of the company, and ſent to *Malacca*, from whence it is tranſported to the coaſt of *Coromandel*, to *Bengal*, *Perſia* and *Surat*, and ſold for ready money. The *Chineſe* bring hither vaſt ſtores of ſilk and porcelain, damaſks, brocados, ſattins, muſk, rhubarb, iron, ſaltpeter, fine ſilver, pearls great and ſmall, ivory and *China* fans, which they exchange for pepper, frankincenſe, ſtuffs of *Camboya*, coral wrought and unwrought, painted callicoes of *Palakatte*, and white callicoes of *Bengal*, cinnabar, quick-ſilver, and ſuch other drugs as come from *Camboya*. The iſland of *Java* ſupplies them with rice, oxen, ſheep, ſtags-fleſh and pork; in ſhort, there is ſuch a vaſt traffick and concourſe of merchants here, that from thence probably it got the name of the *Golden Cherſoneſus* among the ancients; *Malacca* being certainly the richeſt harbour that can be ſeen; for formerly, and even to this day, the merchants were ſo rich here, that they uſed to compute by no leſs than by bars of gold, of which a vaſt quantity is found near the rivers and in the mountains to the weſt, to wit, on the famous rivers *Kedan*, and *Peren* or *Peragh*. The mahometans living along the coaſt, uſed formerly to trade hither with linen and ſome other commodities, but not ſo much of late years, neither is the pepper trade ſo conſiderable here now, as in former days, ſince the *Dutch Eaſt-India* company have ſettled their factories on the eaſtern coaſt of *Sumatra*, which produces great quantities of pepper. However, ſhips are ſometimes detained here for a conſiderable time, by reaſon of the contrary *Monzon* or ſeaſon winds. 1662.

Coin of Malacca.

Formerly they had no other coin but what was made of tin at *Malacca*, being of great weight, but little value; or rather they exchanged their commodities for gold and ſilver by weight; but now they coin both gold and ſilver, a piece of eight being worth commonly two gilders 11 ſtivers. They have two ſorts of weights, *viz.* the great and ſmall bar: The great bar conſiſts of 200 *Kattys*, each *Katty* containing 26 *Tayls*, or 38½ ounces *Portugueſe* weight, a *Tayl* being a ounce and a half: The ſmall bar comprehends likewiſe 200 *Kattys*, each *Katty* comprehending 22 *Tayls*. According to the computation of others, a bar of *Malacca* contains 200 *Kattys Aetſhyns*, or three *Chineſe Pikol* each *Pikol* computed at 122 pound weight, making altogether 366 pound weight. The great bar or weight is made uſe of when they weigh pepper, cloves, nutmegs, mace, white and red ſandals, indigo, allum, eagles-wood and civet; with the leſſer weight, quick-ſilver, copper, leaf-gold, oil of nutmegs, benzoin, camphire and ſuch like commodities. The city of *Malacca* is inhabited by many *Dutch*, but for the moſt part by *Meſtices* and *Kaſtices*, ſome *Chineſe*, *Pagans* and *Jews*, for the conveniency of traffick.

The Malayars.

The *Malayars* or natives of *Malacca* are tawny, with long black hair, great eyes and flat noſes; they deduce their origin from the *Javaneſe*, but their eyes are quite different, they are for the moſt part naked, wearing only a piece of ſtuff wrapt about the middle, with their arms and legs naged. Their only ornament being gold bracelets and earings ſet with precious ſtones. The

Their cloaths.

women

1662. women wear ſilk cloaths and ſhort ſkirts, embroidred with gold and precious ſtones, ſome of which are twiſted in their locks, which are very long. The women are extravagantly proud here, expecting more reverence than any other *Indian* women.

Kakerlakken. There is alſo another peculiar ſort of men in *Malacca*, called by the *Dutch Kakerlakken* (from a certain monſtrous creature in the *Indies* of the ſame name) who are blind by day, and can only ſee by night. They can tell money, work, and do any other thing in the dark, which they cannot do by daylight, which they paſs away for the moſt part in ſleeping, and ſeldom riſe 'till ſunſet. In ſhape and proportion of their limbs, as well as by their complexion, they reſemble the *Europeans*, having commonly grey eyes; whereas all the eaſtern nations have black and dark brown eyes. Their hair is inclining to yellow, and of ſuch a length among the women, that it reaches down to their hipps; their feet are bent inward. The ſame kind is likewiſe found in ſome other places of the *Indies*, and in *Africa*.

The Malaya *tongue.* The language uſed at *Malacca* is called the *Malaya* tongue, from the natives of the countrey, being very famous throughout the *Eaſt-Indies*. For the general concourſe of ſo many nations, different in their languages, has put them upon a neceſſity of compiling a certain language, compoſed of the beſt and choiceſt words of all the reſt, which therefore is accounted the neateſt and moſt agreeable of the *Eaſt-Indies*, which is the reaſon that not only the neighbouring, but alſo far diſtant nations that trade with *Malacca*, are deſirous to learn it, and look upon it as a great accompliſhment. For the better encouragement of this language, and the benefit of their officers and factors, the *Dutch Eaſt-India* company has cauſed a dictionary both in the *Malaya* and *Dutch* tongues to be publiſh'd.

Their religion. Moſt of the *Malayers* are either chriſtians or mahometans, tho' there are likewiſe ſome pagans and *Jews* ſettled at *Malacca*, for the convenience of commerce.

The countrey. The coaſt of *Malacca* is a flat or marſhy countrey, and conſequently not extraordinary wholeſome; but deeper in the countrey are many hills and wilderneſſes, which are plainly diſcovered at ſea. It produces but little for the ſuſtenance of life, except what is brought forth in gardens, and what grows among the mountains, where you meet with ſome rice and peaſe; the defect of which is ſupply'd by vaſt numbers of ſmall veſſels, which come every day from *Bengal* and *Sumatra*, and bring thither rice, and other eatables. However, they are pretty well ſtored with ſuch fruits as commonly grow in the *Indies*. The fruit *Durions* grow here much better and larger than in any other part of the *Indies*: They have likewiſe *Ananas*, *Jambos*, *Mangoes*, *Karambolas* and *Papajas*; they have whole woods of cocotrees. Here grows a certain tree call'd the mourning-tree by the *Portugueſe*, becauſe its flowers cloſe up in the night-time. Here you may meet alſo with cinamon trees, but not very many, neither do they approach in goodneſs to thoſe of *Ceylon*. But of *Kalamback* or *Aloes* wood and *Benzoin* they have great plenty. Here are to be found ſome *Indian* fruits, peculiar only to this place, but no pears, apples, plums, cheries, or any ſuch like *European* fruits. Oxen, cows, ſheep and horſes are likewiſe very ſcarce here, which are brought thither a great way out of the countrey, and are ſeldom very fat. Formerly the countrey hereabouts did abound in wild beaſts of all ſorts, ſuch as tygers, elephants, *&c.* which were ſo ravenous, that they uſed to break in the night-time into the houſes of the inhabitants, who for their better ſecurity, uſed to ſleep upon trees; but ſince it has been ſo well peopled by the *Dutch*, this ſort of wild beaſts are but ſeldom heard of. 1662.

Cape Rachado *and* Barcelai. Juſt by *Malacca* is the cape or point of land call'd *Rachado*, and the cape of *Barcelai*, being a very high mountain near a point of land.

The mountain Madian. Not far from *Malacca* is a very large mountain call'd *Madian*, which by reaſon of the vaſt quantities of ſalt-petre it contains within its bowels, 1646, did break out with ſuch a terrible noiſe and earthquakes, as if the day of judgment was at hand.

Sinkapura. *Sinkapura* lies on the moſt ſouthern point of all *Aſia*, about half a degree to the north of the line, and 20 leagues from *Malacca*. This cape has imparted its name to the ſtreights of *Sinkapura*. The country of *Sinkapura* had before *Malacca* was built its own kings, and was the chiefeſt place of trade on this coaſt, being much frequented by the *Chineſe* merchants, and thoſe of *Camboya*. The mountains near the ſtreights of *Sinkapura* bearing the ſame name, produce moſt excellent diamonds. About *Sinkapura* is a certain nation, which with their whole families live always at ſea in their ſmall veſſels; they are called *Saletes*, live upon fiſhing, and are ſubject to the king of *Jor*. About two leagues beyond the ſtreights of *Sinkapura* is the river *Johor*, at the entrance of which you ſee two mountains, or rather high iſlands ſhaped like ſugar loaves; one is four times bigger than the other, lying N. N. E. as you enter the river, and the other N. E. On the other ſide of the river you diſcover a high hill, tho' the ſouth-ſide of the river is a champain country.

There

1662. There is 10 fathom water at the mouth of this river.

The isle of Rocks. To the south of *Malacca* is a small isle, of about half a league in compass, by the *Portugueſe* call'd *Ilha das Pedras*, or the *Isle of Rocks*, and has very good fresh water.

About half a cannon shot from the city, another small island call'd *Malacca*, and by the *Portugueſe Ilha das Naos*, or the *Ship Island*. Two leagues from *Malacca* is a pretty large isle call'd *Sapta*. That vast point or tract of land on which the country of *Malacca* or *Malaya* lies, being the most southern of all the *East-Indies*, comprehends likewise several other kingdoms and cities, to wit, *Patany*, *Pahan*, *Pera*, *Queda*, *Johor* or *Jor*, *Ligoor*; and farther to the north the kingdom and city of *Tanaſſery*. We will give you a short account of the kingdom of *Johor*, *Putany*, *Ligoor* and *Pahan*.

The kingdom of Jor *or* Johor. The kingdom of *Jor* or *Johor* stands indebted for its name to its capital city, call'd by some *Goer* or *Goera*, and *Joar* or *Goar* or *Gohor*. It is situate at the very streights of *Malacca*, bordering in part upon the kingdom of *Malacca*, and on the other side upon *Pan* or *Pahan*. The antient city of *Johor* or *Jor* (call'd in some maps *Guar*) was very large and magnificently built, but was in 1603 destroyed by the *Portugueſe*, who left only a few houses standing, which were immediately inhabited again. The king of *Johor* caused in 1609 another city to be built, somewhat higher up the river above *Johor*; this he call'd *Batuſabar*, towards the building of which, the *Dutch* under their admiral *Peter Verkoeven* contributed 3000 pieces of eight, out of the booty they had taken from the *Portugueſe* ships coming from *Makao*, near the cape *Rachado*. Most of the chief inhabitants of the old city of *Jor* retired from thence to *Batuſabar*; a half day's journey from whence is *Sedalli*, near the sea-side. It is a very fertile country, abounding in lemons, and citrons as big as a man's head, *Bananaes*, *Batataes*, *Ananaes*, and other *Indian* fruits. They have also great store of pepper, cinnamon, buffles, cows, stags, wild boars, and divers sorts of monkeys and birds, besides some sea-monsters.

The dispoſition of the inhabitants. The inhabitants are naturally brave, but very lascivious, liers, great dissemblers, and proud beyond measure. Their complection is inclining to a light blue, with broad faces, crooked noses, and very black teeth, which they acquire by chewing the weed *Letel*, black teeth being accounted a great ornament among them.

Their cloathing. The common people go quite naked, having only a piece of stuff to cover their members, which hangs down to their toes. The rich and better sort wear a kind of jackets made of blue, green or red callicoe, or what colour they please; they are shaped like our shirts, with wide sleeves, are open before, and reach only to their knees. They have also two silken strings of the same colour with the jacket, one serves for a girdle, the other for a head-string. They paint their nails yellow, and the greater quality they pretend to the longer they wear their nails. The richer sort commonly wear a poniard on their side, enriched with precious stones. Their king has many other petty kings, his vassals, under his jurisdiction. The king of *Jor* or *Johor* in 1606 attack'd the city of *Malacca* with 60000 men, which shews him to be a potent prince, and in the taking of the city of *Jor*, the *Portugueſe* got 1500 brass pieces of cannon; in 1608, *Ratiſpont* the then king of *Jor*, being about 30 years of age, came aboard *Dutch* fleet with 30 of his wives, he had three gold chains set with precious stones about his neck, and his poinard was likewise enriched with sapphires and diamonds, valued at 50000 gilders. The inhabitants are one half Mahometans, the other Pagans: 1609, one *John de Paratuan* was king of *Jor*, he was styled the *Great King*, being likewise king of *Malacca*, and *Raya Sybrang*, *i. e.* prince of the other side of the river. In 1611, the king of *Azem* sent back the brother of the king of *Jor*, with a fleet of 36 ships, and a convoy of 2000 men, with abundance of cannon and ammunition, in order to assist in the rebuilding of the city of *Jor*. It was generally reported, that the king of *Azem* having given his sister in marriage to him, did intend to set him upon the throne, instead of his brother, who then reigned.

The isle of Linga. *Linga* is an island under the jurisdiction of the king of *Johor*, who has a governor there; it produces abundance of *Zagu*, but no rice; in 1606 it had about 3000 inhabitants.

The kingdom of Pan *or* Pahan. The kingdom of *Pan* or *Pahan*, is by the *Portugueſe* call'd *Paon*, and by others after the *Arabians Phaan*; it being a custom among the mahometan *Arabians* to pronounce *phe* instead of *p*. To the north it borders upon the kingdom of *Patane*, and adjoins to that of *Johor*, as well as to the streights of *Malacca*. The city of *Pahan* is situate about a league from the sea-shore, being inhabited only by the nobility, the common people dwelling in the suburbs. It is not very large, but surrounded with a wall made of the trunks of trees joined close together, of about four fathoms high, strengthened on each corner with a bastion, but not fill'd with earth. The streets are enclosed on both sides with hedges of reeds, and planted with coco and other trees, resembling rather some gardens adjoining to one another in the suburbs, than a well

1662. a well regulated city, the houſes being generally of reed and ſtraw, only the king's palace is of wood. The river of *Pahan* is very broad, but not navigable by galleys except at high water: The country round about is very low, and produces about 300 bahars of pepper; as likewiſe *Palo de Aquila* or eagle wood, *Kalamback* wood and camphire, but not ſo good as that of *Bornee*, gold (but very coarſe) nutmegs, mace, *Sapan* wood, diamonds, *Pedro de Porco*, or hogs ſtones, which are accounted a greater antidote than the bezoar ſtone. Deeper into the country are abundance of elephants. The inhabitants are the greateſt impoſtors in the world. The king is tributary to the king of *Siam*, but after *Albuquerque* had conquered *Malacca*, he ſent his deputies to *Pahan*, to oblige that king to promiſe fealty to him. At *Pahan* great quantities of baſkets are made and ſold, they are better than thoſe made in *Java*, but not ſo good as the *Portugueſe*. They alſo caſt great guns here of 3000 pounds weight. The inhabitants are partly mahometans, partly pagans. Their king who reigned in 1612, had married the youngeſt ſiſter of the queen of *Patane*. The two ſiſters having not ſeen one another in 28 years, the queen of *Patane* ſent to the king of *Pahan*, to deſire leave for her ſiſter, his ſpouſe, to come to ſee her, which the king refuſing, ſhe laid an embargo upon all the ſhips loaden with rice, and bound from *Siam*, *Campaja*, *Lugor*, and other places to *Pahan*; and immediately ſent a fleet of 70 ſhips, on board of which were 4000 men, with ſtrict orders to bring along with them the queen of *Pahan*, whether the king were willing or not; but it was not long before the king of *Pahan*, with the queen his ſpouſe, and two young children, being forced by famine and a revolt among his ſubjects to leave the country, came to viſit the queen of *Patane*, where they met at firſt but with a cold reception, not one of all the queen's court giving the king of *Pahan* as much as one viſit, but cauſed all his dogs to be kill'd, he being not able to keep them any longer. Some days after matters began however to look with a better face; for the 1ſt of *Anguſt* the queen of *Patane* invited the king of *Pahan* to a moſt ſumptuous feaſt, where ſhe diverted him with ſeveral *Indian* women dancers. The king of *Pahan* returned not long after with his queen, the ſiſter of the queen of *Patane*, into his country, but carried away with him no preſents to make him amends for the charge he had been at, having ſpent almoſt all he had. The king of *Pahan* who reigned in 1607. was then about 40 years of age, and his ſon had married the daughter of the king of *Queda*.

1662. *The kingdom of Patane.*

The kingdom of *Patane* or *Patany*, having derived its name from its capital city, borders to the ſouth upon *Pahan*, being ſituate upon the ſame eaſtern coaſt, to the north upon *Siam* and the kingdom of *Lugor* or *Ligor*; theſe two kingdoms being incorporated into one. The city of *Patane* is ſituate under 7 deg. 56 min. of northern latitude, not far from the ſea, and ſurrounded to the land-ſide by bogs. The harbour is about half a league from the city, which is about half a league in length, and very narrow, fortified with high wooden palliſado's put cloſe together, according to the cuſtom of theſe countries. The houſes are artificially built of wood and canes, and very lightſome. The ſuburbs are likewiſe much longer than broad, and are encompaſs'd on the backſide by a pleaſant rivulet. The royal palace and court where moſt perſons of quality live, are inviron'd with palliſado-work, in the nature of a *Palanck*; the mahometan church is a ſtately edifice of brick-work, gilt very richly within, and adorned with pillars, curiouſly wrought with figures. In the midſt cloſe to the wall is the pulpit, carv'd and gilt all over, unto which the prieſts are only permitted to aſcend by four large ſteps. They have alſo ſeveral temples dedicated to their *Pagan* idols, among which three excel the reſt. When the *Dutch* in 1602 ſettled firſt here, they ſaw in one of thoſe temples belonging to the ſubjects of the king of *Siam*, a gilt ſtatue reſembling a man, but of the bigneſs of a horſe, with one hand down and the other upwards. On each ſide ſtood a very large dragon gilt, with two ſtone ſtatues, to wit, a man on the one, and a woman on the other ſide, with their hands lift up to heaven. The ſame they ſaw in the ſecond, with this difference only, that one half of it was only gilt, the other painted red. In the third was one in the ſame poſture, with a gilt ſtreak croſs the breaſt; and behind the altar of the great idol, was another leſſer ſtatue reſembling a man, with a large horn in the forehead; this idol their prieſts ſay, repreſents the great God.

Temperature of the air.

The climate is very temperate and wholeſome here, notwithſtanding it lies near the line. Their ſummer begins in *February*, and continues nine months, *viz.* till the end of *October*, during which ſeaſon they have two different winds, to wit, by day from the ſea, and by night from the land-ſide. In *November*, *December* and *January* is their winter, when it blows and rains ſo violently from the north-eaſt, that there is no ſtirring for ſhips out of the harbour till *February*, when the wind turning to the eaſt the rains ceaſe, and the fair ſeaſon returns. The

countrey

1662. country of *Patane* is very fruitful, abounding in rice and many other fruits, the chiefſt of which are the *Durions*, *Mangeſtans*, *Ananas*, *Lancrats*, *Rambutans*, *Piſangs*, pomegranates, oranges, lemons, and a peculiar kind of lemons, call'd *Gibol Lemons*, being tranſplanted hither from *China*. Each month here produces its peculiar fruits, tho' thoſe of certain months are preferable before the reſt. The grounds are plowed with bufflers or oxen, which they ſow with rice: They alſo plant good ſtore of pepper, but cannot ſell it ſo cheap here as in ſome other parts of the *Eaſt-Indies*. The woods and wilderneſſes are ſtock'd with wild creatures, ſuch as hares, rabbits, (but not ſo big as ours) ſtags, wild boars, tigers, bufflers, elephants, apes, monkeys, geeſe and ducks, (which lay eggs twice every day) and turtle-doves as finely coloured as the beſt parrots. The wild hogs do incredible miſchief among the rice, which obliges the countrymen to watch in the field in the night-time; when they ſhoot or otherwiſe kill them, they bury their carcaſſes under ground; the mahometans (for ſuch thoſe of *Patan* and *Malaya* are) being forbid the uſe of hogs fleſh, neither will they permit any body elſe to eat it.

How they catch the elephants.

The elephants, as I am credibly inform'd, are catch'd in the following manner: They ride on the back of a tame large elephant into the woods, whom they let looſe there; as ſoon as he meets with a wild elephant he engages him, and whilſt their ſnouts are entangled, ſome come from behind the wild elephant and twiſt a rope round his hind legs, and ſo keep him either to render him uſeful for the wars, or elſe kill him for his teeths ſake, which are in great eſteem in *China*.

The ſea hereabouts produces great ſtore of craw fiſh, oyſters and tortoiſes; and the ſame drugs, metals, and precious ſtones, that are found in the kingdom of *Pahan*, are likewiſe to be met with here.

The conſtitution of the inhabitants.

The natives of *Patane* are of an aſh-coloured complexion and well ſhaped, but very proud and conceited; the richer ſort never appearing abroad without a great train of ſervants. They are however very affable and civil in converſation, as well among themſelves as to ſtrangers; but they are no ſoldiers, nor inclined to warlike exerciſes, courage being none of their talent, but more taken with pleaſures than the uſe of arms. Their clothing is none of the beſt. The men are extremely addicted to venery, which renders them jealous above meaſure, their wives and daughters being not permitted to ſee their neareſt and beſt friends. They have an antient cuſtom ſince enacted into a law, that to check that enormous vice of ſodomy, the men are obliged to wear conſtantly two or three ſmall bells made of gold, ſilver or lead, betwixt the prepuce and the glans, or head of the yard. Adultery is a capital crime with them, eſpecially among the great officers and nobles of the kingdom; the father of the perſon that has committed the crime, or if he be not living, the next of kin is obliged to ſupply the place of executioner, but the miſcreant has the liberty to chuſe what kind of death he pleaſes. Notwithſtanding this ſevere puniſhment, adultery is very frequent among them, by reaſon of the extraordinary laſciviouſneſs of the women, who are very deſirous, and love to wallow in pleaſures. Fornication betwixt two unmarried perſons is not look'd upon ſo much as a treſpaſs. Nothing is more common than if any foreign merchants come to *Patane*, to aſk them whether they don't want ſome women for their conveniency, and there is no want of young handſome women who offer their ſervice, out of whom each may take his choice, and agree with her as he beſt can, as to what he is to allow her *per* month; which done, ſhe immediately repairs to his lodgings, where in the day time ſhe ſerves for a chamber-maid, and in the night for a bedfellow; and during this agreement, the man muſt be as careful to avoid the commerce of other women, as ſhe is on her ſide, unleſs he will expoſe himſelf to manifeſt danger. At parting the man pays her her wages, and ſo they are both free; and if he has a mind to change, he need not look far for one, it being a cuſtom among the nobles here to entertain many female ſlaves, whom they let out for ſuch a uſe, and gain great profit by them. For the reſt the natives are naturally lazy and idle, living for the moſt part upon fiſhing, and ſome handycraft trades; the beſt is, that they can be contented with a little, drink ſcarce any thing but water, and have a natural averſion to ſtrong liquors. Almoſt all the traffick and other buſineſs is in the hands of the *Chineſe*, who either themſelves or their factors, continually trade betwixt this and the circumjacent countries, ſuch as *Siam*, *Ligor*, *Kamboya*, *Kouchinchina*, *Makaſſar*, *Pahan*, *Jambi*, *Johor*, *Bantam* and other both inland and maritime places, whither they tranſport all ſorts of *Chineſe* commodities from *Patane*, as porcelain pots, pans, kettles, and iron work of all ſorts. The chief riches of the natives conſiſt in their lands and ſlaves, who live upon a ſmall allowance of rice and fiſh; but the foreign merchants tranſport thither abundance of rich merchandizes.

1662.

From

1662. From *Bengale* and *Malacca* they ſend clothes to *Patane*; from *Java* ſandel wood; from *Borneo* camphire, ſlaves, wax and bezoar-ſtones; from *Siam* the inhabitants of *Patane* are furniſhed with gold, rice, ſalt and lead; from *Siampa* and *Camboja* with ſlaves, cotton, *Kalamback*, and the fineſt aloes-wood; from *China* with white and yellow ſilk, gauſes, damaſks, ſattins, porcelain, iron and copper; from *Japan* with ſcimeters, copper, and ſuch like commodities. Many things are alſo tranſported hither that are bought up in other places by foreigners; as from *Amboyna* and *Banda*, nutmegs, mace and cloves; from *Timor* ſandel-wood; from *Jamby* and *Andragny* pepper, which they 1662.

Their traffick.



fetch likewiſe from *Champor*, *Lihor*, *Pahan*, *Mordyllion* and *Ligor*: *Pegu* ſupplies *Patane* with abundance of precious ſtones; there are alſo many things exported from thence by the foreign merchants; thoſe of *Lahor* and *Pahan* provide themſelves here with rice, ſalt, oxen, fowls and other eatables; thoſe of *Malacca* tranſport the bezoar ſtones; thoſe of *Borneo* iron, ſteel and copper; the *Siameſe* all ſorts of clothings and pepper; the *Chineſe* pepper, camphire, white and yellow ſandel-wood, ſkins, ivory, bufflers horns, and ſuch like; the *Japaneſe* ſtags ſkins, tin, lead and ſilk.

The country of *Patane* is much more powerful in ſhipping than *Johor*, *Pahan*, or any of the circumjacent kingdoms: They are governed by a king, who as well as the king of *Malaya* is tributary to the king of *Siam*; their uſual yearly tribute conſiſting of a flower wrought with gold, ſome fine cloths, velvets and ſcarlets; the king's chief counſellors are called *Mentary*.

This kingdom was in 1602 under the government of a queen, after the deceaſe of her huſband, ſhe being then but 15 years of age. Her name was *Pratie*, ſhe uſed to keep conſtantly within the court among her ladies of honour, of whom ſhe had a great number; ſhe did not allow them to marry, but connived at their amorous intrigues. Wherever ſhe went abroad to take the air, (which indeed happened but very ſeldom) ſhe was mounted on a very fine elephant, and attended by 2000 nobles and great officers, all clad in her deceaſed royal ſpouſe's liveries, with his coat of arms upon them. Before they returned, ſhe gave them always a ſplendid entertainment, and ſo came with the ſame cavalcade back to her court. The country of *Patane* is ſo populous, as to be able to bring 180000 armed men into the field; the city and ſuburbs of *Patane* alone being able to furniſh 10000 men.

Divers languages are in vogue, *viz.* the *Malayan*, *Siameſe*, *Pa[illegible]ſe* and the *Chineſe*; *Their language.*

1662. but the firſt is moſt uſed here, as well as in moſt other parts of the *Indies*. The king of *Patane* married his daughter to the eldeſt ſon of the king of *Johor*, (he having ſix in all) who with his youngeſt brother lived at the court of *Patane*; but the youngeſt being engaged in an illegal commerce with his brother's ſpouſe, he kill'd them both, according to the cuſtom of the country, which puniſhes adultery with death; notwithſtanding which, the king of *Patane*, to revenge his daughter's death, cauſed his ſon-in-law, the eldeſt ſon of the king of *Johor* to be ſlain; *John de Paratuan*, and *Regia Sabrang*, two brothers, and both kings of *Johor*, being not without reaſon, highly exaſperated at this proceeding, ſent one *Magat Mangſor Hoch* their ambaſſador, along with admiral *Jacob Heemſkerk*, to ſolicite a powerful aid from the ſtates-general againſt the king of *Patane*, but the ambaſſador dying at ſea put a ſtop to that deſign.

The iſle of Ding Ding. Having diſpatch'd my buſineſs here, we ſet ſail the next day to a certain iſland call'd *Ding Ding*, abounding in fuel and moſt excellent freſh water. It lies about 30 leagues to the north of *Malacca*, being covered all over with very tall trees, which grow on the hills. We arrived here the 10th of *January* 1661, and immediately after our landing, fell to the cutting down of trees; among the reſt we endeavoured to pick out a certain kind of trees, the wood of which is a pale red, but to our great amazement could meet with none, till at laſt we diſcovered our error, to wit, that the pith only was red, but all the other wood round about it of a different colour. This wood is much valued by the *Indians* for its beauty, of which they make many curious pieces. The freſh water which runs down from the rocks, claims the preference before any in the *Indies*; and this iſle has likewiſe the conveniency of a good bay, where ſhips may ride ſafely at anchor. On the eaſt-ſide it has another bay call'd *Cox Bay*, where we uſed ſometimes to catch as much fiſh at a draught, as our chaloop was able to carry.

Is deſtitute of inhabitants. It is deſtitute of inhabitants and all ſorts of wild creatures, except wild boars, which ſwim over thither from the continent to feed upon a certain root that grows there, nevertheleſs it abounds in water-fowls more than any other place of the *Indies:* Here is a certain kind of birds call'd by the *Dutch Shuies Birds*, being of the bigneſs of a *Storex*, the head being without feathers. Here are alſo great quantities of tortoiſes and oyſters, the laſt of which are often ſeen faſtned to the branches of trees, which hang ſometimes above, ſometimes under water.

The clearneſs of the water having invited us to take a turn at ſwimming, I found ſomething ſticking to one of my legs, which when I look'd upon, I found to be a ſea-apple, and ſtruck it off; but the ſting remaining in the fleſh occaſioned a great inflammation and pain, which was not appeaſed till a conſiderable time after the ſting was taken out. 1662.

They leave it. After we had provided ourſelves with what this place could afford us, we ſet ſail again the 14th of *January*; as we were ſailing the ſame day along the coaſt of *Sumatra*, our trumpeter catch'd a ſtone-bream of about three feet long, which appearing very fine to the eye, we ordered the cook to dreſs it for the table of the cabin. We were all ſo greedy, that when it was brought in, we aſk'd the cook whether he was ſure he had kept none behind, which he took ſo ill, that he anſwered us, whether we look'd upon him as a thief? But it was not long after dinner, before all thoſe that had dined in the cabin, were ſeized with ſuch a giddineſs in their heads, that they were not able to ſit upright; I was the firſt who cry'd out, *We have certainly eat a poiſonous fiſh*; but our ſurgeon having no proper remedies aboard, we ſent our chaloop to the ſhip the *Leerdam*, from whence being furniſhed with vomits, we were by the frequent uſe of them, after a ſickneſs of 14 days reſtored to our former health. During our ſickneſs our beſt diverſion was, that being inform'd how the cook was as ſick as any of us, we were convinced, that notwithſtanding his great pretence of honeſty, our ſuſpicion was not ill grounded, which verified our old proverb, *That the cook is commonly the laſt who dies for want of victuals:* Two cats that had eaten the bones of this fiſh died ſoon after, tho' ſome tobacco-water had been given them to occaſion a vomiting, but none of us died, ſome few however were troubled with a lingring diſtemper afterwards. *A poiſonous ſea bream.*

It is not eaſy to imagine what could be the reaſon of this diſaſter, the ſea-bream being otherwiſe a fiſh both toothſome and wholeſome, unleſs we ſuppoſed this bream to have fed upon ſome poiſonous fiſh, ſuch as thoſe call'd by the *Dutch Seaquallan*, which are very poiſonous in thoſe hot countries; for if they touch but your fleſh, they cauſe an immediate inflammation; their fleſh is as ſoft as gelly; they are of the bigneſs of a trencher, or ſomewhat leſſer, have red and purple ſpots on their backs, and eight teats below on their bellies: At certain ſeaſons of the year, the ſeas about *Toutekoriin*, and near other places on the coaſt of *Malabar*, are ſo full of them, that they are obliged to deſiſt from fiſhing. But before we proceed farther in our voyage, it will be requiſite to give you a ſhort account of the iſle of *Sumatra*. *Reaſon of the poiſon of this fiſh.*

1662. The large and moſt potent iſland of *Sumatra* is by ſome authors call'd *Somatra*, *Samatra* and *Zamatra*. Its ſituation is to the ſouth-weſt juſt oppoſite to *Malacca*, about eight leagues from the continent, the great iſle of *Java*, lying to the ſouth of it. Its extent is from the 5th degrees of northern latitude, near the gulph of *Bengala*, to the ſouth ſouth-eaſt, to the 7th degree of ſouthern latitude, as far as the ſtreights of *Sunda*, beyond the coaſt of *Malacca*, comprehending a vaſt tract of ground of 12 degrees from the ſouth to the north, amounting to 130 leagues. Its whole length is 195 leagues, its breadth 50, and the whole circumference 360.

The iſle of Sumatra's *ſituation.*

This iſle was formerly divided by ſome into four, by others into 10 kingdoms, among which *Pedir*, *Pazem*, *Achem*, *Kampar*, *Menankabo*, *Zunda*, *Andragide* and *Auru* were the chiefeſt. Some there are who mention no leſs than 30 petty kingdoms, *viz.* *Daya*, *Lambry*, *Achem* or *Achen* or *Achin*, *Biar*, *Pedir*, *Lide*, *Pirada*, *Pacem*, *Bara*, *Daru*, *Arkat*, *Irkan*, *Rupat*, *Pury*, *Gaka*, *Kamper*, *Kapokan*, *Andragvery* or *Andragide*, *Jamby*, *Palimbang*, *Tana*, *Malayo*, *Sakampan*, *Tulumbavan*, *Andaloz*, *Piriaman* or *Pryaman*, *Tiko*, or *Tikouw*, *Barros*, *Quinchel*, and *Mankapa*, all which borrowed their names from their reſpective capital cities; and in antient times were govern'd by their own kings. But in proceſs of time, many of theſe were ſwallowed up in the kingdom of *Achin*, the moſt potent in this iſland, having under its juriſdiction the kingdoms and cities of *Pedir*, *Pazem*, *Daya*, *Barros*, *Paſtaman*, *Pryaman* and *Padang*, and conſequently the greateſt part of the iſle of *Sumatra*, beſides the kingdoms of *Queda* and *Pera* on the continent. All the other kingdoms and cities of *Sumatra* were conquered by foreign princes. This the ſouthern parts of *Sumatra*, viz. *Sillabar*, *Dampin*, *Liampon*, *Palimbang*, *Jamby* and ſome others, acknowledge the king of *Bantam* their ſovereign, or elſe the *Mataram* of *Java* for their protector. Some will have the iſle of *Sumatra* to be the ſame the ancients called *Taprobang*, tho' in my opinion that name belongs more properly to the iſle of *Ceylon*.

Is divided in many kingdoms.

The inhabitants of Palimbang *murther ſome* Dutch.

Not many years ago one of the chiefeſt cities of *Sumatra* was *Palimbang* or *Palembang*, ſituated near the weſtern coaſt of *Sumatra*, which on 24 *November* 1659, was laid in aſhes by the *Dutch* admiral and general *John van der Laen*, becauſe the inhabitants had about two years before ſurprized by treachery two of their yachts call'd the *Jakkatra* and the *Watchman*, and miſerably murthered the whole ſhips crew; and in the next following year had cut to pieces two other *Dutchmen* that were ſent aſhore, from aboard the veſſels the *Nieuport* and the *Lee dam* (lately come from the *Texel*) to ſerve as interpreters, their heads being by ſpecial order from the *Orangkay*'s put upon lances, and expoſed to the view of their comrades that were in the boats. 1652.

A fleet of Dutch *ſhips ſent to* Palimbang.

To revenge ſo barbarous a murder, a fleet of eleven ſhips ſet ſail from *Batavia* the 19th of *October* 1659, under command of *John Vander Laen* admiral, and *John Truytſman* vice-admiral, *viz.* the *Orange*, admiral, the *Poſtilion*, the *Molucco*, the *Arms of Batavia*, and the *Charles*; three galleots, to wit, the *Apple-tree*, the *Hour-glaſs*, and *Hammehiel*; and the chaloops, the *Crab*, the *Tronk*, and the *Flying Dear*, mann'd with 600 ſeamen and 700 land ſoldiers. The 30th they arrived without any remarkable accident in their paſſage before the river of *Palimbang*, where they met with the yachts the *Bloemendahl*, the *Koukerk*, and the *Cat*, and with the chaloops the *Cony*, and the *Koelong*, that were cruiſing thereabouts. The ſame day they got ſight of a *Chineſe* veſſel taking its courſe towards *Jamby*, which they detained till they had entered the river, and on the 3d of *November* ſent her in company of the chaloop the *Tronk* to *Jamby*. They entered the river in the following order. Firſt the *Arms of Batavia*, next the *Poſtilion*, then the yacht the *Bloemendahl*, aboard of which was the admiral, having left the *Orange* at the entrance of the river; the yacht the *Koukerk* vice-admiral, the yacht the *Cat*, the large chaloop the crab; after theſe came the three galleots, the *Hour-glaſs*, the *Apple-tree*, the *Hammehiel*; the ſhips the *Charles* and the *Molucco*, brought up the rear; the other chaloops were ordered to attack the admiral ſhip. The 3d and 4th of *November* was ſpent by the *Dutch* to enter the river, the 9th in the night time they were unexpectedly attacked by ſome of the inhabitants of *Palimbang*, in which engagement we had four or five wounded, the commanders not being time enough upon their guard. The 10th they were advanced betwixt the iſle of *Cambira* and the oppoſite ſhore, within ſight of the city of *Palimbang*, where they diſcovered three of the enemies forts; the firſt called *Bamagangan*, ſituate on the weſtern point of the river of the iſle of *Cambara*, the other two upon its eaſt point, oppoſite to the other, they were called *Mathapoura* and *Menapoura*. At our firſt appearance the enemy kept cloſe within their works, which gave us the more encouragement to penetrate higher up the river with our ſhips. But ſeveral large floats, upon which houſes filled with combuſtible matter were built, being laid in the ſtream, captain *Jurian Paulſon* was ordered with ſome boats and the yacht the *Hour-glaſs*,

They arrive before the river of Palimbang.

Come within ſight of the city.

Directions

A. ye Fort Bamagangian
B. ye Fort Matapure
C. ye Fort Cambare
D. A Fiery Engiane
E. a Chain cross ye River
F. ye Kings Vessels
G. Quarter of ye Moors Priests
H. ye two Yatches ye Jacatra & ye Watchman
I. Quarter of ye Chineses & Portugues
K. Our People Land
L. a Stilly made by ye Javeneſe
M. ye Royall Pallace
N. Cannon of a very large size; called their Idol
O. a Store Bulwark
P. ye Kings biggeſt Ships
Q. Very large tree Engians

V. II.

Betwixt page 186.187.

The City of PALEMBANG with its three Arts

1662. *Hour-glaſs*, to take a view of them, to cut their cables, and ſet them on fire, which being put in execution accordingly, the whole fleet advanced forward in order to attack the fort of *Bamagangan*. But as ſoon as we came within cannon ſhot of the fort, the enemy gave us a very warm ſalute out of his great cannon, from the forts both on the eaſt and weſtern points, tho' without any conſiderable loſs on our ſide, which gave us ſufficient encouragement to fire moſt furiouſly upon the firſt fort, with ſuch ſucceſs, that we ſet their magazine of powder on fire, which blew up with it the greateſt part of the fort, and all the circumjacent houſes; hereupon the yachts the *Bloemendahl*, the *Koukerk*, and the *Cat*, were ordered to anchor within piſtol ſhot from the ſhore, from whence we ſo grievouſly gall'd the enemy, both with our great and ſmall ſhot, that at laſt we landed, and made ourſelves maſters of the fort, where we found 22 iron and braſs cannon, which we immediately turned againſt the enemy to the land ſide, and continued in arms all the night long, which proved no unneceſſary precaution, for the enemy attacked us moſt furiouſly not long after, in hopes of regaining the place, but were repulſed moſt couragiouſly, with the loſs of only one man on our ſide.

But the enemies fire engi. s.

The fort Bamagangan *attacked.*

Fire engines of the enemy.

Then the enemy ſent four or five very large fire engines, being floats of timber with wood on houſes filled with combuſtible matter on the top of them, which took up almoſt the whole breadth of the river; the yachts the *Bloemendahl*, the *Koukerk*, and the *Cat*, had much ado to eſcape their fury, being forced to cut their cables; but the *Molucca* yacht had her fore-caſtle ſet on fire, and was with much ado ſaved by the help of many boats that were ſent to her aſſiſtance, without receiving any conſiderable damage; ſo that theſe fire engines were forced down the river by the current, and ſoon after vaniſhed into ſmoak. At the taking of the fort 30 *Javaneſe* were killed, and among them the old *Quevy*, *Tommagen*, *Nadapen Radia*, with his two ſons, who were buried the next day.

The fort Mathapoura *taken.*

The 11th early in the morning we likewiſe attacked and took the fort *Mathapoura*, where we found only four pieces of cannon, the enemy having thrown four more into the river, which we brought out from thence afterwards; the remaining part of the day was ſpent in ſhipping in what artillery and ammunition we had got; eight companies of ſoldiers were likewiſe landed the ſame afternoon in the iſle of *Cambara*, to attack the fort there, but to their great amazement found this ſtrong hold left by theſe cowardly wretches; we found here 12 pieces of cannon, ſome of which they had likewiſe thrown into the mud, but were recovered by our people, and carried aboard our veſſels, with a ſmall quantity of ammunition. Whilſt theſe things were tranſacting in ſight of the garriſon of *Palimbang*, they had found means to ſet fire to the yacht the *Watchman*, which they burned; and in the evening thoſe that had deſerted the fort under favour of a violent rain, did three ſeveral times attempt the recovery of it, in which engagement we had two killed and ſix wounded, and were forced to ſtand to our arms all the reſt of the night. The 12th and 13th were ſpent in embarking all the cannon and ammunition we had got in the 3 beforementioned forts, which done, it was reſolved in a council of war, forthwith to attack the *Chineſe* quarter, and ſo to make ourſelves maſters of the city before the enemies could recover themſelves from the fright they were put in by the loſs of their forts: As we were paſſing by the city we received the ſame ſalute we had before from the forts, but without any remarkable harm, or the loſs of one of our veſſels.

The iſle of Cambara *taken.*

The city of *Palimbang* was fortified with vaſt trunks of trees put cloſe together, upon which were planted a vaſt number of great cannon, ſo that it ſeemed impoſſible to be taken by ſo ſmall a number, being beſides this invironed with a deep and miry ditch. We were hard put to it how to find a ſafe landing place, till at laſt our admiral having eſpied at the uttermoſt point of the fortification a ſmall rivulet, which led up to a place where we perceived very little or none of the enemy's fire, we landed thereabouts with all our forces, and advancing boldly to the very gun-holes of the enemy, they threw their granados through them into the city, which ſetting the adjacent houſes on fire, the enemy were ſo terrified thereat, that they quitted their poſt, and thereby gave opportunity to the admiral *Vander Laen*, to Mr. *Truytſman*, and captain *Harman* to break thro' the fortifications into the city by three ſeveral ways. Here they met with a brave oppoſition from the inhabitants, who, according to the cuſtom of theſe nations, under the ſound of their *Amock*, fell couragiouſly upon theſe three bodies, of whom they killed 18, among which were a lieutenant, an enſign, and a ſergeant, but not without a much greater loſs on their ſide; the violent rains obliged the *Dutch* admiral to reconduct his men on board the veſſels that night, but the next morning they landed again, and entred the city in the ſame place, where a doubtful engagement enſued, till the inhabitants being at laſt forced to give way, were beat out of the place, and retired into the open

The fortification of Palimbang.

Attacked by the Dutch.

And taken.

1662. countrey. The first thing that was sacrificed to the fury of the flames, was the royal palace, after it had been despoiled of all its riches, and a vast train of artillery, which the king and his cowardly subjects left a prey to the *Dutch*, after they had for some time defended themselves, and fought hand to hand against them; but the admiral *Vander Laen* having laid two of their chief or *Quey Nabeys*, dead at his feet, the rest were so terrified thereat, that they sought for their safety in their heels. It is worth taking notice of that these *Indians* seemed to have paid a peculiar reverence to their great cannon, which we found covered with scarlet cloth lined with ramboutins, and so perfumed with incense that the smell thereof stuck a great while after to our fingers. All the artillery and cannon being taken out of the city and from the ramparts, the admiral ordered likewise the fortifications and adjacent houses to be laid in ashes; we found 15 of 21 of our people that were prisoners among them, in the prison on both sides of the royal palace, miserably murdered and mangled by these barbarous wretches, among which was *Jacob de Groot*; one *Dutch* boy only who was not put in irons, had the good fortune to escape their hands by a timely flight, the remaining six they had carried along with them: To revenge as much as possible this barbarity, all that remained of the city, was after the cannon and all the other booty we got were carried aboard our vessels, set on fire and destroyed, the 16th of the same month.

Fifteen Dutchmen *found murthered in the city.*

The enemies fire engine unsuccessful.

About the same time the enemy sent one of his before-mentioned fire engines, of a vast bigness, down the river; it consisted of 20 wooden houses erected upon floats of timber, which almost extended from one side to the other. But no sooner had the *Dutch* got sight of this engine, but they sent out their long boats well mann'd, who took care to protect our ships against it, and after it was passed by them, set it on fire in sight of the enemy, which consumed both the engines and a good number of houses standing on the banks of the river. The 17th and 18th our people were still busy in embarking the booty, artillery and cannon, and a day of thanksgiving was appointed to be kept throughout the whole fleet for this victory against the 23d. In the mean while we advanced higher up the river, to try whether we could meet with some vessels or plantations that way, but saw nothing of any moment. Mr. *John Vander Laen* and *John Truytsman* also writ a letter to the *Pangerang* or governour of *Palimbang*, which was dispatched thither the 23d by a *Chinese* prisoner and an old woman.

John Vander Laen general, and captain *John Truytsman*, commanders in chief of the *Dutch* forces now in the river and the countrey of *Palimbang*, send this letter to the *Pangerang* and all the chief councellours of the countrey of *Palimbang*. 1662.

A letter sent to the Pangerang.

NOtwithstanding our last success, we could not but put your highness in mind of the most abominable murder committed by your subjects upon so many innocent persons in the service of the Dutch East-India *company: which barbarous act, tho' it was highly resented by the governour, general, and council of the* Indies *residing at* Batavia, *yet to shew their inclinations to continue in peace with your highness, did at that time for the preventing the effusion of human blood, require and actually demand a reasonable satisfaction for these unheard of barbarities: To accomplish which, they caused certain propositions to be made by* John Truytsman *to your highness, with strict orders to insinuate to your highness all such reasons as might conduce towards the accomplishment of that end, which we don't question would have been sufficiently convincing to your highness, had not your evil councellours misguided you, and thwarted your good intentions. But seeing you slighted these conditions, and were very backward in giving due satisfaction, the great God of heaven and earth being highly displeased at your conduct, did so direct the heart of the beforementiened lord governour and his council, as to have recourse to arms, being the only remedy left them, ordained by God almighty to protect the just cause of their subjects. The great God of heaven having been pleased to bless their undertaking, for the due punishment of your malicious subjects, they are however willing to let your highness know, that the hostilities committed against you and your subjects, were undertaken with no other intention, than to revenge the innocent blood of their subjects, and to procure an honourable and reasonable peace; the said governour and his council being always more inclined to peace than war, if your highness is of the same sentiment we expect to hear from you either by your letter in answer to this, or by your deputies, it being our resolution to tarry for that purpose in your highness's territories, and these presents shall be a sufficient passport to those whom your highness shall be pleased to send to treat with us.* Given aboard the *Bloemendahl* the 20th of *November* 1659.

signed,
John Vander Laen,
John Truytsman.

The Dutch *fleet goes higher up the river.*

The 25th our ships went further up the river, and got sometimes sight of three or four lighters, which served for ferry boats; and

1662. and ſome few houſes built upon floats of timber; the lighters could not be taken, becauſe they came not within reach of our ſhot, and afterwards ſheltered themſelves in the ſmall rivulets among the weeds: The houſes were ſet on fire, and ſo we returned the 20 before the fort where we lay at anchor till next day. In the mean time *Peter de Goyer* director of the *Dutch* factory of *Jamby*, ſent the 11th of *November* from thence by the chaloop the *Tronk*, 75 capons, 100 pullets, and five goats, for the uſe of Mr. *John Vander Laen*, and the other commanders; this being all he was able to get, all eatables being extreamly ſcarce thereabouts at that time, becauſe the *Pangerang* of *Adrogory* and the young king of *Johor*, had lately tarried three months, with an attendance of 2000 perſons in theſe parts; and not long ago abundance of cattle and fowls had been killed for the wedding feaſt of his highneſs's daughter, who was married to the young *Patuan*. The admiral and captain *Truytſman* received not long after an anſwer from the *Pangarang* of *Jamby* to their letter dated the 20th of *November*, which being encloſed in another from Mr. *Peter Goyer* dated the 26th, was tranſlated out of the *Malayan*, and runs thus.

This letter is ſent from a ſincere heart, by the *Pangarang* of *Jamby* to the commanders in chief *John Vander Laen* and *Daman Sittia Bauwa* (meaning captain *Truytſman*) men famous for their prudence and courage.

The Pangerang *having underſtood that Mr.* John Maetzuicker *governour general of the* Dutch Eaſt-Indies, *has ſent* 18 *ſhips againſt thoſe of* Palimbang, *has thought fit to declare, that his ſentiments agree with the governour's, and that he is ready to approve all without the leaſt contradiction, what ſhall be undertaken by the ſaid Mr.* John Maetzuicker, *aſſuring Mr.* John Vander Laen *and* Daman Sittia Bauwa, *that he will ſtand firm to this as well as to the other promiſes made by him the* Pangerang *before. Purſuant to this reſolution the* Pangerang *did upon the receipt of the letter, ſend* Zitta Antacca *with ſome troops to make war upon thoſe of* Palimbang. *The* Pangerang *alſo forewarns and commands* John Vander Laen *and* Daman Sittia Bauwa *to be upon their guard, becauſe thoſe of* Palimbang *are near at hand; this being all the* Pangerang *commands at this time to* John Vander Laen *and* Daman Sittia Bauwa.

The 27th all the houſes that were yet ſtanding near the fort of *Manſapoura* were together with the fort itſelf, ſet on fire by ſpecial order from the admiral, and the ſame day we lifted a great piece of ordnance out of the marſhes in the iſle of *Cambara*. And being ſenſible that either out of an obſtinate temper or out of deſpair the *Pangerang* of *Palimbang* would ſcarce ſend any deputies or anſwers to ours of the 20th, we reſolved to leave that river; and accordingly with the next tide ſet ſail and returned thro' the branch of the river call'd *Banjarmaſſum* in order to burn all the houſes and plantations we ſhould meet with; but having ſpent 5 days, *viz.* to the 3d of *December* in coming down the ſaid river; we met at its entrance with the ſhip the *Orange*, which joining with the reſt, we continued our voyage the 4th, and arrived with the whole fleet and our forces the 9th in the afternoon, in the road of *Batavia*. Our booty conſiſted chiefly in 75 pieces of great, and 142 leſſer cannon, ſome of which were of iron. We found no pepper here, but great ſtore of rice and *Padie*, all which was conſumed by the fury of the flames, as likewiſe a vaſt number of ſmall veſſels, among which were the king's pleaſure boats, of which there was a vaſt number; ſome few were carried away by our people, to be kept in remembrance of this action.

1662.

The Dutch *leave the river.*

Arrive at Batavia.

The kingdom of *Achin* is ſituate in the moſt northern part of the iſle of *Sumatra*. Its capital city bears the ſame name, being ſituate in a plain upon a pleaſant rivulet, about half a league diſtant from the ſea-ſhore. The royal place, which lies in the very center of the city, is very large, of an oval figure, ſurrounded with a ditch, and in ſome places defended by very large pieces of ordnance; the ditch is guarded by paliſadoes, in which are ſeven gates. On the left ſide of the river is a fort to defend its entrance, and ſeveral other redoubts are erected in the marſhes, round about the city of *Achin*, for its defence. The air ſeems to be much more wholſome here than in the ſouthern parts of the iſle. The houſes which are covered with reeds are built upon poſts, ſo that you muſt enter them by ſeveral ſteps, the reaſon of which is, that at certain ſeaſons the waters riſe to ſuch a height, that the whole city is overflown by it. The chiefeſt riches of the king of *Achin* conſiſt in gold, jewels and elephants; he entertains a great number of concubines which ſerve both for his bed and his guards in the antichambers; beſides which, he maintains a good number of eunuchs, who attend his perſon. Four *Sabandars* or nobles have the chief management of the government under the king. This kingdom was in 1663 governed by a queen, who, as it was reported, had an inclination to be married to a *Hollander*; but the council of *Batavia*, for weighty reaſons would not conſent to the match. The inhabitants of *Achin* were always renowned for their courage and conduct beyond all other neighbouring nations, and have not only extended their con-

The kingdom of Achin.

3

1662. queſts over the circumjacent countries of *Sumatra*, but alſo made themſelves maſters of the kingdoms of *Queda* and *Pera* on the continent of *Malacca*; nay, they frequently have beſieged the *Portugueſe* in the city of *Malacca*, they having always been declared enemies of that nation.

Sillebar. On the weſtern coaſt, not above 4 leagues to the ſouth of the line, is within a bay, upon a very large river, a certain place call'd *Sillebar*, being ſurrounded with craggy mountains and vaſt woods; tho' the countrey thereabouts is very fertile in pepper; it belongs to the king of *Bantam*. On the ſame weſtern coaſt is a very large Bay, the ſhore of which is all over woody, as the bay of *Sillebar*, is ſurrounded with mountains; tho' the ſhore its ſelf is very green and pleaſant. Immediately after you come to the bay, you diſcover a ſmall point of land, behind which lies the town of *Sillebar*.

Tikouw. A few leagues to the ſouth of the line, is likewiſe the city of *Tikouw*, a place very ſlightly built, and ſome leagues from thence

Paſſaman. to the north, is the town of *Paſſaman*, at the foot of a high mountain.

Barros. *Barros* is alſo ſituate on the weſtern coaſt of *Sumatra*, about a league from the ſea-ſhore, upon a conſiderable river, betwixt *Paſſaman* and *Achin*. The countrey hereabouts produces pepper, camphire and benzoin. Hereabouts are likewiſe *Sinkel*, *Labo*, and *Daya*.

Pedir. *Pedir* lies ten leagues to the eaſt of *Achin*, with a high mountain betwixt both; the countrey, which was formerly a kingdom, is indifferently fruitful of rice and other fruits. Further to the eaſt, on the inward coaſt of *Sumatra*, are *Pacem*, *Dely*, *Aru*, *Kampar*, *Andripouro*, *Jamby* and *Palimbang*. *Andripouro* is ſituate under 3 deg. 30 min.

Padang. *Padang* lies on a very pleaſant river, whither a conſiderable number of *Indian* veſſels reſort. The *Dutch* divide the coaſt of *Sumatra* into the outward and inward coaſt. The inward coaſt is by the *Javaneſe* call'd the weſtern coaſt, as the outward coaſt is the northern coaſt, where is the kingdom of *Achin*.

Unwholeſomeneſs of the climate of Sumatra. The climate of *Sumatra*, is, by reaſon of its ſituation under the line, extremely unwholſome, eſpecially for ſtrangers, and in the rainy ſeaſon, when ſcarce a day paſſes but they are afflicted with ſudden ſhowers, ſtorms, thunder and lightnings, which ſoon after end in a calm. Beſides, that the heat of the ſun-beams draws up the nauſeous vapours of the ſtanding waters, which infect the air, and produce malignant fevers, and other lingring diſtempers. This is moſt viſible on the weſtern coaſt of *Sumatra*, and eſpecially in *Tikouw* and *Pryaman*, where the air is equally obnoxious to 1662. the inhabitants and foreigners, which makes the *Dutch* inhabiting there, look bloated and very pale. In the *Devil's-Iſle*, and near the river *Indapura* the air is ſo poiſonous, that it kills men and beaſts as ſoon as they ſet foot on ſhore; and if they happen to eſcape by returning immediately, they certainly die ſoon after.

The nature of the iſle. The iſle of *Sumatra* is full of pleaſant woods, craggy high mountains, agreeable valleys, fruitful plains, very fine rivers and large bays affording great ſtore of fiſh; beſides that, the marſhes and pools are ſtock'd with young oak-trees, the bark whereof gives the waters a red tincture.

Its rivers. The chief rivers here are, the *Achin*, *Andregiri*, *Jamby*, *Palimbang*, *Manancabo*, *Banjarmaſſum*, *Sillebar*, *Indapura*, and *Pryaman*, all which have derived their names from their reſpective adjacent cities, or theſe from them. The waters of the river *Indapura* are red for two leagues at ſea, which proceeds from the great quantity of young oak trees growing in the marſhes, the bark of which imparts a red dye to the river; for which reaſon alſo the water is very unwholſome to drink.

Its ſoil. The ſoil produces rice in abundance, and all other ſorts of *Indian* fruits, ſuch as *Bananas*, potatoes, coco-nuts, oranges, limons, tamarinds, ſugar, honey, ginger, but eſpecially pepper, of which a great quantity is tranſported from thence into foreign countries. Some years ago many plantations of pepper were deſtroy'd by the ſoldiers upon the outward coaſt of *Sumatra*, which were ſince replanted, yet in many places cotton-trees have been planted in their ſtead. The ſame coaſt alſo produces camphire, the moſt durable of all others, which differs from the *Japoneſe* camphire in this particular quality, that whereas in this, the ſcent is in the wood; the camphire of *Sumatra* contains it in its own ſubſtance, without imparting the leaſt ſhare thereof to the wood. This iſland affords likewiſe white benzoin, *Kalamback* or aloes-wood, eagles-wood, and ſandels-wood. The foreſts here feed divers kinds of wild beaſts, *viz.* elephants, bufflers, tygers, ſtaggs, rhinoceroſes, wild boars, apes, monkeys and ſerpents; the rivers, lakes, and ports abundance of fiſhes; in ſome you meet with crocodiles. The woods are full of wild fowl of all ſorts, and the countrey abounds in tame fowl. They have bats here of an exceeding bigneſs. It is very remarkable, that the iſland of *Sumatra* is the only one throughout the *Eaſt-Indies*, that has bears. The mountains here afford gold, ſilver, copper, tin, iron and brimſtone. The outward coaſt of *Sumatra* eſpecially, has very

1662. rich gold mines, but they are neglected for the moſt part. However the queen of *Achin* drew 1000 pounds weight out of one mine, and the *Dutch Eaſt-India* company 300 in the year 1665: They alſo produce ſmaragds, hyacinths and other precious ſtones. On the top of the fiery mountain *Balabam*, is a certain ſpring of ſulphurous liquor like oil; and the like is ſeen in ſeveral other parts of this iſland, to ſweat out of the earth or rocks, not unlike a *Petroleum*: The *Indians* call this liquor *Minjah Tunnah*, *e. i.* earth-oil. This is in ſuch eſteem among the inhabitants, that the king of *Achin* has prohibited the exportation thereof under pain of death; ſo that what is carried away by the *Engliſh* or *Dutch*, is brought on board by ſtealth. It has a very ſtrong ſcent, but not nauſeous; its virtue is extraordinary in curing lameneſs, call'd by the *Indians Beribery*, if the affected parts be only bathed or anointed with it. This iſland has a certain kind of reed, which grows near 300 fathom high, and twiſts its ſelf round the trees. They make hops of it.

Earth-oil.

The language of the inhabitants and their manners.

The moſt general language here is the *Malayan*, tho' they uſe likewiſe ſeveral others. They maintain certain ſchools for the young people to be inſtructed in reading and writing. The inhabitants of *Sumatra* are large of ſtature, black and brown of complexion like the *Javaneſe*. The women are well ſhaped, and of a fairiſh complexion, with very white teeth; they make no account of chaſtity, nor look upon it as a diſgrace to expoſe themſelves for money. For the reſt, this nation is extravagantly proud and ill-natured, which ſets ſo high a value upon itſelf, as to deſpiſe all foreigners; they are very treacherous, and make very little account of their faith, if they find it conſiſtent with their intereſt. Every body here is like all the mahometans, does marry as many wives as he is able to keep, one however has the precedency before all the reſt: Women of any quality are ſeldom ſeen to walk along the ſtreets. In the inland countrey lives ſtill the remainder of the ancient men-eaters, call'd *Bataches* or *Batatas*, who not only devour ſtrangers, but likewſe kill their own fathers and brothers, if grown very decrepid, and eat them.

Their diet.

Both rich and poor are continually chewing the leaves of *Bethel*, mixt with thyme and *Areka* or *Faufel*. Their bread is made of rice, of which they make alſo a dainty pap, and cakes, and eat them with oil. They feed likewiſe upon fiſh, fleſh and herbs. Their ordinary drink is water; beſides which, they uſe *Arack* diſtill'd of rice and coco-nuts, and palm wine. The inhabitants of *Sumatra* are very moderate in their diet, like all the reſt of the *Indians*. 1662.

Their cloathing.

Moſt of the inhabitants, eſpecially the poorer ſort, go naked to the middle, where they have only a piece of ſtuff wrapt about them to cover their privities; both ſexes go without ſhoes or ſtockins. The richer ſort wear a kind of coat of ſilk or callico, after the mahometan faſhion; a linnen cloth wrap'd about their heads two or three times, ſerves them for a cap.

The abſoluteneſs of their kings.

They pay a more than ſlaviſh ſubmiſſion and obedience to their kings, not ſo much out of inclination as fear; their princes or governors are ſtiled *Pangerang*.

Their puniſhments.

They puniſh the leaſt treſpaſs with great ſeverity, by cutting off their hands and feet. Capital crimes are puniſh'd after the moſt dreadful manner that can be invented. In former ages the kings uſed to ſurrender the miſcreant to the men-eaters, who after they chop'd of their hands, arms and legs, threw pepper upon the trunk of the body and devoured it.

Their Religion.

Moſt of the inhabitants living near the ſea-coaſt are mahometants now, whereas formerly, both thoſe inhabiting the ſea-ſhore and the inland countrey were pagans, of which there are ſtill a great number in the countries remote from the ſea.

Traffick of this iſland.

The iſle of *Sumatra*, but eſpecially the kingdom of *Achin*, are places of great traffick, whither reſort merchants from all parts of the *Indies*, as the *Chineſe*, *Malayans*, *Javaneſe*, chriſtians and mahometans. There are certain places on the weſtern coaſt of the iſle, which are in confederacy, and under the protection of the *Dutch Eaſt-India* company, unto whom they are obliged to ſell all their pepper and gold at a certain rate. Theſe are *Pryaman*, *Indapoura*, *Padang*, *Tike* and *Barros*. They had alſo ſettled a factory in 1665 at *Andragiry*, but the quantity of pepper and gold to be tranſported from thence was ſo inconſiderable, that it did not turn to account. The chief commodities of *Sumatra* are, pepper, gold, tin and camphire. The weſtern coaſt affords *Pedro Porcos*, which are ſold at 200 crowns *per* piece. *Jamby* and *Palimbang* are the chiefeſt places for pepper, where the *Engliſh* have likewiſe their factories, and are much eſteemed by that king. The foreigners import commonly pieces of eight, callicoes, *Chineſe* gold, iron wire, ſteel, woollen-cloth, quilts of *Suratte*, ſilks, ſalt and ſuch like commodities, which they exchange for thoſe before-mention'd. Thus much of *Sumatra*.

Commodities of Sumatra.

They continue their voyage.

We continu'd our voyage without any remarkable accident, 'till the 3d of *February*, when we paſs'd by *Punte Gale*, and arriv'd the next day at *Colomba*, both cities belong-

1662. belonging to the iſland of *Ceylon*. Having ſoon diſpatch'd our buſineſs here, we ſet ſail again the 9th, and the 12th came within ſight of cape *Comorin* and the city of *Koylang*, ſteering our courſe along the coaſt of *Malabar*, where we met with the ſhip the *Phœnix*, in the road of that city, to load pepper, which done, it join'd with us, to continue its voyage to *Perſia*.

Paſs by cape Comoirn *and* Koylang.

Over againſt the iſle of *Baypin* we met with 15 or 16 ſail under the command of Mr. *Adrian van der Meyden*, who was ſent thither to attack the fortreſs of *Palipatnam*; we went immediately aboard the *Ulieland*, where we paid our reſpects to the admiral, who enjoyn'd us, to ſend all our land and ſea men aſhore, to aſſiſt at the taking of this fortreſs; which being done accordingly, and the *Dutch* forces marching in good order to the attack, they found, to their great aſtoniſhment, that the enemy had deſerted the place, and left only one old woman and a boy behind them; thus we became maſters of this ſtrong hold, without ſtriking a blow. However our deſign upon the city of *Cranganor* was laid aſide for that time, after we were thoroughly informed concerning its condition, and that we were not ſufficiently provided for ſuch an attempt. So we proceeded on our voyage again the next day, and the 5th of *March* paſs'd by the bar of *Goa*, where we found ſeveral *Dutch* ſhips under commodore *Roothaes* a cruſing, which kept the harbour of *Goa* block'd up. The 6th we came to an anchor in the road of *Wingurla*, where we met ſeveral of our men of war, which had been a cruiſing before *Goa*, and were come hither to refreſh themſelves: We ſaw likewiſe here the *Bantam* yacht, which was ſent on purpoſe hither to carry the queen of *Golconda* to *Mocha*, (a city of *Arabia*, ſituate on the *Red-Sea*) ſhe being to go from thence to *Medina*, to viſit *Mahomet*'s tomb, and to make a preſent of great value there. Her guards, which had conducted her 80 leagues as far as *Wingurla* conſiſted of 4000 men, all mounted on fine bright *Perſian* horſes, well accoutred. They had long coats of mail, on the ſhoulders of which were imbroider'd ſerpents-heads in imitation of the ancient *Romans*; they had fine poliſh'd helmets on their heads, being for the reſt arm'd with bows and arrows, and ſome of them with very long beards. At the head of them rid two trumpeters, who ſounded the trumpet by turns. All the perſons of quality that attended her, were likewiſe mounted on very fine horſes, with a footman on each ſide of the horſe's head, who held the bridle. The Queen herſelf and all her ladies, were carried in *Palakins* covered on the top, to keep themſelves from being ſeen by any body; and before them were led ſeveral camels cover'd with rich furnitures. On one of theſe was mounted a kettle-drummer, who with a hammer beat croſs-ways, as we do in *Europe*; the drums, of which one hung on each ſide of the camel, being ſomewhat ſharp at one end like our bee-hives. The commodore *Roothaes* and M. *Santvliet* (director for the *Dutch Eaſt-India* company at *Gamron*) were gone to meet and compliment the queen about two leagues from the town; who, whilſt ſhe tarried here, dictated ſeveral letters in divers languages to her ſecretaries; ſhe ſent ſoon after to know whether the ſhips were ready to ſail, and being anſwered they were, ſhe came immediately aboard the yacht, but finding her much leſs in bulk than the other ſhips ſhe ſaw lying at anchor in the road, ſhe was not very well ſatisfied, till being told by Mr. *Roothaes* and *Santvliet*, that the yacht was moſt proper for her purpoſe, by reaſon of the ſhallowneſs of the ſhore of the red ſea, ſhe ſeem'd to acquieſce in their judgment. Near the ſea-ſide a tent was ſet up, and from thence a paſſage covered all over with callico to the chaloop, in which was likewiſe a tent, as alſo in the yacht, to prevent her being ſeen by the ſhip's crew. She gave a very fine preſent of gold and diamonds to the commodore Mr. *Roothaes* and Mr. *Santvliet*. The captain of the yacht who carried her to *Mocha*, did not return from thence, but went along with her, being, as we ſuppoſe, turn'd mahometan; becauſe the yacht was reconducted by the boatſwain.

Palipatnam.

Come to Wingurla.

The queen of Golconda *goes to viſit* Mahomet's *tomb.*

1662.

Wingurla is no more than a large village, ſituate on the ſea-ſhore of the kingdom of *Golconda*, under the 15 deg. of northerr latitude. The *Dutch Eaſt-India* company have built a very fine houſe here of ſtone and plaiſter work, becauſe all ſhips bound for *Perſia*, are obliged to come to an anchor here, to provide themſelves with freſh water and fuel, which they buy here at a very low rate, the place ſcarce affording any thing elſe.

Wingurla.

After we had left *Wingurla*, we came the 6th of *April* before that famous city of *Perſia* call'd *Gamron*, and anchored at ſix fathoms water. I went aſhore the ſame day to give notice of our arrival, and to make the neceſſary preparations for unlading our ſhip, which being done, I apply'd myſelf to have it laden again with all poſſible expedition; and our cargo being for the moſt part gold and ſilver coin, we might ſoon have been ready to ſail again, had we not been oblig'd to ſtay for ſome other commodities till the 2d of *June*, when we ſet ſail again from thence, and Mr. *James Williamſon*, director for the company in *Perſia*, took

Come to Gamron.

1662. took this opportunity to go along with us to *Batavia*, the time of his ſtay in *Perſia* being expired.

A deſcription of that city. The famous city of *Gamron*, the only ſea-haven of *Perſia*, is ſituate on a flat ſea-ſhore, juſt at the entrance of the *Perſian Gulph*, at the foot of a barren ſandy mountain, producing neither graſs nor trees; it lies betwixt two caſtles, under the 27 deg. of northern latitude: This city was built out of the ruins of the caſtle and city of *Ormus*, the deſtruction of which proved the riſe of *Gamron*. It is to the ſea-ſide defended by three ſtone baſtions, on which are mounted good ſtore of iron cannon. But on the land-ſide it is only ſurrounded with a ſtone wall, which is much decay'd, becauſe they fear as it ſeems nothing from thence. The *Its houſes.* houſes here which are built after a very antique manner, like moſt of the *Perſian* houſes, ſtand very cloſe together, having each a ſquare turret, which mounts to a conſiderable height above the whole ſtructure, having on each ſide ſeveral holes for the free paſſage of the wind and air; in theſe turrets they ſleep every night during the ſummer ſeaſon. The beſt of their houſes are built only of loom, which being form'd in four ſquare pieces, and dry'd with the ſun, become as hard as ſtone, and keep out the rains and winds. They whiten them on the outſide with lime made of burnt muſſel-ſhells, but their back and out-houſes are covered only with the leaves of palm-trees, and are miſerable huts, ſcarce fit to defend the inhabitants from the injuries of the ſeaſon.

Streets. The ſtreets here are both narrow and ſhort, with many turnings, and are covered by the houſes on both ſides, which are almoſt join'd together on the top; notwithſtanding which the heat is ſo exceſſive here, that they are ſcarce paſſable. They are not paved with ſtones, but only with earth beaten cloſe together, which being continually watered to allay the heat and duſt, becomes by degrees as hard as a ſtone. Both the *Engliſh* and *Dutch* have their factories here near one another, each being diſtinguiſh'd by their reſpective flags; the *Dutch* is built cloſe to the water-ſide, being a goodly ſtructure, and very convenient for the unlading of veſſels.

Scarcity of freſh water. The city of *Gamron* affords no freſh water, which muſt be fetch'd by the ſlaves in earthen veſſels or ſheep ſkins early in the morning (to keep it the cooler) from the mountains, which are near three leagues diſtant from thence, which makes the freſh water ſo ſcarce here, that moſt people of faſhion will rather preſent you with a cup of wine than water, there being no pools or baſons here where any freſh water is to be met with, but during the rainy ſeaſon. Neither does the countrey produce any thing but palm-trees; notwithſtanding which there is great plenty here of every thing, wherewith they are ſupplied from *Perſia* and other places. The common drink of the inhabitants is water, tho' they alſo are provided with good *Perſian* wines; they are very ſtrong, and of a high red colour, but as ſweet as canary wine: It grows about *Schiras* and *Yezd*, and is tranſported from thence in large flaſks and caſks. They have alſo *Arack* diſtill'd of coco-nuts and rice. They make likewiſe a mixture of water, lemons and ſugar, but if drunk in too great a quantity occaſions the bloody flux. 1662.

Unwholeſomeneſs of the air. The air of *Gamron* is from the beginning of *May* till *September* more unwholeſome than in any place of the *Eaſt* or *Weſt-Indies* that ever I ſaw, ſo that there is no abiding here for foreigners, except in *December*, *January*, *February* and *March*. The natives of any quality being more uſed to the air, will continue ſomething longer, *viz.* till *May*, when they retire to their countrey houſes, which are for the moſt part built among the mountains, near ſome river or other, at 10 or 12 leagues from the city: Here they ſpend merrily what they have got by traffick in the winter, leaving the management of their city houſes to their ſlaves till *October*, the uſual time for ſhips and foreign merchants to come to *Gamron*. The heat which is moſt exceſſive here obliges them to ſleep upon leather, or with the lower parts of their bodies in water; or in the turrets, which are on the top of their houſes; ſome cool themſelves with pouring roſe-water down the neck; ſuch ſhips as are obliged to ſtay in the port during the ſummer ſeaſon, muſt be covered all over with ſails, otherwiſe the planks would ſplit aſunder, the pitch and tar riſing up in bubbles as it were a boiling; ſo that no body dare walk bare-footed upon the deck. Thoſe who venture to continue during the hot ſeaſon at *Gamron*, commonly get for their pains an ague of a very malicious nature, which if it does not kill, at leaſt ſeldom quits them, but leaves ſuch relicks behind, as at laſt brings them to their graves. The cauſe of this exceſſive heat ſeems to me to be the ſituation of the place, at the foot of a barren mountain facing the ſouth, ſo that the ſun-beams by their refractions againſt the mountains are redoubled in their ſtrength, eſpecially if it be conſidered that the wind here during the ſummer ſeaſon blows for the moſt part from the ſouth, and conſequently from the ſame corner, from whence the ſun-beams exert their utmoſt ſtrength. For immediately after *March* is paſt, the winds turn commonly to the weſt and ſouth-weſt, which are ſometimes ſo ſtifling that they

1662. they kill men and beasts. The *Arabians* call this wind *Elhamudi*, i. e. fish-winds, and the *Persians Badesambour*, because it choaks on a sudden such as it touches. It is very observable, that the dead carcasses of such as are kill'd by it, if touch'd with the hands, are as unctuous as grease or oil, and appear as if they had been dead a month ago. This wind continues here in *May*, *June*, *July* and *August*, as likewise all about *Muassil* over against the old *Nineve*, and near *Bagdat*, but those who are upon the water, even in boats in the river, never feel the effects of this wind, tho' they are quite naked.

Stifling-winds.

Traffick of the inhabitants of Gamron.

Most of the inhabitants of *Gamron* are merchants, who trade to several cities situate upon the branch of the *Euphrates*, such as *Bassora*, *Schiras*, *Ispahan*, *Tauris* and *Smyrna*. Once every year, to wit, in *October*, the caravans, consisting of several thousands of men and beasts, arrive here from the east, *viz.* from *Babylon*, *Turky* and *Persia*, with all sorts of merchandizes loaden upon camels, dromedaries and asses, which they exchange for *East-India* wares. The staple commodities of *Gamron* are cloth of gold, tapestry and pearls, which they take near the island of *Bahrain*, as likewise fruits of all sorts, plumbs, raisins, currans, nuts, dates, oranges, citrons, pomegranates, peaches, *&c.* They abound likewise in herbs, which are brought thither from other places, especially from the isle of *Kikmis*, not above three leagues from thence. They have also good store of most excellent *Persian* wine, which is brought thither from *Schiras* and *Yezd* in large flasks, pack'd up in casks. They sell also abundance of the best rose-water, which is here in greater plenty than in any other place that ever I saw. There is at certain times such a vast confluence of merchants and ships at *Gamron*, that they want money to buy their commodities; in such cases they write to their correspondents at *Lar*, *Schiras*, *Ispahan* and other *Persian* cities, who if they have ready cash, are sure to buy good bargains at such a juncture. Most of the merchants that resort to *Gamron* are *Persians*, *Armenians* and *Indians*, living in *Persia*. And were it not for the unwholsomeness of the air, abundance more would come from other places, who now stay at home, and rather chuse to buy from the merchants that bring their commodities from *Gamron*.

Disposition of the inhabitants.

The women here, like as in most other eastern countries, are seldom seen abroad, but dwell in separate apartments, where the men live with them for some time, and in the mean while lay aside all other business. The women who expose themselves for money, sit in the evening upon benches at the doors, with lanthorns in their hands, where every man is free to chuse such a one as he likes best. The inhabitants here are generally very brown. The poorer sort go for the most part naked, only with a piece of stuff wrap'd round the middle; in the summer season some appear quite naked, others only in their shirts. The rich clothe themselves very magnificently after the *Persian* fashion, tho' there are yet some few who retain their antient dress with gold, silver, and iron rings on their hands, ears and noses. The common people make use of dates instead of bread or rice; for it is observable, that the ordinary food of the *Indians* all along that coast, from *Basora* to *Sindi* is dates and fish, dry'd in the air. The heads and guts of the fishes they mix with date stones, and boil it altogether with a little salt-water, which they give at night to the cows, after they come out of the field, where they meet with very little herbage. They abound also in hares, sheep, pidgeons and partridges; but as for tame fowl, tho' they have great store of them, they are not much esteem'd, because they have a brackish taste. The sea, especially that of *Solda* and *Sardin*, furnishes them with vast plenty of excellent fishes, and among the rest with very fine oysters, but they are so little regarded by the inhabitants, that if you have a mind to some of them, you must bespeak them of the fishermen on purpose. Preserv'd fruits of all sorts are here in great abundance; the rich merchants, but especially the *Persian* governor, living in great luxury and pomp.

1662.

Their clothing.

Diet.

Sepulchre of an Indian *saint.*

About a league to the east of the city is a famous sepulchre of a *Banyan* saint, buried there some hundred years ago, under a tree call'd *Arvor das Rais*, i. e. root-tree by the *Portuguese*, or *Lul* by the *Persians*, which he planted here sometime before his death. The inhabitants call this tree the *Tree of the Banyans*, either from its first planter, or because the *Banyans* have founded a *Pagod* or *Pagan* temple under it, and a *Caranvansera* or inn for the conveniency of passengers. This tree has spread its branches at a considerable distance round about, and encreases every year to that degree, that its branches, which indeed all descend from one trunk, but by degrees take root again, encompass a space of 550 feet. Under this tree both inhabitants and foreigners shelter themselves against the heat of the sun when they are walking abroad, and entertain one another. Over the sepulchre itself is built a small *Pagode*, in which you see burning lamps hanging day and night under a canopy of silk. The ground all round about is paved with bricks, and adorned with convenient benches and seats neatly kept, where every body is at liberty to take his

Betwixt pag. 194. 195.



Goegys of Benjan Saints

8.

1662. repoſe under the agreeable ſhadow of this tree. Here the *Indians* come in great numbers to offer their ſacrifices, eſpecially the *Siogs*, call'd by others *Goegys*, *Gioghi*, and *Joeghi*, and *Fakirs* by the *Arabians* and the moors. There are a certain ſort of *Banyan* ſaints (or at leaſt pretend to be ſuch) belonging to one of the four ſects of the *Bramins*, *viz.* the ſect of *Cenrawaghi*, of *Samarath*, of *Biſnou*, and the fourth the ſect of *Siogs* or *Goegys*. You ſee them ſitting on the highways with their legs acroſs, as the *Mahometans* do; they never pare their nails; ſome have locks of hair hanging down their backs of four or five feet long, others never ſhave their heads or beards, which makes them appear more like devils than men. They have no dwelling places of their own, but in the night-time they ſleep in the porches of their temples, on dunghills and corners of the ſtreets, or perhaps in ſome cave or other hole. They always appear naked, having only a piece of cloth wrapt about the middle. The *Indian* women reſort to them in great numbers out of devotion, to touch the extremities of their fingers, or to kiſs their privy members in a moſt humble poſture, which they admit of, without ſhewing the leaſt ſign of ſenſibility thereat, for if they ſhould do otherwiſe, they would be look'd upon as unfit for that holy ſeat. They never caſt their eyes upon any body, but draw them in a moſt frightful manner upwards, as if they were afflicted with convulſions. They lead a moſt ſevere and miſerable life, conſtantly mortifying their bodies by ſome ſtrange and unnatural penances they lay upon themſelves. Some retire into caves and cellars, where they continue in their devotions ſometimes 1662.

Indian *ſaints.*

A ſect of Bramins.



The Perſian Shepherds about Gamron

9 or 10 days, without eating or drinking. Some walk both day and night for ſeveral years together without ſitting; and when they intend to ſleep, hang themſelves with a rope about their middle to the branch of a tree. Others carry both their arms all their life-time ſtrait upright above their heads, ſo that in proceſs of time they are not able to bend themſelves downwards again. In this poſture they continue day and night throughout the year quite naked, without the leaſt fear of being ſcorch'd by the ſun, or ſtung by the gnats, which they won't as much as remove with their hands. Nay they ſleep with their arms in the ſame poſture, a thing which needs muſt be very painful at firſt, and at laſt makes their arms thus diſtorted and bereaved of their uſual nouriſhment to hang down behind their backs. There are innumerable ſorts of other penitents,

1662. tents, ſome always lifting up their eyes againſt the ſun, others fixing them conſtantly upon the ground, without ever looking upon or ſpeaking a word to any body living. They beſmear their nauſeous bodies with aſhes, and their greaſy hair and faces with ſandel-wood and ſaffron, but eſpecially with cowdung mix'd with aſhes; during our ſtay at *Gamron* we went ſeveral times to refreſh ourſelves under the tree; the common cuſtom is to carry ſome wine and ſweetmeats along with one, and as for dates, almonds, nuts, and other fruits, they are to be ſold there.

The governor of Gamron.

The *Perſian* governor reſiding at *Gamron* lives in great ſplendor; the king ſends every year certain commiſſioners thither to take an account of the governor's conduct; he commonly meets them at ſome diſtance off the city unarm'd, and if they find him to have tranſgreſs'd his commiſſion, they cut off his head; otherwiſe he is regal'd with a preſent of clothes, and ſo they enter the city, where they paſs their time together in feaſting for ſome days. The governor of the city did in our time meet the commiſſioners with ſome armed bands, and thus conducted them into the city.

Perſian *poſts.*

The poſts which go from *Gamron* to *Iſpahan* are wonderful expeditious in their journeys; they are appointed by the governor of *Gamron*, after he has made ſufficient trial of their nimbleneſs, which is done by running with the riſing of the ſun, to an appointed place till ſun-ſet; a certain horſeman being appointed to ride along with them, and to take care they don't reſt by the way: After they have perform'd this trial, the governor preſents them with a ſuit of clothes and with the title of runners. So ſoon as any ſtranger of faſhion arrives at *Gamron*, ſome or other of the inhabitants is ready to offer him his ſervice, to attend him in the quality of a porter, or as a ſervant to ſhow him the way; they are ſure to wait at your lodgings every morning, and follow you all day long wherever you go, for a very ſlender allowance.

Shepherds near Gamron.

I had the curioſity to take a view of the ſhepherds and their huts, with their flocks of ſheep and goats; for which purpoſe, by the help of my guide, I went ſome leagues deep into the countrey, where I found them feeding their ſheep in a very barren ground; theſe ſhepherds, who have no other houſhold goods but a ſlight coat, commonly manage a flock of 500 ſheep and goats. Their huts they ſet up at pleaſure in the open fields, they having no certain grounds appointed them, but like the *Arabians* change their places according to the beſt conveniency of paſtorage; and tho' the grounds betwixt the city and the mountains are very barren, yet are the ſheep and goats here very good, an evident ſign that a ſmall matter is ſufficient to feed them. Theſe fields extend from the city to the mountains, which ſurround them at ſome diſtance from thence. They have ſome ſheep of an extraordinary bigneſs, with two horns on eaſt ſide of the head. Their he-goats have long curl'd hair, of which they make camlets. Some have ſuch long ears that you may tye them together. *Perſia* affords great quantities of tann'd goat and ſheep ſkins. Thus much of *Gamron*. 1662.

A little to the right of the harbour of *Gamron*, you may ſee the iſle of *Ormus*, at the very entrance into the *Perſian* gulph, as likewiſe the iſlands of *Queixome*, *Keſem* and *Lareck*, of which we will give you a ſhort deſcription.

The iſle of Ormus.

Some put the iſland of *Ormus* under 25 deg. 30 min. of latitude, and 22 deg. 45 min. of longitude; others under 26 deg. 4 min. and ſome others under 27 deg. and 30 min. northern latitude. The iſle of *Ormus* is by ſome taken for the ſame, which by the antient authors, as *Pliny*, *Pomponius* and *Dionyſius*, is call'd *Ogyris*, and by *Ptolemy Vorcchta*; it is ſituate in the *Perſian* gulph, about two leagues diſtant from the continent of *Perſia*, having the province of *Caramania* to the eaſt, *Arabia fœlix* to the ſouth and weſt, being divided from them only by the ſtreights of *Baharem*, and the continent of *Perſia* to the north; it is very near triangular; its largeſt ſide which faces the N. N. E. extending from S. E. to the N. W. from the chapel of *St. Lucie* to the point of land where the caſtle of *Ormus* is, being the neareſt to the continent, where formerly the *Portugueſe* had a fort called *Comoran*, built juſt oppoſite to the caſtle of *Ormus*, which thereabouts is not above a league diſtant. The ſecond ſide extends from the ſame chapel, *viz.* from the S. E. to the S. S. W. as far as the cape *Karu*, and ſo further to the W. S. W. and the W. and makes the baſis of the triangle. The third and ſmalleſt ſide begins at *Karu*, and ends at the before-mentioned caſtle; it faces the country of *Mogoſthan*, a name commonly given to the *Perſian* coaſt on that ſide, which is about two leagues from the iſle. Its whole circuit is about three leagues.

Karu.

The weſtern part of the iſland extending along the ſea-ſhore, where the mountains end, is call'd *Karu*, where you ſee a few houſes ſcattered up and down belonging to the moors: At *Turumbake* are a greater number of theſe houſes, but as wretchedly built as the former, except ſome few formerly belonging to the *Auſtin* friars, where they uſed to divert themſelves ſome times. Near to them is a fine fiſh-pond ſurround-

1662. ed with very fine trees, and a large ciſtern for rain-water.

Mountains. The whole iſland is divided by a ridge of mountains, extending from the eaſt to the weſt, behind which there is nothing to be ſeen but white and barren hills, producing nothing except very good white ſalt. Among the reſt there is a mountain here called *Kuykaſtaron*, or *the Mountain of the Dead*; on the top of which the *Portugueſe* had built a chapel call'd *our Lady of the Rock*; which chapel is obſerved to riſe higher and higher, becauſe the ſalt, ſalt-petre, and brimſtone, which are contained in the bowels of this mountain, encreaſe daily in quantity. The inhabitants viſit this chapel with a great deal of devotion, unto which they have made a pretty eaſy aſcent by cutting ſteps out of the rock, which otherwiſe is very ſteep. Near the

Salt-mountain. mountain, where the chapel ſtands, is another, which runs upwards in form of a pyramid. It is compoſed of one entire maſs of the beſt and whiteſt ſalt that can be ſeen, and appears at a diſtance like a mountain covered with ſnow. Not far from hence is a chapel called *St. Lucy*, built behind the ruines of ſome old towers, where formerly the kings of *Ormus* uſed to keep their brothers priſoners, after they had bereaved them of their eyes. About half ways betwixt this and the city, was another chapel dedicated to *St. Lucy*, with ſome houſes about it, whither the inhabitants of *Ormus* uſed to retire during the ſummer ſeaſon, as likewiſe to ſome others built near the ſea-ſhore of reed only, and covered with palm-tree leaves.

From this chapel to the city is a large plain, where the inhabitants uſed to have their ciſterns to gather and keep rain-water in, which were always locked up; for not only hereabouts, but alſo all over the iſland the ground is brackiſh, which makes the rain-water which is kept in theſe ciſterns much better than what is gathered from the pools or ponds; yet does it not come near in goodneſs to the freſh water that is brought from the continent or the iſle of *Queixome*. The remaining part of this plain is taken up with the graves of the mahometans, pagans, and jews, which are buried here promiſcuouſly without any difference; ſome of theſe tombs are covered with a kind of a chapel, but open on all ſides. Hither you ſee great numbers of mahometan, pagan, and jewiſh women, of all ages and degrees, which come to bring their offerings of eatables in flat ſmall diſhes, to the ſouls of the deceaſed. And ſome of theſe are ſo zealous as to pay their conſtant viſits and devotions to the tombs of ſome of their pious men or ſaints, that are in great reverence among them, and their tombs ſumptuouſly adorned. 1662.

Not far from this plain is another extending from the mountains to the city, called by the moors by a peculiar name, *Ardemira*, i. e. *The proſpect over the plain* (in the ſame ſenſe as the *French* ſay *Bellvidere*) where the mahometan courtiers, and other officers of the king uſed to keep their turnaments and running at the ring on horſeback. This plain extends to the weſt as far as the ſea ſhore, the way that leads to *Karu*, from whence the city has the faireſt proſpect. Ardemira

Behind the mountains, being the S. S.W. and the W. S.W. part of the iſland, called *Turumbake*, is the faireſt of all, tho' its compaſs is leſs betwixt the mountains and the ſea than that part beyond the mountains. Here you ſee a countrey ſeat of the old queen of *Ormus*, adorned with walks of palm-trees, and two large ciſterns or baſons, called from the place the *Ponds of Turumbake*, beſides ſeveral leſſer ones. Turumbake.

Their water is the wholeſomeſt and freſheſt of the whole iſland. There is another great baſon belonging to this ſeat, which is continually ſupplied with water out of three adjacent ponds and a ſmall brook; this water is not near ſo ſalt as that which is kept in the ponds more to the E. and N. N. E. where the ſun turns the water into ſolid ſalt. This countrey ſeat was already in a decaying condition 50 or 60 years before my coming here, having only a few apartments left, wherein the king of *Ormus* uſed to lodge during the ſummer ſeaſon; *Turumbake* had at that time not above 15 or 20 huts built of reed cloſe together, like a ſmall village, and covered with palm-tree leaves, after a wretched manner. Moſt of the houſes of this iſland are built after the ſame manner, notwithſtanding which, the inhabitants of *Ormus* retire thither with their families in the ſummer, being taught both by tradition and experience, that the open countrey air is much more wholeſome during the hot ſeaſon, than the city air.

On the north ſide of this iſle lies the city of *Ormus*, which before it was ſubdued by the *Portugueſe* was very populous, foreigners flocking thither daily from *Perſia*, the *Eaſt-Indies* and *Europe* itſelf, for the conveniency of traffick. To be ſhort, the city of *Ormus* was the moſt famous and richeſt trading city of the world, before the *Portugueſe* had found out the paſſage by ſea to the *Eaſt-Indies*, being inhabited and frequented by the *Perſians*, *Arabians*, *Abyſſines*, *Armenians*, *Tartars*, *Turks*, and other mahometans; beſides the *Italians*, *French*, *Dutch*, *Engliſh*, *Poles*, and other *European* nations. It was much inhabited by the *Portugueſe*, but very few *Spaniards*, becauſe the firſt

1662. would not permit them to go thither by ſea, and the *Turks* ſtop their paſſage by land, betwixt the *Mediterranean* and the *Perſian* gulph; ſome few dwelt there under the name and protection of ſome other nations. The natives of *Ormus* are all mahometans, but of different ſects, ſome being called *Kiays*, belonging to the ſect of *Hali* ſon-in-law to *Mahomet*, whoſe doctrine is followed by the *Perſians*; others are called *Suni's*, following the doctrine of *Mahomet*, *Oſmar*, and *Oſman*, as the *Turks* do; the king himſelf is of this ſect; beſides which, divers ſorts of pagans, as *Banjans*, *Camboyans*, &c. inhabit here.

The city of Ormus *in the* Portugueſe *times.*

The city of *Ormus* whilſt under the juriſdiction of the *Portugueſe*, and before the *Perſians* made themſelves maſters of it 1619, was a very ſtately, rich, and magnificent place, of which the inhabitants uſed to boaſt, *That if the world were a ring*, Ormus *muſt be conſidered as the diamond.* For after the *Portugueſe* had conquered this city, they were very careful in adorning it from time to time with moſt magnificent ſtructures, to ſuch a degree, that all the iron belonging to their windows and doors were gilt; and it was the common opinion in thoſe days, that if they had remained maſters of it till now, they would have turned them into maſſy gold. They had built a ſtately church upon an eminency, dedicated to the virgin *Mary*, with an adjacent hoſpital called the *Miſericordia.* Next to this was the exchange or cuſtom-houſe, called by the *Perſians Beneckſal*, this was a fine edifice, ſurrounded with galleries on the out ſide. They had likewiſe ſeveral monaſteries, amongſt which thoſe of the *Auſtin* fryars and *Carmelites* were the chiefeſt. There is yet to be ſeen a very high ſteeple, a noſt noble piece of architecture, exceeding in magnificence all others of this city; the mahometans call it in the *Arabian* tongue *Alkoran*; on one ſide of the caſtle ſtood formerly a famous *Moſque*, which the *Portugueſe* cauſed to be demoliſhed, as being too near the caſtle, which proved the occaſion of the moſt inveterate hatred againſt the *Portugueſe*, not only among the moors inhabiting there, but likewiſe among the *Perſians*, their king *Tahamaſs* or *Tahamas*, grandfather to *Schach Abas*, having been the founder of it. No ſooner was this city fallen into the hands of the *Perſians*, but ſhe was by them deſpoiled of her ancient glory, and moſt of her inhabitants, many of whom were killed in the ſiege, the reſt fled for ſhelter to ſome other place. All the churches, houſes, and other publick edifices, were laid level with the ground, except ſome few ſhops in the *Bazar* or ſhopkeepers ſtreet. The *Dutch* ſhips which unloaded there, and returned commonly empty from thence, uſed to make it their practice at that time to ballaſt their veſſels with the fineſt marble ſtones, the remnants of the ſtately ſtructures of this city, and would queſtionleſs by degrees have taken all that was left, had not the *Perſian* governour there prohibited the exportation of them under a ſevere penalty. For the *Perſians* whoſe intention was to lay the foundation of the greatneſs of *Gamron* upon the ruines of *Ormus*, did remove all the beſt ſtones from thence, which they made uſe of in their beſt buildings at *Gamron.* The fortifications of the city of *Ormus* in the *Portugueſe* times, in 1619, were but in a ſlender poſture, the ditch about the caſtle being filled up with dirt, having ſcarce 6 foot of water; beſides that, it was not ſpacious enough for the garriſon. Their commanders in chief, who were removed from thence every year, had according to the cuſtom of the *Portugueſe*, but a ſlender ſhare of knowledge in martial affairs, the governour at that time being an ancient man, not trained up in the wars, and not provided with experienced engineers and gunners.

1662.

The caſtle of Ormus.

The old four-ſquare caſtle was built on the utmoſt northern or north-weſt point of the land of the iſle, where it approaches neareſt to the *Perſian* ſhore, two ſides of it being waſhed by the ſea, the other two facing the city; betwixt which and the caſtle is a very fair ſquare of about 300 feet long, from whence you have a fine proſpect into the ſea. This caſtle, whilſt in the poſſeſſion of the *Portugueſe*, was not very large, being defended only by four baſtions, which as well as the cortines, were built with a kind of ſmall flint-ſtones mixt with mortar and ſea-water; ſo that they were not proof againſt the thunder of the great cannon. The ditch was likewiſe very ſhallow, though it might have been made deeper without any great coſt, by reaſon of the nearneſs of the ſea, which waters it on two ſides. In this condition was the caſtle of *Ormus* under the *Portugueſe*, of which the *Portugueſe* boaſted that it was impregnable. After the *Perſians* had made themſelves maſters of it, they were very careful to repair the old fortifications, and to add ſome new ones, eſpecially on the point of the ditch, they made a half-moon, the cannon of which commanded the plain and a gallery; ſince which time they keep it always in a good poſture of defence, and maintain a conſiderable garriſon there, under the command of the governour of *Ormus*, who reſiding for the moſt part at *Gamron*, appoints a deputy for this place, who has his reſidence in the palace formerly belonging to the kings of *Ormus*.

Under the Perſians.

The

1662. *The Harbour.*

The harbour of this iſland is a certain bay, made by two points of land that jett out on both ſides; upon one of theſe capes ſtands the caſtle, on the other the *Portugueſe* had built a church, dedicated to our *Lady of Good-Hope*; but this point turns ſomewhat nearer towards the city, ſo that the harbour where the largeſt veſſels, galleys, and ſmaller veſſels uſed to caſt anchor, lies oppoſite to the north-eaſt part of the city, betwixt the two monaſteries built by the *Portugueſe*, one of which belonged to the *Carmelites*, the other to the *Auſtin* fryars. The tide where this bay is deepeſt riſes at high water, near four foot high above the foundations of the houſes; notwithſtanding which, at low water the ſhore is dry for above 200 paces; and 150 paces farther the water is not 3 feet high where it is deepeſt, ſo that the largeſt veſſels are obliged to caſt anchor at 600 paces from the city, and the galleys at 500, which renders this harbour very unſafe, eſpecially if a ſtorm ariſes from the eaſt, which often forces the ſhips aſhore; nay, this harbour would be much more dangerous, were it not for the nearneſs of the continent, which covers it on the N. and N. E. ſide, and the iſle of *Queixome*, which lies to the N. N. W. of it, and breaks the violence of the raging waves. Some tell us of two different bays belonging to the iſle of *Ormus*, which afford a ſafe harbour to ſhips, the one to the eaſt, the other to the weſt, being divided by a neck of land which jetts out betwixt them a conſiderable way into the ſea.

Scarcity of water.

The whole iſland is deſtitute of water, except what ſome ſtanding pools or ponds afford, which is always brackiſh, tho' ſome more than others; ſome, eſpecially ſuch as are near the ſea-ſide, being tolerably fit for uſe; for the farther they are from the mountains, the leſs they participate of the ſalt. It does ſometimes not rain in *Ormus* for three years together; the only ſprings of freſh water they have being in the royal gardens. *Ferra Gutka* who reigned in 1596 in *Ormus*, found out a ſpring with freſh water in *Turumbake*. Not far from thence near the ſea-ſide, ariſes a ſalt water ſpring from among the rocks, called by the *Perſian* inhabitants *Abdarmon*, i. e. medicinal water, which has a purging quality, and cleanſes the bowels from all impurities. Here you ſee abundance of people drink the waters at a certain ſeaſon of the year, when they have a mind to be ſatisfied whether their bowels are thoroughly cleanſed, they cut a piece of an orange or citron, and if immediately after they go to ſtool, they reckon themſelves ſufficiently purged. 'Tis true, there are three ſprings here, which all having their riſe among the mountains, afford water ſufficient for three rivulets, but it is as brackiſh as the ſea water it ſelf. Thus ſeveral brooks are to be ſeen to the S. E. among the mountains which carry a very clear water, but ſo ſtockt with ſalt, that in the ſummer, when theſe rivulets are dry'd up, you ſee vaſt lumps of ſalt, which cover the banks on both ſides. The vaſt quantity of ſalt which is to be met with all over this iſland, being in ſome places burnt up and blackned by the violence of the ſunbeams, affords a dreadful ſight at a diſtance. They have alſo a kind of ſalt clay, out of which they make earthen veſſels. 1662.

The whole iſle is nothing elſe but a barren vaſt lump of ſalt, which ſcarce affords either graſs or trees, except what is brought forth by force in the royal gardens in the plains, neither does it afford any thing for the ſuſtenance of human life. It has however ſome few trees in certain places, but bear no fruit except dates, and another ſmall fruit growing on thorn buſhes with green leaves; another kind of theſe thorn buſhes they have with a pretty large ſtem, and ſmall red leaves. In the opening of the rocks you ſee now and then a large green and well ſpread tree, notwithſtanding ſeveral have poſitively aſſerted that this iſle did produce neither tree, herbs, nor graſs. The mountains are full of rock ſalt, which is very tranſparent, and contain likewiſe a conſiderable quantity of brimſtone. In ſome winters the ſalt is waſhed by the rains down from the mountains, which afterwards is again coagulated by the ſun, which is the only made uſe of here, for the rock ſalt being of too corroſive a nature, does conſume the meat inſtead of preſerving it. The *Dutch* tranſport abundance of ſalt from hence to the *Eaſt-Indies*. The iſle alſo affords a certain kind of white plaſtering called by the inhabitants *Gueche*, and another that is red of the ſame kind, but not ſo good as the white. They have alſo a certain way of preparing dung for plaiſter-work, which they perform in the following manner: They take the uppermoſt part of an old dunghill away, the reſt they make up in balls, and let them dry in the ſun. This done, they burn them to aſhes with fire; the aſhes they beat for a conſiderable time upon an even piece of ground, and immediately after mix it for uſe, for, if they let the aſhes be cold, or keep them only two or three days, they are not fit for their purpoſe; but this prepared and uſed keeps the water out of any place for many years. There are ſcarce any other ſtones to be met with here but flint-ſtones, of which the greateſt part of the fortifications of the caſtle are compoſed. There is alſo a kind of black

1662. black gliſtering ſand to be found here, which the *Portugueſe* uſed to tranſport from thence to their factories in the *Eaſt-Indies*. No barley or oats is to be ſeen here. Their cattle they feed with a peculiar ſort of peaſe or beans, which they grind, and afterwards ſteep in water, being otherwiſe too hard to digeſt. Of theſe they give a certain quantity every night to their horſes. But in the morning they give to each horſe 2 pounds of black ſugar, mixt with a pound of butter and ſome flour, which they make up into balls; then they waſh the horſes mouth and teeth, becauſe this mixture ſticks very cloſe to their teeth and gums; in the day time they feed them with ſome herbs which they draw out of the ground with roots and all, and cleanſe them very well from all impurities.

Sinking wood. In the bay and all along the coaſt of the iſle of *Ormus*, they fiſh for wood, of which they find great ſtore in the bottom of the ſea, but not very large. This wood is by the violence of the currents of the rivers ariſing from among the mountains of the continent of *Perſia* (which is not above two leagues diſtant from hence) torn off and carried to the ſhore of *Ormus*; a thing moſt ſurpriſing, and contrary to what is obſerved of this kind in other iſlands lying near the continent, or ſome other great iſlands, whither the adjacent rivers force abundance of wood, which however always ſwims on the ſurface of the water, and commonly is found rotten, whereas the wood upon the coaſt ſinks to the bottom, and is not quite rotten, but affords the inhabitants great ſtore of fuel, which has induced ſome to believe that this wood did grow under water.

On the *Perſian* coaſt you meet alſo with certain kind of light porous ſtone under water, not unlike our pumice ſtones; eſpecially near thoſe places where ſubterraneous fires are; which makes theſe ſtones to be always white, in which they differ from the common pumice, which are either blackiſh or grey; they are found here in ſuch prodigious quantities, that they build their houſes of them, becauſe they mix very well with the mortar, by reaſon of their ſpongeous ſubſtance, and very light; and when well cemented with the mortar, reſiſt the violence of the winds, which blow here exceedingly about the change of the ſeaſons, better than any other ſtones. Some are of opinion that theſe ſtones were caſt out by a burning mountain, which ſeems not improbable, there being on the back ſide of a neighbouring mountain found vaſt quantities of theſe ſtones, as black as coals. The reaſon why thoſe on the ſea ſhore are white, ſeems to be becauſe they have for many years, nay, for many ages paſt, been ſcoured by the water of their impurities; the inhabitants call them *Sanchmay*, i. e. *Rock-Fiſh*, becauſe as many as are taken away grow again in a little time, and furniſh them with materials for building. They report that in former ages this iſland did burn for ſeven years together, of which they ſhew the marks to this day; the earth upon the mountains being red, and in the vallies ſpongeous like aſhes or quick lime; beſides that the whole iſland is ſubject to frequent earthquakes. The mountains are all over covered with ſalt, and the grounds are full of ſalt-petre. As often as the wind blows from the ſouth-weſt, there ariſes ſo violent a ſtink of brimſtone from the mountains, as infects the whole air. The heat is more intenſe at *Ormus* than at *Gamron*, for it continues at leaſt five months, *viz.* from *May* till *September*, and ſometimes till the beginning of *December*; in the winter ſeaſon the heat is ſomewhat allayed by the dew which falls all the night long, but in the ſummer the nights are ſo exceſſive hot, that it would be impoſſible for the inhabitants to abide here, if by ſeveral ways they did not aſſwage in ſome meaſure its violence. For on the tops of the houſes they ſet certain wooden veſſels like bathing tubs, big enough to contain two perſons at a time, in theſe they ſit and ſleep all night in the open air with the water up to their necks. The cauſe of this intolerable heat is attributed chiefly to the nature of the ſoil, which is not only ſandy, but full of ſalt-petre, which occaſioning a continual loſs of ſpirits, the inhabi tants are forced to repair in ſome meaſu e this defect, by continually keeping the nſelves in cold water, notwithſtanding it be none of the beſt here; all the water that is brought hither from *Bandel Kongo*, or the iſle of *Queixome*, being taken out of ponds, and conſequently not purified from its dregs for want of motion; which is ſufficiently demonſtrable by its colour which is like milk, and its ſediment which is ſometimes two or three inches thick at the bottom of the veſſel it is kept in. During the violence of the hot ſeaſon you may ſee people of both ſexes and all ages, flock to the city walls; but the *Europeans* ſeldom venture at ſwimming in the ſea, the water being ſo exceſſive ſalt that it excoriates their bodies; but they allay the exceſſive heat of the nights by wetting their quilts and pillows with cold water. It is farther obſervable, that the winds are ſo changeable here, that you may in a quarter of an hours time remarkably feel their different effects; ſome by opening, others by obſtructing the pores of your bodies. During the ſummer ſeaſon the winds blow for the moſt part E. and S. E. or W. S. W. but ſeldom from the

1626.

1662. south, the last of which is not so unwholesome as the rest; and what is more surprising is, that this wind always cools the water contained in any vessels, but not the chambers or rooms where the water is kept.

Their Drink. The drink of the common people is water, those of the better sort drink *Spanish* wine, or *Persian* wines of *Shiras*, but these are very scarce and dear. They distil also a spirit of rice and sugar here, as well as in all other parts of the *Indies*. They have also a certain kind of drink call'd *Tari*, which is drawn from a tree, and as sweet as musk; this is the ordinary liquor sold in publick-houses, who pay a considerable tax for their licenses to the king. This liquor is brought every day to town in casks on horse-back, each horse carrying one on each side.

Origin of the Isle of Ormus. The isle of *Ormus* was in ancient times govern'd by its own kings or princes, descended from the race of these great kings that ruled all over *Arabia*, *Persia* and the adjacent countries. The first famous in their histories, was a certain *Arabian Emir* or prince, call'd *Mahamed Dramku*, of the race of the antient kings that ruled in *Saba*, or *Arabia Fœlix*. This prince being extremely desirous to conquer new dominions, extended his conquests to the *Persian Gulph*, where he landed with a great fleet from *Kalayatta*, a city of *Arabia Fœlix*, and laid the foundation of a city call'd *Ormus* or *Harmus* on the coast of *Persia*. He left for his successor *Solyman* his son, who was succeeded by the following kings. *Isa* the third in rank, son of *Solyman*; the fourth *Lax Kari* son of *Isa*, who left the court and embraced a private life. The fifth was *Katkobad* his son; the sixth *Isa* II. son to *Katkobad*, the 7th *Mamud* son of *Isa* II. who suspecting *Mir Xabadin Molong* his nephew, made him a prisoner in the castle of *Gati*; from whence he escaped to *Seugon*, and married the daughter of the governor of that castle. The 8th *Xaranta* son of *Mamud*, he engaged in a war against *Molong*, but was slain in an engagement with his enemy.

9th, *Mir Xabadin Molong* was declared king in his stead; his daughter *Sed Alkatum* was married to *Emir*, or prince *Seyfadin Aben Azar*, his brother *Aly*'s son, king of the isle of *Keys*, who dying soon after, his son *Seyfadin* obtained the kingdom of *Keys*. *Mir Xabadin* dying likewise not long afer, his *Vizier Xarcar* made himself master of the kingdom of *Ormus*; and those of *Keys* having at the same time deposed *Seyfadin*, he fled to *Ormus*, where being well received by the inhabitants, he besieged the usurper *Xarcar* in the castle of *Karcan*, whom he kill'd, and thereby became master of the whole kingdom. After *Seyfadin* had well settled his affairs here, he undertook an expedition against those of *Keys*, of whom he kill'd many, and made some of their chief men prisoners. From thence he went to the isle of *Gerun*, (since call'd *Ormus*) where he caused all his prisoners to be slain upon a certain mountain, which from thence was call'd *Kay Kastaron*, *i. e.* The mountain of the dead. He returned at last victorious to *Ormus*, where he spent the rest of his days in Peace. The 11th was *Xabadin Mamud*, son of *Isa* II. who succeeded his uncle in the kingdom. The 12th *Emir Roknadin Mamud*, *Xabadin*'s nephew, son of *Hamud*, who was very victorious, and extended his conquests as far as *Safar*, a province of *Arabia Fœlix*. He reign'd 35 years, and died 1278.

1662.

He was succeeded by his son *Emir Sayfadin Nocerat*, but was soon after forced by *Emir Kodbadin Thahantam* and *Emir Moechzadin Fulad*, or *Pulad*, to fly the kingdom, and to seek for shelter, together with his mother, by sultan *Gehaladin Suraget Mex*, governor of *Kernon*, by whose assistance he was restored to his kingdom: But being a second time vanquish'd, by his brother *Emir Kodbadin* was forced to save himself by flight in a small bark, in the isle of *Queixome*. In the mean while, king *Seyfadin*, who had assisted *Kodbadin*, having caused him to be murthered, the soldiers conceived such a hatred, against this *Seyfadin*, that they instantly recall'd *Emir Sayfadin Nocerat*, chased away *Seyfadin*, and restored him to the throne. Notwithstanding which he was not long after murthered, by his two brothers, *Emir Masaud*, and *Emir Turkonxa*, together with his two sisters, *Bibi Banek*, and *Bibi Neyty*, after he had reign'd 12 years, *viz.* 1290.

Masaud the murtherer of his Brother, succeeded him in his throne, being a very courageous but cruel man, which brought upon him the hatred both of the nobility and common people, of whom he caused many to be killed. This made them implore the assistance of *Emir Bahadin Ayas Seyfin*, formerly a slave only of king *Nocerat*, but now governor of *Kalayatte*, a sea-port of *Arabia-Fœlix*; who forced *Masaud* to fly to *Kernon*, and from thence into *Syria*, where he died, after a reign of three years. He was succeeded by *Bahadin Ayas Seyfin*, who caused two brothers of *Masaud* to be beheaded, for endeavouring to restore him to the kingdom.

About that time a great swarm of *Turks*, came out of *Turkestan*, conquered a considerable part of *Persia*, and by their frequent inroads, into the kingdom of *Ormus*, forced the inhabitants to seek for shelter,

1662. at the command of their king *Azaez*, in the iſle of *Queixome*. Whilſt they were roving about in the neighbouring ſeas, to find out a place where to fix their habitations, they happened to light upon a certain iſland, 2 leagues from *Queixome*, where meeting with a very ancient man, living juſt on the point of the iſle, a fiſherman by trade, he adviſed their king, to ſettle there. The king approving of his counſel, ſent to the king of *Keys*, the proprietor of this, and all the other iſlands in the *Perſian Gulph*, to deſire him to ſell him the ſaid iſle, for a certain ſum of money, which being granted, he ſettled there a colony of his ſubjects, 1300, and gave it the name of *Ormus*, after his native country. His ſucceſſors afterwards extended their conqueſts over a great part of *Arabia* and *Perſia*, and over the *Perſian* ſea, as far as *Baſora*; and maintain'd themſelves in the poſſeſſion of it, till this iſland was conquered by the *Portugueſe*. This king died 1312, in the 22 year of his reign.

Some hiſtorians give us the following account of this and the ſucceeding kings of the iſle of *Ormus*.

After this king had ſettled his new colony, he ſurrendered the government, to *Emir Ayzadin Gordonxa*, ſon of *Salhor*, and *Bibi Zeineb*, a nephew of the ancient king of *Ormus*, and retiring to *Kalayatte* in *Arabia*, there finiſh'd his days in peace. *Gordonxa* was engaged in war with the king of *Keys*, becauſe he had intercepted ſome ſhips coming from the *Eaſt-Indies*, his dominions; *Ormus* he vanquiſh'd, and forced him to fly his dominions; but the king of *Keys* returning ſoon after, found means to make *Gordonxa* his priſoner, under pretence of an interview concerning a peace betwixt them; and *Bibi Sultan*, *Gordonxa*'s ſpouſe, committed the adminiſtration of the government to *Malek Guaya Hadin Dinar*, ſon of her huſband's brother *Xamxa*; ſcarce five months were expired, before the king of *Keys* came to *Ormus*, with *Gordonxa* his priſoner, where he was joyfully received by his ſubjects, except *Dinar*, who being uſed to rule, would not ſubmit to *Gordonxa*, but forced him to retire to the caſtle of *Minab*, on the continent of *Perſia*. Notwithſtanding which, *Dinar* being ſenſible what affection the people bore to *Gordonxa*, and fearing his return, he thought it his ſafeſt way to retreat in time to the kingdom of *Makron*, betwixt *Perſia* and the countrey of *Send* or *Ind*. After which *Gordonxa*, once more return'd to his kingdom, where he died 1318.

He was ſucceeded by his ſon *Emir Mobareſadin Bararon Xa*, who together with his brother, was by *Emir Xabadin Iſſuf* his general put in priſon; *Iſſuf* afterwards mounted the throne, but was engaged in 1662. a war immediately after, with *Emir Xa Kodbadin*, brother to the impriſon'd king: *Dinar* came likewiſe with a ſtrong flying army, to his aſſiſtance, from *Makron*; but finding *Iſſuf* too ſtrong for them both, he entred into a confederacy with him; and *Iſſuf* after having cauſed the impriſoned king, his mother, and one of his brothers to be ſlain, forced *Kodbadin* to retire to *Kalayatte*, with *Bibi Mariam*, the ſpouſe of *Ayas Ceyſin*. But *Kodbadin* afterwards returned unexpectedly to *Ormus*, with a conſiderable force, and having made *Iſſuf* his priſoner, he put the crown upon his head, and cauſed him, his wife and his two ſons, to be killed; after which he likewiſe made himſelf maſter of *Keys*. It happen'd that *Kodbadin* being abroad a hunting on the continent, 1345, *Rad Xur Noſomadin*, in the mean while got himſelf proclaim'd king of *Gerun* or *Ormus*; but finding moſt of the inhabitants averſe to him, he quitted the countrey. However it was not not long before he return'd with a great power, and having gain'd *Homer Sojadin*, *Kodbadin*'s general, to join with him, he forced *Kodbadin* to fly to *Kalayatte*. He had ſcarce ſtay'd here a year, when word was brought him, that *Noſomadin* was dead, and that by his laſt will, he had enjoined his ſons, *Xembe* and *Xady*, to throw themſelves at the feet of *Kodbadin*, and to ſurrender the crown to him; but finding that the two young men, inſtead of performing their father's will, had ſeized upon the kingdom; he attack'd them and regained the crown of *Ormus*. He died 1347, in *Nakelſtan*, a province of *Mogeſtan*.

He was ſucceeded by *Turonxa* his ſon, (who writ the lives of the kings his predeceſſors, both in verſe and proſe.) He vanquiſhed *Xembe* and *Xady*, and died 1378, after he had reigned 30 years. After him his eldeſt ſon *Mazud* obtained the crown of *Ormus*, who was ſucceeded by *Xabadin*, the ſecond ſon of *Turonxa*; after whom reign'd *Salgar*, *Turonxa*'s third ſon. Under his reign, *Sofi Hhalila* conquered all *Perſia*, even to the continent, directly oppoſite to the iſland of *Gerun*, or *Ormus*, which eſcaped his hands for want of ſhipping; but *Salgar* loſt all that he was poſſeſſed of on the continent. For the reſt he reigned in peace, as did his ſucceſſor *Xauwes*. Him ſucceeded *Seyfadin*, who reigned 1507, when the *Portugueſe*, after they had diſcovered the paſſage by ſea to the *Indies*, firſt ſet footing in the iſle of *Ormus*, under the command of *Alfonſus Albuquerque*, the king being then yet in his minority, was under the protection of one *Atar* or *Kogear*, his father's ſlave, a brave but cunning man,

1662. whoſe chief aim was to let the young king bear the title of king, but to keep the adminiſtration of affairs in his own hands. *Albuquerque* being not ignorant of it, look'd upon this as a favourable opportunity to bring the city of *Ormus*, under the power of *Emanuel*, the then king of *Portugal*, or at leaſt to make it tributary to him, by erecting a fortreſs near it, by which means he might clear the *Perſian* gulph of all the *Turkiſh* and other Mahometan veſſels trading to the *Indies*, and conſequently entail that whole trade upon *Portugal*. He was about that time, with ſix ſtout men of war well mann'd, cruiſing in thoſe ſeas; but thinking it below himſelf at ſuch a juncture as this to lie privateering at ſea, he ſteer'd his courſe the 20th of *Auguſt* 1507 towards the *Perſian* gulph, and paſſing by the cape *Roſalgat*, came to an anchor before *Kalayatte*, (a noble city, and the firſt on that coaſt under the juriſdiction of the kings of *Ormus*) to provide himſelf with freſh proviſions. The inhabitants dreading the name of the *Portugueſe*, which was then already become famous throughout the *Indies*, entred into a confederacy with him, upon ſuch conditions as *Albuquerque* was pleaſed to preſcribe them. From thence he ſet ſail for *Kuriatte*, another city belonging to the kings of *Ormus*, on the *Arabian* coaſt. Here the inhabitants being of a different opinion with thoſe of *Kalayatte* choſe rather to defend themſelves by force, than to ſubmit to *Albuquerque*, tho' with very ill ſucceſs. For *Albuquerque* having landing his men, ſo vigorouſly attack'd the city, that the garriſon after ſome reſiſtance were forced to leave it to his mercy, which he burnt to the ground, with all their ſhips he found in the harbour. In the ſame manner he made himſelf maſter of the *Maſkate* and *Orfaſan*, two ſtrong and well fortified places belonging to the king of *Ormus*; and from thence directly taking his courſe to *Ormus* it ſelf, the chief aim of this expedition, he ſent word to king *Seyfadin* and *Atar* the protector, that *Emanuel* king of *Portugal* having taken a reſolution, out of an hereditary hatred to the mahometans, the declared enemies of *Chriſtendom*, to make war againſt them, which ſhould not end but with the total conqueſt of either ſide, he was come to tell them, that if they were ready, according to the example of ſeveral other *Aſiatick* and *African* kings, to pay his maſter a certain yearly tribute, he would leave them in the quiet poſſeſſion of the iſland, but if they refuſed to acknowledge the king of *Portugal* for their lord, he was come to denounce them war, which was not to end but with their total total deſtruction.

The Portugueſe *came firſt into the* Perſian *gulph.*

The king being ſorely frightned at the laſt ſucceſs of the *Portugueſe*, and dreading the ſame fate, thought it his beſt way to cajole *Albuquerque* with fair words into a belief of his ſincere intentions of peace; but at the ſame time, by the advice of *Atar*, ſought to gain time, and to delay his poſitive anſwer, till the expected auxiliaries from the continent of *Perſia* were arrived. No ſooner had he received theſe ſupplies but he altered his note, and in plain terms ſent word to *Albuquerque*, that the kings of *Ormus* were not uſed to pay, but to receive tribute from foreigners; that in caſe the *Portugueſe* would be contented with the ſame privileges of trading other nations enjoy'd there, they ſhould be welcome; but that if they once came to hoſtilities, they ſhould be convinced to their coſt, what difference there was to fight with well appointed *Perſians* and *Arabians*, and with an undiſciplin'd rabble of *Moors*. By this time *Atar* the protector had got above 20000 men together, part of which he embark'd aboard the merchant veſſels then in harbour there, which he poſted in a line along the ſhore, to prevent the enemies landing, whilſt he with the men of war put to ſea with an intention to attack *Albuquerque* in the rear, ſo ſoon as he ſhould be engaged with the merchant men: But *Albuquerque*, inſtead of attacking the merchant ſhips, came up with *Atar*'s fleet, and engaged them ſo furiouſly, that that in a ſhort time he ſunk many of them, and burnt the reſt, with a great ſlaughter of men on the enemies ſide, whereas the *Portugueſe* loſt not above ten men during the whole engagement. King *Seyfadin* being ſenſible that the loſs of his fleet muſt of neceſſity draw that of the whole iſland after it, ſent immediately his deputies to *Albuquerque* to treat of peace; they were kindly received by the *Portugueſe* general, who gave immediate orders, that the fire which had ſeized by this time upon the merchant ſhips, ſhould be extinguiſhed immediately, and the next day a peace was concluded betwixt them upon theſe following conditions. 1662.

That *Seyfadin* king of *Ormus*, and all his ſucceſſors, ſubmit themſelves to, and ſhall acknowledge the king of *Portugal* their protector, and pay him an annual tribute of 15000 *Serafs*.

That *Albuquerque* ſhall have liberty to pitch upon a place, ſuch as he judges moſt convenient for the erecting of a fortreſs, for which purpoſe he ſhall be ſupply'd with ready money, and other neceſſaries by the ſaid king.

Accordingly *Albuquerque* apply'd himſelf with all imaginable ſpeed to the building of the fortreſs, but many of the gentlemen volunteers,

1662. volunteers and other *Portugueſe*, looking upon it as a great hardſhip to ſpend their time here in ſlaviſh drudgery, whilſt they miſs'd their opportunity of getting a rich booty at ſea from the *Mooriſh* ſhips, (the main intent of their voyage) began to murmur, and at laſt, with the conſent of their captains, embark'd themſelves aboard two men of war, and in ſpite of *Albuquerque* return'd to the *Indies*. He was vex'd to to the ſoul to ſee himſelf thus diſappointed in this great deſign, but being forced to comply with neceſſity he follow'd the reſt. But ſome years after he being ſent from the king of *Portugal* in the quality of viceroy of the *Indies*, he did, after the conqueſt of *Goa* and *Malacca*, bring it to perfection in the following manner.

He cauſed 1577, 22 men of war, and a good number of merchant ſhips to be equip'd at *Goa*, and to have it rumour'd abroad, that he intended to go with this fleet to *Aden* (a city at the entrance of the *Redſea*) to prevent thoſe of *Ormus* to conceive any jealouſy of this equipment. But no ſooner was he come to *Maſkate* but he changed his courſe, and ſteer'd directly for *Ormus*, where his arrival cauſed an incredible fear both in the king and people. For *Atar* being dead ſince, and king *Seyfadin* poiſon'd by *Noradin*, governor of the city, his brother *Toro* or *Torunxa* had uſurp'd the kingdom from his children. *Noradin*, who had both by this act, and before heap'd ſo many obligations upon this new king, got thereby the ſole adminiſtration of the government into his own hands, and daily appear'd in publick with a ſtrong guard, conſiſting moſt of his own kinsfolks. Thoſe that bore the chiefeſt rank among theſe were three brothers, among whom was one *Hamades*, *Noradin*'s chief favourite, a man of about 35 years of age, bold, prudent and very ambitious, and reſembling in every reſpect the late deceas'd protector *Atar*. He took effectual care by placing his creatures in all places of truſt, whereby he eſtabliſh'd himſelf in the management of the government, ſo that not only *Noradin*, but alſo *Toro* himſelf durſt not attempt to act contrary to his ſentimens. From hence it was, that tho' the league with *Portugal* had been kept inviolably hitherto, the *Portugueſe* had been civilly receiv'd there, and the yearly tribute punctually paid, yet was the power of *Hamades* ſo prevailing, as to have conſtrained *Toro* to accept of the *Perſian* turbant ſent him by *Iſmael Sophi*, an evident ſign that *Hamades* his inclinations were rather for the *Perſians* than *Portugueſe*. *Albuquerque* being not ignorant of what paſs'd at *Ormus*, reſolved, by delivering king *Toro* from the ſlaviſh ſubmiſſion impoſed upon him by his ſubjects, to confirm him abſolutely in his fidelity and intereſt to the king of *Portugal*; for which purpoſe he ſurrounded the whole iſland with his fleet, to take away from them all hopes of relief, and immediately ſent word to the king, that he was come thither with no other intent than to enter upon a new league betwixt the kings of *Portugal* and *Ormus*. 1662.

King *Toro* being not a little ſurprized at the unexpected appearance of ſo great a fleet, diſpatch'd immediately his deputies to *Albuquerque*, to treat with him concerning the conditions of it; *Albuquerque* demanded, that beſides the annual tribute to be paid to the king of *Portugal*, liberty ſhould be given him to build a fortreſs, and a factory houſe to ſecure the trade of the *Portugueſe*; and king *Toro* being willing enough to grant what he deſired, the league was confirmed by a ſolemn oath on both ſides. But *Hamades*, who ſoon foreſaw that the building of this fortreſs would tend to the no ſmall detriment of his authority, left no ſtone unturn'd to prevent its accompliſhment, which *Albuquerque* being ſoon aware of, he cauſed this ambitious favourite to be kill'd. After his death, the *Portugueſe* meeting with no other obſtacle, the fortreſs was ſoon after brought to perfection; king *Toro* readily furniſhing them with materials and other neceſſaries. The next care of *Albuquerque* was, how to remove all the opportunities of a future revolt among the inhabitants of *Ormus*; for which purpoſe, after having taken the oath of fidelity from king *Toro*, he removed all the great cannon out of the city, and ſent about 30 perſons of the royal family, who had their eyes taken away before, and were maintain'd at the king's charge from thence to *Goa*, where they were to be provided for by certain perſons appointed for that purpoſe by *Emanuel* king of *Portugal*. *Albuquerque* having thus ſettled the affairs of *Ormus* return'd to *Goa*, where he was no ſooner arrived but dy'd. The *Mahometans* call this *Albuquerque Malandy*, becauſe he was born at *Melinde* in *Africa*, call'd by them *Maland*. Albuquerque *dies.*

It was not long before king *Toro* refuſed to pay the uſual tribute to the *Portugueſe*, alledging that they did not defend him againſt the violences committed by *Mokrin* his vaſſal prince, of the iſland of *Baharen*, who hinder'd the ſhips from coming to *Ormus*. *Sequeira*, then governor of the *Indies* for the king of *Portugal*, ſent hereupon ſeven men of war (aboard of which were 400 *Portugueſe* ſoldiers) to the aſſiſtance of king *Toro*, under the command of *Anthony Korrea*, which were join'd by 200 barks of the king's, mann'd with 3000 *Perſians*, under

1662. the conduct of *Xaraf* his admiral. *Mokrin* brought together an army of 12000 men, consisting of three thousand *Arabian* horse, 4000 *Persian* archers, and the rest of *Turkish* firelocks, and some of his own subjects, arm'd only with Timeters and javelins; but being overthrown and slain in battle, the isle of *Baharen* fell into the hands of the king of *Ormus*, who gave it to one *Bardadi*, under condition that he should pay him an annual tribute of 40000 *Serafs*.

By this time *Sequeira* being sufficiently convinced, that the king his master was circumvented in his share of the customs and other taxes, appointed certain *Portuguese* commissioners to have a watchful eye over them, which so exasperated the inhabitants, that king *Toro* in 1521 revolted, and caused all the *Portuguese* at *Ormus*, except such as fled into the fortress, to be kill'd; the same treatment received the *Portuguese* at *Kuriatte*, *Soar*, and in the island of *Baharen*, who were either all slain or imprison'd. Then he attempted the taking of the fortress, but meeting with a brave resistance from the *Portuguese*, and dreading their return with a good fleet, he retired with all his subjects and their effects to the isle of *Queixome*, and set fire to the city of *Ormus*, which burnt four days successively. But not long after *Xaraf*, the chief adviser and promoter of this revolt, having received intelligence of the coming of the *Portuguese* fleet, and fearing to be call'd to a severe account kill'd king *Toro*; and in his stead put *Mamud Scha*, one of the sons of *Seyfadin*, upon the throne. This king being but 13 years of age, made a new league with the *Portuguese*, by virtue of which he was oblig'd to pay an annual tribute of 20000 *Serafs* to the king of *Portugal:* The inhabitants of *Ormus* were to restore to the *Portuguese* all that they had taken from them; in consideration of which, the *Portuguese* were not to intermeddle with their custom-house, or other courts of judicature. In the year 1550, the *Turks* made an inroad into the isle of *Ormus*, and laid it almost desolate. The king who in 1566 reign'd in *Ormus* was call'd *Siasiruscia* of *Xasiruxa Gialedin*; and in 1580 reign'd one *Ferraguixa*, who tho' very antient, had a great inclination to marry *Bifatme*, the widow of *Rex Bradadin*, his late governor of *Mogostan*, thereby to be master of her treasure, which was very great; she gave him for answer, *That she would comply with his desires as soon as he had perfected his new gardens at* Tarumbake, *and found out a new spring of fresh water*; both which the king having found means to effect in a short time, he was nevertheless disappointed in his expectation by the crafty widow. He that reign'd in *Ormus* in 1606 was *Xeque*, *i. e.* prince *Ajo*, or as some call him *Ajosia*, *i. e.* king *Ajo*. 1662.

For tho' the *Portuguese* by the conduct of *Albuquerque*, had got into the possession of the island of *Ormus*, ever since 1507, nevertheless the succession of their kings from father to son, was kept inviolable under the protection of the crown of *Portugal*; for no sooner did the king of *Ormus* die, but the inhabitants set another of the royal family, tho' not without the consent of the *Portuguese* governor upon the throne, who was oblig'd to take the oath of fidelity to the king of *Portugal*, after which he was invested with the crown and scepter by the said governor, who conducted him in great pomp to the royal palace, and afterwards gave him all the demonstrations of respect and honour, tho' at the same time he durst not stir from the island without his approbation.

Vast territories belonging to the kings of Ormus.

The antient kings of *Ormus* were masters of vast territories on the continent of *Persia* and *Arabia*; and among the rest of the countries of *Lar* and *Mogostan* in *Persia*, the last of which is commonly call'd the *Persian* coast, and the countrey of *Lar* being a mountainous countrey of very difficult access, serv'd them as a bulwark against the *Persians*. For after these had once taken from the king of *Ormus* the countrey of *Lar*, and what else they were possess'd of on the continent of *Persia*, (whose example was followed by the *Arabians*) the isle of *Ormus* was bereaved of its chief defence, and exposed to the insults of the *Persians*.

How they secur'd the sovereignty.

It was the custom of the antient kings of *Ormus*, in order to secure to themselves the quiet possession of the throne, to confine their next kinsfolks, or such as had any pretensions to the crown, with their wives and children, where they were well entertain'd, and kept till the king thought fit to dispose of them otherwise. They also used to blind their brothers, and others descended of the royal line, because it was a fundamental law amongst them, that no blind man could sway the scepter. It was performed thus; they made a copper bason red hot, which they, immediately after it was taken out of the fire, held frequently close before the eyes of him that was to be bereaved of his eyesight; which without any farther application, had the desired effect, without giving the least blemish to the eyes in outward appearance, which look'd as clear as before. Some will have it to have been done with a red hot iron.

Their riches.

The kings of *Ormus* possessed vast treasures in former ages; the customs they received from all goods exported and import-

1662. ed there, amounting to an immenſe ſum yearly, which empower'd them to extend their conqueſts on the continent of *Perſia* and *Arabia*, which they afterwards loſt again by their own neglect. For whilſt they themſelves were drowned in voluptuouſneſs, they left the ſole management of affairs to their favourites, who encreaſing in pride as they did in riches, at laſt left them nothing but the bare royal name, whilſt they acted in the government at their own pleaſure, diſpoſing of the treaſury and all other matters of moment, as it ſuited beſt with their own intereſt, whereby both the power of the kings and the ſtrength of the kingdom being weakned, they were no longer able to cope as before with their enemies, and at laſt were forced to yield themſelves tributaries to the *Portugueſe*, who were afterwards, *viz.* in 1622, chaſed from thence by the *Perſians*, with the aſſiſtance of the *Engliſh*, under the reign of their king *Schach Abbas*, which happened in the following manner.

The *Portugueſe* at *Ormus* had no ſooner been advertiſed of the taking of the fort of *Queixome* (ſituate upon the point of the iſland of the ſame name;) but they ſent deputies in the name of the king of *Ormus* and of *Goazi* to the *Perſian Chan* of *Schiras*, to come with them to an amicable compoſition, but with ſuch evident marks of fear, that the *Perſians*, who had lately received advice of a powerful incurſion made by the *Uſbeck* and *Nogayan Tartars*, and conſequently would have reſted ſatisfied with the conqueſt of the iſle of *Quiexome*, being ſenſible thereof, reſolved not to let ſlip this opportunity of plundering as it were *en paſſant* the city of *Ormus*. Accordingly the *Chan* of *Schiras*, without tarrying any longer in the iſland of *Queixome*, embark'd about 40000 *Perſians* and *Arabians*, under the conduct of *Emanculibey* his lieutenant, in ſome barks, who coming before the city of *Ormus*, found it deſerted by the *Portugueſe* and moſt of its other inhabitants, but met with a prodigious quantity of merchandiſe, which they either could or would not bring into the caſtle. The *Perſians* ſeeing themſelves thus maſters of the city without ſtriking a blow, and finding that under the protection of the houſes they might open their trenches, without any conſiderable danger from the cannon of the caſtle, fell to work without delay, and ſoon carried them on to the foot of the ditch, which being dry on that ſide, they paſs'd without much oppoſition. Then they attack'd the baſtions of *St. James*, which they undermin'd and made themſelves maſters of it in a few days; the garriſon all this while not making one ſalley, but were forced to ſurrender the place the 3d of *May*, after a ſiege

Conqueſt of Ormus *by the* Perſians.

of ten weeks. They conſiſted of 400 men, regular troops, beſides women and children, which were ſome days before ſent to *Maſkate*. The *Engliſh* had the chief hand in making the conditions for this ſurrender, which were, 1662.

That all the ſoldiers ſhould have their lives granted them;

And that all ſuch as were willing ſhould be tranſported to Maſkate, *in two* Engliſh *ſhips appointed for that purpoſe*, which was ſtrictly obſerved by the *Perſians*; they made the king of *Ormus* and *Goazil*, with their families, priſoners, and ſeized upon their whole treaſure, which in pearls and gold amounted to above two millions, beſides a vaſt booty of precious ſtones, and other riches belonging to the inhabitants, and 300 pieces of cannon, all which fell to the *Perſians* ſhare, who loſt a great number of men in the ſiege of this fortreſs. The *Portugueſe*, before they ſurrendered the fort, took care to make all the cannon uſeleſs by nailing of it up. The king of *Ormus*, with ſome other *Arabians* of note were carried priſoners into *Perſia*, together with the beforementioned *Goazil Raia Noradina*. This laſt was a young lord, a ſubject of the king of *Spain*, a very handſome perſon, and well verſed in the *Perſian* and *Arabian* hiſtories. He had at the beginning of the ſiege offered 100000 crowns in ducats and *Xerafins*, to the *Perſians*, to be tranſported to *Maſkate* or *Goa*; and the unfortunate king of *Ormus*, had likewiſe made an offer of his whole treaſure to the *Portugueſe*, to obtain the ſame favour, which was refuſed by the *Portugueſe*, notwithſtanding they were both vaſſals of the king of *Portugal*, which has given no ſlender cauſe of ſuſpicion to ſome, as if the *Portugueſe* had invited the *Perſians* thither, when they ſued for peace to them in the iſle of *Queixome*. The *Engliſh*, in conſideration of this ſervice, had the moiety of all the cuſtoms and other revenues granted them by the *Perſians*. The chief reaſon of the loſs of the fortreſs of *Ormus*, is attributed to the revolt of the garriſon in the *Portugueſe* fort of *Queixome*, who in ſpight of *Ruy Freira* their governor, ſurrendred it to the *Perſians*. It was alſo alledged, that if the governor of the *Portugueſe* fortreſs of *Ormus*, had, according to the advice of the other commanders, filled the ditch betwixt the city and the fortreſs with water, by opening the ſluices, the *Perſians* would have found it a much harder taſk to have approached ſo near to the baſtion of *St. James*.

Before the *Portugueſe* had diſcovered the paſſage by ſea to the *Indies*, all the *Indian* commodities were brought into *Europe* by the way of *Ormus*, whither they were firſt

Vaſt traffick of Ormus *in former ages.*

tranſported

1662. transported out of all parts of the *Indies*, and from thence thro' the *Perſian* gulph, and along the river *Euphrates* to *Baſſora*, which city lies upon the confluence of the two great rivers the *Euphrate* and *Tigris*. From *Baſſora* they were by land carried by camels to *Bagdad*, a city upon the *Tigris*. From hence they travelled with their merchandizes in caravans thro' the deſarts of *Syria* to *Aleppo*, being a journey of forty days; and from *Aleppo* to *Tripolis* in *Syria*, bordering upon the mediterranean (only three days journey) from whence they were tranſported by the mediterranean into all parts of *Europe*. From hence it is evident, that *Ormus* in former ages was the ſtaple of all the *Indian* commodities. But ſince the diſcovery of the ſea paſſage to the *Eaſt-Indies* by the *Portugueſe* by the cape of *Good Hope*, this way of tranſporting the *Indian* commodities by land is laid aſide, tho' even to this day, certain *Indian* merchandizes, but eſpecially *Perſian* ſilks, are brought from *Ormus* by land by the caravans, this iſland by reaſon of its ſituation, at the entrance of the *Perſian* gulph, and its two harbours, lying very commodious for traffick and ſhipping from the eaſtern parts of the world. After the city of *Ormus* was fallen into the hands of the *Perſians*, moſt of its traffick and the ſtaple of the *Indian* commodities was from thence transferred to *Gamron*, a city upon the *Perſian* coaſt, built upon the ruins of *Ormus*. We will now proceed to a ſhort deſcription of the iſlands of *Baharen*, *Queixome* and *Keſem*.

The iſle of Baharen. Among a great number of other iſlands in the *Perſian* gulph, and under the juriſdiction of *Perſia*, one of the chief is the iſle of *Baharen*, or *Bahrem*, called by *Strabo* and *Pliny Tilos*, and is by ſome taken to be the ſame iſland, called *Ichara* by *Ptolemy*. It is ſituate in the ſtreights of *Baſſora* or the *Perſian* gulph, betwixt *Baſſora* and the iſle *Gerun*, or *Ormus*, about 60 leagues diſtant from each, near the *Arabian* coaſts, over againſt the harbour of *Katifa*. This iſland abounds in water, but is brackiſh, the beſt of all being found in certain ponds or pools in *Nanyah*, in the midſt of the iſland; next to which that which is taken out of the ſea is in moſt eſteem, which is performed in the following manner.

There are certain ſprings of freſh water ariſing in the bottom of the ſea, at three fathoms and a half deep. Near the city of *Manama*, certain divers go early in the morning in boats, about three muſket ſhot deep in the ſea from the ſhore, and dive to the bottom of the ſea, fill their earthen or leathern veſſels with the water that iſſues from the ſprings, and ſo come up again and return to the ſhore; this they do with a great deal of dexterity and nimbleneſs. 1662. Theſe ſprings are ſuppoſed to have been formerly on the ſhore, not far from the ſea-ſide, which ſince that time have been ſwallowed up by the inundations of the ſea, occaſioned by earthquakes. This iſle is very fertile, abounding in fruits of all ſorts, but eſpecially dates. But all the rice (which together with the dates, is the general food of the inhabitants;) is from the *Indies* tranſported to *Ormus*, and from thence into this iſland, which is famous throughout the *Indies*, by reaſon of the pearl fiſhery here, *Pearl fiſhery.* from whence the king of *Perſia* draws a vaſt revenue yearly, as may be gathered from thence, that after this iſland was fallen into the hands of one *Bardadin*, (who ſucceeded *Anthony Korrea Mokrin*, a vaſſal of the king of *Ormus*) he promiſed to pay a yearly tribute of 40000 *Serafs*. Beſides this, the pearl trade here produces yearly at leaſt 500000 ducats in ready money, not to reckon 100000 ducats more, which are ſhared betwixt the *Perſian* governor and the other officers: For there is a great reſort of merchants to this place, which come hither from all parts of the world to buy up pearls, and to tranſport them to the *Indies* and other places, the beſt and moſt precious pearls in the world being found near this iſland of *Baharen*, and the iſle of *Gionfar* or *Giolfar*, which both in bigneſs and roundneſs, far exceed thoſe found near the other iſlands of *Latif*, *Laſen*, *Barechator*, *Zezirafilhar*, *Alul*, *Seran*, *Dſiud*, *Daas*, *Emergocenon*, *Ancovi*, *Serecho*, *Delmefialmas*, *Sirbeniaſt*, *Aldane*, *Feſtebruatich*, *Cherizorn*, *Dibei*, *Sarba*, *Agiman*, *Ras*; *Emelgovien*, *Raſagiar*, *Daoin*, *Raſaelchimes*, *Sirkorkor*, *Kaſab*, *Konzar*, *Meſendenderadi*, *Lima*, *Debe*, *Chorf*, *Chelb*, *Sarar*, *Suet*, *Meſtar*, *Garajat*, *Teuji*, *Golaf*, *Furgatile*, *Sam*, *Gameda*, *Bacha* and *Jadi*. All which afford pearls, but they are not exactly round. Near *Maſkate*, about 33 or 34 leagues from *Ormus*, are likewiſe very good pearls to be found.

The pearl fiſhery near *Baharen* begins ſometimes in *June*, but generally in *July*, and continues till the end of *Auguſt*. About 200 barks go abroad together, *viz.* 100 belonging to the iſle of *Baharen*, 50 to *Pilfar* and 50 to *Nihely*; their rendezvous being commonly near *Katar*, a ſea port of *Arabia*, ſix leagues ſouth of *Baharen*. The pearls taken here exceed all the reſt in goodneſs, beauty, and weight, tho' not in bigneſs. They catch them by means of a ſtone, which by its weight is let down 12 or 18 fathom under water. They ſell the pearls by *Karats* and *Abas*, three of which make one *Karat*; and by *Matikals*, or *Mitigals*, each of which contains 42 *Karats*; the ſmall pearls are ſold by *Mitigals*. Beſides this general

1662. fiſhery near *Katar*, which continues for two months, there are ſeveral other particular fiſheries, near *Nihely*, *Baharen*, *Julfar*, *Maſkate*, *Teude*, and *Rozalgate*, in the *Perſian* gulph, which though not of ſo great conſequence as the firſt, yet are commonly greatly beneficial to the owners. As they take up the oyſters they open them, when the pearls drop out. It is generally believed that theſe pearls are progenerated by the *May* dews, during which month the oyſters riſe up to the ſurface of the waters, and opening themſelves, receive a ſmall quantity of dew, which being coagulated, afterwards produces theſe pearls. Certain it is, that if theſe oyſters are opened before *June*, the pearls are ſoft and pliable like pitch. Moſt of the inhabitants of the iſle of *Baharen* are *Arabians*, but the garriſon conſiſts of *Perſians*, under the command of a vizier ſent thither by the king of *Perſia*. Formerly this iſle was under the juriſdiction of the kings of *Ormus*, and in 1602 taken from them by the *Portugueſe*. But when the *Perſian* ſultan of *Xiras* had laid ſiege to the *Portugueſe* fortreſs of *Comoran*, he made himſelf maſter of *Baharen*. The king of *Perſia* alledging that he had not taken it from the *Portugueſe*, but from a vaſſal of the king of *Ormus*, who was his vaſſal; ſo that ever ſince 1602 the *Perſians* have been in poſſeſſion of it.

The iſle of Quiexome Kechmiche.

The iſle of *Queixome*, or *Queixume*, or *Quezome*, otherwiſe called *Kechmiche*, and by the inhabitants *Brokt*, lies cloſe to the continent of *Perſia*, being ſeparated from it only by a ſmall branch of the ſea: It has about two leagues in circuit, and is three leagues diſtant from *Ormus*. Its two chief places are *Arbez* and *Homeal*, where the king of *Ormus* at the time when *Albuquerque* firſt appeared hereabouts, had ſtrong garriſons. The other places of note are *Lapht*, the beſt harbours of this iſland, *Darbaga* not far from the *Lapht*, *Chau*, and *Sirmion*, or *Sermion*. It bears plenty of corn, but eſpecially barly, without which the inhabitants of *Ormus*, who are ſupplied from hence with it for their horſes, could ſcarce ſubſiſt there. Here is alſo a moſt excellent ſpring of freſh water; to ſecure which the *Perſians* had erected a fort hard by for fear of the *Portugueſe*, who were then as yet maſters of *Ormus*. If we may believe ſome hiſtorians, this iſland was not inhabited in ancient times; partly by reaſon of the frequent earthquakes that happened there, partly by reaſon of the vaſt numbers of ſerpents and other venomous creatures, which infected both air and ſome trees, ſo as to render the iſland uninhabitable. Among theſe trees is one called *Baxama* or *Baxana*, the fruit of which is ſo poiſonous, that the leaſt taſte of it kills in an inſtant, and its 1662. ſhadow is ſo peſtiferous, that it kills thoſe who abide there in leſs than a quarter of an hour. The root of this tree is in ſeveral other parts eſteemed as the greateſt antidote that can be, but here it is mortal, as are its leaves, and fruit called *Rabuzit*.

The *Portugueſe* in 1622 conquered this iſland from the *Perſians*, and on the point oppoſite to *Ormus* erected a fort, fortified with a wall, and ſurrounded with a broad and deep ditch, but the wall was very ſlight, being ſuſtained from behind only by ſome looſe earth. In ſhort it was a place of no defence, without any great cannon, neither in a condition to bear the weight of them. It had three ponds within its precinct, being chiefly built by the *Portugueſe*, for that purpoſe, becauſe the inhabitants of *Ormus*, were from thence ſupplied with water. Scarce had the *Portugueſe* finiſhed this fort, but the *Perſians* out of the countrey of *Lara* in 1622, beſieged it by land, as the *Engliſh* did at ſea; the *Portugueſe* commander *Ruy Freira de Andreada* defended himſelf bravely for ſome time, and killed many of the *Perſians*, who would have bought it perhaps at a dear rate, had not the *Engliſh* threatned to bring their great cannon againſt it, which obliged the garriſon who were not provided with them, to capitulate, and to ſurrender the fort upon honourable conditions, which were not performed on the enemies ſide. There are ſome others who have given us the following account of the occaſion of this ſiege.

The king of *Perſia* had 1612 taken the iſles of *Queizome* and *Baharen*, and the fortreſſes of *Bandel* and *Mogoſtan* on the continent, from the king of *Ormus*, which he refuſing to reſtore, the king of *Portugal* ſent his expreſs orders to *Ruy Freira*, that in caſe the king of *Perſia* would not reſtore the iſle of *Queixome* and the fortreſs of *Bandel*, he ſhould declare war againſt him, and erect a fort on the point of the iſle of *Queixome*. Accordingly *Ruy Freira de Andreada*, who in the beginning of *June* 1620, came to *Ormus*, cauſed a fort to be built on the point of the ſaid iſland, ſurrounded only with a ſlender wall made of ſtone and clay, or loam, being ſcarce to be compared in ſtrength to ſome private buildings: The *Perſians* with the aſſiſtance of the *Engliſh* having erected a ſmall battery againſt it, did play upon the fort with their cannon, which did ſtrike ſuch a terror into the garriſon that they refuſed to ſtand the brunt any longer, but forced *Ruy Freira* to capitulate. For *Emanchulican* governor of *Schiras* being juſt then come with 5000 men to *Bandel* or *Gamron*, he ſent part of his forces under the command of *Emanculi-*

Betwixt p\. 208. 209.

A Map of the Coast of MALABAR MADURA and CORMENDEL.

DECAN REG. CUNCAN.

GOLCONDA.

MARE INDIA.

BENGASA.

GOLFO DE BENGALA.

Part of the Maldivies Isles

CEYLON.

Zangizara, Dobetella, Cayrapor, Coropatan, O Pagoda Wingerla Banda, de Brande Eylanden, Goa, R. de Gouryn, Selsata R., Copers Creek, Anchediva, Onor, Batecala, Os Pimolas, Barselor, Barquenor, R. Vier, Corael sande, Mangualor, Cambare, Minte Delly, Cananor, Trangapatan flu., Mein, Bergare, Cognale, White clip, Calichut, R. de Cinacotta, R. de Cinta Lamor Panani, Iricijor, Mulicolan, Malacatur, Crangenor, Chionove, Coolengeri, Cotchyn, S. Iago, H. de Padre S. Andre, Porca, Caliculan, Vetimar, Coulan, Brimon, Ingnepatanam, C. Comogyn, Manuale, Andora, Qualepem, B. de Padua, Temple de Garage te dezo Maan, Temple Devyst, Bisnagar, St Gebergte, Dalle platte, Ponte kyl, Ponte Trangambar, Ponte Trangambar d'Oostzee, Boosser, Bisnagar, Narsinga, Goudegam, Narsingar, Karere, Penne, Callertwri, Armagon, Ponedy, Sickerhoery, Kondan, Pallacatta, Ieroer, Fort St. Georg, S. Thome ofte Meliapoer, Kabelom, Seven Pagoden, Saderpatan, Lange bos, Allen brue, Coelenoer, Pedefere, Ligenapatnam, Tiengapetiere, Porte nova, de vier Pagoden, Kalleron, Krankebara, Karcalle, Negepatnam, Kenerynse Pagode, Tondy, Adams brug, Manare, Caredive, Calpentyn, Jaffanapatnam, Ptte das Pedras, Passo Secco, of Palatsoy, Moeleture, Maslulipatam, Peetapoely, Ysieredorp, Goudewary, Montagnoely, Karsingar, Kagunda flu., Zyl, Ieraffari, Rameswaram, Sangam, Tondelryn, R. Bengar, Toutelryn, Ponte kyl, Ponte Trangambar, Ponte Trangambar d'Oostzee, Boosser, Oostzee, Oostzee, Oostzee

Betwixt p. 209, 210.

1 The City of S.t Thomas
2 a Wooden Battery
3 y.e French Outgards
4 a Pagan Temple called S.t Trimilicuri
5 a Stone Battery
6 y.e Outgard at Sea

S.t Thomas's City & Coast of COROMANDEL

1662. *bey* to the ſiege of the fort of *Queixome*; *Ruy Freira*, as I told you, being forced to ſurrender, had obtained certain conditions from the *Engliſh* for himſelf and the garriſon, among which the chiefeſt was, that the whole garriſon as well *Portugueſe* as *Arabians* (the laſt of which were come thither from *Zulfa* upon the coaſt of *Arabia*, under the command of *Emir Alikamai Zemur Mahomet*, and had done ſignal ſervices by ſallies and otherwiſe) ſhould be ſafely conducted to *Maſkate*, a city on the coaſt of *Arabia* belonging to the *Portugueſe*; but this was but ill performed by the *Perſian* general, who before the *Portugueſe* were embarked, cauſed all the *Arabians* to be beheaded, in ſpite of the proteſtations of *Ruy Freira*, who accuſed the *Engliſh* with breach of faith, but theſe excuſed themſelves, alledging that theſe *Arabians* having formerly been ſubjects of the king of *Perſia*, it was not in their power to prevent it: No more than 20 out of 250 *Arabians* eſcaped with life, who were hid by the *Engliſh* ſeamen. The commander in chief of theſe *Arabians Emer Genedin* being brought before the *Perſian* general, was by his orders ſtabbed in his preſence by *Xarial* his ſon-in-law, and then governour of *Mogoſtan*; but the *Portugueſe* garriſon conſiſting of 200 men, were by the *Engliſh* inſtead of conveying them to *Maſkate*, ſet on ſhore in the iſle of *Ormus*, from whence they got ſafe into the *Portugueſe* caſtle.

The iſle of Jarek. The iſle of *Jarek* is ſituate three leagues from the coaſts of *Arabia*, to the ſouth of the iſle of *Ormus*, and to the eaſt of the iſle of *Kechmeche*. It is deſtitute of inhabitants, and very ſmall in compaſs, the *Dutch* who reſide on the behalf of the *Eaſt-India* company at *Gamron*, have planted there only a garden near a certain pond, whither the wild boars and ſtags which are here in great numbers, come to drink; they alſo keep here ſome tame fowl for their recreation. It is now time we ſhould leave *Gamron* and *Ormus*, and proceed on our voyage.

After we had taken in our lading at *Gamron*, we ſet ſail from thence the 2d of *June*, and with a favourable gale paſſed along the coaſt of *Malabar*, towards the iſle of *Ceilon*; for before you come to the coaſt of *Coromandel*, you are obliged to ſail round all that vaſt tract of land. I had letters by me for the governour of *Punto Gale*, a city of *Ceylon*, which I delived to a certain maſter of a ſmall veſſel, without going aſhore myſelf. After we had provided ourſelves with freſh water here, that the rendezvous of the *Dutch* ſhip was appointed to be at *Punto Pedro*, where Mr. *Rijklof van Goens* commanded a body of troops in order to beſiege the city of *St. Thomas*, whither we alſo directed our courſe. But whilſt the great train of artillery was embarking, and the troops ready to go on board for this expedition, we received intelligence that the *Portugueſe* had ſold the city of *St. Thomas* to the *Jentyves* or *Pagans*, which made us alſo alter our meaſures; and I went to *Jafenepatnam* to diſpatch my buſineſs. 1662.

They came to Punto Gale *in* Ceylon.

The city of *St. Thomas* is ſituate under 12 or 13 deg. 30 min. of northern latitude, 26 *German* miles from *Nagapatnam*, one and a half off the river *Ganges* near cape *Komorijn*, and a days journey or five *German* miles to the ſouth of *Paliakatte*, on the coaſt of *Coromandel*, cloſe to the ſea-ſhore. The city of *St. Thomas* was otherwiſe called *Kalamina*, and by the natives *Meliapor*, which name the *Portugueſe* changed into that of *St. Thomas*, in honour of that apoſtle, which name it retains to this day, not only among the chriſtians, but alſo the *Turks* and *Indians*. *Meliapor* ſignifies in their language as much as a peacock, intimating that as this bird is the moſt beautiful of all others, ſo this city did in beauty excel all the reſt of the eaſt. Some will have the city of *St. Thomas* or *Meliapor*, to be the ſame called *Mapura* by *Ptolemy*. This city was quite deſolate when the *Portugueſe* firſt came there, who rebuilt it in 1545, ſince which time it has encreaſed to that degree, that not many years after ſhe was accounted one of the fineſt cities in all the *Indies*, both in reſpect of the magnificence of its building, and the number of rich inhabitants. It is fortified with ſtone wall, ſtrengthned by ſeveral baſtions; and had under its juriſdiction above 300 villages and towns. It is one of the richeſt ſea ports of all the *Eaſt-Indies*, its ſituation being in the midſt of all the beſt harbours of thoſe parts, which renders it the more convenient for the *Eaſt-India* trade. Whilſt this place was in the hands of the *Portugueſe*, it was at firſt incorporated with the dioceſe of the biſhop of *Cochin*, but afterwards erected into a biſhopdom, under the juriſdiction of the archbiſhop of *Goa*. They had a church here dedicated to *St. Francis*, belonging to the *Capuchins*, and two others, one dedicated to *St. John*, the other to the virgin *Mary*, where the *Mahometans* and *Pagans* were inſtructed and baptized. In the ſuburbs was the church of *St. Lucy*, and in the city the monaſtery of *Charity* and *Lazarus*, beſides three others. The jeſuits, of whom there was a conſiderable number here, had a goodly college within the city, wherein the children of the *Portugueſe* and of the chief *Malabars*, were inſtructed in the fundamentals of the chriſtian religion. Next to this college was a very large pariſh inhabited by chriſtians, ſuch as were by the jeſuits con- *The city of* St. Thomas.

1662. verted from paganiſm and mahometaniſm, of which 120 were baptized in 1604. Here you ſee alſo the famous church of *St. Thomas*, this apoſtle, as the *Portugueſe* pretend, being buried here: his ſepulchre is ſhewn to this day on the top of a mountain near a city, over which they have built a ſmall chappel, which may be diſcovered at ſome diſtance at ſea. Cloſe to this college upon a pretty high hill is a chappel, which as they ſay, was *St. Thomas*'s uſual ſleeping place. The jeſuits to ſhew their reverence to this place, have adorned that part of the chappel where *St. Thomas* uſed to ſay his prayers, with gilt iron ſteps.

St. Thomas's *chappel.*

Here you ſee alſo a ſtone croſs, which they ſay is the ſame that in the apoſtles time did fall from heaven; for which reaſon they have covered it with an arch, as they have done with the adjacent ſpring, which ariſing from a rock is covered by another arch reſting upon four columns. The whole chappel is likewiſe adorned with many ornaments, and the wood of the chappel being looked upon as a precious relick, is frequently ſet in gold and carried away by the devout pilgrims.

We continued our courſe along the coaſt till we came to *Negapatnam*, where we were to unload part of our cargo.

Negapatan.

Negapatan or *Nenapatnam* is compoſed of *Naga*, which in the *Malabar* tongue ſignifies a ſerpent, and *Patnam* or *Patan* a city, becauſe round about this place uſed to be ſeen a certain kind of very venomous ſerpents called *Cobros Capellos*, i. e. *Head-ſerpents*. It is ſituate under the 9 deg. 45 min. and the adjacent cape under 11 deg. of northern latitude; beyond the rocks of *Romanankir*, over againſt the iſle of *Manar*, juſt oppoſite to *Tripalikorin*, three leagues from the city of *Tranguabar*, and about 39 leagues from the cape *Comorin*, at the beginning of the coaſt of *Biſnagar* and *Coromandel*. This city as well as its caſtle call'd *Ragu*, acknowledge the *Portugueſe* for its founders, the caſtle being built for their better ſecurity againſt the attempts of the *Naik* or *Neyk*, lord of the circumjacent countrey. They had ſeveral goodly churches here, and a very fine monaſtery belonging to the *Franciſcans*, which was maintained at the charge of the chiefeſt of the inhabitants. There are to this day remaining divers fine churches and other large ſtructures, with ſpacious apartments and galleries according to the *Portugueſe* faſhion. Next to the jeſuits college ſtood the church of *Tranguabar*. The city is pretty well fortified with defenſible towers, ſurrounded with a good mote: It is very populous in proportion to its bigneſs, but moſt of the inhabitants are of a tawny complexion, being generally either *Meſtices*, i. e. ſuch as are born of a *Portugueſe* father, and a ſhe blackamoor; or *Kaſtices*, i. e. ſuch as their fathers were blackamoors and their mothers *Portugueſe* women. It is alſo inhabited by *Banyans* and *Mahometans*, who are the chiefeſt traders here. 1662.

This city was the 23d of *July* 1658, ſurrendered to the *Dutch* by compoſition. For Mr. *John Vander Laen* then commander in chief of the *Dutch* forces in thoſe parts, did purſuant to his orders from Mr *Rijklof van Goens* admiral general of the *Dutch* fleet, ſet ſail from *Jafenepatan* in the iſle of *Ceylon*, on friday the 19th of *June*, to *Punto Pedro*, where he caſt anchor in the evening, and found the yachts *Workum*, the *Morning-ſtar*, *Manaer*, *Waterpaſs*, *Narſapour*, the galliot the *Amſterdam*, and the chaloop *Japara*, ready to join him; but the *Pidgeon* yacht was run aground, and the *Workum* was fain to ſtay behind, having loſt 3 of her anchors. He took care to provide the fleet immediately with as much meat and other refreſhments as the place would afford; and on the 20th was likewiſe join'd by the yachts the *Goes*, the *Pidgeon*, and the *Workum*; next day Mr. *Lucas Vander Duſſen* took a review of the land forces, which conſiſted of 500 men, divided into 11 companies, beſides the ſea-men. Mr. *Vander Laen* having ſummoned all the captains aboard the admiral's ſhip, where he gave them the neceſſary directions how every one ſhould behave himſelf in his poſt at their arrival before *Negapatan*.

Surrendered to the Dutch.

The 21ſt of *July* the fleet ſet ſail from *Punto Pedro*, and arrived the 22d early in the morning in the road before the city of *Negapatan*, where he met with the yachts the *Pipelen*, the *Naiſepour*, and a *Daniſh* chaloop. Mr. *Vander Laen* ordered to be ſet up the white flag in the yacht *Vander Goes*, and ſent Mr. *Lucas Vander Duſſen*, with 3 captains and an interpreter in a chaloop, and credential letters to *Caſpar Alphonſo de Karvalho*, the *Portugueſe* governour of *Negapatan*, and his council, to ſummon the ſaid city to a ſurrender upon honourable conditions. About noon Mr. *Vander Duſſen* returned; and gave an account to the admiral, that the *Portugueſe* governour and his council, refuſed to admit any of the company, except himſelf and the interpreter; that he was very civilly received, and admitted to appear before the council, where he had made uſe of all the arguments he thought might enduce them to ſurrender, deſiring that they would ſend aboard the admiral their plenipotentiaries to treat about the conditions. They deſired time till the next morning to conſider of the matter, and that the admiral would be pleaſed to ſend another

The Dutch *come before* Negapatan.

Summon the city.

1662. another chaloop to morrow, becauſe the *Jentyves* or natives did ſtop the paſſage of their boats at the mouth of the river. Accordingly the 23d Mr. *Vander Duſſen*, with two enſigns return'd to *Negapatan* in the ſame chaloop, with a white flag, and brought back from thence *Manuel Karvalho* a jeſuit, *Lewis de Quintal Parſire* and *Diego Beriſero* two captains, and *Antonio d'Almeyde* a lieutenant, inſtructed with credentials and full power from the *Portugueſe* governor, to treat about the ſurrender of the city to the *Dutch Eaſt-India* company upon reaſonable terms. The conditions propoſed by them were theſe; that a church ſhould be allow'd to ſuch *Portugueſe* as were willing to remain there, with as many prieſts as were requiſite.

The Portugueſe ſend Deputies to treat.

That the inhabitants ſhould have liberty to retire to *Bengal*, and that they might carry along with them all what belong'd to the poor.

Their demands.

After ſome conteſts on both ſides, it was agreed to ſurrender the place upon theſe following conditions.

Conditions agreed upon betwixt them and the Dutch.

That the city of *Negapatan* belonging to his *Portugueſe* majeſty, ſhould be ſurrendered on *Wedneſday* the 24th of *July*, to the *Dutch Eaſt-India* company, with all its territories, cannon, ammunition or arms, as likewiſe the keys of the magazines and other ſtore-houſes thereunto belonging.

That immediately as many ſoldiers of the *Eaſt-India* company ſhall be admitted into the city, as ſhall be thought requiſite by them and the *Portugueſe* governor, for their mutual ſecurity; and all merchandizes or what elſe may belong to the crown of *Portugal*, ſhall at the ſame time be delivered without the leaſt fraud.

The *Portugueſe* garriſon now in the city ſhall march out with beat of drum, matches lighted and bullets in their mouths, to a certain place to be appointed by the *Dutch* admiral Mr. *Vander Laen*, where they ſhall be diſarm'd, except that the officers even to the enſigns ſhall have liberty to retain their ſwords.

All the inhabitants, whether clergy or laymen, married or unmarried, ſhall be left in the free poſſeſſion of all their goods, except their arms, as well moveable as unmoveable, houſes, gold, ſilver, merchandizes, ſlaves of both ſexes, till the laſt day of *October*, of the ſame year; againſt which time they ſhall be provided with convenient ſhipping, at the charge of the *Dutch Eaſt-India* company, in order to carry them to *Goa*, or further to the north, if they pleaſe.

The clerymen ſhall then be at liberty to carry along with them all the church ornaments, or what elſe belong'd to the exerciſe of the divine worſhip, except the bells, as likewiſe all the moveable goods belonging to them. 1662.

The laymen, ſoldiers and merchants, may, without the leaſt exception, tranſport all their moveables, money, gold, ſilver, jewels, ſlaves of both ſexes, and all their merchandizes, provided the ſame don't belong to the king of *Portugal*.

The day of their departure being come, the *Portugueſe* ſhall have their ſwords reſtored to them.

Gaſpar Alfonſo de Karvalho the *Portugueſe* governor, ſhall be tranſported to what place he ſhall think fit.

Accordingly the 24th about noon, ſeven companies of *Dutch* ſoldiers, one of *Bandaneſes*, and one of *Laſkaryns*, under the *Modlier* of *Negombo*, took poſſeſſion of the gates of the city, at which time the *Portugueſe* drew off from the baſtions, and proclamation was made immediately, not to moleſt, much leſs rob the inhabitants, under pain of death.

The Dutch *take poſſeſſion of the City.*

Mr. *Vander Laen* himſelf was received by the *Portugueſe* governor, who was not very well at that time, at the entrance of one of the gates, where he had the keys of all the city gates deliver'd to him. From thence he went to take a view of the baſtions, and after having given the neceſſary orders, he commanded the inhabitants to appear the ſame afternoon in the court of the *Stadthouſe*, in order to be diſarmed, purſuant to the laſt agreement. They were no more than 670 ſtrong, divided into 17 companies, conſiſting of *Portugueſe*, *Meſtices* and *Topaſſes*, being all inhabitants, not in the king of *Portugal*'s pay. Their artillery conſiſted in 28 braſs, and 53 iron pieces of cannon ſmall and great, their ammunition in 8000 pounds of gunpowder, lead, and other things of this nature in proportion; beſides which, there were ten large and eight ſmall bells in the town.

Much about the ſame time the *Dutch* appeared before the city, the *Kapado Negape*, or general of the *Neyk*, or lord of the countrey came to lay ſiege to it; but underſtanding that the *Dutch* were got into poſſeſſion of it, he deſired to be admitted into the city to confer with them, concerning the ſudden ſurrender of it. His requeſt being granted, he took a great deal of pains to perſuade the *Dutch* that both the city, and all the *Portugueſe* ought immediately to be deliver'd to the *Neyk* his maſter, to make ſatisfaction for what they ſtood indebted to him; but this requeſt was civilly refuſed by Mr. *Vander Laen*, who told him that he was very ready to cultivate a good underſtanding with the *Neyk* and his ſubjects, but that both in point of conſcience, as he was a chriſtian, and in honour he could not recede

1662. cede from the articles of the ſurrender. By this time the hour approaching when the inhabitants were to be diſarm'd at the ſtadt-houſe, he invited the *Kapado* to go along with him, which he courteouſly accepted of: The inhabitants earneſtly intreated Mr. *Vander Laen* to permit them to be tranſported to *Bengal* inſtead of *Goa*, unto whom he gave for anſwer, that he would intercede for them in writing with the *Dutch* admiral general *Vander Goens*. The 25th publication was made by beat of drum, that every one, without any exception of perſons or quality, ſhould deliver forthwith all his arms at the ſtadt-houſe, unleſs they would be excluded from the benefit of the capitulation; which was punctually perform'd the next day, which was ſpent altogether in receiving their arms.

In the mean while the *Neyk*'s army had ſo incloſed the city, that we began to have ſome ſcarcity of proviſions; and the *Dutch* living at *Tranguabar*, a *Daniſh* colony, began to be ſorely afraid of being attack'd by *Wardarasje Purmal*, who, as it was given out, was ſent for from the countrey of *Tanjaor*, by the *Neyk*, to chaſtiſe thoſe of *Tranguabar*; the governor of which, *Eſbeck Anderſon*, had promiſed to cruiſe before the bar of *Negapatan*, with three ſtout yachts well mann'd, inſtead of which he had ſent only one ſmall chaloop; ſo that the inhabitants fearing the worſt, fled daily with their beſt moveables into the fort of *Daneſburgh*. The 17th the *Kapado Negapa*, ſent by the *Neyk* with an *Ola* or letter from *Maniegul*, appeared in the city of *Negapatan*, where he delivered the following letter to Mr. *John Vander Laen*.

A letter from the Neyk *to Mr.* Vander Laen.

THE 16th *day of the year* Welenby. *I* Aſſy Para Neyk *ſend to the* Dutch *commander* Moor *this letter; by which I would have them to underſtand, that the* Portugueſe *inhabitants of* Negapatan *have for theſe* 12 *years laſt paſt not pay'd their uſual taxes, but are run much behind. It is for this reaſon I ſent my army to attack them in the city of* Negapatan, *to demoliſh its fortifications, and after the inhabitants were reduced under my obedience, to grant them liberty to live as before, under my juriſdiction; having always lived in a good correſpondence with the* Dutch Eaſt-India *company, I deſired their aſſiſtance by ſea; but now I am credibly informed, that you have made an agreement with the* Portugueſe *of* Negapatan, *who have deliver'd the city into your hands, which is very diſpleaſing to us; if you had a mind to maintain a good underſtanding with us, you ought firſt to have given us notice of it, and obtained our conſent; but now you muſt ſurrender the city to us, therefore ſend one of your deputies to treat with me, and he ſhall be honourably received, and receive all the ſatisfaction that may tend to the maintaining a farther good correſpondence betwixt us. If you do otherwiſe, you will have occaſion to repent it; but as I know you to be perſons of wiſdom, I don't queſtion but you will ſurrender the city to our people; in witneſs of which I have ſent our* Kapado Negapa *with this letter.* 1662.

Unto which Mr. *Vander Laen* ſent this anſwer.

Mr. Vander Laen's *Anſwer.*

THE Ola *or letter deliver'd to us by your highneſs's envoy* Negapa, *I received with all imaginable reſpect, under the diſcharge of three pieces of ordnance; out of which having fully underſtood your highneſs's intentions, I am obliged to tell your highneſs, that the* Portugueſe *having ſurrendered to us the ſtrong city of* Negapatan, *without making the leaſt oppoſition, and under certain conditions, agreed on betwixt both parties; we are bound by our duty, as chriſtians, to obſerve punctually in all reſpects the ſaid articles, it being unqueſtionable that without any injuſtice to your highneſs, we have power to annoy the* Portugueſe, *our enemies, wherever we can meet with them, which makes us live in hopes that the friendſhip eſtabliſh'd betwixt your highneſs and the* Eaſt-India *company will not ſuffer the leaſt detriment upon this account. What has the undertakings of the ſaid company not long ago againſt the* Portugueſe *in the countrey of the* Neyk *of* Madura *and in other neighbouring countries and kingdoms, which were never interpreted to their prejudice, makes us believe that your highneſs will not be diſpleaſed with the advantages obtained by us againſt the* Portugueſe, *which as they tend to no other end than to increaſe our trade in your highneſs's dominions, ſo they muſt in time turn to your own advantage. In the mean while we have communicated your highneſs's ſentiments, by two ſeveral yachts ſent for that purpoſe, to the directors of* Jafenepatan, *from whence we hourly expect an anſwer, which we don't queſtion will be to your highneſs's ſatisfaction.*

In the mean while *Kamerapanijk* the adviſer of this ſiege was fallen in diſgrace with the *Neyk*.

The 30th Mr. *Vander Laen* received letters from *Rijklof Goens*, dated the 29th, with the ratification of the capitulation, with orders to ſend the *Portugueſe*, to the number of 150, according to their requeſt, to *Bengal*, where they were likely to do them

Betwixt Pag. 213.214.

The City of PELLACATA with its CASTLE

1662. the leaſt miſchief, and they might ſooneſt rid their hands of them. As to what concerned the difference with the *Neyk*, he adviſed to endeavour to compoſe the matter by the means of ſome preſents; but if that would not ſucceed, to make his forces to retire deeper into the countrey; in the mean time to give all the courteous entertainment to his deputies, and to aſſure them, that he intended in a few days to be with them in perſon, to adjuſt all matters in queſtion betwixt them and his highneſs; but if he committed any hoſtilities againſt the city, to ſtand upon the defenſive, and to proteſt in writing againſt his proceedings. In the mean while the *Neyk*'s forces continued in their camp, which extended to the very ditch of the city; and as it increaſed daily in number, ſo it occaſion'd great ſcarcity within. The 1ſt of *Auguſt*, Mr. *Vander Laen* was inform'd that the commander in chief of the *Neyk*'s forces before *Negapatan* had received a letter from the *Neyk*, directed to Mr. *Van Goens*; and in the afternoon three perſons were ſent into the city, to give notice of the ſaid letter and ſome preſents, which they deſired might be received with all imaginable demonſtrations of reſpect. In compliance with which Mr. *Vander Laen* commanded immediately captain *Waſh* with his company, and the *Modlier* of *Negombo* with his *Laſkarins*, to poſt themſelves in good order without the gates of the city, in order to receive the preſents with all imaginable reſpect, under the diſcharge of three pieces of cannon. They kept their poſt till evening, without ſeeing any body, when a certain perſon belonging to the *Neyk*'s camp came privately to the *Modlier*, and told him in the *Singaleſe* language (for fear of being underſtood by others) that there was no *Ola* or letter, nor any preſents ſent from the *Neyk*, the whole being only a ſtratagem contriv'd on purpoſe to draw ſome of our forces without the gates into an ambuſh, which they had been diſappointed in, by our forces not ſtirring from the gates, upon which the *Modlier* and captain *Waſh* return'd with their troops into the city, and the *Neyk*'s forces retired back into the countrey. This *Neyk* beſieged *Negapatan* a ſecond time, 1660, in *September*, but the *Dutch* garriſon making a vigorous ſally, in which they kill'd 400 of his men, they came to a compoſition for that time; notwithſtanding which, he appeared before it again in the next following year.

The countrey hereabouts bears ſuch great plenty of rice, that abundance of it is tranſported from hence to other places. But they have great numbers of lewd women and idle fellows here.

Not far from the city is a *Pagode*, with a ſtone ſteeple, call'd *Tzina*, the pinacle of which reaches to the very clouds; the inhabitants believe that it was built by the devil, and that in one night. In the ſuburbs to the north, which are of magnificent houſes, there are likewiſe many *Pagodes* or pagan temples, wherein you ſee many idols of a terrible aſpect, made only of clay. Thus far concerning *Negapatan*. 1662. *The Temple of* Tzina.

From hence we purſued our voyage towards *Paliakatte*, and ſaw the lofty and moſt ancient *Pagode*, call'd *Tyripopeliri*, which ſtands within the precinct of a fort at a little diſtance from the ſea-ſhore, and of which I had the curioſity to take a full view. It is an ancient ſtructure, the front of which is adorned with many ſtatues artificially cut in ſtone. It is ſurrounded by a wall with a gallery on the top of it, over which are placed a great number of large coffins, which reſt upon ſtatues of divers figures, ſome repreſenting a horſe, others ſomewhat elſe. The walls are made of large blue ſtones, which are brought thither a vaſt way out of the countrey, and moſt artfully joined together. The *Indian Pagodes* or temples ſeldom have any light but what comes through a hole in the frontiſpice; notwithſtanding which I ventur'd in, and found ſeveral lamps burning there; by the light of which I aſcended by a pair of ſtairs of wood, to the top of the temple, from thence to take a view of the circumjacent country. But ſcarce was I come to the ſtairs-head, when I ſaw my ſelf in an inſtant ſurrounded by thouſands of bats that were ſtriving to get out thro' the hole in the frontiſpice, ſo that I was glad to get away from this unwelcome company, which, to avoid the brightneſs of the ſun-beams, ſhelter themſelves by day in theſe dark lurking holes. *The temple of* Tyripopeliri.

We ſoon ſet ſail again, and coaſted it along the ſhore, which is flat and ſandy here, till the 15th of *June*, when we arrived at *Paliakatte*, where I delivered our whole cargo of gold and ſilver we had taken in *Perſia*, to the director *Lawrence Pit*. *They come to* Paliakatte.

The *Dutch Eaſt-India* company has a ſtrong fort here, with four baſtions of ſtone work, call'd *Geldria*, of which they have been poſſeſs'd ever ſince the year 1619. Without the caſtle is a plantation or town, which to the land-ſide is defended by an earthen wall, which is but indifferently kept, but the houſes within are very cloſe and well built. It is inhabited partly by *Hollanders*, partly by *Jentives* or pagan natives; the laſt of which live for the moſt part upon trade with painted and white callicoes and linen. The rice which grows in this countrey in great plenty, is as well as all *The fort of* Geldria.

1662. other ſorts of grains brought weekly to market here. The fort is on one ſide waſh'd by a river, which ſwells very high in the rainy ſeaſon, when the merchandizes may be unloaden here by the help of lighters. But in the ſummer ſeaſon the river being quite dry'd up, the goods are forc'd to be carried aſhore on their backs. This river abounds in fiſh in the winter-time, moſt of which die in the ſummer, which makes the inhabitants catch them before that time, and dry them in the ſun, and ſo tranſport them to other places. The north *Monzon* begins here in *October*, and holds all the *November* and *December*, with ſuch violence, that the ſhips can ſcarce ride in the road. In *January* the *Monzon* changes, and the fair ſeaſon returns.

As to the city of *Paliakatte*, its inhabitants are for the moſt part *Meſtices* and *Kaſtices*; *Meſtices* are ſuch whoſe parents were married with foreigners; as for inſtance, when an *Hollander* marries an *Indian* woman, or an *Indian* man a *Dutch* woman; but the children of the *Meſtices* are call'd *Kaſtices*. Thus many of the natives, eſpecially of the *Thioles* have married *Dutch* women, as on the other hand, ſeveral *Hollanders* are married to women of the *Thioles*, from whence is come a numerous off-ſpring of *Meſtices* and *Kaſtices*. Many *Bramans*, *Banyans* and *Panekayers*, or *Thomiſts* and *Jews* live here, of great traffick; for every month comes hither the *Kaffila* or caravan of *Agra*. The *Banyans* and *Jews* are the chiefeſt of all the traders here, this city being a place *Golconda*, *Suratte* and *Cambaia* by land; both *Chriſtians* and *Mahometans* bring to this place their merchandizes from the *Red-Sea*, the *Perſian Gulph*, from *Suratte*, *Goa*, *Malabar*, *Sumatra* and *Malacca*. There is great plenty of fiſh at *Paliakatte*, and a neighbouring country furniſhes them with all other ſorts of proviſions.

They leave Paliakatte. After we had diſpatch'd our buſineſs here, we purſued our voyage towards the great city of *Maſulipatnam*, where we were to load wood and other materials for the building of our fort at *Paliakatte*. We ſet ſail the 20th of *July*, and came to an anchor before *Maſulipatnam* the 22d, I went aſhore the ſame evening to take care of our loading, which conſiſted for the moſt part in timber and other materials for building, beſides ſome callicoes, which took us up till the 14th of *Auguſt*, when we were ready to ſet ſail again. In the mean while I had ſufficient leiſure to take a full view of the city of *Maſulipatnam*. It lies near the ſeaſhore, upon a branch of the great river *Kiſna*, a few leagues from *Negenapatnam*, being ſurrounded on all ſides with water. It is cloſely built and well peopled, it being the only place of traffick in callicoes, indigo, diamonds, and other precious ſtones, in the kingdom of *Golconda*. To the land-ſide, north-weſt of the city, is a ſtanding pool, over which is built a bridge of 2000 paces long, in the midſt of which ſtands a houſe for the conveniency of the paſſengers to repoſe themſelves there. This bridge reſts upon very thick poſts, which are covered with ſhells of 12 or 14 feet long, without any leanings on either ſide. Moſt of the inhabitants are *Pagans* and merchants. The *Perſian Mahometans* have here likewiſe a moſque built of white ſtone, after a very antique faſhion, in the very center of the city. The houſes are all of wood cover'd with pantiles, the king having expreſly forbid the building of ſtone houſes, for fear of encouraging his ſubjects to revolt; who, tho' *Pagans*, wear white callicoe veſts and turbants like the *Moors*. They uſe rice inſtead of bread, and drink commonly water; they have alſo great plenty of all ſorts of fiſhes, ducks, geeſe, and tame and wild fowl. Both the *Dutch* and *Engliſh Eaſt-India* companies have each a houſe here, with their reſpective flags on the top of them. The *Franciſcans*, who are all *Portugueſe*, have here a Monaſtery over againſt the city; on the continent is a village, where the governor has a country-ſeat, where he diverts himſelf ſometimes.

1662. *Its bridge.*

The river Kiſna. The river of *Kiſna* ariſes very deep in the countrey, and exonerates itſelf with one branch about five leagues below the city of *Maſulipatnam* into the ſea, where it is but ſhallow, but the other turns to *Maſulipatnam*, which is much deeper. This river is not join'd to the city by a bridge, but they paſs it in boats; it has plenty of fiſhes, as likewiſe crocodiles; it ſwells ſometimes to ſuch a heigth during the rainy ſeaſon, that you may paſs in boats thro' the ſtreets of the city, but in the ſummer ſeaſon it is ſo ſhallow, that near the city it is ſcarce four foot deep. About half a league to the weſt is a champaign countrey, and on the eaſt-ſide the country is planted with palm and ſyry trees, behind which you may diſcern the tops of the mountains. We left *Maſulipatnam*, and the 29th return'd to *Paliakatte*, where meeting with ſeveral ſorts of commodities that were wanting at *Batavia*, I made all the haſte I could to have the ſhip loaded; but when we were almoſt ready to depart, the yacht call'd the *Parroket* arrived in the road, with advice, that the ſhips *the Houſe of Zwieten*, the *Sea Horſe*, the *Exchange*, the *Stadthouſe of Amſteldam*, the *Riſing Sun*, and the *Encreaſing Moon* were at ſea, being ſent from *Holland* with men and all ſorts of ammunition, to aſſiſt in the expedition againſt the coaſt of *Malabar*.

Arrive at Maſulipatnam.

A deſcription of this city.

The Dutch lay a deſign againſt the coaſt of Malabar.

1 ye Palace of ye Chief Director
2 Misericordia
3 St Francis
4 St Thomas
5 Topas
6 Nos Sinyoris
7 Three water Channels
8 Gates of ye City

COYLLAN



10.3

A Mestice Wooman

1662. *labar*. This ſoon made us alter our meaſures, every one having received orders to join the ſaid fleet, ſo that after we had unladen our ſhips, we ſet ſail the 10th of *September* for *Colombo*, the general rendezvous of our fleet. We ſtop'd at *Pedro Punto*, where having provided ourſelves with freſh water and fuel, we came to an anchor the 7th of *October* before *Colombo*, where we were employed among the reſt to take the great train of artillery aboard of us. The commodore *Roodhaes* in the mean while went out before the reſt with ſeven ſhips only, ordering the reſt to follow him to *Manepara*, one of the ſeven ſeaport villages on the coaſt of *Madure*, where all our ſhips were to meet, which we did accordingly on the 15th of *November*. Mr. *John vander Werf*, Mr. *Symonſon*, and myſelf, were made not only ſupervifors, but alſo treaſurers of the whole train of artillery: Being provided with every thing requiſite for ſuch an expedition, we ſet ſail from thence, and came with the whole fleet the 7th of *December* to an anchor, about two leagues to the ſouth of the city of *Kolang* or *Koulang*. The remaining part of the day was ſpent in landing our ſoldiers and other neceſſaries, and bringing the ſhips as cloſe as poſſible could be to the ſhore. The 8th we march'd in battle array into the country, and the *Negroes* had thrown up a ſmall redoubt within half a league from the city, from whence they fir'd thick upon our yachts, but without any great loſs, yet they ply'd us ſo warmly near the ſhore, that we were forced to cut our way thro' the woods to attack them from behind. Immediately all our carpenters were ſet to work to cut down the buſhes and trees, whilſt the ſeamen were employed in levelling the grounds to make way for our artillery. After we were advanced a little way into the wood, we came into a ſmall plain, to the left of which, leading to the ſea-ſide, we ſaw a ſtone-houſe, where we halted a little to take breath, becauſe the ſeamen had been hard put to it, in drawing the cannon thro' the deep ſand along the ſea-ſide. The enemy at the ſame time kept within his ſtrong hold, but as we advanced farther they charged our vanguard, who were order'd to break in upon them; they bravely ſtood the firſt brunt, but afterwards retreated again to their fort. In the mean time our cannon having joined us, we prepar'd for a general attack, which was carried on ſo vigorouſly, that the *Negroes* deſerted the fort, in hopes of ſaving themſelves by flight, but were moſt of them either kill'd upon the ſpot or in the flight. A ſtrong party of them happen'd accidentally to fall in with captain *Polmans* company of firelocks, who were ſent thro' the woods to attack the fort from behind; here you might have ſeen them fight like deſperate men, the engagement was very terrible conſidering the number of men on both ſides; at laſt they were overcome with above 100 kill'd and as many wounded on their ſide; we had no more than three kill'd, but a great many wounded, who were ſent aboard the ſhips to be taken care of. We found two iron pieces of cannon in this fort, which we nail'd up, and beat the carriages in pieces: After we had placed guards in all convenient poſts thereabouts, the ſoldiers repoſed themſelves under the ſhadow of trees; but within two hours after we continued our march to the city of *Kolang*, paſſing all the way by a great many fine plantations, ſurrounded on all ſides with walls, the road betwixt them being very narrow. As we advanc'd to the city, the enemy fired briſkly upon us from a ſmall fort near the water-ſide, where they had ſet up the *Portugueſe* ſtandard, but perceiving us notwithſtanding this to march undaunted towards the walls, their hearts began to fail, and betaking themſelves to flight, left the city to our mercy, which we took without the leaſt reſiſtance. All the officers and ſoldiers, each according to their reſpective qualities, had their quarters and poſts aſſign'd them; we reſted the next day, but every one being animated by the laſt ſucceſs in taking ſo conſiderable a city without oppoſition, long'd for action, ſo that before the morning the whole body being put in battle array without the water-gate, the chief miniſter of the camp, Mr. *Baldeus*, made a ſhort but very fervent ſpeech, and the commanders exhorted them to fight couragiouſly for the honour of their countrey and religion; which being joyfully accepted by the ſoldiers, who promiſed to hazard all for the ſervice of the company, the drums and trumpets began to ſound the march. Mr. *Yſbrand Goſkeled* commanded the van, and commodore *Roodhaes* the rear, being both perſons of known bravery; Mr. *Rüklof van Goens* commanded the main battle; we carried ſome field pieces along with us to ſerve us upon occaſion. We were forced to march thro' narrow ways, where ſcarce four could march a-breaſt, and finding that the enemy gall'd us from an adjacent ſmall fort, ſome companies wheel'd to the right, and the reſt to the left, whilſt the ſeamen undauntedly approach'd with their ſcaling ladders, and mounting the walls, took the fort with little reſiſtance. We found here no more than two iron pieces of cannon ready charged; notwithſtanding all this they ſkirmiſh'd briſkly with our foremoſt troops as they were advancing beyond the fort, but gave way by degrees and retreated

Their fleet meets at Manepara.

Come before Kolang.

Kolang *taken.*

1662. ed to the royal palace, where they made another halt, and engaged our troops a ſecond time, but with no better ſucceſs; for being once ſeiz'd with a panick fear, they ſoon gave ground, and left the place to our mercy, which we plunder'd and deſtroy'd. They had however in the mean while attack'd our rear ſeveral times, becauſe our heavy cannon could not come up ſoon enough with us, by reaſon of the narrowneſs of the way; the enemy making uſe of this advantage, attack'd us very furiouſly, but were bravely repuls'd by the help of our field pieces, which being charged with ſmall ſhot, were diſcharged among them with ſuch ſucceſs, that many of them remained dead upon the ſpot; and by this means we kept them ſo long in play, till we received a ſeaſonable reinforcement, when they betook themſelves to their heels, and left us abſolute maſters of the field. In the mean while our troops were advanced to the river, where they made themſelves maſters of another fort, in which they found 2 braſs and 10 iron pieces of cannon. In a certain *Pagode* next to the royal palace, call'd *Matta del Reyne*, we found a great cheſt with gunpowder, which being ſet on fire, in an inſtant blew up and deſtroy'd this antient ſtructure, covered on the top with braſs. Then our troops beat the countrey both to the right and left, burning and deſtroying all they met with. In an inſtant we ſaw whole woods in a flame, the *Bambo* canes making a moſt terrible noiſe, and burning like brimſtone, a miſerable ſpectacle to the enemy, who from the other ſide of the river, ſaw the flame conſume in an inſtant, what had coſt them many years labour. *John Piccard* my nephew, a captain lieutenant, and *William van Teylingin* were ſent with ſome chaloops up the river *Arwick*, to purſue the flying enemy on that ſide, but theſe took another way; moſt of them wading thro' the river, where they could not come near them with their chaloops. Mr. *Piccard* then landed his company on the other ſide, where he ſet 40 houſes on fire, which occaſion'd a freſh conſternation among the flying enemy. After we had thus ravaged the countrey, we return'd to the before-mention'd *Pagode*, where our troops repoſed themſelves for a while, and the ſame evening return'd conquerors to the city of *Koulang*. The 12th, all the ſhips carpenters were ſent for aſhore to cut down the trees that ſtood upon the city walls, and orders were given for breaking down part of it, and to bring it into a narrower compaſs, which was put in execution immediately. About the ſame time the natives ſent ſome deputies to ſue for peace; by what we were inform'd, that at the time of our arrival there were not above 30 true born *Portugueſe* in the city, who fled immediately, and that the *Negroes*, who were near 800 ſtrong, having had ſome notice of our deſign near 15 days before, had reſolved to kill all the *Hollanders* they met with except a few, whom they intended to preſerve to ſend them aboard their gallies, but the ſcene was altered; in the mean while we continued with breaking down and removing which had almoſt proved fatal to the ſhip the *Sea-Horſe*, which happened to take fire, and was in great danger of being burnt by the violence of the flame, had not the ſeamen quenched the fire. 1662. *Cruel deſign of the* Negroes.

By this time it being reſolv'd to proſecute the career of our victories, the commodore *Roodhaes* with eight ſhips ſail'd towards the city of *Cranganor*, to block up the entrance of that river, the reſt being to follow with all convenient ſpeed. The 19th I went on board the commiſſary *James Borchorſt*, with whom I had ſome earneſt buſineſs, but ſcarce was I come thither, but on a ſudden there aroſe ſuch a tempeſt, that with much ado I could get aſhore again, for the wind aroſe firſt from the land-ſide with moſt violent rains, but ſoon after chop'd about with ſuch violence, that it tore roots of trees out of the ground, and untiled abundance of houſes. By this ſudden change of the wind, our whole fleet conſiſting of thirty ſhips great and ſmall, were in no ſmall danger of being ſhipwrack'd. The ſhip the *Stadthouſe* was driven among the rocks, where having loſt her rudder, ſhe gave the ſignal of being in utmoſt diſtreſs, but no body durſt venture to bring her off. The ſhip the *Achilles* was likewiſe forced from her anchors among the rocks, but by good fortune happened to caſt anchor again, not far from the *Stadthouſe*. The ſhip the *Eraſmus* was alſo got adrift, and was in great danger of running upon the ſhelves; ſeveral of our ſmall craft were beaten to pieces by the ſea, and many others much endamaged. The ſhip the *Stadthouſe* continued in great diſtreſs all that day and night, ſtriking ſeveral times againſt the rocks, but next morning the fury of the tempeſt being ſomewhat appeas'd, we ſent out ſome boats to her aſſiſtance, which brought both her and the *Achilles* ſafe from among the rocks into the open ſea. So that at laſt, thro' God's mercy, all our great ſhips eſcap'd the danger of this ſtorm without any conſiderable damage, except what was in their rigging, which however fell moſt upon the ſmaller veſſels. 1662

The 24th the garriſon of the conquered city of *Koulang*, conſiſting of 663 men, both ſoldiers and mariners, under the command of captain *Cox*, and *Henry Walling*, being provided

1662. provided with all neceſſaries, during our intended ſtay before *Cranganor*, Mr. *Van Goens* ſet ſail the ſame day with the ſhips the *Walnut-tree* and the *Ulieland* towards *Cranganor*, commodore *Gotſke* being to follow with the reſt; we were in the mean while buſy with refitting the ſhip the *Stadthouſe*, and I ſtay'd aſhore with Mr. *Gotſke* till ſuch time that the gunpowder of the *Stadthouſe* and ſeveral other ſhips, which had got wet in the laſt ſtorm could be dried again; about the ſame time we were inform'd, that the negroes had receiv'd a good ſum of money to fight againſt us, but when they perceived we were in earneſt, they left the *Portugueſe* in the lurch, who as we told you before, left the city of *Koulang* the ſame afternoon, when we landed. The 29th we ſet ſail in the ſhip the *Exchange* to follow the fleet; by an expreſs ſent us from ſome of the *Malabars*, we were deſired to ſtay till the next day, which we refus'd, it being not our buſineſs to tarry here for matters which might well be deferr'd till another time. The next following day we paſs'd by *Kalkoulang*, the governor of which came aboard of us, with a preſent of freſh proviſions, which we accepted. The 31 we coaſted it along the ſhore, where we caſt our anchor, becauſe one of our yachts approach'd ſo near to the ſhore, that we feared ſhe would run herſelf into danger, which made us detach 20 ſoldiers in a boat to her relief, if occaſion ſhould require. The 1ſt of *January* 1662, by break of day we found ourſelves within a league of the city of *Cochin*, and ſoon after ſail'd ſo near the ſhore, that we could hear the centinels ſpeak. We ſaw five ſhips lying in the road, the foremoſt of which carried *Engliſh* colours. The ſame day about noon we came into the road, at the entrance of the river *Palliport*, and the next day having embark'd our men in boats, and our ammunition with two field pieces in another, we landed them without any oppoſition, except that the enemy diſcharg'd ſome of his great cannon againſt us from *Cranganor*, but without any loſs on our ſide.

The Dutch *land near* Cranganor.

We had poſted our forces in three ſeveral places, the better to cut off all correſpondency betwixt the enemy and the country. The next following day we brought two tuns of rice, and two braſs guns aſhore, and ſoon after our whole train of artillery, with all other neceſſaries requiſite for ſuch an undertaking. For ſome time we had kept the place block'd up both on the land and river ſide, but now we began to open our trenches with ſuch ſucceſs, that in a ſhort time we carried them on under the cannon of the city, the garriſon being all this while not idle on their ſide, but endeavouring to hinder our approaching by their continual fire out of their cannon and fire-arms, which they did with ſuch dexterity, that they kill'd many of our men in the trenches; among the reſt, a certain ſoldier had his arm and ſhoulder ſhot off at once, notwithſtanding which, Mr. *Van Goens* order'd him to be dreſs'd, which the ſurgeon did accordingly, who told me at the ſame time, that ſince he muſt infallibly die, he would give him ſomething that might eaſe his pain; I aſk'd the poor wretch how he did, he anſwered me without any alteration in his countenance, *Pretty well, I don't find myſelf very ill*, tho' he died in a few hours after. Fourteen days after we had carried our trenches to the body of the place, during which we had ſeveral ſmart ſkirmiſhes with the enemy, it was reſolv'd to venture a general aſſault; purſuant to this reſolution, I was ſent with two ſervants to confer with commodore *Gotſke* and Mr. *Roodhaes*, concerning the moſt convenient place the aſſault was to be made in. I was ſometimes to wade up to the middle in water, and met with captain lieutenant *Piccard*, who had the advanced guards. He forewarn'd me not to approach too near the city, from whence they fir'd without intermiſſion, but I was forc'd to venture at all, being oblig'd to be with the admiral general again the next morning. I went cloſe under the walls of the place, the centinels aſk'd me in *Portugueſe*, *who was there?* I anſwered in the ſame language, *a friend*, and ſo eſcap'd the danger. Mr. *Gotſke* and *Roodhaes* had been before inform'd concerning the condition of the place by a certain *Negroe*, and where it might be moſt conveniently aſſaulted, of which they having given me a circumſtantial account, I return'd forthwith, and was with the admiral by next morning, who thereupon reſolv'd to aſſault the city, and as he left me ſaid, *To morrow the city ſhall be ours*. So ſoon as every thing was prepar'd for the intended aſſault, I went on board the fleet to keep a watchful eye over the ſhips, which were of the utmoſt conſequence to us all.

1662

Conſultations about the aſſaults.

In the mean time our forces mounted the breach, and aſſaulted the town with great fury under the favour of the ſmoak of their cannon and fire arms, which by the wind was forced toward the city; I ſaw from on board the ſhips the ſmoak approach nearer and nearer to the place, which I looked upon as a good omen on our ſide; the enemies defended themſelves with a great deal of bravery for a conſiderable time, but our men puſhing on the aſſault with the utmoſt vigour, they were at the laſt forced to give way, and to leave us maſters of the city. Mr. *Polman* and *Shuilenburgh*, two of our captains,

1662. captains, were dangerouſly wounded, 80 common ſoldiers were killed in the aſſault, and a great many more wounded. The loſs of the enemies ſide was much greater, 200 *Portugueſe* being ſlain during the action, beſides a great number of negroes, who were all thrown into the river, and carried back and forwards ſeveral times by the tides, a moſt terrible ſpectacle to behold. For we found the taking of this place to be another piece of work than that of *Koulang*, and we were upon the point of ſounding the retreat, had not the commanders by their own example animated the ſoldiers to do their utmoſt; it being almoſt ſurpriſing how with ſo ſmall a force we were able to attack and conquer ſo ſtrong a place as this.

Cranganor *taken by ſtorm.*

Is laid deſolate. After the city was plundered it was laid level with the ground, except one ſtone tower, which ſtanding upon the river, was preſerved entire, and a garriſon put into it for the ſecurity of the river.

A deſcription of this city. This city of *Cranganor* (for there is another on the coaſt of *Malabar*, nearer to the ſea ſhore) lies about four or five leagues to the north of the city of *Cochin*; being the capital city of a kingdom of the ſame name, bordering to the north upon *Cochin* and to the ſouth upon *Koulang*. It was very famous among the *Indians*, by reaſon of its antiquity; being ſituate upon the banks of a river, about a league from the ſea ſhore, defended by a wall of earth, and a ſtone breaſt work; which had ſeven baſtions and the wall of earth three more. At the point near the river is remaining to this day a ſtrong ſtone tower for the defence of the river, which ſerved inſtead of a bulwark on that ſide; on the other point was a ſmall fort which commanded the river, and all ſhips going out or in. Several goodly ſtone houſes were in this city, and among the reſt a church, excelling all the reſt; on the oppoſite ſide of the river, towards the ſide of *Cochin*, is the redoubt called *Palliport*, built for the better defence of the river; upon a long iſland called *Baypin* extending to the river of *Gochin*. The royal palace is not far from hence, in a very pleaſant countrey; the king then reigning being a prince of great bravery, and well verſed in military affairs, in the flower of his age.

The redoubt Palliport.

After the taking of *Cranganor*, it was concluded by the majority of voices to attack likewiſe the famous city of *Cochin*, not queſtioning but that the fame of our late victories would open us likewiſe a way to the conqueſt of this place, before the enemies of this could recollect themſelves from the fear they were in at that juncture. Accordingly we decamped from thence, and ſet down before *Cochin*, our forces as in the laſt ſiege were again poſted in three ſeveral places, from whence the attacks were to be carried on againſt the city; Mr. *Isbrand Gotſke* had his poſt aſſigned him near the ſea ſhore; Mr. *Roodhaes* upon the bank of the river; and the admiral general's quarter was betwixt both. But the garriſon of *Cochin* was not ſo much frightned as we had flattered ourſelves, but made a brave reſiſtance. We did all we could to perſuade the negroes that we were not come hither with an intention to hurt them, but the *Portugueſe*, our enemies; but in vain, for they all appeared in arms againſt us, and ſeveral times attacked us like madmen, throwing themſelves in among our ranks, tho' they were ſure to die in the attempt, and thruſting themſelves upon our ſwords and pikes, not like men, but rather like wild boars or enraged bears. Not far from the royal palace was a very large *Pagode*, where the negroes had fortified themſelves: Our men, notwithſtanding their fury, attacked them in this advantageous poſt with ſo undaunted a courage, that they chaſed them from thence with the loſs of 400 negroes, and many more wounded. The old queen would fain have hid herſelf in a corner on the top of the *Pagode*, but was found out, and brought a priſoner by captain *Henry Rēde* into our camp. But after we had ſpent near two months in the ſiege, the waters beginning to riſe more and more every day, which filled up our trenches to the middle, and our forces by the ſeveral loſſes we had ſuſtained in divers engagements and attacks, and thro' the garriſons we had been obliged to put in the conquered places, being conſiderably diminiſhed in number, it was thought moſt expedient to raiſe the ſiege for this time, and to return with a greater force againſt next ſpring. Accordingly we decamped without any noiſe, and in one night got all our men, artillery, and ammunition aboard, without being perceived by the enemy, who were not ſenſible of our departure till next day about noon, as looking upon our motion only as a feint to draw them out of the town into an ambuſh. But when they found how matters ſtood, they diſcharged all their cannon round the walls, unto which we gave no anſwer for that time, but delayed it till a more convenient opportunity. The next thing the enemy had to do was to ſlight our works and trenches, which they did immediately, and to cut down all trees and edifices which they had found to be an obſtacle to them during the ſiege, they alſo took effectual care to have their fortifications repaired and ſtrengthned, as not queſtioning but that we ſhould give them another viſit with the next fair opportunity, in which they found themſelves not deceived.

1626.

The ſiege raiſed.

Cochin *beſieged.*

After

1662. After the raiſing of the ſiege of *Cochin*, our land forces and ſhips were ordered to ſuch places where their preſence was judged to be moſt neceſſary at the preſent juncture, Mr. *Yſbrand Gotſke* ſailed with a ſquadron of ſhips to *Batavia*, and the reſt ſteered their courſe to other places thereabouts; I went aboard the ſhip the *Exchange*, and paſſed by the city of *Kalkoulang* in my way to *Koulang*, where I was appointed chief director of the company: At the ſame time it was thought convenient to ſtrengthen the fortifications of *Kalkoulang*, and to put a good garriſon into it under captain *Polman* and ſeveral other commanders, till we could diſpoſe our forces in more convenient quarters.

The author comes to Koulang. I arrived at *Koulang* the 7th of *January*, where I gave immediate orders for the repairing the caſtle, and ſuch houſes as belonged to thoſe that were in the company's ſervice; and ſettling every thing that might tend to the re-eſtabliſhment of traffick with the queen of *Koulang*, and other neighbouring princes, unto whom I was ſent as a deputy, to treat with them concerning the moſt convenient methods, and to enter into a confederacy with them for that purpoſe.

Treaty with the queen of Koulang. The firſt treaty that was ſet on foot after the taking of the city *Kalkoulang*, was with the queen of *Koulang*, which was ſoon concluded upon theſe conditions; that her palace and great guns ſhould be reſtored to her, for the rebuilding of which, and other damages ſuſtained, ſhe was to have a certain ſum of money to be paid her by the company, whoſe intereſt it was, rather to purchaſe a peace upon reaſonable terms, than be at the charge of a war.

A deſcription of Koulang. The city of *Kolang*, or *Koulang*, or *Koulon* and *Koylang*, the capital of a kingdom bearing the ſame name, is ſituate upon the ſea ſhore of the coaſt of *Malabar*, under 9 deg. of norrhern latitude, about 13 *French* leagues (*Linſhot* ſays 24) to the ſouth of *Cochin*. It is fortified with a ſtone wall of 18 or 20 foot high, and 8 baſtions; its ſuburbs which are very large and ſtately, are by the *Portugueſe* called *Colang China*. For *Koulang* is ſeparated into two bodies, one of which is called the *Upper* or *Malabar Koulang*, the other the *Lower Koulang*; in the firſt the king and queen kept their ordinary reſidences; the laſt was formerly in the poſſeſſion of the *Portugueſe*, as lying nearer to the ſea ſide; here the fryars of *St. Paul* and the *Franciſcans* had each a monaſtery, adorned with ſtately chappels and ſteeples. Beſides which there were four other *Portugueſe* churches here, dedicated to as many *Romiſh* ſaints; they had no leſs than ſeven goodly churches, among which was the famous church built many ages ago by the Chriſtians of *St. Thomas*, which was left ſtanding, after we reduc'd the place into a narrower compaſs; in this church is the tomb of a certain great *Portugueſe* captain, who was governor of *Koulang* 60 years. The houſes of the inhabitants were very ſtately and lofty built of freeſtone; among which the ſtadthouſe ſurpaſs'd all the reſt; it was two ſtories high, and had very curious ſtone ſteps on each ſide. But the caſtle, the reſidence of the *Portugueſe* governor, ſurmounted all the reſt in magnificence; this I took up for our own lodgings, it lies very near the ſea-ſide, at one end of the city, being cover'd on the top with cocoleaves, as likewiſe two of its turrets, the third being tiled with pan-tiles. Juſt upon the ſea-ſhore is another four-ſquare tower, where I ſet up the company's flag on the top of a maſt. In the midſt of it is a very lofty edifice, which the *Portugueſe* uſed for a chapel, which I order'd to be made up into divers convenient chambers, and to be fitted for the uſe of the company's officers. This caſtle is the ſtrongeſt the *Portugueſe* ever were maſters of on the coaſt of *Malabar*, being built ſome hundred years ago, by the famous engineer *Hector de la Caſa*.

1662.

This city, as I told you before, was drawn into a leſs compaſs by the *Dutch*, which they fortified on the land-ſide with two half and one whole baſtion. Moſt of the churches and other publick edifices were pull'd down, except the caſtle, *St. Thomas*'s church, and ſome monaſteries, which remain'd ſtanding within the ſaid precinct. Behind moſt of the houſes here are very pleaſant gardens, planted with *Cocoa*, *Mangoes* and other *Indian* fruit trees; and about the city you ſee very fine baſins cut out of the rocks, unto which you aſcend by ſteps. They have alſo ſome ponds with freſh water, their water being elſe for the moſt part brackiſh and full of ſalt-peter. The air is very wholeſome in this countrey, which is low and full of rivers, which afford a convenient paſſage from hence to *Kalkoulang*, *Cochin* and *Cranganor*; and is accounted the beſt both for fruitfulneſs and its pleaſant ſituation in all the *Indies*. This part of the countrey affords abundance of pepper, which twiſts itſelf round the trees; the fruit is gather'd in *January* and *February*. The harbour is very convenient for ſmall veſſels, but not for great ones, becauſe the ſouth wind blows directly upon the ſhore, and forces the waves with great violence thither; they call it *Coydanel*. Near the ſea-ſide you ſee great ſtore of ſtone-like rocks, but they lie looſe upon the ſand, and are frequently waſh'd away by the ſea. About a league to the weſt of *Koulang*, the great river *Eguick* diſembogues into the ſea.

The

1662. The *Dutch* were once before maſters of the city of *Koulang*, till the *Negroes* took the opportunity of murthering captain *Henry Glunning* their governor there, as he was taking a walk without the gates, and afterwards maſſacred all the *Dutch*; ſince which time the *Portugueſe* got into poſſeſſion of it. On the ſide of *Koulang China*, along the ſea-ſhore, the jeſuits had built a great village for the *Parvees*, a poor ſort of *Malabars* living upon fiſhing, where the governor of the king of *Travankor* and Prince *Baryette Poele* kept their reſidence, which are about a mile in circuit, and ſurrounded with an earth wall, with ſome points like baſtions, on which are mounted good ſtore of great cannon, which command the roads, without which there is ſcarce any acceſs to them. If we may believe the *Malabars*, the *Maldive* iſlands, which lie about 60 leagues deep in the ſea, juſt over-againſt the palace, were formerly part of the continent and torn from thence by the ſea; and as a confirmation of their opinion, ſhew certain rocks betwixt the ſhore and theſe iſlands, upon which they aſſure us ſtood at that time a goodly church. The beſt houſes are built along the river-ſide, with very good gardens, ſtock'd with all ſorts of trees, fruits, flowers and herbs, but eſpecially with citrons, which grow here not on trees, but ſhrubs; their houſes are ſeldom above two ſtories high, their ſtairs within of ſtone, their rooms above ſtairs are pav'd with green and yellow four ſquare ſtones, the ceiling of which is commonly of *Indian* oak, ſome being finely carved, others painted. They commonly have an arbour or ſummer-houſe belonging to each garden, which is commonly near the river-ſide, where they ſpend generally their evenings, and divert themſelves with angling.

The river Kalchan. The mouth of the river *Kalchan* or *Mangal*, or *Mangar*, upon which this place is built, is a very large bay, where yachts of 300 tuns may come cloſe to the ſhore and unload, being 28 feet deep at high water; but of very difficult entrance, if the winds be not favourable, becauſe they blow the waves directly upon the ſhore. In the midſt of this bay you ſee three vaſt rocks laying all together in a ridge. During the rainy ſeaſon this river frequently overflows the neighbouring countrey, and carries away a great deal of the adjacent grounds; theſe violent rains are occaſion'd by the clouds, which gathering among the tops of the mountains, break out into ſudden ſtorms and tempeſts. The countrey is flat and marſhy hereabouts, and the air not altogether ſo wholeſome as at *Koulang*.

By this time the ſeaſon for action drawing near, and every thing being prepar'd for a vigorous expedition, the ſiege of *Cochin* was reſolv'd upon the ſecond time; for which purpoſe Mr. *Jacob Huſtart*, one of the member's of the great council of *India*, with captain *Peter de Pon* and *Henry Van Rode* ſet ſail the 25th of *October* 1662, with 11 ſhips from *Batavia*, Mr. *Van Goens* being ordered to follow with three more, with all imaginable ſpeed. No ſooner had they landed their men, but they began to form their attacks, notwithſtanding they found the place much ſtrengthen'd by ſome additional fortifications, ſince the laſt ſiege, and put them ſo to it, that the beſieged being encloſed on all ſides, and beyond all hopes of relief, were forced to capitulate, and to ſurrender the city, after a ſiege of three months; after the *Portugueſe* had (with the conſent of the king of *Cochin*) been in poſſeſſion of it above 150 years. The *Portugueſe* had not long before forc'd *Momadavil*, the lawful king of *Cochin* to leave the city, in whoſe ſtead they had ſet up an aunt of his of the houſe of *Godarme*; but whilſt our forces lay before *Cochin* the dethron'd king ſtay'd with me at *Koulang*, in order to his ſolemn coronation after the taking of the place. I had taken all imaginable care to have his room hung with tapeſtry, and furniſh'd with other moveables, the beſt the place afford; he came often to viſit us, being commonly clad in white callicoe, with his hair tied in a knot on the top of his head, rings on his fingers, and a gold chain hanging down before him. He ſpoke the *Portugueſe* and *Malabar* tongues, and was of a pleaſant converſation. But ſcarce a few days were paſs'd, when finding himſelf not very well, he deſired to go to the Queen of of *Koulang* for his diverſion; which I was very unwilling to grant, being ſenſible that his perſon being committed to my care, I might be call'd to an account by his ſubjects, who much eſteem'd him, if any ſiniſter accident ſhould befal him; but at his reiterated inſtances, and the earneſt requeſt of the queen of *Koulang*, who was an excellent good natur'd perſon, and engag'd her word to bear me harmleſs, I conducted him thither, but he found no conſiderable alteration in his health, for when not long after a yacht was ſent to *Koulang* on purpoſe to fetch this prince to the camp before *Cochin*; he was ſo very weak that he would fain have avoided going thither, but there being poſitive orders given for his coming, I ſent him my *Palakin* or letter, and conducted him with ſome of our officers aboard, but before he could reach *Cochin*, his ſickneſs encreaſed to that degree, as to put an end to his life. His brother

1662.

Siege of Cochin.

Is ſurrender'd.

Momadavil *king of* Cochin.

Dies aboard.

Is ſucceeded by his brother.

The Taking of ye City of COTCHIN in MALABAR

C. Decker. fe.

1662. ther, who was aboard the ſame yacht, being the next heir to the crown, was, after the taking of the city, crowned king of *Cochin*, by the *Dutch*, his crown, which was of gold, having the cypher of the *Eaſt-India* company, engraven on one ſide. He kept his reſidence not far from *Cochin*, in a place ſituate in a very pleaſant countrey, call'd by the *Dutch Malabar Cochin*, had his guards, muſicians, and all other things belonging to a royal court, a cording to the cuſtom of that countrey.

The city of Cochin. The city of *Cochin*, by the *Portugueſe* call'd *Cochin*, and generally *Kakochin*, is the capital of a kingdom of the ſame name, and indeed of the whole coaſt of *Malabar*. It is ſituate under 10 deg. of northern latitude, 4 or 5 leagues to the ſouth of *Koulang*, extending along the bank of the great river *Koulang* or *Kolchan*, or *Mangat* or *Mangar*. Some authors make mention of two different *Cochins*, *viz.* the *Old Cochin*, lying about a league and a half from the ſea-ſhore; the *Portugueſe* call it *Cochin Dacima*, or *Arabia*, *i. e.* the *Higher Cochin*, becauſe it lies higher up the river; by the *Dutch* it is call'd the *Malabar Cochin*, where the king keeps his reſidence; being ſituate upon the banks of a river, and pretty well peopled, and adorn'd with ſeveral goodly ſtructures and *Pagodes*, according to the cuſtom of the *Malabars*. The other *Cochin*, call'd commonly the *New Cochin*, is ſcarce a league diſtant from the ſea, juſt at the entrance of the ſame river; it was for many years together in the poſſeſſion of the *Portugueſe*, who had fortified it with a ſtone wall, and ſeveral bulwarks, and beautified it with ſeveral fine edifices, churches and monaſteries. In the ſuburbs towards the land-ſide were ſeveral goodly churches, and a little nearer to the ſea-ſhore the monaſtery of *St. John*. Here the *Auſtin Fryers*, *Franciſcans* and *Jeſuits* had likewiſe their ſeveral convents, all magnificently built, with very pleaſant gardens and walks, the place being inhabited only by *Portugueſe*. But ſince this city was conquer'd by the *Dutch*, the greateſt part of it was laid deſolate, and the reſt fortified with regular ſtone, baſtions, curtines and a very broad ditch, ſo that it is now look'd upon as impregnable. Among other ſteeples, that of *St. Paul* being magnificently built of ſquare ſtones, exceeded all the reſt as well in height as beauty, which is ſince demoliſh'd with all the other churches, except one, where divine ſervice is exerciſed according to the tenets of the reform'd religion. The houſes here are cover'd with tiles of about the breadth of a hand, and are faſtned to the laths by ſmall hooks. Some make their windows only of a kind of lettice-work, others of canes very artificially twiſted together; others make uſe of large ſhells in which the pearls grow, theſe they ſhave and flatten, and make windows of them, as we do of glaſs. 1662.

After we thus had made our ſelves maſters of the greateſt part of the *Malabar* coaſt, and had taken all imaginable care, to re-eſtabliſh the commerce in thoſe parts, it was judg'd neceſſary for the better obtaining of this end, to enter into ſtrict alliances with the kings and princes of the adjacent countries; for which purpoſe Mr. *James Huſtart*, chief councellor of the *Indies*, of *Ceylon* and the *Malabar* coaſt, having ſent me the neceſſary inſtructions and credentials, I provided my ſelf with all things requiſite for ſuch a journey, and the 21ſt of *January* 1664, embark'd aboard a ſmall veſſel, with one ſerjeant, ſeveral ſoldiers, an interpreter, and divers mariners, which carried us up the river, as far as to the city of *Kalkolang*, where we arriv'd ſafely the next day. So ſoon as I had provided my ſelf with a convenient lodging, I gave notice of my arrival, by our interpreter to the king, who ſoon after returned in company of a *Reſidoor* from the king, to fetch me to court. Accordingly I and Mr. *Willing*, who reſided there in the quality of under factor of the *Eaſt-India* company, were introduced by the ſaid *Reſidoor* into the kings preſence, whom we found ſurrounded with a good number of courtiers, that conſtantly attend his perſon. After the firſt ceremonies and compliments, ſuch as are uſual in this place, were paſſed, I ſurrender'd my credentials to the king, who received them with a great deal of reſpect and ſeeming ſatisfaction. After he had peruſed them, he gave orders to one of his *Reſidoors*, one of his chief favourites to treat with me concerning ſuch points as I ſhould propoſe to him, tending to the maintaining of a good correſpondence betwixt us and them, and to make his report to him. This prince had the character of a very ſincere perſon, which appeared both in his countenance and actions; but leaves the chief management of all affairs of moment, to the beforemention'd *Reſidoor*, who knows how to make his advantage of it. After I had treated with the *Reſidoor*, as far as my commiſſion would give me leave, I deſired to be diſmiſs'd, under pretence of fetching new inſtructions, which being granted, I took leave of the king, and with Mr. *Willing* purſu'd my journey to *Porka*, whither I had ſent a ſerjeant with ſix ſoldiers before. But at our arrival there, being inform'd that the king of *Porka* was ten days before gone to his palace call'd *Kudda Malair* or *Koramallur*, or *Koromallo*, about ten leagues diſtance from hence, I

The author ſent to treat with divers Malabar *Princes.*

His audience of the King of Kalkolang.

Departs from thence to Porka.

1662. reſolv'd to go thither. We were forced to go by water through ſeveral channels and rivers, the countrey thereabouts being full of both, like the province of *Holland*, which affords ſcarce any paſſage by land, but by the dikes, all the reſt being rice fields, curiouſly planted with trees on all ſides.

We were forc'd to have our *Manſiool* (veſſel) drawn through a narrow ſluce, which open'd us the paſſage into a large lake, which to the north is about two leagues broad; from thence we enter'd into a channel of about a league in length, its entrance is ſomewhat narrow and ſo full of flags, that there was ſcarce room enough to manage our oars. At the end of this channel you ſee very pleaſant rice-fields, which extend to the foot of the mountain, and are ſtock'd with prodigious quantities of wild and water fouls. The inhabitants hereabouts have a certain way to drain their fields, which makes them bear rice all the year round; ſo that whilſt they are ſowing and planting in one field, in another the rice is half ripe, and in another its come to its full maturity, which renders this countrey both very fruitful and populous. The mountains produce ſome pepper, but in no great quantity. This part betwixt the channel and the mountains is water'd by a very fair and large river, beautified on both ſides with many fair houſes, gardens and trees, which afford a very agreeable ſpectacle to thoſe that paſs by that way, the houſes being all built among ſmall groves. After we had ſpent ſeveral hours in coming up the river, we in the afternoon caſt anchor before the court of the king of *Porka*, ſituate upon the right ſide of the ſaid river, near a village inhabited by chriſtians of *St. Thomas*, who enjoy great privileges here. As we were paſſing up the river, not far from the court, we ſaw a large crocodile ſunning himſelf upon the the ſandy bank; I order'd our ſoldiers to fire at him, which they did, but he eſcaped under water. This creature was uſed to ſet upon the people as they paſs'd by that way, and conſequently much dreaded by them. The king of *Porka* was at this time rebuilding his palace, in which they ſay he had already beſtow'd 20 years; it was but an odd old faſhion'd piece of ſtructure, ſurrounded with walls of earth and a dry ditch; I ſent our interpreter to notify our arrival, and to provide us a lodging, who being return'd, we ſcarce had ſet a foot aſhore, but the chief *Reſidoor* of the king came to conduct us to court, where he introduced us into his preſence. After the uſual compliments I deliver'd him my credentials, which he receiv'd with extraordinary marks of reſpect, ordering the *Reſidoor* to entertain me till he had read and conſider'd of them. In a little while after he return'd with ſome of his attendants into the ſame apartment, where he ask'd me whether I had any other commiſſion to treat with him, and I anſwering that I had, he declared to me, that his inclications had been always for us, even whilſt we appear'd in arms on that coaſt, though at the ſame time he was not inſenſible, that ſome had endeavour'd to perſuade us to the contrary, but that time and opportunity ſhould diſcover the good ſentiments he had for us. He told us farther, that he had cauſed the flags of the *Engliſh* and ſome other nations to be taken down, and the *Dutch* flag to be ſet up, for which they threaten'd him with an open war, in his own territories, and refuſed to quit the countrey, which made them to be look'd upon but with a very indifferent eye by all the neighbouring princes. Having afterwards given him a farther account of the occaſion of my coming, he told me that he ſhould be very glad now he was convinc'd of the intentions of the company, which were agreeable to his, to ſpeak with Mr. *Huſtart* himſelf: I return'd for anſwer, that the company was ſenſible of his favourable ſentiments to them, and had always put a great value upon his perſon, inviting him at the ſame time to *Cochin*, to viſit Mr. *Huſtart*, the laſt of which he modeſtly declined, alledging that for ſeveral reaſons he could not come to *Cochin*, but that if Mr. *Huſtart* would come either to *Porka*, or any other place under his juriſdiction, he ſhould be very ready to treat with him concerning ſuch matters as tended to their mutual advantage. The king farther ask'd me, whether I deſir'd an account of my negotiation in writing, which I having accepted of, he ſaid it ſhould be ſent to my lodgings, and at my departure conducted me in perſon to the door of his apartment, from whence the *Reſidoor* carried me to his lodgings, and treated us with all ſorts of refreſhments, a very welcome entertainment to ſome of my attendants, who had not met with the like ſince the beginning of our journey. Towards the evening the *Reſidoor* brought me the writings, with whom whilſt we were taking a view of the court, I had abundance of diſcourſe concerning the intended treaty.

1662.

Has audience of the king of Porka.

This palace of the king is a four ſquare ſtructure of about 40 paces in the ſquare, in the midſt of which is a court, about which the apartments (of which there is a great number) are built; they are all four ſquare, their chief ornaments within being the carving of leaves and other work in all ſorts of fine wood; in ſome of theſe lodgings you ſee fine ciſterns for the conveniency of bathing; you aſcend to them by

Palace of the king of Porka.

1662. by certain broad ſtone ſteps, like our grave-ſtones. In one of theſe lodgings is a very large baſon, ſurrounded with ſuch ſtones, which are about 20 feet broad, and a foot and a half thick, which have been brought thither with incredible pains and charges, a great way out of the countrey. The palace it ſelf is cover'd with ſmall tiles of a hand broad, the windows being made either of twiſted canes or bells, which tranſmits the light.

After my return from thence to *Koulang*, I went farther to *Cochin*, to give a verbal account of my tranſactions to Mr. *Huſtart*, who thereupon order'd me to go once more to the court of the king of *Porka*, in order to ſet matters there upon a ſure foundation; accordingly I ſet out the 3d of *February*, with ſome of my former attendants from *Cochin* to the king of *Porka*'s court, where within an hour after giving notice of my arrival, one of the king's *Reſidoors* came to introduce me to the king, whom that time I found in a moſt magnificent array, (after the *Malabar* faſhion) in the midſt of his courtiers. After the uſual reſpect paid, I deliver'd to him my credentials, which he having received, he order'd all his attendants and my interpreter among the reſt to withdraw, becauſe he had a mind to diſcourſe with me alone in *Portugueſe*, which he underſtood very well. I told him that I was ſent on purpoſe by my maſters to his majeſty, to aſſure him of their friendſhip, and to pay the money ſtipulated by the laſt treaty, which ſum, though it much exceeded the value of the thing receiv'd, yet notwithſtanding all this my maſters had thought fit not to recede from what had been promiſed in their name. The king gave for anſwer, that it never had been a cuſtom to weigh the pepper at *Cochin*, (which I had deſired ſhould be done) and that therefore he hop'd the company would not introduce any novelties in his territories; aſſuring us withal, that he would be ready to aſſiſt the company and their officers upon all occaſions, beſides ſeveral other aſſurances too tedious to be inſerted here. I ſoon underſtood his meaning, to wit, that he would not have the pepper trade transferr'd to *Cochin*, which was a matter of no great conſequence, ſo I did not inſiſt any longer upon it, but agreed, that the pepper ſhould be receiv'd and weigh'd at *Porka*; aſſuring him, that the company had never had the leaſt intention to impair any body's right, as his majeſty might eaſily be convinc'd as well by this as ſeveral other tranſactions and treaties made lately with other kings and princes. The king appeared to be highly ſatisfied thereat, deſiring that a factor might be ſent thither forthwith, to buy and receive the pepper; which I having promiſed to the king, he order'd the *Reſidoor* to receive the money, and granted me leave to depart. 1662.

The author goes a ſecond time to the court of Porka.

Has audience.

Departs from thence.

The next following day, juſt as I was ready to depart, a *Reſidoor* come to my lodgings, which was an old chapel, and preſented me, from the king, with ſeveral refreſhments, according to the cuſtom of the countrey, and knowing this *Reſidoor* to be a perſon in great eſteem with the king, I requeſted his favour in behalf of the company, which he promiſed to do.

The king of Porka *and government.*

The king then reigning at *Porka* was a perſon of 30 years of age, very ſtately and well made. He was adorn'd with many jewels of diamonds and rubies, which he wore on his hands, arms and ears, according to the *Malabar* faſhion. He is a moſt abſolute prince, acknowledging no ſuperior, every foot of the country being his own, and at his diſpoſal. Juſtice is adminiſtred here with extraordinary ſeverity, eſpecially on the account of theft, which makes this crime ſcarce ever to be heard of here, of which I ſaw the following inſtance myſelf; whilſt I was paying the money to the before-mention'd *Reſidoor*, I was call'd away to the king, and ſeeing above 50 perſons in the ſame room, I charg'd one of my attendants to take care of the money; the *Reſidoor* having taken notice of it, laugh'd heartily, and told me, *You need not give your ſelf that trouble, no body will dare to touch the money, tho' it was untold and unguarded, for we know ſcarce what thieves are*, which ſurpriz'd me not a little, knowing that the *Malabars* in general are the erranteſt thieves in nature.

Theft unknown in Porka.

The kingdom of Porka.

The kingdom of *Porka* or *Porkah*, otherwiſe *Perkatti*, has borrow'd its name from its capital city; it borders to the north upon the kingdom of *Cochin*, to the ſouth upon that of *Kalkoulang*, it has *Takken Berkenker* to the north-eaſt, and the ſea to the weſt, being about 12 leagues in length; its capital city is *Porka* or *Porkah*. Another of the chief cities is *Koramallur* or *Koromallo*, ſituate upon the ſame river with the cities of *Cochin* and *Koulang*. The kings of *Porka* were in antient times great idolaters, who worſhip'd at leaſt 900 idols, unto each of which daily ſacrifices were offer'd, and viſits made them about ſix or ſeven a clock in the morning till twelve at noon. It was not till the year 1590, that the *Romiſh* religion was openly profeſs'd here with conſent of the king. Tho' many years before, the Chriſtians call'd of *St. Thomas* liv'd in theſe parts. This king granted conſiderable privileges to the jeſuites; ſuch as the building of churches with croſſes on the top of them, and the neceſſary bells, near unto which no

Pagodes,

1662. *Pagodes*, *Jewiſh* ſynagogues, or *Mahometan* moſques were to be erected; they had alſo liberty to baptize as many as were willing to embrace the chriſtian religion, all which was punctually obſerv'd. The king of *Porka* who reign'd 1599, was call'd *Nambrale* or *Numbrane*, which implies as much as the high prieſt in the *Malabar* tongue. In the year 1640, one *Siam Baatſhery Vaubaar* reigned over *Porka*. They claim a ſuperiority over the king of *Cochin*, againſt whom they waged heavy wars in former ages; but now adays the kings of *Porka* are under the juriſdiction of the *Dutch Eaſt-India* company, being forc'd thereunto by their victorious arms; the chief ſtrength of the king of *Porka* conſiſts in his ſmall frigates, of which he has 500, and are made uſe of, when the fields are overflown with water; formerly the *Portugueſe* were maſters of the pepper trade here, with the king's conſent; but finding that they intended to fortify themſelves in ſeveral places, he engaged in a war againſt them, which laſted three whole years. The *Dutch* never came to *Porka* till 1642, under the reign of *Siam Baatſhery Vaubaar*, being then not above 24 years old; they were very kindly receiv'd by him, a treaty being concluded betwixt them at that time, by which the *Dutch* had the pepper trade granted to them. This part of the countrey is very fruitful, but unwholeſome, moſt of the inhabitants being afflicted with thick ſwell'd legs, occaſioned by the drinking of brackiſh water; blindneſs is alſo a common diſtemper here, which by ſome is aſcrib'd to their feeding ſo much upon hot rice. Moſt of the inhabitants live by huſbandry, tho' during the rainy ſeaſon, moſt of the rice fields hereabouts, as well as all along from the cape *Comarin*, as far as *Pokare Biarbar*, lay under water. This countrey produces alſo a conſiderable quantity of pepper yearly, which is for the moſt part bought up by the *Engliſh*, who have had a factory here many years ago. Deeper into the countrey live abundance of chriſtians, who were formerly converted by the *Portugueſe*, theſe buy up the pepper in the countrey, which they are oblig'd to deliver to a certain merchant, appointed for that purpoſe by the king.

The author goes to Marten.

From hence we went to the king of *Marta* or *Marten*, the capital city of the ſame name, three leagues to the ſouth of *Cochin* upon the ſame river. I and Mr. *George Henry Willeng*, under factor of *Koulang*, got on horſeback early in the morning, and arriv'd at 10 a clock before noon at *Carnopoly*, where we took up our lodgings in a houſe near the river ſide, which the *Dutch Eaſt-India* company ſome years before had purchaſed from the king. It is pretty large, but not very convenient, being built according to the *Malabar* faſhion, with abundance of corners and inlets oddly contriv'd: The gardens are well planted with palm-trees, for the uſe of the houſe. I had no ſooner given notice of my arrival, but I was ſent for to the king. After the uſual compliments to be paid to the *Malabar* kings, I deliver'd the following *Ola* (letter) from Mr. *Huſtart* to the king. 1662.

James Huſtart *councellor of the* Indies, *governor and director of the iſle of* Ceylon, *and the* Malabar *coaſts, ſends his* Ola *to the king of* Marten.

Illuſtrious prince,

Admiral Huſtart's *letter to the king*

NOthing *could be more welcome to me, than to underſtand at my firſt arrival in theſe parts, that your majeſty had always liv'd in a good correſpondency with our company. To ſhew your majeſty what an extraordinary value we ſet upon your friendſhip, we have ſent Mr.* John Nieuhoff *captain of* Koulang, *in order to enter with you into a more ſtrict league and friendſhip. We hope your majeſty will give him entire credit, in what he ſhall propoſe to you, which I ſhall be ready to acknowledge upon the like occaſions.*

God preſerve and give your majeſty a long and a happy life.

Cochin
2 *Feb.* 1664. James Huſtart.

After which I gave the king a more particular account of my commiſſion, unto which he anſwer'd, that he would conſider of it till the next day; accordingly I was ſent for at the appointed time, when I found the king ſurrounded with a great number of his courtiers, and among the reſt ſome mahometan merchants; he order'd immediately two of them, and one of his captains, who was in great eſteem with him, to treat with me concerning the propoſitions made on behalf of the company; but as I was ſufficiently inform'd that moſt of the mahometan merchants here drove conſiderable traffick to *Cananor*, to the no ſmall prejudice of our company, I did not think fit to treat with them, if poſſible I could avoid it, which made me to tell the king, that *I had no commiſſion to treat with the mahometan merchants, but with his majeſty; that the company at preſent offer'd peace to the whole coaſt of* Malabar, *in which, if his majeſty was deſirous to be included, and to enjoy the benefit of a flouriſhing trade, he might himſelf treat with me, but if not, grant me leave to depart.* The king after a little pauſing, deſired that my propoſitions might be drawn up in writing, which I did accordingly: Our demands were,

1662. *To forbid the importation of amſion, the peeling of the wild cinamome, and the exportation of pepper.*

Theſe propoſitions the king order'd to be read aloud in our preſence, which the mahometan merchants endeavour'd to oppoſe with all their might; and the greateſt part of the day being ſpent in meſſages betwixt the king and us, by the *Reſidoors*, who gave an exact account of all what paſs'd to the king, he gave leave for us to return to our lodgings, and order'd us to attend him again the next day. But early in the morning a certain perſon of quality, who bears the ſecond rank in that kingdom, came along with the before-mention'd captain, to tell us, that what we deſired, was abſolutely to the prejudice of the king and kingdom, which I endeavour'd to put out of their heads, by telling them, that we were come with no other intention, than to eſtabliſh a free commerce with them, as we had done with moſt of the other *Malabar* kings and princes before, and which would turn to their great advantage; notwithſtanding this they were for making ſeveral alterations in each point, and five or ſix meſſages paſs'd betwixt the court and us; at laſt they ask'd what quantity of pepper we deſired yearly? We anſwer'd them, that it was no matter about the quantity, ſince we were for buying all. This point was vigorouſly oppoſed by the mahometan merchants, who fain would have perſuaded the king to reſerve part of it for them; but by degrees we overcame all theſe difficulties, the king having granted us all we demanded, except the peeling of the wild cinnamome, which we did not ſo much inſiſt upon, being a thing uncertain whether it would quit the coſt to the undertakers or not, becauſe it was in the kings power to ſet what price he pleaſed upon it.

The kingdom of Marten

The kingdom of *Marta* or *Marten* is very near as big as that of *Kalkolang*, extending to the north as far as *Porka*; to the ſouth it borders upon the *Indian* ſea, and to the eaſt it is ſurrounded by high mountains, and waſh'd by the ſame river, upon which *Cochin* and *Koulang* lie: The capital city is likewiſe call'd *Marta* or *Marten*. But to the ſouth near the ſea-ſhore is another city call'd by the inhabitants *Panderatoutte*, and *Peſſe* by the *Portugueſe*; here we built a houſe by the king's conſent, for the conveniency of the pepper trade, which is always weigh'd here. There is another city belonging to this kingdom call'd *Podiogabo* or *Maulikara*. This king poſſeſſes ſome parts of the countrey in common with the king of *Kalkolang*, a thing not uſual on this coaſt, where are ſo many petty kingdoms, that it requires no ſmall time, to diſtinguiſh and know them from on another. The country is well peopled here, abounding in pepper, peaſe and beans, and the fields near the river-ſide in rice and ſalt-pits. The king is a ſoveraign prince; he that then reign'd being of about 60 years of age, very large of body and a ſtern countenance; upon his head he wears a bonnet of ſcarlet cloth lined with callicoe; he keeps conſtantly 1200 negroes in pay; his reſidence is at *Carnapoly*, a place ſurrounded with an earthen wall of 20 foot high, but appeared much decay'd at that time. This kingdom has long ago been inhabited by chriſtians, which however were forced to live there 12 whole years without a church, *viz.* till the year 1581, when the king then reigning, not only gave them liberty to build a church, but alſo to cut wood in the adjacent foreſts dedicated to the pagan idols. He alſo gave permiſſion to his ſubjects to turn chriſtians, and the jeſuits had full power granted them to exerciſe the church cenſure, and to inflict it upon thoſe that were baptiz'd by them. The ſaid church was dedicated to St. *Andrew*, becauſe it was finiſh'd upon that ſaints day. 1662.

Upon the banks of the ſame river, where the kingdom of *Marten* lies, is alſo the kingdom of *Batyma*, with its city call'd *Katyapery*. It is commonly reported in theſe parts, that the kings of *Batyma* made a law, by which a man was impower'd to kill any woman that ſhould refuſe him a kindneſs.

By this time our negotiation being brought to an entire concluſion, I offer'd the uſual preſents to the king, which he order'd to be taken by him who bears the ſecond rank in the kingdom, who as well as ſeveral others of his courtiers having been very inſtrumental in promoting the treaty, we thought fit to engage to our party by ſome ſmall preſents. At laſt we were appointed to attend before the court in the open air, where the king firſt, and I afterwards ſign'd the treaty with our own hands, in the preſence of a great multitude of people, that were flock'd thither on purpoſe to be ſpectators of this ceremony. This done I took my leave of the king and his chief courtiers, and the ſame evening went aboard our veſſel, which about a league from thence did ride at anchor in the river. A certain lord commanding over the countrey here, a vaſſal of the king of *Marten*, came on purpoſe to meet and compliment us and preſented us with ſome fowls, *Pyſang* and other refreſhments, of whom I likewiſe took my leave and return'd to *Koulang*, where I arriv'd the 9th of *February*,

The author leaves Marten.

Returns to Koulang.

Whilſt I was negotiating with the king

1662. of *Porka*, the king of *Kalkolang* ſent for me to his court, where he preſented me with a very fine *Brocado* ſilk gown, made according to the *Indian* faſhon, teſtifying his joy for the good ſucceſs we had had in our negotiation with his neighbour; I return'd my hearty thanks to the king for this and other favours I had receiv'd at his hands, and went back again to the king of *Porka*.

Is preſented by the king of Kalkolang.

But to return to *Koulang*; no ſooner was I arrived the 9th of *Feb.* at *Koulang* but the queen of the ſame name, ſent the next day her chief captain to receive the cuſtoms and cannon ſhe pretended to be due to her by virtue of the late treaty; I was willing to ſurrender the cannon, according to our agreement, but could not conſent to the other; and in the mean while we were preparing our *Manſio* (veſſel) for a voyage to the king of *Travankoor*'s court, the *Reſidoors* of the king of *Goenree* and *Bariiette Pule* deſir'd an interview with me, whom I gave a meeting accordingly in company of Mr. *Cher de Venne*, book-keeper of the *Dutch Eaſt-India* company. We ſaw above 300 negroes all in a body, who with one voice cry'd out for the cuſtoms, which made me, after many debates and diſputes, tell them, that I would go home, with an intention to return the next day to them, provided they would deſiſt from theſe things, that were not granted them by the treaty, nor were ever likely to be granted, and ſo return'd to *Koulang*.

The 12th of *February*, I embark'd at nine a clock in the evening for *Attingen*, where the king of *Travankoor* kept his reſidence then, being come thither ſome days before. With break of day we found our ſelves near the village of *Mappul*, about five leagues to the eaſt of *Koulang*, but not daring to approach the ſhore with our veſſel, we were forced to hire an *Indian* boat, which carried us ſafely aſhore, notwithſtanding the violence of the waves that rowled againſt the ſhore. We travell'd for about a league along the ſea-ſide, till we came to a large river, which carried us in three hours rowing to the court; here we underſtood that the king was juſt then ready to go to *Kalkolang*, I gave immediate notice of my arrival to his majeſty, who ſent for me by one of his *Reſidoors*; he met us on the ſtairs-head, with many of his courtiers; where I preſented him with the uſual reſpect, the letter, with ſome preſents, which he receiv'd and cauſed the letter to be read aloud before all there preſent, telling me, that he would forthwith let me know his intention, and that in the mean while I might take a walk into the garden of the caſtle, with ſome of his *Reſidoors*; and diſcourſe with them farther in a certain grove, which he pointed at with his fingers. Accordingly I begun to talk more at large, concerning my propoſitions, with the four *Reſidoors*, who were for treating with me immediately upon the ſubject in hand, which I told them I had no orders to do, my buſineſs being to treat with the king in perſon. They having given the king an account of what I ſaid, brought me word, that his majeſty, in a matter of ſuch conſequence could not take a reſolution till next day, deſiring me to have patience till then, and preſented us with *Pyſang* and ſome other refreſhments. On the weſtern-ſide of the palace is a pleaſant houſe at the foot of a hill, in the midſt of a very pleaſant grove, from whence there is a proſpect into a very fruitful valley full of rice-fields, hedg'd in with palm-trees, this place was aſſign'd us for our lodgings, our hoſt appearing to be a very honeſt man, but ſo miſtruſtful withal, that when we were going to ſupper, he refuſed to let us have diſhes or any other utenſils; their ſoldiers being exaſperated at this uſage, the whole houſe began to be in an alarum, and I enquiring the reaſon, could get no other anſwer from him, than *That the devil and his ill fortune ow'd him a ſhame, when they brought ſuch lodgers into his houſe*, deſiring us at the ſame time to look out for another lodging. With much ado I perſuaded him, that we were no ſuch fellows as he imagin'd us to be, and ſo at laſt with the help of a little money, he let us have what we had occaſion for. 1662.

Goes to Attingen.

The next day, being the 14th of *Feb.* about eight a clock in the morning the king ſent for me to court again by a negro, where we met the before-mention'd four *Reſidoors* at the gate, ready to receive us, we went together into the garden, where I cauſed a carpet to be ſpread under the ſhadow of ſome trees, as they did their *Indian* mats; and being ſeated, the chiefeſt of the *Reſidoors* told me, *That his majeſty was not a little diſſatisfied at our burning the royal palace of* Koulang, *and that he had given him orders to treat of that as well as the other ſubject with me. That the letter ſent to admiral* Huſtart *had been written with no other intention, than to treat concerning the pretenſions of prince* Gondormo, *and that therefore they would be glad to hear what inſtructions I had about that matter.* As I thought it not for our purpoſe to tergiverſate in the matter, I told them bluntly, that *Gondormo* might thank himſelf for his misfortunes; for that when our fleet and forces, about two years ago appear'd near *Cochin*, to attack the *Portugueſe* our enemies, the *Dutch* admiral had ſet up a white flag, to ſhew his willingneſs to treat with the

Is call'd to court.

His anſwer.

1662. queen of *Cochin*, which *Gondormo* had not only prevented, but also attack'd our forces, and oppoſed and ſtill did oppoſe all our deſigns tending to the re-eſtabliſhment of the government of *Cochin* upon its true foundation. I further told them, that, when about two years ago, I had the honour to ſee his majeſty at *Kalikoli*, I aſſured his majeſty that we had conquer'd *Cochin*, and were engaged in an everlaſting alliance with *Monta Davila*, their legal ſovereign; and that therefore *Gondormo* need not flatter himſelf with the leaſt hopes of his reeſtabliſhment. Of this they gave an account to the king, who ſoon ſent them back with another propoſition, to wit, whether he might not be admitted as a ſecond or third perſon in the kingdom? To make an end at once of this diſpute, I aſk'd them whether they did acknowledge *Monta Davila* lawful king? They anſwer'd they did? I demonſtrated to them, how unreaſonable it was, to demand that one who had ſet up againſt his legal ſovereign, ſhould be receiv'd in ſuch a ſtation in the ſame kingdom, and conſidering the ill conſequences which muſt needs enſue from thence, I told them it was in vain to ſay a word more of it. This made them inſiſt no more upon the buſineſs of *Gondormo*, they only told us, *That we had beſt be upon our guard*, Gondormo *and his three brothers being reſolved to live, and to be buried in the kingdom of* Cochin. I anſwer'd him careleſly, that I had travelled thro the greateſt part of that kingdom; and that I was ſure there was room enough for 100000 of them. I aſſured them farther, that his majeſty of *Travankoor*, had been always in great eſteem with our company, that they never doubted of his friendſhip, notwithſtanding he ſeem'd to bear ſo great a ſhare in *Gondormo*'s buſineſs; that I was ſent thither on purpoſe to enter into a more ſtrict league with him, in the ſame manner as had been done with ſeveral other kings his neighbours. Whilſt they were debating this matter, an envoy arriv'd from the queen of *Koulang*, with a letter, in which ſhe complain'd, that ſhe had not receiv'd any ſhare of the cuſtoms, nor were the cannon reſtored to her; the *Reſidoor* ask'd me what the meaning of it was, and whether we would do leſs than the *Portugueſe* had done? I anſwer'd him, if we ſhould follow the footſteps of the *Portugueſe*, we muſt be guilty likewiſe of the ſame enormities, in murthering, plundering, *&c.* things not cuſtomary among us, the intention of our company being to maintain every one in his right, and to eſtabliſh a free commerce without interruption; and theſe, ſaid I, are the main contents of my commiſſion, according to which I am to treat with all the kings and princes of the coaſt of *Malabar*. After ſeveral other debates, finding them full of tergiverſations, I roundly told them, that I found them very backward in what had been propoſed; that for my part, I had done all what I could to procure a peace, but that they ſeem'd to be rather inclinable to war; and finding them ſomewhat puzzel'd by their ſilence, ſaid, that if as yet they could find out any expedient, to compoſe matters upon reaſonable terms, I ſhould be willing to hearken to them, and that, if it was for a yearly preſent, or a ſum of money, once for all, they ſhould have it. The king being inform'd of this reſolution, ſent me word back, that in a thing of this nature, in which ſeveral others beſides himſelf were concerned, he muſt take ſome leiſure to adviſe, which done, he would ſend one of his *Reſidoors* to *Koulang*, to treat farther of the matter. I inſiſted upon having all things diſpatch'd here, but the *Reſidoors* telling me, that they durſt not urge it any more to the king, for that time, I was fain to acquieſce, and to defer it till our next meeting at *Koulang*, tho' I very well foreſaw that this negotiation would meet with no ſmall difficulties, unleſs ſomething more were granted than had been offer'd hitherto. About the ſame time the before-mention'd queen, ſent me underhand word, that ſhe was very inclinable to a farther treaty, but that it could not be done till the king of *Travankoor* was gone, which as it was no unwelcome news to me, ſo I deſired the *Reſidoor* whom ſhe ſent to me, to uſe his utmoſt intereſt with her majeſty to bring it to paſs, being ſenſible that it was the intention of my Maſters to live with her in a good correſpondence. 1662.

Attingen. The countrey about *Attingen* has hitherto not been deſcrib'd by any that I know; it abounds in pepper, of which a great quantity is brought thither out of the circumjacent parts. The ancient race of the kings of *Travankoor* owed its origine to *Attingen*, but for want of male heirs, one of the princes of *Cochin* was placed in that throne; the king who then reign'd, being deſcended from the *Cochin* race of *Rammerankoil*, and elected king of *Travankoor*. The ground where the pepper grows, is hereabouts ſtrong and red, which makes the pepper not full ſo large here, as in the valleys about *Koulang* and *Cochin*. On the deſcents of the hills you ſee very pleaſant rice-fields, cut out like ſteps, and water'd from the top by ſmall rivulets. The king and queen's palace are directly oppoſite to one another, with ſome rice-fields betwixt them.

The next following day about 10 a clock

1662. clock in the morning, I was call'd to court again, where the king told me in perſon, that it would be better to reaſſume the treaty at *Koulang*, which I being fain to be ſatisfy'd with, I took my leave of his majeſty and the *Reſidoors*, who offer'd me a preſent from the king, according to the cuſtom of the countrey, which I accepted off, and went directly to the river-ſide, where we found our boat, and ſailing down the river, came juſt before ſun-ſet to *Maypule*, where I was met by the reſident of *Tengepatnam*, whom I had given notice of my coming that way. The next following day, *viz.* the 16th of *February* we reimbark'd our veſſels, and ſteer'd our courſe by ſea to *Koulang*, from whence I immediately diſpatch'd our interpreter to *Pule de Margaty*, to inform himſelf where the queen of *Goenree* at that time kept her court; he return'd the next day with advice, that a month before ſhe was gone deeper into the countrey, to a place call'd *Peretaly*, about four days journey from thence.

Is call'd to court again, and departs from thence.

The kingdom of Travankoor.

The kingdom of *Travankoor* (thus call'd from its capital city) begins at the cape of *Comory* or *Comorin*, and extends all along the ſea-coaſt as far as *Koulang*, comprehending a tract of ground of 20 or 24 leagues in length; the famous village of *Paru*, belonging to the queen of *Singnaty*, being only in the midſt. To the eaſt it borders upon the kingdom of *Madure*, and to the weſt upon the countries of *Peretaly* and *Kotarkery*. It has ſeveral conſiderable villages which are inhabited by the moors, ſuch as *Tengepatnam*, *Kuletture*, *Koritypatnam* and *Allage*. About the year 1544, above 30 villages, inhabited by the *Makaos*, who live for the moſt part upon fiſhing, and by the mahometans, were upon this coaſt. But the chief cities lie deeper in the countrey, which is of a great extent all along the mountains to *Naynar*, near the cape of *Comorin* and toward *Travankoor*, in all 29 great cities and villages. About a league and a half to the north of the cape *Comorin* is the city of *Kotate* or *Kokatti*, a place of great traffick; the populous city of *Simintira* and *Matadavalur*, famous for its bigneſs, being ſurrounded by ſix or ſeven other towns; *Verrage* is not above a quarter of a league diſtance from *Kotate* and *Tatikury*, the two moſt conſiderable places of the whole countrey. *Kalkolang* is a very large city, being a league and a half long, upon the confines of the *Neyk* of *Madure*. It is ſituate upon a high hill, 3 leagues from *Tengepatnam*, and 12 from *Koulang*; being on one ſide ſtrengthen'd by inacceſſable mountains, on the other by a wall, the undermoſt part of which is of ſtone, the uppermoſt of brick-work, in all 24 foot high; the royal palace ſtands at the weſt end, being ſurrounded by a ſtone-wall. On the eaſt-ſide you ſee the ruins of an old caſtle, built on the top of a hill, fortified with a triple wall. The city of *Kalkolang* is the chief reſidence of the king, who conſtantly keeps a garriſon of 10000 negroes here, to ſecure it againſt the *Neyk* of *Madure*, whoſe power is much dreaded here. It is a very fertile countrey, abounding in pepper, rice and other grains. It alſo produces wild cinnamome, the beſt, the whole coaſt of *Malabar* affords, but it wants ſeveral things requiſite for the conveniency of life. One of the chiefeſt rivers which water this countrey, is the river *Mannikorin*, it exonerates itſelf into the ſea, near cape *Comorin*. The king of this countrey is by ſome ſtiled the *great king*, becauſe he poſſeſſes larger territories than any other of the *Malabar* kings. He is ſerved in great ſtate, and maintains abundance of commanders, whom they call *Mandigals*, and many councellors, call'd *Pullas*. Some aſcribe to him a ſuperiority over neighbouring princes, but of this I am convinced to the contrary by my own experience; it is true they reverence him, as a potent king, but pay him no obedience. Others will have him to be a vaſſal of the king of *Narſinga*. The whole countrey is well ſtock'd with people, who appear very well cloth'd according to the *Malabar* faſhion.

1662.

The 18th of *February*, I ſet out from *Koulang* in company of Mr. *Siewert Baker*, for the kingdom of *Goenree*. But ſcarce were we come to *Kaligoli*, but one of the *Reſidoors* told us, that the queen of *Goenree* was a month ago gone into the countrey, and would not return very quickly, by reaſon of a certain religious ceremony, ſhe was obliged to perform there, before her return; I deſired a guide, becauſe I had ſomething of moment to communicate to the queen, but they excuſed it, telling me that the ways were ſo rocky and impaſſable, that it would be impoſſible for me to go thither, it being five tedious days journey to the countrey of *Peretaly*, bordering upon the territories of the *Neyk* of *Madure*. Being made ſenſible that this journey could not be undertaken without great difficulty and charge, I thought it moſt expedient to leave a letter with the *Reſidoor*, to be deliver'd to the queen, the contents of which were as follows.

The author goes to Goenree.

His letter to the queen.

THat I was come hither to offer a ſmall preſent to her majeſty, and to enter into a ſtrict and everlaſting alliance with her; but tho' I was ſo unfortunate, as not to meet with her

1662. *her majeſty, I liv'd however in hopes, that ſhe would not be backward in entering into a general league, which the company had lately concluded with all the* Malabar *princes; to accompliſh which as we ſhould be ready to contribute every thing on our ſide, ſo we did not queſtion, but that her majeſty would be pleaſed to let us know her ſentiments by the bearer of this letter.*

Whilſt I tarried here, I underſtood that the *Reſidoor* of the king of *Travankoor* was arriv'd the 20th at *Koulang China*, and had notified his arrival by our *Petangatin Thome Bottancho*, deſiring to confer with me, concerning certain matters commanded him by the king his maſter, ſince my departure from thence. The place appointed for our interview, was the church of the chriſtians of *St. Thomas* in *Koulang China*, where I was preſent at the appointed hour, but finding them to trifle away the time in altercations and tergiverſations; I was ready to mount on horſe-back again, in order to return to *Koulang*, which when they perceiv'd, they deſired me to ſtay and give them another meeting, which I agreed to do. At laſt, after abundance of conteſts, the following agreement concerning the ſhares of the cuſtoms, the importation of amſion and the exportation of pepper, was made betwixt the *Dutch Eaſt-India* company, by their deputy Mr. *John Nieuhoff* on one, and the kings of *Marten*, *Singnaty*, *Goenree*, *Travankoor* and *Barrigetta Pule* on the other ſide.

Articles of agreement.

I. *NO body ſhall import, ſell or exchange any amſion into theſe countries, except the* Dutch Eaſt-India *company.*

II. *No body, without any exception, ſhall be permitted to export any pepper or cinamome out of this countrey, or to ſell them to any body, except to the ſaid company.*

III. *A certain price was ſettled, betwixt both parties, and what ſhare each ſhould have in the cuſtoms, whereby all former pretenſions and exceptions ſhould be annulled.*

February 21, 1664. *Sign'd in the court* Matta del Reyne.

In my return from *Koulang*, in the road leading to *Matta del Reyne*, I found guards poſted upon all the croſs roads, which made me enquire of *Matta del Pule* chief commander of the negroes, what the meaning of it was, who told me with a ſorrowful countenance, that the prince *Barrigetta Pule*, had cauſed one of the queen's *Reſidoors* to be ſlain by his ſoldiers, who had

Troubles raiſed by Barrigetta Pule.

alſo laid about 80 houſes in aſhes, and cut down many palm-trees. That they had been ſent to beſiege him in his caſtle, but that at the interceſſion of the king of *Travankoor*'s *Reſidoor*, who had promiſed that the ſaid prince ſhould be call'd to an account by the king his maſter, they had delay'd the execution of it for three days; but he much fear'd he ſhould ſcarce withhold them much longer, from taking a direful revenge of him. He was very inquiſitive concerning our late tranſactions with the king of *Marten*, but I excuſed the matter, telling him only, that I hoped it would be brought to a concluſion, to both ſides ſatisfaction. 1662.

The 22d I ſent a letter by Mr. *Sebaſtian Ferdinandi*, our interpreter, to the queen of *Singnaty*, in which I gave her an account of what had been tranſacted betwixt the *Reſidoor* of the king of *Travankoor* and my ſelf. In the mean while the king's and prince's ſoldiers were come to blows, ſeveral being kill'd and wounded on both ſides: Whereupon the prince finding himſelf beſieged in his caſtle, ſent one of his moſt truſty ſervants to deſire aſſiſtance, and ſome powder and ball for his maſter, which I thought fit to refuſe, for weighty reaſons; for whatever may be the opinion of thoſe who think it a maxim of ſtate to fiſh in troubled waters, I was too well acquainted with the perfidiouſneſs of the *Malabars*, who make not the leaſt account of faith or leagues, unleſs they are forced to it, than to put the leaſt confidence in them.

In the mean time the beforementioned *Reſidoor* of the king of *Travankoor* not appearing at the time and place appointed for the removing of ſome remaining differences, I ſent him the following letter, by *Topaes Nicolaes da Coſta*.

The captain of *Koulang* ſends this letter with his ſervice, to *Narrano Poly*, *Reſidoor* of *Travankoor*.

The author's letter to the Reſidoor *of* Travankoor.

PUrſuant to our mutual agreement, I came to Koulang China, *in order to bring the treaty begun before to a happy concluſion. But your highneſs did not perform your promiſe, neither had I the leaſt account ſince, how the queen of* Singnaty *was likely to reliſh our tranſactions. And as the nature of the thing would admit of no delay, I ſaw my ſelf obliged to ſend my interpreter to the queen of* Singnaty, *and* Topaes Nicholaes da Coſta, *to the* Goenree *and* Barrigetta, *to be inform'd concerning that point. They bring me for anſwer, that the ſaid queen pretends to the cuſtoms without*

3

1662. *without the leaſt diminution, which is not in my power to agree to. As I am ſenſible, that I have left nothing unattempted, which might reaſonably and honeſtly be expected from me, for the terminating of theſe differences, but all in vain, I have nothing left to do, but to proteſt once for all, according to the ſtricteſt rules of juſtice, in the name of the whole company, againſt your* Narrano Poly, *and your tranſactions, and all others who take part with you, that we will, and hereby declare our ſelves innocent, and guiltleſs of all the troubles and miſeries of a future war.*

Koulang Feb. 26, 1664. John Nieuhoff.

In the mean while I had given an account of the whole matter to Mr. *Huſtart*, deſiring him to come in perſon, and to endeavour by his preſence to put a happy concluſion to the negotiations. He ſent me an anſwer dated *Cochin* the 24th of *February*, intimating that he had intended to ſet out from thence within two days after, of which he order'd me to give notice to the king of *Travankoor*, and queen of *Singnaty*, which I did accordingly by an expreſs ſent with letters to both their majeſty's. The 27th the reſidoor of *Travankoor* ſent me word by *Topaes Nicolaes de Coſta*, that he was willing to treat with me once more about the cuſtoms, but that no body except the queen muſt be privy to the matter; for which reaſon he could cauſe a quite different rumour to be raiſed among the people; but conſidering with my ſelf that the negroes, who are in great eſteem here, might get ſcent of the matter, and that (as the king had told me himſelf before) ſeveral perſons in the firſt rank were concern'd in the cuſtoms, I did not look upon this underhand treaty as advantageous for the company; which made me write to the *Reſidoor*, that I was willing to contribute all what in me lay, towards the compoſing of the differences betwixt us, provided it could be done in the ſame nature as with the other *Malabar* princes, who had not refus'd to read the treaties in the preſence of their ſubjects, to ſhew that their words were altogether conſonant to their deeds. I receiv'd an anſwer the ſame evening, in which the *Reſidoor* deſired an interview with me in *St. Thomas*'s church the next day. Accordingly I went thither on horſe-back with Mr. *James Cher de Venne*. After many conteſts on both ſides, we agreed at laſt, and the *Reſidoor* promiſed to return to morrow to finiſh the treaty. About this time I receiv'd a letter from the queen of *Singnaty*, in anſwer to that I had ſent her before; as follows.

Another interview with the Reſidoor *of* Travankoor

1662.

The queen of Singnaty's *letter to the author.*

I Receiv'd and ſaw the contents of the letter ſent to me from Mr. John Nieuhoff, *captain of* Koulang, *concerning the propoſed treaty; I will ſend word in the Month of* March *to* Kottekkery, *where we will meet together, and I ſhall be ready to rectify what my plenipotentiaries ſhall agree to. For which reaſon I order'd this letter to be written to captain* John Nieuhoff.

The next day the *Reſidoor* of the king of *Travankoor* came to *Koulang*, who was receiv'd by us with all imaginable reſpect; he began among other things to renew his former diſcourſe about the prince *Gondormo*, upon which it was agreed to delay the laſt concluſion of the treaty till the coming of Mr. *Huſtart*, who was expected every day at *Koulang*.

The 2d of *March* with break of day, the vice-roy of the king of *Travankoor*, call'd by them *Gorepe*, the chief commander of the negroes, call'd *Matta de Pulo*, and my ſelf, ſet out for the court of the queen of *Koulang*, which was then kept at *Calliere*. We arriv'd there about two a clock in the afternoon, and as ſoon as notice was given of our arrival, we were ſent for to court, where, after I had deliver'd the preſents, and laid the money down for pepper, I was introduced into her majeſty's preſence. She had a guard of above 700 ſoldiers about her, all clad after the *Malabar* faſhion; the Queen's attirement being no more than a piece of callicoe wrapt round her middle, the upper part of her body appearing for the moſt part naked, with a piece of callicoe hanging careleſly round her ſhoulders. Her ears, which were very long, her neck and arms were adorn'd with precious ſtones, gold rings and bracelets, and her head cover'd with a piece of white callicoe. She was paſt her middle age, of a brown complexion, with black hair tied in a knot behind, but of a majeſtick mein, ſhe being a princeſs who ſhew'd a great deal of good conduct in the management of her affairs. After I had paid the uſual compliments, I ſhew'd her the propoſition, I was to make to her in writing; which ſhe order'd to be read twice, the better to underſtand the meaning of it, which being done, ſhe aſk'd me, whether this treaty comprehended all the reſt, and whether they were annull'd by it; unto which I having given her a ſufficient anſwer, ſhe agreed to all our propoſitions, which were accordingly ſign'd immediately. This done, I recommended Mr. *James Cher de Venne*, who was to ſucceed me at *Koulang*, to her majeſty, deſiring her to ac-

The author goes to the queen of Koulang.



Nieuhof's Audience w.th y.e Queen of Koylang

1662. knowledge him as ſuch, and to continue in a good correſpondency with our company, by whom I was order'd to go to *Toutekorin*, which ſhe promiſed to do. I then deſired leave to depart, becauſe I expected Mr. *Huſtart* every hour at *Koulang*, which ſhe readily granted, and at the ſame time took a golden bracelet from her arms, which ſhe preſented me as a token of her good inclinations to the company. She order'd one of the *Reſidoors* to faſten it to my arm, but it being too ſtreight, ſhe cauſed it to be fitted for me, ſhe having once before, *viz.* when I firſt gave her notice of Mr. *Huſtart's* coming, preſented me with another golden bracelet, for which and all other honours, I had received from her majeſty, ſince my reſidence at *Koulang*, I returned my hearty thanks, deſiring her once more not to withdraw her favour from the com-

Returns to Koulang. pany. Thus I return'd to *Koulang*, about two a clock in the night, where I was let in through one of the gates, the admiral *Huſtart* being the day before arriv'd there with two ſhips, the *Eraſmus* and the *Niewenhoven* from *Batavia*. The next morning I paid a viſit to the admiral at his lodgings, where I gave him an ample account of my negotiations, and other matters relating to our factory here, wherewith he was highly ſatisfied, and gave me ſome farther orders about certain matters to be tranſacted before my departure. 1662.

The viceroy of Travankoor *comes to* Koulang.

About the ſame time the viceroy of the king of *Travankoor* came back to the city of *Koulang*, to compliment the admiral, and to conſummate the treaty. The admiral ſent him aftewards ſeveral preſents, and let him know, that if the king his maſter did give any aſſiſtance of men or arms to prince *Gondormo* againſt *Cochin* and the company, he muſt expect to be treated as an enemy; he return'd for anſwer, that he was ſure his maſter would not do it, but always maintain a good correſpondency with the company, upon which he was diſmiſs'd, and left *Koulang* the ſame night, as did the admiral ſoon after, who ſet ſail for *Cranganor*, leaving the commodore *Bitter* behind him, who with his wife and family was come aboard the ſhip the *Niewenhoven* to load pepper here. His wife being very deſirous to ſee the queen of *Koulang*, I caus'd her to be carried thither in my *Palankin*; the queen receiv'd her very courteouſly, being extremely well pleas'd with the ſight of a *Dutch* woman; and many of the *Malabars* were ſo curious as to peep into the *Palankin* to ſee her; they being no leſs ſurpriz'd at the ſight of the *Europeans* than we were at them. Commodore *Bitter* having by this time got his full cargo, ſet ſail again for *Batavia*,

1662. *Batavia*, as I did the 11th to the court of *Gonrec*, and so to the prince *Baryette Pule*, where I introduced Mr. *Cherde Venne*, who, as I told you before, was to manage the affairs of the company after my departure; they receiv'd him very civilly, and promis'd to maintain an everlasting correspondence with our company. At parting, prince *Baryette Pule* presented me with a golden bracelet curiously wrought, and the viceroy with a silken suit of cloaths, and so I return'd very well satisfied to *Koulang*, where I prepar'd for *Toutekorin*; for within four days after, *viz.* the 12th of *March*, having first surrendred all my accounts, and what also belong'd to the company, and given the best instructions I could to Mr. *James Cherde Venne*, taken my leave of the chiefest officers belonging to the company, I set out for *Toutekorin*, after a stay of two years at *Koulang*, considering that my appointed time was near expiring, and I had settled our traffick at *Koulang* upon a good foot. I could have been very glad to have stay'd the remainder of my time here, for which purpose I sent a letter to *Colomba*, but the chief director of *Toutekorin* being order'd to *Persia* upon some urgent business, I was forc'd to supply his place. And upon this occasion I think it not amiss to give the reader an account of what I have obsery'd most remarkable during my stay on the coast of *Malabar*, together with the products, beasts and inhabitants of this countrey.

The author takes his leave of the court of Gonree *and prince* Baryette Pule.

Cape Kouang.

Limits of the coast of Malabar.

The coast of *Malabar* is properly called that tract of ground where the *Malabar* tongue is us'd, beginning 50 leagues to the south below *Goa*, and extending to the south to the cape *Comorin*, under $7\frac{1}{2}$ degree of northern latitude, about 80 leagues along that coast. On the west-side it borders upon the *Indian* sea, and to the east it is surrounded by a ridge of high mountains, which divide it from the coast of *Coromandel*. It is commonly divided into five kingdoms, *viz. Cananor*, *Calicut*, *Cranganor*, *Cochin* and *Koulang*, unto which some add the kingdom of *Porka*, *Tanakor* or *Tanor*, *Koulang* and *Travankoor*; not to mention here the petty kingdoms of *Kota*, *Mountingua*, *Badara*, *Chambaya*, *Marta*, *Materte*, and several others among the mountains. It is situate almost in the midst betwixt the line and the tropick of Cancer; which makes the days here excessive hot, notwithstanding which, it is a pleasant, extraordinary fertile and healthful countrey. It is full of very fine springs, pools, rivers and channels, even as far as the mountains, but most towards the sea-side; in which it resembles the province of *Holland*, being scarce passable without boats; tho' most of their rivers are shallow, and consequently unfit for ships of burthen. Here grows great store of the best pepper, exceeding all the rest in goodness; formerly the inhabitants us'd to exchange the pepper with the foreign merchants for silver, gold, amsion and other commodities; but since the *Dutch East-India* company have made themselves masters of the kingdoms of *Cranganor*, *Cochin* and *Koulang*, and forc'd the *Portugueſe* from thence, they have by entering into several leagues with the neighbouring princes, got the monopoly of pepper on that coast into their hands, and have so well provided the three before mention'd places with strong fortifications and garrisons, that they are look'd upon as impregnable. Besides this, the countrey of *Malabar* is full of cocoe trees, especially in the marshes, where these trees thrive better than in any other place in the *Indies*, there being some trees here of 95 and more foot high. They drive a considerable trade with the oil and bark of this fruit, neither do they want wood fit for the building of houses and ships. The air is very pure here, and very cold in the night time, during the three months of *January*, *February* and *March*; and when the nights are very foggy, which questionless occasions the cold, the days being excessive hot. The winter begins here in *April*, or at the most in *May*, and ends in *September* or *October*, with thunder, lightnings and storms: This season produces the most fruits, by reason of the warm rains. Then begins the summer season, which continues till *April* or *May* with intolerable heat, and commonly without any rains, which renders the sandy grounds so hot, that they cannot pass over them with their bare feet, but are forced to make use of a certain sort of shoes, call'd by them *Siripous*. Every morning about nine or ten a clock, the land wind blows from the *East*, and immediately after sunset the west wind from the sea, both which contribute much towards the cooling of the air, as well here, as in all other adjacent islands. What is most observable is, that the land wind never reaches above ten leagues in the sea; an observation which has never been known to miss. The seasons here are quite of a different nature from ours, for whilst during the summer months every thing is dried up in the hot climates of *Europe*, here the fruits appear most florid and green, because this is the winter season in *Malabar*, where it rains continually for six months, during which time you not as much as see the least glimpse of the sun, but in the other six months it never rains. During the months of *October*, *November* and *December*, they are much afflicted with dreadful storms. There is another thing which

1662.

Its products.

Its air.

Seasons of the year.

Its division.

is

1662. is moſt ſurprizing here, that wher it is ſummer on the coaſt of *Malabar*, it s winter on the coaſt of *Coromandel*. Thi is occaſioned by the mountains call'd *Gate*, which ſtop the paſſage of the winds; for whilſt on the eaſt-ſide of theſe mountains, which extend all along the coaſt of *Malabar*, they have great heats and droughts during their ſummer ſeaſon, thoſe on the weſt-ſide have their winter with violent rains. Thus on the ſouth-ſide of the cape *Comorin*, they have their ſummer during *April*, *May*, *June*, *July*, *Auguſt* and *September*, whilſt at the ſame time, thoſe on the north-ſide have their winter, it being very ſtormy and rainy or one, and fair and calm on the other ſide at the ſame time.

Houſes. Their ordinary houſes are of bamboe canes, cover'd with leaves of coco-trees; ſome are plaiſtered with carving, without any cellars, garrets or windows. They never lock up their houſes, becauſe their houſhold-ſtuff is not worth ſtealing, unleſs they be perſons of an eminent rank; their doors are ſo low, that you cannot enter without ſtooping, tho' they have alſo ſome houſes cover'd with lead, copper and tiles, and built otherwiſe and well fitted up, according to their faſhion; their private buildings don't approach in height to ours, they commonly have two or three apartments within one another; within the compaſs of the middlemoſt of theſe apartments is a ſmall ſquare, with ſome ſmall galleries round about it, which receive the water from the tops of the houſes. At the entrance of all their houſes, whether rich or poor, are court-yards ſurrounded with high walls and ditches, and one of ſtrong palliſadoes. Theſe court-yards are for the reception of travellers, who eat, drink and ſleep here, with more conveniency than if they were lodged within, being ready at all times to proceed on their journey when the reſt of the company goes. Their royal palaces and pagods are commonly built of ſtone, ſurrounded with a mud wall, on which are mounted ſome great cannon. Moſt of their princely palaces are erected in large ponds or lakes, ſome having a league and a half in circumference. They have moſt excellent carvings in wood, with all ſorts of images in their houſes; their ceiling is of a plain poliſh'd wood; among the marſhes are to be ſeen many ruins of old houſes, which appear to have been built many ages ago. Some tell us, that *Alexander* the great coming into thoſe parts, after he had order'd his admiral to enter by the way of the river *Ganges* the ſea, and from thence by the *Euphrates* to *Babylon*, had laid theſe countries deſolate; others aſcribe this devaſtation to *Tamerlane*.

The *Malabars* eat and drink ſitting upon the ground, after the *Mahometan* faſhion, almoſt like our taylors. Their cups, diſhes and ſpoons are made of coco-nuts; people of quality have them made of metal. Inſtead of bread they uſe nothing but rice; beſides which, they feed upon fleſh, fiſh, ſpices, fruits, milk and eggs. They drink abundance of water, as likewiſe the juice of the coco-trees; ſome of which give 30 quarts of this liquor in 24 hours, but if they are drain'd too much, the trees periſh. They alſo diſtil a ſpirit call'd *Arack* out of this liquor, but it is not near ſo good nor wholſome as our brandy. When they drink they don't touch their lips with the cup, but pour the liquor from above into the mouth; ſome eat neither fleſh nor fiſh, but live purely upon the products of the ground. 1662. *How they eat and drink.*

They uſe amfion very greedily. They take the quantity or the bigneſs of a pea, this they either mix with *Arack*, or chew it alone, ſometimes till they fall aſleep; they pretend that this makes them have very preſent dreams of the *Elyſian* fields and ſuch like. When they are to attack an enemy, they take a good quantity of it, which makes them fall on like enraged wild beaſts, and the virtue of the amfion being gone, they don't remember what has paſt, which ſhews that it is very obnoxious to the memory. Some have accuſtomed themſelves to uſe amfion every day, ſome every two or three days; and before I knew the effects of it, I have been often ſurpriz'd, that they ſhould be ſo forgetful in ſuch matters as I had treated with them of before. The queen of *Koulang* aſking me once among other things, what was the reaſon the *Dutch* were more active and perſeverant than the *Malabars*, who were generally fickle and unſettled, I laid the fault upon the uſe of the amfion, telling her withal, that the *Malabars* ſhould imitate the *Dutch*, and drink wines, which uſed with moderation, did acuate the underſtanding, made the ſpirits active, and often diſcovered the truth. *They uſe amfion.*

Among theſe ſeveral ſects of the *Malabars*, that of the *Brahmans* is moſt reverenced, and maintains a peculiar manner of living. They are generally very wiſe, ready, active, modeſt and charitable, and ſtrict obſervers of their promiſes. They betake themſelves to divers employments at pleaſure; ſome are ſoldiers like the natives, and wear the ſame clothes, except that they are diſtinguiſh'd from them by the cord they wear round their middle, and abſtain from fleſh. Others are prieſts, whoſe buſineſs it is to offer ſacrifices to their idols, no other ſect being admitted to that ſervice. *The Brahmans.*

1662. Some alſo encreaſe traffick, and tho' they grow very rich, yet obſerve the ſame rules of living. Some there are among them who addict themſelves to natural philoſophy and other ſciences, but eſpecially to aſtronomy, others to phyſick and pharmacy. They eat neither fleſh nor fiſh, nor any other living creature, and drink nothing but water; nor do they ever eat before they have waſhed and bathed themſelves; which done, they only cover their privy parts, and for the reſt eat naked. They are forbidden to eat any thing but what is prepared by one of their own ſect; which makes them commonly be their own cooks; for they rather chuſe to die than eat any thing touch'd by one of another ſect; whereas all the others are at liberty to eat what is dreſs'd by a *Brahman*. They never (no more than all the other *Malabars*) touch the brim of the cup when they drink, but pour it from above into the mouth. They wear a white turbant upon their heads, red ſhoes, and a callicoe coat, which reaches down to their ankles. Over this they have another large white piece of ſtuff, which they wrap three times round their bodies, which they draw thro' betwixt their thighs, and tie it together behind upon their buttocks in a knot. They wear about the middle a girdle or ſcarf of fine white callicoe, as their turbants are, and over the ſhoulders a piece of colour'd callicoe or ſilk, as the *Europeans* do their cloaks. They alſo have long hair, with pendants in their ears. But that which diſtinguiſhes them from all the other *Malabars*, is a cord of fine cotton thread, which they wear next to their ſkin, and is put about them firſt of all in their temples with a great deal of ceremony, and not without a conſiderable charge, which is the reaſon you cannot do a greater injury to a *Brahman* than to tear this cord, which he is obliged to purchaſe again, if he will paſs for a true *Brahman*; and if any of them is to undergo any corporeal puniſhment, his cord muſt firſt be taken from him, which is likewiſe done if any of them happen to tranſgreſs the rules preſcribed to their ſect. As they paſs along the ſtreets in their white callicoe clothes, they tell ſuch as they meet that they are *Brahmans*, becauſe the cord by which they are chiefly diſtinguiſh'd is worn next to their ſkin, and conſequently not to be ſeen; when they are to take an oath, they lay the hand upon it. The *Brahman* women have holes in their noſes, in which they hang gold and ſilver rings, pearls and precious ſtones, as well as about their legs and in their ears, where they have ſilver and gold plates ſet round with precious ſtones. The wives of the *Negroes*, of the *Moncoris*, and the other *Malabars*, are not permitted to uſe theſe ornaments. 1662. They alſo wear bracelets from their wriſts up to heir elbows, ſome of gold and ſilver, others of glaſs and tortoiſe-ſhell curiouſly engraven and enamell'd. Theſe women are generally handſome and well-featured, ſome of them being not inferior in complexion to the *Portugueſe* or the brown *Dutch* women. They marry very early, ſometimes before they are quite 7 or 8 years old; for the boys and girls are permitted to ſport together till they come to be in good earneſt; but they take great care not to mix themſelves with another ſect. The men are allow'd to marry twice, tho' no more than one woman at a time. Be they never ſo poor, they will be ſure to keep their rank, and to oblige ſuch as meet them to paſs by with making a bow, in token of their reverence. Thoſe among the *Brahmans* who have liſted themſelves among the *Negroes*, are in the ſame degree with them, except that they obſerve more auſterity. The *Brahmans* are in great eſteem with their kings, who keep ſome of the chiefeſt always near their perſon, to adviſe with them in all matters of moment. Thoſe of the firſt rank among the *Brahmans*, as well as other *Indian* perſons of quality, have commonly a numerous attendance; ſome of whom carry their umbrelloes, others a ſilver baſon full of *Bethel*; others one full of water; ſome are carried in palankins or chairs.

Feaſt of the Brahmans.

The *Brahmans* have, under pretence of a religious worſhip, introduced a feaſt, which furniſhes them with a certain opportunity of being revenged of their enemies. It is a cuſtom among the the *Malabar* kings once every year, *viz.* at the time of the new-moon in *October*, to remember the bleſſings they ſuppoſe they have received from their Idols, by a ſolemn ſacrifice, which is perform'd by ſetting certain houſes on fire, ſuch as are appointed by the *Brahmans*: This is commonly perform'd in the night time, without the leaſt fore-warning given, ſo that ſometimes not only the houſe, but alſo the inhabitants, with all their goods are burnt, no body daring to quench the flame. This they call *The ſacrifice of fire and blood.*

Several ſorts of Brahmans.

There live many of the *Banjans* of *Cambaya* in *Malabar*; theſe have alſo *Brahmans*, who are in great eſteem among them; the *Brahmans* of *Malabar* are allow'd to frequent their temples. The *Banjans* themſelves lead as auſtere a life as their *Brahmans*, but they are of an inferior degree, nor can they intermarry with them. In the kingdom of *Calicut* is a certain ſort of *Brahmans*, who deſpiſe all images, and live in chaſtity after the 20 or 25th year of age.

They

1662. They are ſo averſe to the female ſex that as often as they ſtir abroad, ſome bod cries out aloud before them *Poo*, *Poo*, *i. e.* keep back, keep back, to let the women know they muſt keep out of ſight. Theſe don't wear the cord twiſted of cotton thread, neither do they abſtain (like the other *Brahmans*) from fleſh, fiſh or wine; but to preſerve their chaſtity eat daily a certain quantity of the pulp of the fruit *Karuza*, being taught by experience, that the ſame has a quality of checking the venereal appetite. Neither do they bury their dead bodies like the other *Brahmans*; ſome ſtrew themſelves all over with aſhes, and are encloſed day and night in iron cages, which are ſo ſmall, that they can ſcarce ſit upright in them. Others burn or ſcald certain parts of their bodies, whereby they ſuppoſe to gain the Affections of the common people. Thus far of the *Brahmans*.

Divers ſorts of inhabitants. For the reſt it is to be obſerved, that the inhabitants of the coaſt of *Malabar* may be divided into foreigners and natives; the foreigners are properly thoſe call'd commonly *Malabars*, being a colony of *Arabians*, who have fix'd their habitations there many ages ago, near the ſea-ſide chiefly. The natives are pagans, divided into *Brahmans* or *Bramenis*, *Bramos* or *Bramen*; into the *Nairos* or *Nayros*, and into the common people call'd *Moncoris* or *Pouleas*, and otherwiſe *Parvas*. They are alſo divided into five ſeveral degrees; the firſt are the royal families, among which the houſe of *Gondormo* is one of the moſt illuſtrious; the ſecond is the ſect of the *Brahmans*, or of the prieſts. The third is the military order or nobles, call'd the *Nayros*; the fourth comprehends the merchants, and the fifth the *Parvas* or fiſhermen.

The Nayros. The *Nayros*, as I told you, are deſcended of noble families, and brought up to the war. They appear with a ſhield on their left-arm, which they carry aloft, and with a naked ſword in the right-hand. They are very haughty, and at firſt pretended to diſpute the rank with the *Portugueſe*, which occaſion'd no ſmall diſturbance, 'till the difference was agreed to be decided by a ſingle combat betwixt a *Portugueſe* and a *Nayros*, in which the laſt being worſted, the *Nayros* ever ſince were forced to give way to the *Portugueſe*; but all the other *Malabars* muſt give place to the *Nayros*. They are generally well proportion'd, tho' of a brown or olive colour; they take a ſingular pride in having long ears, which they perform by art; they bore holes thro' the ears of both boys and girls, which they fill up with palm-tree leaves roll'd together; theſe rolls they make bigger and bigger by degrees, 'till the holes are extended to the utmoſt reach the holes can bear, and hang down to their very breaſts: This is accounted one of their chiefeſt pieces of gallantry, and they adorn them with gold, ſilver and jewels. Tho' the *Nayros* are from their infancy train'd up in arms, and are very bold and brave, they are nevertheleſs very civil and meek in their converſation, according to the cuſtom of that country; notwithſtanding which they are mightily addicted to robbing upon the high-way, and will kill the travellers unawares, unleſs they be well upon their guard. This is the reaſon why the mahometan *Malabars* dwelling in this countrey, whenever they are travelling from one place to another, take one of theſe *Nayros* along with them, who is their conductor for a certain piece of money, to the next place where they take another, and by this means may paſs without any danger thro' a thouſand of *Nayros*, tho' their conductor ſhould be an old decrepit perſon, or only a boy. Theſe *Nayros* are ſtrict obſervers of the times, which are neglected by the common people, for they will not converſe with any of the inferior orders, except the *Brahmans*; nay, if any of the vulgar ſort happen only to touch a *Nayros*, as he paſſes by, he will make his ſervant that carries his meat after him, to throw it down upon the ground; nay, if they do enter their houſes, or only touch the doors and walls, they will not eat there for fear of being defiled. However the *Nayros* are not altogether ſo nice in theſe points, as the *Brahmans*. For the reſt, they are not much inclined to vice, ſodomy and inceſt; nay, the boys and girls, tho' they converſe together daily, and that without cloths, you ſhall ſeldom obſerve in them either in word or action, any thing that ſavours of uncleanneſs. The *Nayros* ſcarce ever laugh, and that not but upon extraordinary occaſions; and if they ſee others laugh they will look downward. Thoſe *Nayros* who are watching at the town gates, and ſerve for conductors to travellers, are the pooreſt of all, yet will they rather follow this employment than a trade, which they look upon below their quality. They apply themſelves from their infancy to the uſe of arms, and frequently fight together with ſwords and targets, which renders them infinitely active at that ſport. They are the beſt wreſtlers in the world, and are very nimble on foot. They attack their enemies quite naked, their privities being only covered. Their arms are bows, arrows, javelins, ſwords and ſhields; theſe are very large, which they uſe with the utmoſt dexterity to cover their bodies. On the hilt of their ſwords they have ſmall plates of metal, which

1626.

1662. which makes a noiſe when they are a fighting, and ſerves to animate them. Since the *Portugueſe* and *Dutch* have got footing there, they have alſo learn'd the uſe of fire-arms to that degree, that they will turn right and left, and give a volley of ſhot with the ſame order as the *Europeans* do.

Their marriages. One *Nayros* is not allow'd more than one Wife at a time, but the women in this point have got the ſtart of the men, they being permitted to have three huſbands at once; except that a woman of the ſect of the *Brahmans* that is married to a *Nryros* is not allow'd more than one. Each of theſe three huſbands contribute their ſhare towards the maintenance of this woman and her children, without the leaſt conteſt or jealouſy. As often as any of them comes to viſit her, he leaves his arms at the door, a ſign that neither of the other two muſt come in, for fear of diſturbing the firſt. From hence the poorer ſort reap this benefit, that they have the uſe of a wife, yet contribute only the third part towards the maintaining of the family; tho' on the other hand this carries along with it a great inconveniency concerning the inheritance of their children, which they recompenſe in ſome meaſure, by making the ſiſter's children the heirs of their uncles. The *Nayros* employ the common people in the countrey and other drudgeries, but in their houſes they make uſe of none but *Nayros* (or gentlemen) tho' very poor, who are willing to ſerve them for their bread. The vulgar ſort are all clad after the ſame manner, being quite naked except that they have a ſmall girdle round their waſte, on which they hang a piece of callicoe, or perhaps of the bark of a tree, or a few leaves to cover their privities. The women wear a kind of veſtment of callicoe, which reaches down to their knees, and have very long hair; whereas the men are obliged to cut their hair cloſe, except one truſs which they keep on the crown of their head. All the *Malabars* have black teeth, occaſion'd by the continual chewing of the leaves of *Bethel:* Black teeth are in great eſteem among them, becauſe thoſe that don't chaw *Bethel*, are conſidered here as of a mean extraction. The *Malabars* are ſaid to be much addicted to ſorcery, who are able to kill people as they paſs by or at leaſt throw them into a lingring diſtemper. They are extremely covetous, and will venture at any thing for a ſmall gain. The women are generally unchaſte, the young women about 17 or 18, being obliged by cuſtom to diſpoſe of their maidenheads, for no body cares to marry a maiden here, but ſuch as have been beſt beloved, ſooneſt meet with a huſband. The *Malabars* have great ſtore of great artillery, muſkets and pikes; nay, 1662. their arms were in more eſteem than thoſe of the *Portugueſe*, only they did not know the art of hardning their armour: They now make very good and ſtrong gun-barrels and gun-powder. The children of the *Nayros* are from the ſeventh year of their age exerciſed in arms, and train'd up to the wars; but every one betakes himſelf to one peculiar kind of arms, it being their opinion, that they cannot excel in the uſe of all. They anoint the limbs of their young children every day with a certain oil, to make their joints pliable; for when they forced to fly, they put their greateſt confidence in the agility of their bodies, and will in an inſtant turn back upon their enemies, and attack them in the rear; beſides, that in their flight they throw their javelins backward with great dexterity, and as ſoon as they have thrown their darts, they know how to ſhelter themſelves behind their ſhields.

The Amokos. Tho' the *Nayros* in general are very good ſoldiers, yet there is a certain kind among them call'd *Amokos*, who are eſteemed above all the reſt, being a company of ſtout, bold and deſperate bravadoes. They oblige themſelves by moſt direful imprecations againſt themſelves and their families, calling heaven to witneſs, that they will revenge certain injuries done to their friends or patrons, which they certainly purſue with ſo much intrepidity, that they ſtop neither at fire nor ſword, to take vengeance of the death of their maſter, but like mad men run upon the point of their enemies ſwords, which makes them be generally dreaded by all, and makes them to be in great eſteem with their kings, who are accounted the more potent, the greater number they entertain of thoſe *Amokos*; tho' this their fool-hardineſs is chiefly attributed to the exceſſive uſe of the amfion. You ſee the ſtreets of all the towns on the *Malabar* coaſt full of *Nayros*, with their arms always about them, tho' many of them dwell in the countrey, and a good number are kept near the king's perſon. Moſt perſons of quality here maintain ſome of thoſe they call *Janguys*. If a quarrel happens to ariſe betwixt a *Nayros* and another *Malabar*, the king allows the the latter a guard of another *Nayros*, and as long as he ſtays with him, they dare not fight, the firſt aggreſſor being guilty of high-treaſon; for perſons of the chiefeſt rank, if they will be admitted in the number of the *Nayros*, muſt have the king's peculiar leave for it, and are afterwards diſtinguiſh'd by a gold ring they wear on the right arm, or by a buffler's horn. The *Nayroes* frequently hunt the tigers, ſome apply themſelves to philoſophy, but eſpecially

Betwixt p. 236. 237.



A Malabar Man and Wooman 13

1662. pecially aſtronomy, but never to traffick or any handicraft trade. They eat all ſorts of meat, except cows fleſh, and are very fond of pork. They go above half naked, with bare heads and feet, having only a large piece of white callicoe wrapt round their middle; which reaches down to their knees, and is drawn thro' betwixt their thighs, and tied together behind above their buttocks. They wear alſo a red ſilken ſcarf, with a fringe of about half a foot long, being half gold and half ſilk. They let their hair grow very long, without ever cutting it, by which they are diſtinguiſh'd from the common people; they have a way of tying it very neatly together in a puff on the crown of their heads. Their ſhield they carry on the left arm, and their ſword in the right hand; ſome have alſo a javelin, muſket or pike. The *Nayros* women are clothed after the ſame manner as the men, ſo that there is not the leaſt diſtinction to be ſeen betwixt boys and the girls, till the breaſts begin to appear in the laſt. They are forbid to marry any other perſon but of the ſame rank, and but one at a time; and in caſe a *Nayros* woman ſhould marry another, except a *Nayros*, ſhe inſtantly forfeits her head; in the ſame manner, if a *Nayros* ſhould marry a woman of another tribe but a *Nayros*, he is puniſhed with death. This they have provided againſt, becauſe they would not have their blood mixt with ſtrangers or thoſe of an inferior rank, of which they are ſo cautious, that they will not as much as ſuffer any to approach them; for which reaſon, when they walk abroad, they cry out aloud to the common people, *Popoire*, keep back; for if any of theſe ſhould touch a *Nayros*, he would certainly ruin him.

The common people of Malabar.

The common people of *Malabar* call'd *Montois* or *Poulias*, or otherwiſe *Parvas* or *Parivas*, are a wretched ſort of ſlaves; they are blacker and much uglier than the *Nayros*, neither muſt their ears hang down above three inches at moſt. They are again of different kinds, for thoſe inhabiting near the ſea-ſhore, are properly call'd *Moncois*; theſe are all fiſhermen, and all along the coaſt of *Malabar* are employed at ſea in rowing and otherwiſe for certain wages. Their wives and daughters perform all manner of drudgery by land, and expoſe themſelves for money to the firſt man, without the leaſt diſtinction of quality or religion, without the leaſt fear from their huſbands, who are well enough pleaſed at it. For it is to be known, that there are no common ſtrumpets here, but the wives and daughters of theſe *Moncois*, and of the *Tivas*, who are handicrafts men; for the reſt are obliged to contain themſelves within their own tribes. The common people are often put to a great nonplus when they happen to meet a *Nayros* at the corner of a ſtreet, when they are fain to ſtand aſide till they are paſſed by. There is another kind among the vulgar ſort, call'd by ſome *Tivas*, whoſe employment is to draw the liquor from the coco-trees: The reſt are handicraft and huſbandmen. But theſe intermarry with one another, notwithſtanding there is ſome difference in their rank, for the huſbandmen claim the firſt, and the *Tivas* or handicrafts men the ſecond degree, the *Moncois* or fiſhermen are the laſt. 1662.

The Parvas.

Thoſe call'd *Parivas* or *Parvas* live in villages near the ſea ſide; ſome of theſe live near the coaſt, and in the iſle of *Makar*, where, as well as near *Toutekorin*, betwixt the cape *Comorin* and the iſle of *Ceylon*, they live upon pearl fiſhing; they are a ſtubborn generation, more addicted to lazineſs than labour; they live chiefly upon pearl and oyſter fiſhing, being the beſt divers in the world, unto which they are accuſtom'd from their firſt infancy. Whilſt the men are abroad at ſea, the women and children are employ'd in gathering of pearl duſt near the ſhore. They are a cowardly and deceitful ſort of people, lying and deceit being ſo cuſtomary among them, as not to be look'd upon as a ſin. They are great admirers of the eccleſiaſtical laws, it being a ſtrict cuſtom among them, not to puniſh a crime, if the tranſgreſſor confeſſes it and promiſes amendment. The *Parvas* were formerly all *Pagans*, but being ſorely oppreſſed by the *Mahometans*, they rebell'd againſt them, and with the aſſiſtance of the *Portugueſe*, ſhook off the yoke, which proved the opportunity of their converſion to the *Romiſh* religion.

How they were converted to the Roman *faith.*

For finding themſelves daily more and more oppreſs'd, by the advice of one *John de Cruis* (a native of *Malabar*) they ſent their deputies to *Cochin*, to crave aſſiſtance againſt the mahometans, offering at the ſame time to be baptized. The *Portugueſe* receiv'd theſe *Pantagitini* (being then their magiſtrates) very courteouſly promiſing them immediate ſuccours againſt their enemies, which had ſo powerful an influence upon theſe deputies, that to ſhew their gratitude, they receiv'd baptiſm immediately, and took upon them the ſurname of *De Cruis*, which name is retain'd by many of the *Parvas* to this day. After the *Parvas* had rid their hands of the *Moors*, with the aſſiſtance of the *Portugueſe*, and got the pearl fiſhery again into their hands, many thouſands of them, at divers times and places, embraced the chriſtian faith; and under the viceroyſhip of *Stephen Gamma* the *Portugueſe*, *viz.* about 1500, above

1662. *Return to paganiſm.*

20000 *Parvas* received baptiſm; but for want of good miniſters, who underſtood the *Malabar* tongue (few of the *Portugueſe* clergy being willing to ſettle here) they ſoon return'd to their pagan ſuperſtions, having ſcarce any thing left among them but the name of chriſtians, till *Francis Xaverius* (who arrived in the *Indies* 1540, and went by the name of the great and holy father) being inform'd by *Michael Vas* of the miſerable condition of the *Parvas*, reſolv'd to go thither from *Goa*, to re-eſtabliſh the decay'd ſtate of chriſtianity among the *Parvas*. Accordingly he ſet out from *Goa* (after a ſtay of five months there) in the beginning of *October* 1543, in company of *Francis Manſilla*, who was come along with him out of *Portugal*, and two novices of the college of *Goa*, who underſtood the *Malabar* tongue. After his arrival at the eaſt end of that coaſt, near the cape *Comorin*, finding that his young interpreters ſtood him but in little ſtead, he found out this expedient; he call'd together ſuch of the natives, as he knew to be well verſed in the *Portugueſe* tongue; among thoſe he choſe certain perſons, who join'd with thoſe two he had brought along with him from *Goa*, tranſlated the chief articles of the chriſtian faith, the ten commandmets, with a ſhort explication, a general confeſſion of faith, and ſome other ſuch like neceſſary matters into the *Malabar* tongue. Then he began to preach to them according to the capacity of his auditors, explaining to them the chief duties of a chriſtian, the glory of heaven, and the puniſhment of hell, with the reaſon, why ſome deſerve heaven, and the other hell. He explain'd afterwards to them the ſign of the croſs, and began to unfold to them the myſtery of the holy trinity, of which they had been quite ignorant before, and made ſuch a progreſs among them, that whereas at his coming thither he found not above 2500 demi-chriſtians, at his going away he left near 40000 good chriſtians behind him. *Xaverius* himſelf in his letter dated the 12th of *Jan.* 1554, ſpeaks of the vaſt increaſe of the chriſtians in thoſe parts, ſaying thus:

Are reconciled to the church by Xaverius.

King, you may gueſs what a great number of theſe poor people were reduced back to the flock of Chriſt from thence, that my arms and hand uſed to be tired with baptizing, ſometimes whole villages at a time. My ſtrength and voice have often failed me, by reaſon of the frequent repetitions of the articles of faith.

The *Romaniſts* tell us, that beſides theſe, *Xaverius* converted ten towns betwixt *Bringen* and *Permanel* (and ſix or ſeven more near *Bengala* and *Remanankoris.)* This they ſay he performed by his miracles, by healing the ſick, caſting out demons, and raiſing the dead from their graves. He raiſed a certaing young man, the ſon of a poor widow, who was choak'd in the mud, from the dead. The ſame he did to another young man, the ſon of a perſon of quality in the city of *Puvicale*, and to a young maid. Another woman in labour, being reduced to the laſt gaſp, he deliver'd without the leaſt pain, as ſoon as ſhe had received baptiſm. By his miracles he converted a whole village at once, near *Toutekorin*; ſo that both chriſtians and pagans uſed to have their laſt recourſe to him in their ſickneſſes, many of which he reſtored by reading the goſpel over them; as may be ſeen more at large in the life of *Xaverius*, of *John de Lucenas*, and other *Roman* authors. 1662.

But whatever ſucceſs *Xaverius* had in converting the *Parvas* and others to the chriſtian religion, certain it is, that he brought no more than one *Brahman* over to the *Romiſh* faith, tho' he beſtow'd much time and pains in ſpeaking to them. And among the *Parvas* themſelves are many to this day, who adhere ſo deeply to their pagan ſuperſtitions, that they make but little account of chriſtianity. However, thoſe that have ever ſince perſevered in the *Romiſh* faith, are from time to time furniſh'd with and inſtructed by the *Portugueſe* prieſts; who ever ſince 1685, when we made ourſelves maſters of *Toutekorin*, lived about a league or two from the town in the countrey, whither they carry their children to be baptized. They are very obſtinate in their religion, which extends no farther than the knowledge of the chriſtian faith, our father, the ten commandments and an *Ave Mary*, but they follow blind-fold the directions of the *Portugueſe* prieſts, carry *Pater Noſters* and a roſary conſtantly about them, and uſe the ſign of the croſs on their foreheads and breaſts, like as the *Roman* catholicks do. The *Dutch* miniſters of the proteſtant religion, have ſeveral times attempted to introduce the reformation into the churches of the *Parvas*, both before and ſince we were maſters of *Toutekorin*, but all in vain; for tho' we cauſed the word of God to be preached in the *Portugueſe* tongue, the *Parvas* durſt not venture to come to church for fear of the *Roman* prieſts living among them. Theſe *Parvas* declared to *Xaverius* and *Michael Jaſſus*, in thoſe days, that whilſt they were yet involv'd in darkneſs of paganiſm, the devil uſed to appear to them in moſt frightful ſhapes, ſo that they durſt not ſtir abroad at night, or go a fiſhing, unleſs in great companies. He us'd to enter into the bodies of the living, and declared he would not leave them, till they had erected

1662. temples for him. But ſince they had embraced the chriſtian religion, the devil never had appear'd either in their houſes or veſſels, tho' they freely went abroad a fiſhing without any company. *Xaverius* having exhorted them to perſevere in their religion, ſet out from thence to *Makarara* and the adjacent places, and ſo further to the iſle of *Ceylon*.

The Mahometan Malabars.

All the *Mahometan Malabars* are either merchants or pirates; if any foreigners come into the harbours where theſe pirates lie, they endeavour to engage them into their ſervice; which if they accept of, they maintain them and their families throughout the whole winter; when they are juſt a going to engage an enemy, they take ſome *Bethel*, by which they ſwear to ſtand by one another; if they take a prize, they ranſack the ſhip, and all the mariners and paſſengers before they come aſhore; the captain and other officers take the beſt part for themſelves, the reſt is divided among the crew. Theſe poor wretches endure incredible fatigues and miſeries at ſea, and tho' they have no head that has any legal authority over them, they ſeldom fall out or quarrel, a thing ſcarce to be believ'd among us. Several of the richer ſort of the *Malabars* equip certain veſſels, with a good number of ſoldiers and galley ſlaves, which always keep at ſea, except that now and then the captain comes aſhore to diſpoſe of the booty, which the merchants buy without any regard, whether they belong to friends or foes, provided they can have a good bargain; the *Mahometan Malabars* knowing no other preference but riches: the merchants are diſtinguiſh'd only by their habits; both theſe and the corſairs being never to be ſeen without arms; but the merchants wear their hair ſhort, and have a bonnet of red ſcarlet cloth upon their heads, ſometimes with a handkerchief rowl'd about it like a turbant, which they call *Mondu*, and are commonly embroider'd with gold and colour'd ſilk. They half ſhave their beard, but without whiſkers, wear a ſilk or callicoe veſt, reaching three inches below the middle, and under that a kind of drawers hanging down to the knees. They commonly carry a ſilk or callicoe handkerchief flouriſh'd, in which they tie and hide their purſes. The corſairs never ſhave their heads, but wear their hair very long, like the women, which they like the reſt of the *Indians*, tie together in a knot, and wear one of theſe flouriſh'd and embroider'd handkerchiefs over it; for the reſt they go quite naked, except that they wear a ſilk veſtment down to their knees; both the merchants and corſairs have knives with ſilver hafts, on which hang all ſorts of toys, ſuch as tooth-picks and the like, all curiouſly wrought. 1662.

The corſairs ſhave their beards, but leave whiſkers, which in time grow exceſſively, that ſo one may tie them together behind. Theſe, as well as all the *Malabars* uſe no ſhoes. Their women are clad like the men, neither do they wear any other ornament upon their heads but their hair, but have pendants in their ears, and rings on their fingers and toes. They wear a ſlight callicoe coat, reaching only to the middle, and under it a ſilk or callicoe veſtment, from the middle down to their knees; they walk bare-footed like the men. All the *Malabars* are of a middle ſize, and very hairy upon the breaſt and other parts of their bodies. The women are very well featured, but ſmall of ſtature. Their men undergo incredible fatigues at ſea, and tho' they are *Mahometans* they uſe the *Malabar* tongue, and pay allegiance and taxes to the ſeveral kings of the *Nayros*, under whom they live, which is commonly near the ſea ſhore. Their prieſts never meddle with any thing except marriages, and what relates to their temples. They are clad in white, after the *Arabian* manner; beſides which, they have a certain kind of religious men call'd *Abedallen*, or *miniſters of God*, who vow poverty, and beg in the countrey: You may ſee ſometimes 30 or 40 of them together, tho' they travel not above two or three at a time, and ſometimes one alone.

Government of Malabar.

The countrey of *Malabar* was formerly under the ſubjection of one potent prince, *Sarama Perimal*, who at the perſuaſion of ſome *Arabian* merchants that traded thither, having embraced mahometiſm, became ſo great a zealot of that religion, that he reſolved to leave his kingdom, and to undertake a pilgrimage to *Meccha* and *Medina*, to viſit *Mahomet*'s tomb: And having no children, divided before his departure the whole countrey, betwixt his chief favourites and courtiers, to wit, the countrey of *Cananor* to his Eſquire; to his ſword-bearer, who was his darling favourite, *Calicut*; to his ſcepter-bearer *Cochin*; and to another *Koulang*, unto which he annexed the title of kingdoms, and gave ſeveral other countries to others of his friends. Upon his ſword-bearer, who had *Calicut* for his ſhare, he beſtowed the title of *Zamory* or *Zamorin*, or emperor, and to have a preheminency above the reſt: For *Zamorin* ſignifies in the *Indian* tongue as much as an emperor, being otherwiſe expreſs'd by the word *Tambarana*, i. e. *God*, which is the reaſon that all the other *Malabar* countries follow the religious ceremonies of thoſe of *Calicut*, as being the chiefeſt kingdom of *Malabar*.

1662. *Malabar.* From hence it is, that the *Zamorin* claims the preheminence before all the other *Malabar* kings, he having alone the prerogative of coining. The two next in rank were the kings of *Koulang* and *Cananor*; beſides which, many other petty princes on the coaſt of *Malabar* claim the title of kings, tho' they are not really ſo, nor enjoy the prerogative of coining. The *Zamorin*, or king of *Calicut* loſt a conſiderable ſhare of his luſtre, after the coming of the *Portugueſe* into thoſe parts, with whoſe aſſiſtance the king of *Cochin* freed himſelf from all ſubjection formerly due to the kings of *Calicut*, and ſoon after arrived to that pitch of greatneſs, that they thought themſelves not in any wiſe inferior to the *Zamorins*, and waged continual war againſt them. Nevertheleſs moſt of the petty *Malabar* kings, and the *Nayros* are vaſſals of the *Zamorin*, and never ſpeak of him but with a great deal of reverence, except the king of *Cochin*; and the king of *Koulang* being the moſt remote of all, pays the *Zamorin* leſs reſpect than any of the reſt: However, all the kings of *Malabar* are ſovereigns in their own dominions. The *Malabar* kings never marry, but maintain a concubine of a noble family, who lives commonly in the ſame palace; if they happen to diſagree, another is taken in her place, tho' they are ſo modeſt as ſeldom to change their bedfellows.

The ſons born from theſe concubines are not regarded as king's children, neither do they ſucceed in their territories or eſtates, but are heirs only to their mothers, except what money the kings are pleaſed to beſtow freely upon them, to make them live with the more luſtre among other gentlemen: But the king's ſiſters ſons inherit their dominions. Theſe ſiſters don't marry no more than the kings, but are at liberty to chuſe a gallant, ſuch a one as they like beſt. If they have three or four ſons, and two or three daughters, the eldeſt ſon ſucceeds the king his uncle, and the other brother after him. After their deceaſe, the ſucceſſion goes to the eldeſt ſon of the king's ſecond ſiſter, and to his brothers afterwards. After their deceaſe, the ſons of the other ſiſters are the next heirs to the crown, ſo that the ſucceſſion deſcends from the brothers to their ſiſters ſons. If it happens that the king's ſiſters bear no ſons, the chief men of the kingdom elect a king who is next of kin, but for want of ſuch a one, chuſe whom they pleaſe. When the king's ſiſters are arrived to age of maturity, *viz.* to their 13 or 14 years, they pitch upon one of the nobility whom they like beſt; unto whom, after they have made him conſiderable preſents, they ſend word that he is choſen to get her maiden-head, and to get her with child. The young noble man accoſts her the firſt time with a great deal of reſpect and ceremony, and after having tied a very fine jewel about her neck, he diverts himſelf in private for ſome days with her, and ſo returns home: If ſhe proves with child, it is well, if not, ſhe commonly chuſes ſome *Brahman* or other to try his ſtrength whether he can get her with child. When a *Malabar* king dies, the corps is burnt three days after. All his ſubjects, from the next ſucceſſor to the meaneſt child, ſhave themſelves from head to foot, leaving no hair, except what is on the eye-brows and eye-lids. They are alſo obliged to abſtain from the uſe of *Bethel* for the ſpace of 13 days, and if any one ſhould be found to chew *Bethel* during that time, they cut off his lips. During theſe 13 days they dare eat neither fiſh nor fleſh, and the fiſhermen are forbidden to fiſh upon pain of death. Conſiderable alms are given to the poor out of the king's coffers, and the *Brahmans* are provided with victuals at the publick charge. After the expiration of theſe 13 days, every one is at liberty to eat what he pleaſes, except the new king, who is tied to the ſame rules for a whole year after; during which time, he muſt neither have the hair of his head or of his body cut, nor pare his nails: He is obliged to ſay certain prayers every morning, and muſt eat but once a day. Some time before dinner he bathes himſelf, which done, he muſt forbear to caſt his eyes upon any body till after he has taken food. Towards the latter end of this mourning year, his next ſucceſſor in the kingdom, the other princes of the royal blood, and other perſons of the chiefeſt quality attend the new king, and pay their homage to him, in the preſence of many thouſands; at which time the new king declares his next ſucceſſor, and the others each in his degree; which done, he confirms the lords there preſent in their reſpective places and offices. He that is declared the next ſucceſſor to any new king, is oblig'd from that time not to appear at court as long as the king lives; but thoſe princes who are to ſucceed him may continue there. Before the above-mentioned 13 days are expired, the new king has not the leaſt authority in the kingdom, which they take for a general maxim here, to ſee whether any body elſe will lay claim to the ſucceſſion: But, after the expiration of this time, the great men of the kingdom, and chief officers of ſtate, engage the new king by a ſolemn oath, to maintain the laws made by his predeceſſor, to pay his debts, and to endeavour the recovery of the territories loſt

Burials of the Malabar *kings.*

1662. under the reigns of his predeceſſors. Whilſt he takes the oath he lays his right hand upon an oil caſk, in which are ſet up many lighted wicks, and with a drawn ſword, which he holds in his left, touches a jewel ſet in gold within the caſk. This done, they ſtrew rice upon his head with a great deal of ceremony, and certain forms of prayers, turning their faces to the ſun. In the ſame manner, all the princes of the blood, and other great men ſwear fealty to the new king. During the firſt 13 days after the king's deceaſe, the ſole adminiſtration of the government is lodged in the lord chancellor, who has alſo the management of the treaſury, without whom the king cannot take or diſpoſe of the publick money, unleſs it be in caſe of the greateſt neceſſity. It is alſo the chancellor who puts the king's mandates in execution. The firſt in rank next to the king are thoſe call'd by them *Kaimales*, then the *Brahmans*, who are in great eſteem in thoſe courts, the king of *Calicut* himſelf being of that ſect, and wearing the twiſted cord. After the *Brahmans* come the *Nayros*, or military order, the true off-ſpring of their ancient nobility; then come the vulgar or common people, call'd *Moukois*, or *Poulias*, or *Parvas:* The king is the only judge here, before whom are brought all ſuch as have committed any crime, or refuſe to pay their debts: In his abſence certain great men of the court determine all affairs of any moment; but if a difference ariſes betwixt two or more *Moukois* or any ſtrangers, he that thinks himſelf aggrieved, makes his complaint to the next *Nayros* he meets, who is obliged to do him juſtice immediately, without receiving any reward, unleſs the plaintiff will voluntarily give him a preſent: This holds in matters of ſmall conſequence, for all matters of moment are decided before the king in perſon. Their ordinary puniſhments are impriſonments, or the loſs of a joint of a limb; if the crime be capital the malefactor is thrown to the elephants. They have no other priſons but what are in the royal palaces. In caſe of any difference betwixt two *Pagans*, when the truth is to be verified by a ſolemn oath, they put one hand into boiling oil, or elſe lay hold of a piece of red hot iron; ſometimes they ſwim croſs a river ſwarming with venomous creatures; it being their opinion, that if they have ſpoke the whole truth, they ſhall not receive any hurt; but the trial with the hot iron is moſt generally received. When the *Malabar* kings or their governors intend to inflict a puniſhment upon the inhabitants of a certain place, they ſurround it with wooden ſtakes like an encloſure, out of which they muſt not ſtir, neither may they buy or ſell, or have the leaſt communication with others, till the ſame be removed again under pain of death. This is ſometimes done alſo before the doors of private perſons.

A peculiar way of taking an oath.

1662.

All the *Pagans* here, as well *Brahmans* as the *Nayros* and *Moukois*, burn the carcaſſes of their deceaſed friends; tho' this was more univerſally practis'd before the *Portugueſe* and *Dutch* introduced and ſettled the chriſtian religion here. They take peculiar care to provide in their life-time as much fine ſcented wood and other precious drugs as they think requiſite for the burning of their bodies to aſhes, which is afterwards divided among their relations and friends, who preſerve them, and at their feſtivals mix them with water, and paint their faces with them. When a *Brahman* happens to die, his widow is obliged, as a demonſtration of her affection towards her deceas'd huſband, to burn herſelf; this is commonly done under the noiſe of ſeveral muſical inſtruments, to ſuppreſs the doleful outcries of the dying perſon, and in the preſence of their next kindred. However they may excuſe themſelves as to this point if they pleaſe, but then they are branded with infamy, their hair is cut off cloſe, which they muſt not let grow to any length again; they are excluded from the ſociety of other women, nor are allow'd to marry again. Notwithſtanding which, many chuſe rather to diſpenſe with theſe diſadvantages than to burn themſelves. The wives of the *Nayres* are not obliged to this cuſtom, tho' there are not wanting inſtances, that they have thrown themſelves into the flames which conſum'd their huſband's carcaſs; the men are not engaged to mourn for their wives, except that they are forbidden to marry again.

Their funerals.

The marriages of the richer and better ſort are celebrated here with a great deal of ſolemnity; the firſt thing they do after matters are agreed betwixt them, is to repair to the *Pagode* or temple, where the prieſts perform certain ceremonies; after this, the friends and relations of the new married couple, both men and women, lead the bride for 15 days conſecutively to the bridegroom's houſe, where they are entertain'd at his charge; moſt of the women ſinging and playing upon flutes, ſmall drums, and other muſical inſtruments; the bride and bridegroom are placed together very richly attir'd, eſpecially with jewels, to ſuch an exceſs, that they have been computed to amount ſometimes to 200000 crowns. The room is hung with fine ſilk hangings interwoven with gold; and among other things, a plate with *Bethel* offer'd to every one there preſent; nay, even to thoſe that are ſtrangers; towards

Their marriages.

1662. the evening the women reconduct the bride to her houſe. At the expiration of the 15 days, the bride and bridegroom are mounted on an elephant richly accouter'd, ſo as to face one another; the elephant is led by a *Nayros*, and ſurrounded by the friends and relations on foot; thus they are conducted thro' the whole city, and are ſure always to ſtop at the doors of any of their neareſt kinfolks, relations or particular friends, who preſent them with *Bethel*, fruits and ſweet meats, and anoint the head of the elephant with ſweet ſcented waters; they are very careful not to miſs any of their friends houſes, for if any ſuch thing ſhould happen, they would look upon it as a ſignal affront. When they come to the *Pagode* they diſmount, and after they have tarried there for ſome time, return to the bride's houſe, where the marriage is conſummated, each of the gueſts being obliged to preſent the *Nayros* that led the elephant with a coco nut.

They begin their new year in *September*, but have no fix'd day, which they regulate according to the deciſion of the aſtrologers and conjurers, who pretend to find out by their art the very hour which is likely to be the moſt fortunate for the beginning of the year. All thoſe that are above 15 years of age cover their faces that day, for fear of caſting their eyes upon any thing; thus they are led by children to the temple, where uncovering themſelves, they fix their eyes upon what object they find directly before them; if this happen to be an idol (which their temples are full of) they have a peculiar veneration for it, they look upon it as a good omen that the next year will prove proſperous to them.

Their writing. All over *Malabar* they uſe a peculiar language call'd by them *Malkama*. Paper they have none, but inſtead of it write upon the leaves of the wild coco-trees, with an iron pencil or pen; which contain not only their religious ceremonies, but likewiſe the whole ſeries of their moſt antient hiſtories. Theſe leaves they cut all in the ſame ſhape of the breadth of two inches, and two hands length; of theſe they lay together as many as they think fit, and put a ſmall ſtick thro' them on the top; which done, they faſten the ſtick on both ends to the leaves with a pack-thread, which they looſen as often as they have occaſion to peruſe them. Each of theſe leaves is call'd *Ola* by the *Malabars*. They exceed all the *European* writers in ſwiftneſs, which they perform with that dexterity, as to turn their faces frequently from the leaves, and to entertain others with talking whilſt they are writing. The *Malabar* tongue is very difficult to be learn'd, by reaſon of its multitude of words, one and the ſame thing being expreſs'd by different terms; nay, each day throughout the year is diſtinguiſh'd by a peculiar name. Several *Portugueſe* jeſuites have attempted to give us an inſight into the *Malabar* tongue, and among the reſt father *Gaſpar Aquilar*. They have their peculiar letters, which are very ancient, and reſembling the *Syriack* characters. 1662.

Their religious worſhip. The inhabitants of *Malabar*, as we told you before, are either natives, or deſcended from foreigners; the laſt of which being firſt come thither out of *Arabia*, are *Mahometans*, as the natives are *Pagans*. Some are of opinion, that all the kings of *Malabar* follow one and the ſame religion, but that their ſubjects are divided into 18 ſeveral ſects; but, as far as ever I could learn by the moſt exact enquiry I was able to make, all the natives of *Malabar*, as well *Brahmans* as *Nayros* and *Moukois*, perform their religious worſhip in the ſame manner; for they adore their idols, and the ſun, as they riſe in the morning. In their temples you ſee a golden cow, or ſome other image, unto which they pay their devotions; which is the reaſon that neither the *Brahmans*, *Nayros* nor *Moukois* will kill this beaſt, but pay ſuch reverence to it, that they paint the walls of their houſes with its dung mix'd with water; thus, when the king of *Calicut* is to bathe himſelf, fifteen maids with cow-dung in their ſilver baſons, plaiſter the rooms with it thro' which he is to paſs twice aday. Their chief God they call *Parabramma*, with three ſons near him, in remembrance of which the *Brahmans* wear a cord twiſted of three threads on their bare ſkin. They not only worſhip man, but, as I told you, the beaſts alſo, and erected temples for them, exceeding in magnificence thoſe of the ancient *Romans*. There is one temple dedicated to the ape, the gallery of which is ſupported by 700 marble columns. Beſides the cow they pay likewiſe a godly veneration to the elephant, it being their opinion, that the ſouls of men tranſmigrate into thoſe beaſts. They have many books, which contain an account of their religious ceremonies, much reſembling the ancient *Greek* and *Roman* fables. The prieſts and *Brahmans* keep theſe books from the ſight of the vulgar, theſe being their oracles, unto which they have recourſe for their prophecies, to blind theſe poor wretches, as has been confeſs'd by ſome converted *Brahmans*. They make however much more account of religion than the *Nayros*; for they daily provide (at the king's charge) a conſiderable quantity of boil'd rice in their temples,



A Malabar Shewing tricks with Serpents.

1662. temples, which is distributed among the poor, or given to any body else that will ask for it, this being not look'd upon as ignominious among them. They keep continually burning lamps in their temples, and their prophets are almost cover'd with bells, which when they dance and make other awkard postures make a great noise; the *Moukois* have their own temples, which are nastily kept; they don't frequent them above once a month, *viz.* at the new moon, because they can spare no more time from their daily labour: At the entrance, each of them is presented with some ashes mix'd with water. The *Nayros* go commonly once a day to their temples, where each mutters out a short prayer; these temples are dispos'd throughout the whole countrey, and are most frequented at certain days, when they repair thither with a great deal of devotion; some for 20 or 30 leagues, for they have their appointed feasts, but two or three before all the rest. The chiefest is that of the new-years day, when the *Nayros* come to pay their reverence to the king, who receives them standing at a window, and throws a certain quantity of *Bethel* to each, and some gold and silver among them, as well as the rest of his subjects that appear there.

The *Malabar* kings, *Brahmans* and *Nayros*, pay likewise their devotions to serpents, which they consider as evil spirits made by God to torment mankind for their sins. You meet here with certain vagabonds who carry serpents in a basket, with some bran for their food, hanging on a stick, carried on the shoulders of two fellows; some of these serpents are six, seven or nine foot long, of a grass green colour, and not above an inch thick; some are very large and bulky, with grey spots; so soon as these *Malabar* vagabonds begin to play upon a certain instrument like a bagpike, the serpents set themselves upright upon their tails, twist themselves in a most surprizing manner, and soon after raise their fins or bristles, which are near the head, and fall on with such fury, as if they would tear one another to pieces, to the no small terror of the spectators.

The Malleans.

On the tops of the high rocky mountains of *Malabar* (on the foot of which live the christians of *St. Thomas*) dwells a certain nation call'd the *Malleans*, they have a pretty good tillage about 13 or 14 leagues from *Madura* call'd *Priata*. According to the description given us by *Plutarch* and *Curtius*, and the resemblance of their names, these may not unlikely be the same mention'd by them as the most warlike nation of all the *Indians*, *Alexander* the great having receiv'd a mortal wound as he was attacking one of their cities. Now adays 1662. they don't inhabit any cities, towns or villages, but only certain enclosures in the valleys betwixt the rocks; their houses are built of canes very low, and plaister'd up with loom or clay. Some of them live in the woods, these make their houses of wood, which they remove from tree to tree, to secure themselves against the elephants and tygers. The first they catch in holes cover'd with the branches of trees, with some earth on the top; they also cultivate the ground, but in a very slender manner, tho' their valleys would be very fruitful if they were duly manag'd. They have but one wife at a time, who goes abroad a hunting with them, or wherever they go, whereas the *Pagan Malabars* marry generally several women. They chiefly differ from the other *Malabars* in their complexion, are just and honest, good natur'd, charitable, without deceit; for the rest, courageous, ingenious and cunning; they pretend to converse with the devils, only out of curiosity to know the event of things; the custom of the other *Malabars* and *Indians*, who hurt others by their sorceries, being unknown to them. They pay a great deal of deference to the sepulchres of their ancestors, and if they happen to be defiled, they look upon it to be an ill omen. Upon their festivals they wear a long gown, with a turbant, as the *Mahometans* do; but at other times they go half naked, like as the other *Malabars* do. They have holes in their ears and noses, in which they hang gold rings and jewels; a custom common also to the *Pagan Malabar* women, who look upon this as their chief ornament, especially to wear such things in one of their nostrils. At their feasts and festivals, the maidens play upon rush-pipes and small flutes and drums; theft is a thing unknown among the *Malabars*, every one living in his house in a profound security, with open doors; sometimes the inhabitants of a whole enclosure transfer their habitations to another. Part of the *Malabars* acknowledge the king of *Turbula*, part the king of *Pugnati Perimal* for their superiors, unto whom they pay some yearly tribute, yet with the entire preservation of their liberty, they being govern'd by their own laws, under captains or judges of their nation, call'd by them *Arley*, each of them has commonly 5000 or 6000 under his district; besides which, each enclosure is govern'd by its own judge, call'd *Pandera*, unto whom they pay strict obedience.

Before 1599, when they began first to be instructed in the *Romish* religion, by the assiduity of the then archbishop of *Goa*, they were all pagans, but since that time,

a good

1662. a good number of them have embraced chriſtianity; eight of their beſt men, among whom were three *Pandaras*, with their whole families, firſt received baptiſm, who being follow'd by many others, a church dedicated to St. *Michael* was built in the village of *Priata*. Before their converſion they had no temples erected in honour of their idols, neither did they ſacrifice with feaſting, dancing and ſuch like ceremonies, but each family had its domeſtick god, unto whom they paid their devotions. They are much more eſteem'd among the *Malabars*, than their common people, neither are they look'd upon as unclean by them, no more than the chriſtians of *St. Thomas*, if they happen to touch a *Nayros*; they keep ſcarce any commerce with the neighbouring nations, even not with the *Thomiſts* themſelves, who live at the foot of the ſame mountains. Their weapons are the ſame as the reſt of the *Malabars* uſe, *viz.* a bow and arrows pointed with a broad iron. They uſe alſo ſcimeters or hangers, and a peculiar ſort of fire arms, ſuch as are no where elſe to be ſeen among the *Malabars*. On the foot of the mountain inhabited by the *Malabars* call'd *Karatkara*, bordering upon the kingdom of *Karanarata*, ſtands a church belonging to theſe *Thomiſts* or chriſtians of *St. Thomas*, dedicated to St. *Auſtin*, becauſe the inhabitants owe their converſion to certain fryers of that order.

Products of Malabar.

Malabar, as I told you before, is a countrey abounding in divers ſorts of fruits, ſuch as the *Indies* commonly afford, of the choiceſt of which we will give you a ſhort deſcription here.

Coco-tree.

All along the ſea-ſhore of *Malabar*, and the rivers near the ſea-ſide, the *Indian* palm or coco-tree, grows in ſandy and brackiſh grounds; the *Malabars* call it *Tenga*, the *Brahmans Mado*, and in the *Malabar* tongue it is call'd *Kalappa*. Its trunk, which is of an aſh colour, riſes ſometimes to the height of 95 feet; ſuch I have ſeveral times meaſured my ſelf near the city of *Koulang*; it has commonly 16 inches diameter, tho' ſometimes it is ſo thick, as ſcarce to be graſped by a man; and is of the ſame thickneſs from the bottom to the top; the wood is ſpongy, and the pith as white as paper. However the trunk does not grow up ſtrait, but is jointed, without any branches, but only on the top, where commonly ſprout forth 16 or 18, and in a very large tree ſometimes 28, which bear green large leaves like reeds, being about a finger's length broad, and about two foot long. The root of this tree is very ſmall in proportion of its bigneſs, and does not reach deep under ground, but creeps juſt under its ſurface, ſo that it ſeems next to a miracle, how theſe high trees are able to withſtand the fury of the winds. The fruit, call'd commonly coco-nuts, after the *Portugueſe*, who call them *Coquo* and *Cocoe*, grow at the ends of the branches, about 6, 8, or 10 in a bunch; a bunch weighing ſometimes from 60 to 100 pounds weight; each ripe nut exceeds the bigneſs of a luſty man's head, being of a triangular figure, and cover'd with a double peel; the firſt is an inch thick, conſiſting of many threads, extending length-wiſe round the fruit; the outſide is of an aſh colour, but inwardly inclining to red; the next peel is hard and brown, which contains the peel. Before they are ripe, they are of a pale yellow colour, and afterwards turn dark green, having at one end a buſh of ſmall leaves, reſembling our turnep leaves. The pith is white, inclining to yellow, about an inch thick, and to the ſecond peel, the remaining hollowneſs being fill'd with liquor, and containing according to the bigneſs of the unripe nut, a pint of liquor, which in the ripe one diminiſhes by degrees, and encreaſes the bulk of the peel. This liquor is good to drink, the pith is ſweet, and of no ungrateful taſte, only a little flat. The bloſſom, which is not unlike that of the cheſnuts, appears at the ends of the branches which produce the fruit, which ripens in three months time. The pith dried, may be kept and tranſported like cheſnuts; if it be powder'd and mixt with ſugar and cinnamon, it taſtes very well, augments the ſeed, and is a ſtrong provocative. When the *Nayros* are to gather the nuts, they climb with moſt wonderful nimbleneſs to the tops of theſe high trees, where they cut off as many branches as are ripe, and let them fall down upon the ground. Beſides the fruit, this tree affords alſo a certain liquor, call'd by them *Sury*, and by the *Europeans* palm-wine: When they are to gather this liquor, they only cut off one of its branches, from whence iſſues the liquor, which falls into a veſſel of bamboe, hung under it for that purpoſe; if they draw too much liquor at a time, the branches turn brown, and the tree produces no more nuts. Theſe trees being planted in a ſtreight line, the *Nayros* lay ſticks reaching from one to other, by which means they get to the branches, where they have faſten'd the veſſel that receives the liquor. This liquor, whilſt freſh is very good to drink, and will inebriate like wine; but if kept in the ſun, turns to vinegar in an hours time. But tho' they take never ſo much care of it, what is gather'd about noon, will turn by night taſte ſouriſh the next day, and turn quite to vinegar the day after that. The liquor

which

A Young Cocoa Tree

An Old Cocoa Tree

The Pynang Tree

Wild? Canonon Tree

A Cocoa Tree

A Branch with Cocoa Nuts

Cocoa Nuts

1662. which diſtils from the young trees, is not ſo ſtrong and ſpirituous as that gather'd from the old ones, but the firſt affords a greater quantity. After this liquor has been kept 24 hours, they diſtil a ſpirit of it, with the addition of a ſmall quantity of the oil of clove; this is by the *Indians* call'd *Arack*, and by ſome *Tula* or *Mype*. Out of this liquor they prepare vinegar, thus: They put the veſſels in which the liquor has been gather'd, in lime 15 days, during which time it ferments, caſting groſs ſediments to the bottom; the clear is very good vinegar. Out of the ſame ſugar they make a kind of liquor call'd *Jagra*. They put a ſmall quantity of lime in the veſſel which contains the liquor, as much as is ſufficient to make it turn red; for if you put in too much lime, the liquor turns whiter and whiter, but if you put too little, it does not change its colour. The liquor thus mix'd with a ſufficient quantity of lime, muſt be boil'd and ſtirred continually with a ſpoon, till it comes to the conſiſtency of red ſugar; where it is to be obſerved, that if there be not lime enough added, it will produce no ſugar, but if too much, part of it will ſettle to the bottom, which muſt be taken out before you can boil it into a ſugar. If you intend to make white ſugar or *Jayra*, you muſt take care to pour the liquor mix'd with the lime out of one pot into another (to ſeparate the ſuperfluous lime) which you muſt repeat three times; as for inſtance, if your liquor be gather'd in the morning, you muſt pour it into another veſſel by noon, and repeat the ſame a ſecond time about two a clock, and a third time before night, and then boil it. What liquor is gather'd in the night-time keeps longer than that gather'd in the day-time. Whilſt it is freſh, its taſte is not much unlike our whey, unto which the inhabitants add ſome raiſins, and make it taſte like *Spaniſh* wine. The trunk of the coco-tree is uſed for timber in the building of houſes and ſhips, the branches and leaves to write upon and to cover houſes with, as alſo by the baſket-makers. Out of the hard ſhell of the nuts (ſome of which are of a pale, others of a dark brown colour) they make drinking cups and other veſſels, which they poliſh, and ſometimes are edg'd with ſilver. The hairy ſubſtance, call'd *Kayer*, is uſed by the rope-makers; theſe ropes don't rot eaſily: They alſo make matches of them, which burn very fiercely. In the *Maldive* iſlands (where theſe trees are found in vaſt quantities) they ſometimes equip whole veſſels out of the coco-trees; the body of the veſſels being made of the trunk of a tree, without any nails or other iron-work; the ſail and ropes of the hairy ſubſtance, the proviſions conſiſting of the liquor and kernels of the coco-nuts, their drinking and other veſſels being made of the ſhell, and their hammocks, quilts and other implements of the leaves. In ſhort, this tree furniſhes the *Indians* upon occaſion, with all that is neceſſary for their ſubſiſtence, being very fruitful in marſhy and low grounds, but bears not ſo great a quantity of fruit, neither ſo big in the mountainous countries. The coco-tree is in its prime from the 25th to the 30th year, and affords the moſt fruit and liquor; from the time it begins to bear, the ripe fruits fall off, and others grow continually in their ſtead, but when it begins to grow old, the fruit grows leſſer and leſſer. This tree will continue till it is 100 years old; when the ſmall branches and leaves begin to turn yellow, it is an infallible ſign of its decay. It is produced out of the kernel of the coco-nut; theſe the *Indians* put into the ground till they begin to ſprout, then they make as many holes as they intend to plant trees, and of ſuch a depth, that the tops of the leaves don't reach beyond the ſurface of the ground; then they throw a handful or two of ſand (unleſs it be in ſandy ground) and half a handful of ſalt in each hole, upon which they put the kernel, which they cover with the ſame ground they had taken out of the hole before, and every other day water them, till they are ſure the nuts have taken root. They plant them with the point downwards, out of the oppoſite part of which at firſt ſhoot forth two or three broad leaves, after which comes the right leaves, and ſoon after the ſmall ſprouts, which fall off as new ones ſucceed, till the tree comes to its full growth. The young tree commonly begins to bear in the fifth year after its planting; great care is taken that the horſe-flies don't ſpoil the young trees. This is a kind of worm not unlike our hornets, with two ſharp horns, but not ſo big; this worm gets to the pith of the tree, which he conſumes till the tree dies, unleſs he be taken out in time, at which the *Malabars* are very dextrous, and then the tree will recover. It has been obſerved that this tree in the third year after its planting, has its branches in their perfection, and from that time the branches begin to fall off. Thoſe branches are at that time about five or ſix yards long, tho' the ſtem on which they grow is not above two foot high, and about a foot in circumference. Every month you ſee commonly a new branch come forth, and then the old ones fall off, but in the ſummer and dry ſeaſons they fall off more frequently than in rainy weather; theſe branches come to their full growth in

1662. three months. I cauſed above 4000 coco-trees to be planted near *Koiland*, but moſt of them came to nothing, being not carefully look'd after by my ſucceſſors. There are divers kinds of this tree, which are diſtinguiſh'd by the fruit, but eſpecially by the watery ſubſtance found within the ſhells of the nuts.

Wild cinnamon trees.

Malabar produces prodigious quantities of wild cinnamon trees, but the cinnamon is neither in ſmell nor in goodneſs comparable to that which grows in the iſle of *Ceylon*; this iſland, and that of *Floris* being the only ones where the true cinnamon grows. The *Portugueſe* call this wild cinnamon *Canella de Mato*, *i. e. Wood-Cinamon*, the *Malabars Larva* or *Bahona*, as alſo *Kaunema*, *i. e. Sweet-Wood*, from the word *Kau*, which in their language ſignifies wood, and *Nema i. e.* ſweet, the *Malayans Kais Manis*, the *Zingaleſe* or inhabitants of *Ceylon Kurudo* or *Kurundo*, and the *Arabians Querfaa* and *Querfe*, as alſo *Kerfak*. Before the *Dutch* got into poſſeſſion of *Ceylon*, they uſed to tranſport this cinnamon, but ſince that time they make no account of it. The tree is of the bigneſs of our orange tree, leſs or more, but not large as the cinnamon trees in *Ceylon*. It has abundance of branches, leaves not unlike the laurel leaves, but broader, of a paler colour, with three diſtinct veins. The bloſſom is white, almoſt without any ſcent; the fruit not unlike the wild olives, firſt green, afterwards inclining to red, and when ripe, black ſhining. It has alſo a kernel not unlike the wild olive, which is covered with a pulp like the ſame, out of which iſſues a kind of green oily liquor, of the ſame ſcent as the laurels, biting and bitteriſh upon the tongue. The rind of this tree (or the cinnamon it ſelf) is thick, without any remarkable taſte, tho' the ſmall ſprouts or tacks are ſomewhat bitter, yet don't come near to the cinnamon of the iſle of *Ceylon*.

Oil of cinnamon and volatile ſalt.

Out of the rind of the root they prepare a kind of volatile ſalt, which they call camphire, ſwimming upon the ſurface of the water of a yellow colour, clear, ſtrong and well ſcented, ſharp upon the tongue, and very penetrating, being ſo volatile, that if expoſed to the air, it evacuates immediately. This camphire is exceeding white, excelling the common camphire in its ſcent; the particles of this camphire are inſenſibly mix'd with the oil, whilſt yet warm, immediately after its diſtillation; but as ſoon as the oil begins to cool, they adhere to one another in divers ſhapes, and ſettle to the bottom. This camphire is very volatile, and ſo fiery that it takes fire in an inſtant, and leaves not the leaſt impurity behind, after it is conſumed. The oil approaches very near both in ſmell and taſte to the camphire, and is ſo volatile, that if ſome of it be dropped upon woollen ſtuffs, even of the niceſt colours, it evaporates immediately, without leaving the leaſt ſpot behind. It is alſo very combuſtible, burning with a white and blue flame; if put upon the fire, it evacuates in a inſtant, and turns into a white ſmoak, which is very apt to take fire. This oil mixt with gunpowder, will ſet it on fire by degrees, yet not till a great part of the oily ſubſtance be evacuated. If mix'd with ſulphur or ſalt-peter, or with both, it will take fire immediately and conſume the ſulphur and ſalt-peter, remaining without the leaſt alteration. If you put the oil upon the fire, and receive the flame which evaporates from thence, in a thick cloth, a white kind of ſalt will ſettle in it, which is the camphire itſelf. This oil will alſo in time ſeparate ſome of thoſe camphirous particles, which falling to the bottom, render the oil more clear and pure. The oil drawn out of the *Malabar* cinnamon, is clear, tranſparent, yellowiſh and well ſcented, ſwimming upon the water; whereas out of the common cinnamon of *Ceylon*, beſides that oil which riſes on the top of the water, another is alſo drawn, which ſinks to the bottom. The oil diſtill'd from the leaves is thin at firſt, turns yellowiſh by degrees, and tranſparent, and of a greeniſh colour at laſt, being very ſweet, but ſharp at laſt, having ſomething of cinnamon; it ſinks to the bottom of the water. 1662.

Itsvirtues.

The oil made out of the rind of the root, with its volatile ſalt (the camphire) is indow'd with greater virtues. It is a ſovereign remedy againſt all lameneſs, if applied outwardly, and gives immediate eaſe in the gout; it may alſo be taken inwardly with very good ſucceſs, being a great remedy againſt malignant fevers, a great ſudorifick, expelling the wind, procuring an appetite in the ſtomach, and conſuming the ſtone both in the kidneys and bladder, and is good in the cough, and many other chronick diſtempers; to be ſhort, it is the moſt univerſal remedy made uſe of there by the *Dutch* in their hoſpitals. The camphire is very proficuous in all diſtempers in the womb, promotes the monthly terms, and is a great ſudorifick, being uſed in all reſpects like the common camphire. The oil diſtill'd out of the bark of the tree, is an excellent remedy in all diſtempers of the ſtomach, and in the cholick, proceeding from a cold cauſe; the water of cinnamon is cordial; the oil of the leaves is good againſt the cholick, if applied outwardly to the belly, and helps lameneſs.

In

1662. In the woods of *Malabar* about *Kananor*, grows a certain ſhrub in great plenty, call'd *Zua* by the *Malabars*, at *Surate Dekan*, and *Cachora* by the *Canarins*; by the *Arabians* and *Perſians Zerumbet*, and *Zeruba* by the *Turks*. If planted or ſow'd, it will grow alſo in many other places. By ſome it is reckoned a kind of ginger, and not without reaſon, its leaves reſembling thoſe of the ginger, only that they are ſomewhat larger, as is alſo the root, which being cut in pieces and dried, is thus tranſported into foreign parts.

Zua or Zerumbet.

The tree call'd Macre *or* Macer.

On the coaſt of *Malabar*, in the iſle of *St. Cruce*, belonging to the kingdom of *Cochin*, near the river *Manatte*, grows a certain tree call'd *Macre* by the *Brahman* phyſicians, by the chriſtians there *Makuyre*, and by the *Portugueſe Arbore de las Canaras* and *Arbore Sancto*, *i. e.* the *Tree of the Bloody Flux* and *the holy Tree*. The ſaints of this countrey have this ſaying of it; *Kura Santea Macre Niſtuſa garul:* i. e. *Macre was diſcover'd to mankind for their benefit by the Angels*. *Galen*, *Dioſcorides* and *Pliny* call it *Macer*, and *Avicenna Talisfar*; this tree ſpreads its branches in a large compaſs, being bigger than our elm-tree. Its leaves are ſeven foot long, and two broad, the uppermoſt ſide of a pale, and the undermoſt of a dark green colour. It is generally believ'd, that this tree produces no fruit, but only a kind of ſeed, of the bigneſs of a farthing, thin, yellowiſh, reſembling in taſte the kernel of an almond or peach-ſtone, cover'd with a white ſkin. It is encloſed in a kind of a bladder compoſed of two different peels. This bladder comes forth in the middle of the leaf, reſembling that which in *May* ſprouts forth on the elm-trees, except that it is ſomewhat broader and flatter. The leaf of this bladder is of the bigneſs of other leaves, but not ſo much pointed at the end, and narrow towards the ſtalk, of a deep yellow colour, cover'd with a kind of curl'd down from the ſtalk to the end. The root of this tree is not unlike that of the *Stene*-palm-tree, with large and thick roots ſpread at a great diſtance; the rind of thoſe roots is thick, rough, of an aſh-colour without, but white within; containing a juice like milk whilſt freſh, but turns yellow; when dry it is very aſtringent. This tree delights in few but ſandy grounds, and kills all other trees or ſhrubs near it. The rind of the root of this tree is in vaſt eſteem among the *Malabars*, as well as among the *Chineſe*, *Javaneſe*, *Malabars* and all *Bengale*; being look'd upon and made uſe of in their hoſpitals, as the moſt ſovereign remedy in the world, againſt looſeneſs and all manner of bloody fluxes. The *Indian* phyſicians, as well *Brahmans*, *Canarins*, as *Malabars*, cure with this rind whilſt freſh, powder'd and mix'd with butter-milk, the bloody flux; ſome infuſe half an ounce of the rind, dried and powder'd in a quartern of whey for 12 hours, which they give the patient twice a day, *viz.* in the morning and evening, immediately after they give the patient rice to eat, boil'd without ſalt or butter, and after that a chicken boil'd in the decoction of rice flour. If the diſtemper be very urgent, they add ſome *Opium* for the ſtrengthening of the ſtomach; and to ſtop vomiting, they mix a little maſtich with this rind, and give it in mint water. They tell you that a ſmall quantity of this rind, excels much in virtue a conſiderable number of the *Myrobolan* rinds, or of *Areka*; nay, they prefer it before the *Koru* of *Malabar* itſelf. The fruit, or rather ſeed, expels all ſorts of worms, and diſſolves the ſtone in the kidneys, being look'd upon likewiſe as a great preſervative both againſt the ſtone and cholick. Beſides the tree *Macer*, other trees grow here very different in kind, but agree in virtue with the *Macer* tree. 1662.

The tree Kuroda-pala.

The firſt of theſe two is by the *Malabars* call'd *Kurodapala*, or *Kuro*, and *Koru* by the *Canariins*, by the *Brahmans Kura*, and by the *Portugueſe* the *Malabar* ſhrub, its uſe having been firſt ſhewn them by the *Malabars*. This tree or ſhrub is not unlike a ſmall orange tree, eſpecially as to its leaves, except that the vein in the middle of the leaf, out of which come 8 or 9 on both ſides, is ſomewhat thicker. The bloſſom is yellow, and without the leaſt ſcent. *Garcias* ſays this tree is ſomewhat leſs than a common crab-tree, its leaves like a peach-tree, with a white bloſſom. It has a pale green and ſmooth bark, out of which, if cut with a knife, iſſues a milk-like juice, more viſcous than that which comes forth out of the *Macer* tree, bitteriſh of taſte; the *Malabar* phyſicians aſſign it a cooling quality. This tree affords an infallible remedy againſt all kinds of bloody fluxes, provided the groſs ill humours have been purged away before, without which the patient will ſoon have a relapſe. The *Malabars* (according to *Garcias*) prepare a compounded water out of the root, unto which they attribute great virtues againſt the bloody flux; they take 8 ounces of this root well beaten to powder, and infuſed in whey, and the liquor of boil'd rice, unto this they add the ſeeds of purſley, black cummin and coriander, each an ounce and a half; of the *Myrobolan* rind 7 drachms, and freſh butter 2 ounces; this they diſtil, and mix a quartern of this diſtill'd water with half a quartern of *Arack*, and give it the patient. They apply this water alſo in

form

1662. form of a clyſter in the night time, by reaſon of the exceſſive heat of the days in thoſe parts. Inwardly they commonly give it twice a day, *viz.* in the morning about ſix a clock, and in the afternoon about two. Their diet is rice mix'd with fat, and chickens boil'd in the decoction of rice, which they call *Kaaje* in their language, but the uſe of wine is abſolutely forbidden, unleſs it be in an inveterate bloody flux, to keep up the ſpirits. Some give only the juice of the ſhrub whilſt green, of which they give a quartern and a half in the morning, and as much in the evening; and to take away the bitteriſh taſte, allow the patient to drink a little whey after it. In caſe of neceſſity they mix ſome *Opium* with it. It is alſo a good remedy to ſtrengthen the ſtomach, and to ſtop vomiting, if taken in mint water, or mix'd with ſome maſtich pow-der'd. The root taken inwardly with the decoction of rice, or applied outwardly is very good againſt the piles. The decoction of the leaves, and thoſe of tamarinds, make an excellent fomentation for ſwell'd legs, held over the hot ſteam, and a cloth dip'd in the ſame decoction is with good ſucceſs applied in the looſeneſs and dropſy.

Pavate *or* Vaſa Veli. The third ſort of thoſe vegetables which are us'd here againſt the bloody flux, is call'd by the *Malabars Pavate*, and *Vaſa Veli* by the *Brahmans*, and *Canarins*, and *Arbor contra las eryſipelas*, i. e. *the Tree againſt the St. Anthony's Fire.* It is a ſhrub not above 8 or 9 foot high, with a few branches and leaves, reſembling the ſmall leaves of orange-trees before they come to their full growth, green on both ſides; the bloſſom is white and ſmall, the ſeed round, in bigneſs like to that of the maſtich-tree; dark green at firſt, which turns black as it ripens. The ſtem and tacks are of an aſh-colour, the root either without ſcent or taſte, except that it is ſomewhat bitteriſh.

Jambos *or* Jambeiro. Among the fruit trees of *Malabar*, that which the inhabitants call *Jambos*, and the *Portugueſe Jambeiro*, muſt not be paſs'd by in ſilence. The *Malabars* and *Canarins* call the fruit *Jambali*, the *Arabians Tufa Indi*, the *Turks Alma*, and the *Perſians Tufat.* It is the common opinion, that this was firſt of all for the pleaſantneſs of its bloſſom, and excellency of its fruit, tranſplanted from *Malacca* (where it is found in great plenty) into all the other parts of the *Indies.* There are two kinds, reſembling one another in moſt reſpects, except in their fruit, which is ſomewhat different. Both are not unlike, as well in ſhape as bigneſs to our *European* apple-trees, and will grow without much cultivating in any ground, and bear fruit within 5 years; they take root very deep, a thing ſeldom obſerv'd among the *Indian* trees. Theſe trees are of a plea- 1662. ſant aſpect, ſpreading their branches to the height of a good plumb-tree. The bark, as well of the tree as of the branches, is of an aſh-colour and ſmooth; the wood brittle; the leaves alſo reſemble thoſe of the plumb-tree, but are ſomewhat more pointed at the end, being a palm in length, and not unlike the iron point of a long pike or lance. The upper ſide is dark, and the undermoſt pale green, with a ſtrait vein in the middle, which ſends out divers others on both ſides. The bloſſoms are both for ſcent and colour like our roſes, but inclining more to a purple colour; the firſt is of the bigneſs of a large pear, or of a gooſe egg, or rather bigger. They are of two ſorts; one of which is a dark red, inclining to black, generally without ſtones, excelling the other in taſte; the other is pale red, has a longiſh white ſtone of the bigneſs of a peach-ſtone, cover'd with a white rough ſkin; this, tho' inferior to the former, yet is of a moſt pleaſing taſte. Sometimes the firſt is abſolutely red, and theſe are of a purple colour, and ſmell like a roſe; the fruit is cover'd with ſo thin a peel, that no knife can ſeparate it from the pulp, which is accounted cold and moiſt; and ſo are the bloſſoms, notwithſtanding which they are very well ſcented, and for that reaſon in high eſteem among the inhabitants. The fruit is commonly eaten before dinner, or at the beginning of a meal; neither are they uſeleſs in phyſick, both the fruit and flowers preſerved, being preſcribed in violent burning fevers; having beſides their cooling quality, a certain virtue of comforting the ſpirits. This tree may well be accounted among the number of thoſe, which by the excellency of their fruit, and the agreeableneſs of their flowers, ſurprizes the beholders; for, whilſt you ſee one ſide of the tree bare of leaves and bloſſoms, the other is ſtor'd with fruit, which laſt, till the other ſide begins to renew its leaves; ſo that in one and the ſame tree you ſee a continual ſpring and autumn at once. Thus you never can caſt your eye upon this tree but you meet there either with bloſſom or fruit; and as the bloſſom drops underneath on the ground (which is frequently cover'd with thoſe purple colour'd flowers) others come forth in their ſtead; and whilſt ſome of the fruit are ripening, others are to be gathered. The beſt way to gather their fruit is to ſhake the tree, then they fall with eaſe; but if you endeavour to pull them off, the tacks are apt to break. Karkapuli.

The fruit *Karkapuli*, call'd *Kerkapoli* by the *Canarins*, is in ſhape and bigneſs like an orange; they are green at firſt, af-

1662. terwards turn yellow, and when ripe, white, of ſweet taſte, but a little tartiſh. In the centre of the pulp lies the ſeeds, flat and long, of the bigneſs of a joint of a finger, and are of a dark brown colour.

Koddam Pulli. The tree which bears this fruit is very tall, call'd *Koddam Pulli* by the *Malabars*, ſometimes *Otta Pulli*, and by the *Brahmans Danubos*, by the inhabitants of the iſle of *Ceylon Choroka*; the fruit is eaten, and uſed in phyſick among the *Indians*, being accounted an excellent remedy againſt looſeneſs, eſpecially if occaſioned by too much venery. Beſides which, the fruit before it is quite ripe, or the juice of it mix'd with butter-milk, or the fruit dried and powder'd mix'd with butter-milk and boil'd rice, is excellent good to acuate the appetite of the ſtomach. This juice alſo, as well as the dry fruit powder'd, is accounted a good remedy againſt the dimneſs, cataracts, and other infirmities of the eyes; they apply the juice, mix'd with ſome other herbs, to the nail of the great toe, on that ſide where the defect of the eye is. The midwives give it to women lately brought to bed, to expel the after-birth, and produce plenty of milk for ſuck. This fruit, when dried, is tranſported to foreign countries. There is another kind of this tree, bearing a round fruit and ſweet, of the bigneſs of a cherry, call'd *Karkapuli* by Mr. *Dinſhoten*; this tree is call'd *Karue Choraka* by thoſe of *Ceylon*, i. e. *ſweet Choraka*; out of the bark of both of theſe trees, if ſlit with a knife, iſſues a gum call'd *Gutta*, but that which comes from the *Kanka Choraka* is the beſt.

The uſe of aloe leaves among the Malabars. The uſe of aloe leaves is very frequent among the *Malabars*, a purge they boldly give not only to children, but alſo to women with child. They take of the aloe leaves 3 ounces cut very ſmall, theſe they boil with two drachms of black ſalt over an eaſy fire, and after they have ſtrain'd it, add to it an ounce of ſugar, and ſo let it ſtand the whole night in the air. The next morning about ſix a clock they give the patient this decoction cold, ordering him to abſtain from ſleep, and to walk about to promote its operation; three hours after he hath taken it, they give him a little chicken broth, with a few grains of maſtich in it, and an hour after that allow him to eat, and to take a little wine of the ſmalleſt ſort. They either increaſe or diminiſh the doſe of the decoction, according to the conſtitution of the patient.

There grows in *Malabar* a certain fruit of the bigneſs of a hazle nut, but is not quite ſo round and white; it grows on the tacks of a certain ſhrub which they ſow; it has no peculiar uſe in phyſick, tho' *Serapio* aſcribes to it a virtue of augmenting the ſeed, and promoting the birth in women; the ſame the *Malabars* do to this day, who call the fruit *Chevique lenga*, and in ſome places *Kurkas*, and thoſe of *Cambaiak Karpata*. If *Garcias* may be credited, this is the ſame fruit deſcribed by *Serapio* by the broken name of *Habel-culcul*, whereas it ſhould have been *Hab-alcul*, which ſignifies as much as the ſeed of *Culcul*. 1662. Chevique Lenga.

The tree call'd *Kumbulu* by the *Malabars*, and *Bon-Varo* by the *Brahmans*, grows very tall, with a trunk of that thickneſs, that a man can ſcarce graſp it. The leaves are a ſpan, and two or three inches long, and two palms broad, woolly at the end of the ſtalks, which are round, long and thick; at the extremities of the tacks, which ſprout forth out of the branches, grow certain yellow flowers in cluſters on ſhort ſtalks, conſiſting of five round and thick leaves. After theſe comes a fruit that's like a pear, full of juice, the pulp being of a yellowiſh colour, and a ſweetiſh taſte, but the juice when preſs'd out is deep yellow. They are green at firſt, next of a pale yellow, and turn reddiſh at laſt; in the centre of the fruit is a white ſmooth ſtone, ſhap'd like a pear, with a ſmall kernel in it. The decoction of the root, mix'd with a little rice, is a good remedy againſt the ague, which often follows the gout or rheumatiſm. Taken in butter-milk, or mix'd with the oil of *Sirchelem*, it expels the wind, and eaſes the pain; and the juice of the leaves taken with butter-milk, is good againſt the cholick.

The tree Ganſchi. The tree call'd *Ganſchi* by the *Malabars*, and *Schivanni* by the *Brahmans*, grows in ſandy grounds a great height and thickneſs, ſo that a man can ſcarce graſp the trunk, which as well as the branches has a bark of an aſh-colour without, but green within. The leaves hang on long, round and green ſtalks, being above a ſpan in length, and two palms broad, of an oblong figure. The bloſſoms faſtened to ſtalks which are pale green, ſweet, round and thin, each flower conſiſting of no more than three, and ſeldom of four leaves. After theſe comes the fruit, which is of a triangular figure, flattiſh, and of a green colour, hanging on long and green ſtalks, the ſeed being triangular, and the pulp very ſubſtantial; the decoction of the root is uſed againſt the gout, and apply'd to the affected part.

The tree Palega-Pajaneli. Of the tree *Palega* there are two kinds; one is call'd *Palega-Pajaneli* by the *Malabars*, and the other barely *Pajanel*. The *Palega-Pajaneli*, called *Davandiku* by the *Brahmans*, is very tall, with a trunk enough for a man to graſp, having an aſh-coloured bark, as well as the branches, which grow ſtrait upright, of a conſiderable thickneſs.

1662. The leaves hang on ſtalks, which ſhoot forth both out of the ſtem and branches of the tree. On the extremities of the branches grow certain cluſters of flowers ſhap'd like bells, conſiſting of ſix thick leaves; whitiſh or pale yellow within, and ſtreak'd with red on the out-ſide, the ſcent of which is offenſive to the noſtrils. The fruit which follows the flowers is about three ſpans long, of the breadth of a hand, and an inch thick, with a dark green peel. The pulp juicy and tender at firſt, but grows hard at laſt; the ſeed is very flat. The bark of the tree powder'd and mix'd with wine, applied to a wound, or broken bones, heals them. The decoction of the root is good againſt the dropſy; and the leaves, whilſt yet very young, mix'd with *Malabar* ſaffron, cures all ſorts of ulcers, if apply'd to them outwardly.

The ſecond kind of Pajaneli.

The ſecond kind of the *Pajaneli*, called *Davandiku* by the *Brahmans*, is likewiſe a very tall tree, whoſe branches ſhoot forth upright to a great height; it delights in ſandy grounds: The root ſpreads at a great diſtance, having a thick aſh-coloured rind. The trunk is of that thickneſs, that a man can ſcarce graſp it, of a brittle wood, with a dark aſh-coloured bark: The flowers are like the former, ſhap'd like bells, but have no more than five leaves. The fruit is the ſame: Of the juice of the leaves, and that of the fruit *Kareka*, or *Mirobolans* mix'd together, the *Malabars* make a black dye to dye their mourning cloaths with. The decoction of the rind of the root diſpels hard tumours if they be fomented with it.

Of the tree *Pala*, called *Santeru* by the *Brahmans*, there are four kinds; 1. *Pala*; 2. *Kuruta Pala*; 3. *Kadaga Pala*; 4. *Kaikotten Pala*: The firſt kind, called only *Pala*, is a high tree growing in ſandy places, and ſpreading its branches into a great circumference: The root, which has a dark yellow rind, reaches very deep into the ground, and contains a milky juice: The trunk is two or three fathoms thick, the bark of an aſh-colour, as is likewiſe the bark of the branches. The leaves grow four or five together, on ſtalks of an oblong figure, and towards the ſtalks full of a milky ſubſtance; the flowers grow in cluſters, having five whitiſh leaves of a ſtrong ſcent, but offenſive to the brains. The fruit which comes immediately after the bloſſom, do likewiſe hang in cluſters on ſmall tacks, being green huſks of about two ſpans length, but ſmall and flat, full of a milky juice or ſubſtance, as is the tree itſelf, which produces fruit but once a year, *viz.* in *January*.

The ſecond kind of *Pala* is by the *Malabars* called *Kurutu Pala*, by the *Brahmans Kudo*, being a tree from ſix to twelve foot high, the trunk about the thickneſs of a foot, with an aſh-coloured bark, as well as the branches. The leaves come forth out of the branches with their ſtalks, being of an oblong figure, and pointed at the end. The flowers grow on the extremities of the ſmall tacks, are white, and bigger than thoſe of the firſt kind, and have five long leaves. The fruit grows likewiſe in cluſters, being of an oblong figure, dark green at firſt, and as they ripen turn yellow. The huſk contains five, ſix or ſeven ſeeds. The tree bears fruit all the year round, but moſt in the rainy ſeaſon. The bark of the tree beaten to powder, and taken in warm water, is good againſt the looſe piles, but if taken in milk ſtops the bloody flux. 1662.

The third kind of *Pala*, called *Kadaga-Pala* by the *Malabars*, and *Alego-Kugo* by the *Brahmans*, is no higher than the *Kurutu-Pala*, and delights in ſandy grounds. The root does not go ſo deep underground as that of the *Pala*, the bark is of a dark brown colour; the trunk is of a foot circumference like the ſecond kind, but the leaves and bloſſom being alſo like the ſame. It bears long huſks like the *Pala*, but are ſomewhat thicker, of a green colour, a ſpan long, and full of a milky liquor. The bark of the trunk beaten to powder, and taken in butter-milk, ſtops the looſeneſs; and the rind of the root, taken in the ſame manner, cures the bloody flux. The decoction of the ſeeds is given in burning fevers, and kills the worms. The fourth kind, called *Kaikotten-Kala*, is very near the ſame with the third. Kaikotten-Kala.

There are two kinds of the tree called *Parva* by the *Malabars*; the firſt they call *Tindaparva*, and the ſecond *Anaparva*, and the *Brahmans Bendarli*. The *Tindaparva* grows to a great height in ſandy grounds, having a thick whitiſh root with a ſoft rind: The trunk is ſo thick that a man can ſcarce graſp it with his arms, having an aſh-coloured bark as well as the branches, which underneath the bark are of a dark brown colour. The leaves which are long, and pointed at the end, hang on ſhort ſtalks, as do likewiſe the flowers, conſiſting of four pale green and pointed leaves. The fruits are a kind of round berries, with a very thin peel, green at firſt, afterwards inclining to white, and turn red as they ripen. In the peel is encloſed a round kernel. The root beaten to powder and taken inwardly, is a ſovereign remedy againſt epileptick fits; and the decoction of the leaves diſperſes all pain, if the affected parts be well fomented with it.

The tree *Kavalkan*, as the *Malabars* call it, and *Bankar* by the *Brahmans*, grows in ſtony

1662. ſtony and ſandy grounds; its root, which is very thick, and covered with an aſh-coloured but ſoftiſh rind, ſtretching very deep underground. The trunk is ſo thick that a man can ſcarce graſp it with both his arms, covered with a thick bark, of an aſh-colour without, and pale green within. The wood is alſo white, and may be drawn into thread. The leaves are of an oblong figure, a ſpan and 2 or 3 inches long, pointed at the ends, hanging on long round and green ſtalks: The flowers conſiſting of five ſmall leaves ſprout out in cluſters, with green and hairy ſtalks. The fruit comes forth in bunches, three, four, or five together, being of the ſhape of an egg, with a thick and hard rind, containing nine or ten beans of the length of a finger each, but round and ſmooth, with a double peel: Theſe beans, when roaſted are good food. This tree bears bloſſom but once a year, *viz.* in *May*, and is not uſed in phyſick among the *Malabars*.

The tree Ambalam.

Of the tree *Ambalam* there are two kinds in *Malabar*; one is ſimply called *Ambalam*, or *Koduko Ambado*, (i. e. *Sweet Ambado*) by the *Brahmans*; the other, *Kat Ambalam*, or *Pee Ambalam*. The tree *Ambalam* grows to a great height in ſandy grounds, with its branches not ſpreading, but upright. The root which is very large, ſtretching with many twigs under ground. The trunk is of a great circumference, covered with a very thick bark; the wood being very ſoft: The leaves hang on ſmall green ſtalks or ſprouts, in bunches of five together; they are generally as long again as they are broad, ſmooth and ſoft, and of a light green on both ſides. Thoſe leaves which are neareſt to the ſmall twigs, are not ſo large as the reſt, of an agreeable ſcent, and tartiſh, not unlike the rind of the *Indian Mangoes*. The bloſſom or flower do likewiſe come forth out of ſmall and green ſprouts, are of a whitiſh colour, ſhaped like ſtars, having five or ſix leaves. The buds of theſe flowers are round, and green at firſt, but turn white before they open; which when it happens, the leaves fall from the tree, which continues bare as long as it ſtands in bloſſom, but as the fruit grows, new leaves come forth by degrees. The fruit grows in cluſters, being of an oval figure, and pretty hard, not unlike to the *Indian Mangoes*: Before they come to maturity their rind is dark brown, and full of four juice, but when they begin to ripen turn light green, and at laſt yellow, of an agreeable tartiſh taſte, and are eaten by the inhabitants. In the midſt of the fruit is a very large ſtone. This tree bears twice every year, *viz.* in *January* and *May*. The root of it thruſt into the matrix ſtops the ſuperfluous monthly times. The bark powder'd and taken in butter-milk is good againſt the 1662. boſeneſs, and ſo is the juice mix'd with ice. The decoction of the wood is a good remedy againſt the involuntary emiſſion of the ſeed, and the juice of the leaves mix'd with that of the fruit inſtill'd into the ears, eaſes the pain in thoſe parts.

The tree Katambalam.

The ſecond kind of the *Ambalam*, *Kat Ambulam*, or *Pee Ambalam*, as the *Malabars* call it, and *Kaduko Ambado* by the *Brahmans*, reſembles the firſt in a great many reſpects, except that its leaves are leſs, and ſo are the fruit, being ſomewhat rounder, and the taſte a mixture of ſour and bitter, which is the reaſon they are never eaten. *Kat Ambalam*, or *Pee Ambalam*, ſignifies in the *Malabar* tongue as much as *Wild Ambalam*, and *Kaduko Ambado* among the *Brahmans*, as much as the *Bitter Ambado* from its taſte.

The tree Agaty.

The tree called *Agaty* by the *Malabars*, and *Agaſto* by the *Brahmans*, runs up to the height of ten or twelve yards, the branches growing ſtrait upright: The trunk is ſo big in circumference that a man can ſcarce graſp it, having a very ſoft wood, and the pith much tender. If an inciſion be made into the bark, a certain watery ſubſtance diſtils thence, which turns to gum afterward. The leaves come forth out of ſmall and green ſprouts or buds, being near a ſpan and a half long, and growing two and two on long green ſtalks. The flowers conſiſt of five ſmall leaves, and grow in cluſters on ſtalks of a pale green colour. After the bloſſom come thin, ſtrait and green huſks, of about a ſpan in length, and an inch in breadth, having a thick peel, in which are encloſed certain beans, not unlike in taſte to, but ſomewhat ſmaller than, our *French* beans, being white at firſt, but turn pale green by degrees, and are very good food. This tree bears fruit twice or thrice in the rainy ſeaſon, and indeed the whole year round, but not ſo frequently in the ſummer. The juice of the bark of this tree, either by itſelf, or mix'd with honey, is an excellent remedy againſt all the inflammations of the throat and mouth. The juice of the leaves taken into the noſtrils like a liquid ſnuff, cures the quartan ague.

The tree Appel.

The tree call'd *Appel* or *Nalla-Appella*, by the *Malabars*, and *Karo-Nervoloe* by the *Brahmans*, has a very thick and hairy root, the rind of which is of a ſaffron colour. The circumference of the ſtem is of five or ſix palms; the branches growing directly upright: Its wood is white, but the peel dark red. The leaves ſprout forth out of the branches in ſmall green and ſquare buds, the ſtalks being round, very ſhort, and of a pale green colour, commonly two and two together. The

1662. leaves are of an oval figure, round near the ſtalk, and pointed toward the end. The flowers grow in cluſters, conſiſting of four round white and ſmall leaves each. The fruit are round berries, having a round ſtone in the middle; are pale green at firſt, but when ripe turn black. The tree bears but once a year. The root of this tree powdered and taken in water, ſtops the looſeneſs, and boiled in ſea-water and applied outwardly, appeaſes the pain of the gout. The decoction of the leaves is a good remedy againſt the pain of the belly and ſtomach, occaſioned by wind; the ſame effect has the oil drawn out of the root, if anointed on the painful part; this oil is yellow and tranſparent, of an agreeable ſcent, and a picquant bitteriſh taſte.

Schageri-Kottam. The tree call'd *Schageri Kottam* by the *Malabars*, and *Sahali* by the *Brahmans*, ſeldom exceeds the heighth of ſix foot, and delights in ſandy grounds: Its ſtem is of the thickneſs of a man's arm, the root red within, and black on the out-ſide. The leaves ſprout forth out of the twigs and hang on round, and green ſtalks; they are very large, and pretty long, broad towards the ſtalk, and pointed at the ends; the upper-ſide dark green, and the undermoſt ſide of a pale green colour. At the very extremities of the ſmall twigs grow the flowers in cluſters on ſmall ſtalks, conſiſting of four or five great leaves, of a white and pale yellow colour. The fruit is in ſhape like an *European* pear, dark green at firſt, and when ripe, turns black; it is of a ſweetiſh taſte, and eaten by the *Malabars*. The juice of the leaves boil'd with ſugar, and taken inwardly, ſtrengthens the liver, and ſtops the looſeneſs.

Kolinil. The tree call'd *Kolinil* by the *Malabars*, and *Scheara Punka* by the *Brahmans*, does not grow above two or three foot high, its ſtem being not above three or four inches thick, the branches ſpreading round about it. The wood of the ſtem is very hard, and the green bark which covers it of a picquant bitteriſh taſte. The leaves come forth out of ſmall and green ſprouts, hanging on very ſmall ſtalks; they are of an oval figure, round at the ends, and ſomewhat pointed towards the ſtalks, of a ſharp and bitter taſte: The bloſſom is like our bean bloſſom, having each four leaves: The fruit is a kind of a ſmall, ſmooth, and long huſk, yet not above two or three inches in length, are green in the beginning, and dark red at laſt, having within them certain beans, which are green at firſt, and black at laſt. This tree produces fruit twice a year, once in the winter, and once in the ſummer. The root powdered and boiled in milk, or the juice of the cocotree, is a good remedy againſt the falling-ſickneſs. 1662.

There are four kinds of fig-trees in *Malabar*, call'd by one general name *Alu*; the firſt they call *Atty-Alu*, the ſecond *Itty-Alu*, the third *Arêalu*, and the fourth *Peralu*. The fig-tree *Atty-Alu*, call'd *Roembadoe* by the *Brahmans*, grows to a great height, ſpreading its branches at a good diſtance. The trunk is of that thickneſs, that a man cannot well graſp it; the fruit is round, but flat, and leſſer towards the ſtalk, and ſomewhat hairy and rough, not unlike our figs. Before they are ripe, they are green and full of a milky juice, but turn red when ripe, and are not ſo juicy. Within the pulp, you ſee ſmall kernels like thoſe in our figs, and as ſoon as they are ripe, the piſmires get into them. Theſe figs are the only ones that are eaten by the *Malabars*, and eaten raw when ripe are accounted good againſt the looſeneſs. If the inhabitants may be believed, theſe trees are produced out of the ſeed of the fruit, after it is eaten by the ravens, and diſcharged again with their dung. Alu, *or* *Fig-tree.* Atty-Alu.

The ſecond ſort call'd *Itty-Alu*, and *Areka Goli* by the *Brahmans*, is the ſmalleſt of all the four kinds, its trunk being to be graſpt by any ordinary man. It bears a ſmall and round fruit, which is green, whilſt not come to maturity, and full of a milky juice, but when ripe turns yellow. It has alſo abundance of kernels, like the firſt kind. Itty-Alu.

The tree of the third kind, call'd *Arealu*, and *Bipaloe* by the *Brahmans*, is as tall as the former, ſpreading its branches very loftily, at a good diſtance: The trunk is of ſuch a thickneſs, that two men can ſcarce graſp it: The fruit is like that of the *Itty-Alu*, ſmall and round, and not forced, as that of the *Atty-Alu*. Theſe *Pagans* have dedicated this tree to their idol *Viſtnu*, who they ſay was born under this tree, and took of its bloſſoms: For this reaſon it is, that they ſurround it with a ſtone wall, and worſhip it. The chriſtians call it the *Devil's-tree.* Arealu.

The fourth ſort call'd *Peralu*, and *Vadhoe* by the *Brahmans*, exceeds all the others in height; for which reaſon the *Brahmans* have given it the name of *Vadhoe*, *i. e.* large. The fruit is much the ſame with that of the *Atty-Alu*, but very round, and of a very high red colour, being covered with a kind of a *Lanugo* or woolly ſubſtance when they are ripe. Peralu.

Of the tree call'd *Paniti* by the *Malabars*, are likewiſe four different kinds, *viz.* *Pariti*, *Bupariti*, *Kaduparitì* and *Schem-Pariti*. The tree *Bupariti*, call'd *Valli-Kari-Kapoeſi* by the *Brahmans*, is a very high tree, with very lofty branches, growing in

1662. *The tree Buparitі.*

the ſhape of a crown round the tree, which is never infeſted with any inſects. The leaves reſemble in ſhape a man's heart, of the bigneſs of the palm of a man's hand, ſomewhat pointed at the end, of a lovely green on the upper-ſide, and a pale green on the other. The flowers are of the ſhape of bells conſiſting of ſeveral white leaves; after theſe comes a certain round ſpongeous fruit, which emits a gummous liquor, if an inciſion be made with a knife. For the reſt, the tree produces flowers all the year round.

Pariti.

Pariti, or the tree of the ſecond kind, call *Karikapreſs* by the *Brahmans*, grows to the height of 18 foot, the trunk being however within the compaſs of a man's graſping. The flowers are like thoſe of the *Bupariti*, only ſomewhat leſſer; and after theſe come certain oval ſponges, covered with a *Lanugo* or hairy ſubſtance. The bloſſom bruiſed and mix'd with womens milk, and infuſed into the ears, cures the head-ach.

Kuduparіti.

The tree *Kudupariti* of the third ſort, called *Kapuſſi* by the *Brahmans*, runs to the height of 12 foot, tho' its ſtem is not above two palms thick. The flowers are likewiſe like bells, of the ſame ſhape and colour as the precedent, only that they are a little leſſer, and inclining to green. The ſpongeous fruit are three corner'd, pointed at the top, and within diſtinguiſh'd by three ſkins in as many different concavities, each of which contains three or four ſeeds encloſed in a thick white *Lanugo* or woolly ſubſtance: This tree is never without bloſſom throughout the whole year. The leaves bruiſed and mixed with cow's milk, and apply'd outwardly to the head, procures ſleep, and conſequently cures the head-ach. The fruit bruiſed and taken inwardly in water ſtops the bloody flux. The fourth ſort is very near the ſame with the third.

Chavanna Mandaru.

Of the tree *Mandaru* are likewiſe four different ſorts, *viz. Chavanna Mandaru*, of which two bear the ſame name; *Velutta Mandaru*, and *Kanſchenapou*. The firſt call'd *Chavanna Mandaru* by the *Malabars*, and *Tambido Mandaru* by the *Brahmans*, grows up to the height of 24 foot, ſpreading its branches far round about. The trunk is not above a foot thick. The leaves hang on very ſhort ſtalks, being even in two at the upper-end, like goats feet, whence the *Portugueſe* have given them the name of *Pee de Capra*. The flowers have five leaves of an oval figure, among which the largeſt and broadeſt is rounder than the reſt, white on the outſide, and of a purple colour within; the other four are more oval, of a pale red colour without, but high red within; two of thoſe four, *viz.* thoſe next to the biggeſt leaf are on the inſide whitiſh towards the bottom, but the other two all over of a roſe-colour within; from which roſe-colour the *Malabars* have given the name of *Chavanna Mandaru* to this tree. In ſome of thoſe leaves you ſee ſtreaks as red as blood, which they ſay are the remnants of the blood of St. *Thomas*, who preach'd the goſpel on the coaſt of *Malabar*, and in the iſle of *Ceylon*. After theſe come certain flat, long and ſmooth huſks, of the length of ſeven or eight inches, in which are encloſed flat and long beans, which at firſt are ripe, but afterwards turn dark red. This tree produces flowers all the year round, but in the rainy ſeaſon in greater plenty. The flowers preſerved with ſugar, are uſed with good ſucceſs for a laxative, as we do with our roſe-ſugar. The ſecond ſort of the *Chavanna Mandaru* is a very tall tree like the firſt, with ſuch like branches, a trunk of the ſame thickneſs, and the ſame leaves, only ſomewhat larger. The flowers have five oval leaves of a purple colour, both in and outſide with white ſtreaks. The huſks of this tree are the largeſt of all the four kinds, being two ſpans long, an inch thick, flat and ſmooth; the beans are the ſame both in ſhape and colour as the firſt; and this tree bloſſoms at the ſame time, and in the ſame manner. The flowers of this tree eaten raw are laxative; the bark, flowers and fruit bruiſed together and mix'd with the liquor of the decoction of rice, is a ſovereign remedy to bring to maturity, and to open all ſorts of tumors. The bark chew'd cures the tooth and head-ach. 1662.

Velutta Mandaru.

The third ſort, call'd *Velutta Mandaru* by the *Malabars* and *Dove Mandaru* by the *Brahmans*, is not above ſix foot high, and an arm thick; the leaves are cloven like thoſe of the firſt, but the flowers white without the leaſt ſcent, having five round leaves. The huſks are not ſo big as thoſe of the others, *viz.* not above four or five inches long, and an inch thick, for the reſt flattiſh and ſmooth. The beans are long and round, of a yellowiſh colour, neither ſo big nor ſo red as thoſe of the *Chavanna Mandaru*. This tree bloſſoms two or three times every year, but chiefly in the rainy ſeaſon. The flowers bruiſed and mix'd with ſome pepper, and applied outwardly to the head cures the head-ach; and if you waſh yourſelf with the decoction of the root, it lays all ſorts of itching of the ſkin.

Kanſche napou.

The fourth ſort called *Kanſchenapou* by the *Malabars*, and *Kantſanu* by the *Brachmans*, is a tree which runs up to the height of 12 foot or more, with lofty branches, but the ſtem is not above half a foot thick.

1662. The leaves are cloven like the reſt, but not ſo big, very ſtrong ſcented if rubb'd betwixt your fingers, eſpecially in the night-time: The flowers conſiſt alſo of five leaves, of a pale yellow colour, without the leaſt ſcent. The huſks are the ſame with thoſe of the *Chavanna Mandaru*, very ſmooth on the outſide, but ſomewhat hairy whilſt very young. The beans are ſmall, in ſhape and colour reſembling thoſe of the *Velutta Mandaru*. The tree bears flowers twice or thrice a year, but moſt plentifully in the rainy ſeaſon. The decoction of the root taken inwardly, is a good remedy againſt the worms and inflammations of the liver, and the piles. The bark powder'd diſperſes tumors, cleanſes the wounds, and is an excellent narcotick.

The tree Nilikamaram.

The tree call'd *Nilikamaram* by the *Malabars*, and *Anvali* by the *Brahmans*, grows up to the height of 24 foot, tho' its trunk be no bigger than a man's arm, which as well as the branches, are covered with a black bark. The leaves ſprout forth out of thin and round twigs, with very ſhort ſtalks; they grow two and two together, of an oval figure, and very ſmall, being dark green on the upper ſide, and light green on the other ſide. Every night the leaves cloſe up like tulips; the flowers grow on ſmall twigs in cluſters, conſiſting of ſix very ſmall leaves. It bears a round, but flattiſh fruit, of a pale green colour when ripe, and ſomewhat tranſparent; the pulp being likewiſe green and very juicy, of an agreeable aſtringent taſte: In the midſt is a ſtone, diſtinguiſh'd into ſix different concavities, each of which contains a ſmall triangular ſeed or ſmall kernel. The fruit is much uſed by the *Malabars*: The water diſtill'd from this fruit cools the liver, and dry'd and power'd, and mix'd with ſour coagulated milk, ſtops the bloody-flux.

Odollam.

The tree call'd *Odollam* by the *Malabars*, and *Uro* by the *Brahmans*, grows to the height of 18 foot, its trunk being ſo thick as ſcarce to be encompaſs'd by a man with both his arms, with crooked branches. The wood of the ſtem is very ſoft, and the pith red, the bark of an aſh colour, bitter and very hot upon the tongue. The leaves grow ſcattering upon the twigs and long ſtalks, are of the ſhape of a tongue, thick, ſmooth, dark brown on the upper-ſide, bitter and biting upon the tongue. The flowers grow in cluſters like cornets, on long, thick, and green ſtalks, having five very white and pointed leaves. It bears a kind of ground-apple, with a green and ſmooth rind, under which is a white pulp of a wateriſh taſte. The ſtone which is in the midſt, is ſhap'd like the heart of a man, of a pretty large ſize, with two kernels within it. Some will have this tree to be the ſame which the *Indians* call *Mongas*. 1662.

Nurotti.

The tree call'd *Nurotti* by the *Malabars*, and *Kaitu* by the *Brahmans*, riſes up to a great height, its branches ſpreading very lofty round about it: The trunk is ſo big as ſcarce to be graſped by a man; the wood white, with a thick bark, which is green without and red within. The leaves are ſcattered here and there on the twigs with ſhort, round and green ſtalks, of the length of a ſpan, and the breadth of four or five inches, of an oval figure, pointed at the ends, not unlike the laurel leaves. The flowers ſprout forth ſix or ſeven together out of the extremities of the ſmall twigs, conſiſting of three rows of ſmall leaves. The firſt row makes up a ſtar of five ſmall pointed and dark brown hairy leaves. The ſecond row contains five round and ſmall leaves of a roſe-colour, and the third or outermoſt row, five pointed green leaves. The fruit grows on ſhort and thick ſtalks, being of an oval figure, having a roſe colour'd rough peel, and within a large yellowiſh ſtone, containing 10 or 12 kernels of an oleaginous ſubſtance. This tree produces both flowers and fruit in great plenty all the year round: From the kernels or ſeeds an oil is drawn, which has an anodyne quality, and applied outwardly, cures all ſorts of ſcurfs and itchings: The ſame oil, mixed with a certain fruit, the *Malabars* call *Palego*, kills the corns in the feet, if applied to the affected part.

Kaniram.

Of the tree call'd *Kaniram* there are four ſeveral kinds: One is call'd *Kaniram* only; the ſecond *Karakaniram*, and the third and fourth *Vallikaniram*, The tree call'd *Kaniram*, and by the *Brahmans*, *Karo*, grows up to a great height, with lofty and far ſpreading branches. The root is very thick, exceeding bitter, and covered with a yellow rind. The trunk is of that thickneſs as ſcarce to be graſped by two men, having a dark aſh colour'd bark. The leaves, which are of an oval figure, are very broad in the middle, and pointed towards the ends, of a bitteriſh taſte and an odd ſcent, growing two and two over againſt the other: The flowers ſprout forth in cluſters, having each five or ſix pale green and pointed leaves. No ſooner begins the bloſſom to bud, but the tree loſes all its leaves, inſtead of which new ones come ſoon after. It bears a kind of round and ſmooth apple, which is green at firſt and turns yellow afterwards, two, three, four or more hanging together on ſhort ſtalks. The pulp, before they are ripe, is white and inſipid, but when ripe, bitter with a thick rough peel. It bloſſoms in the

1662. ſummer, and brings forth fruit in the winter. In the pulp are round but flattiſh ſeeds, which are alſo very bitter. The juice of the leaves taken in the decoction of the ſame leaves cures the head-ach, but if uſed in too great a quantity is mortal, the only antidote againſt which is man's dung taken inwardly. Two or three of thoſe ſeeds taken every day for two years ſucceſſively, is a preſervative againſt the biting of the ſerpent, called *Cobra de Capelo* by the *Portugueſe*.

Manjapumeram. The tree called *Manjapumeram* by the *Malabars*, and *Pariataku* by the *Brahmans*, riſes up to the height of 18 or 24 foot, with very thick and lofty branches ſpreading round about it, but the ſtem is not above the thickneſs of an arm, having an aſh-coloured bark: The leaves hang croſſwiſe over one another, being pointed at the ends, the uppermoſt ſide of a dark green, and the other of a light green colour, of an aſtringent and bitteriſh taſte; the flowers grow on ſtalks which ſtand upright five in a cluſter, are very agreeable and ſweet ſcented, having ſix, ſeven, and ſometimes eight leaves each, of a whitiſh colour both in and outſide. The fruit is of an oval figure, but flat, of a green colour, containing two round and flattiſh ſeeds. This tree is of no uſe among the *Malabar* phyſicians.

Champakam. This tree *Champakam*, as the *Malabars* call it, and the *Brahmans Champo*, is a very tall tree, with many lofty branches ſpreading at a good diſtance: The trunk is of that thickneſs as ſcarce to be graſp'd by a man, with a thick bark of an aſh-colour without, and ſoft within, of a bitter aſtringent taſte. The wood is white: The leaves are of an oval figure pointed a good way towards the ends, of the length of a ſpan, and the breadth of four or five inches; the uppermoſt ſide dark green and ſhining, the other ſide light green, bitter and biting upon the tongue. At the extremities of the ſmall twigs ſprout forth pale green flowers, of a quick odoriferous ſcent, having oval leaves placed in three rows within one another. In the firſt root are about eight leaves, being as broad again as thoſe of the ſecond row, round but pointed at the ends; but thoſe in the ſecond row are more pointed ſtill, and thoſe in the third more than the ſecond, and pale yellow. The fruit grows in bunches of an oval figure, with a thick rind. Whilſt not come to maturity it is green, but turns pale yellow when ripe, being ſharp of taſte, and of no agreeable ſcent: Within are three or four ſeeds, round on one, and flat on the other ſide; within thoſe ſeeds, when they are come to their full perfection, is a thin milky ſubſtance encloſed in a ſkin of a purple colour, and within it a black ſtone. The tree, if not too old, bloſſoms twice a year; out of theſe flowers they diſtil a good cordial water. 1662.

Elengi. The tree call'd *Elengi* by the *Malabars*, and *Vavalli* by the *Brahmans*, grows up very high, with many far-ſpreading branches: The trunk is of that thickneſs, that two men can ſcarce well graſp it, with a dark brown and rough bark, containing a milky liquor within. The wood is full of the ſame juice, and will keep a great while under water, but not very long in the air. The leaves grow on ſmall round and green ſtalks; being of an oval figure, but pointed at the ends. The flowers have pale green ſtalks, growing five or ſix in a cluſter, of a white colour, conſiſting of 16 leaves of an odoriferous ſcent. The *Malabars* make noſegays of them. The fruit is ſhap'd like an olive, green at firſt, but turns yellow and red by degrees: The pulp is yellow and meally. The *Malabars* eat this fruit, which has two oval but flat and dark brown ſtones within. This tree bears flowers twice a year, out of which the *Malabars* diſtil a well-ſcented water, which is look'd upon as a great cordial, and revives the ſpirits. The fruit bruiſed and taken inwardly in warm water, promotes the birth.

Beſides theſe there alſo grows here *Caſſia Fiſtula*, called *Konna* by the *Malabars*, and *Bajo* by the *Brahmans*; and *Tamarinds* call'd *Balam-Pulli*, or *Maderam-Pulli* by the *Malabars*, and *Sinza* by the *Brachmans*. The coaſt of *Malabar* produces likewiſe *Cardamom*, *Berbery* ginger, and ſome aloes; as alſo bezoar-ſtones, ſalt-petre, honey, lacca, and cotton; to be ſhort, this countrey abounds in all ſorts of *Indian* trees and fruits.

Living creatures of Malabar. The woods afford vaſt plenty of birds of all kinds, and among the reſt moſt excellent peacocks, the fleſh of which is very white and well taſted. No place in the world abounds more in all ſorts of water-fowl, and there are a great many birds here ſo tame, and ſo plentiful, that you may kill them with a ſtick, the reaſon of which is, that as the *Pagans* adhere to the opinion of *Pythagoras*, concerning the tranſmigration of the ſoul; ſo they won't kill any living creature, which makes all ſorts of wild creatures multiply here, almoſt *in infinitum*. The fleſh of their hogs (of which they likewiſe have great plenty) is alſo excellent good; but above all, tame fowl is ſo prodigious cheap here, that you may buy a very good pullet for two-pence, and thirty eggs for the ſame price. I remember I had once bought up 300 pullets againſt the arrival of our ſhips, which being put in the old church of *St. Thomas*, we

Plenty of fowl.

1662. we found all dead one morning; we could not gueſs at the cauſe of this diſaſter, till a certain *Malabar* told us, that it could not be otherwiſe, but that a *Cobre Kapel* (a very venomous ſerpent) muſt be hidden in the place; whereupon ſtrict ſearch being made we found the ſerpent under a heap of old wood, which was no ſooner removed, but the ſerpent ſet herſelf upright upon the tail, ſpitting fire and flame, ſo that no body durſt approach her, till one of our ſoldiers kill'd her with his ſword. Of veniſon there is alſo great plenty. 1662.

They have likewiſe bats of divers kinds; and among the reſt a certain ſort of that bigneſs, that their wings when extended are *Bats.*



as long as man can ſtretch with both his arms together. They have red heads and necks, black bodies, and are ſhaped like a fox. They are extremely nimble, and having very ſharp teeth do a great deal of damage to the fruit. Their wings are bare, like thoſe of our bats, unto which are faſtned their legs and tails, ſo that they can neither walk nor ſtand; to recompence which defect they have a kind of a hook, of the thickneſs of a finger on each wing, wherewith they faſten to the branches of the trees: You ſee here vaſt multitudes of them in the woods, ſo that it is no difficult thing to kill them; but whatever you kill, remains hanging among the trees: They are naturally ſo fierce that they are not to tamed; for if taken alive, they will bite their own wings and fleſh as far as they can reach; I once had the curioſity to ſet two of theſe creatures a fighting, which they did with ſuch fierceneſs, that they both remained dead upon the ſpot. They will drink of the liquor of the coco-tree till they are drunk; they commonly bring forth two young ones at a time, and that generally in the hollow of trees; the *Malabars* eat the fleſh, which has no agreeable taſte.

Here you meet alſo with *Jackalls*, as our people call them, being not unlike a large fox, of the bigneſs of an ordinary peaſant's dog, of a red grey colour, but thinly covered with hair. They aſſemble in the night in whole troops, and approaching (eſpecially about the new-moons) to the villages or plantations, make a hideous noiſe, like the outcries of women or men; they are very greedy after mens fleſh, and will ſcratch the dead carcaſſes out of the graves, unleſs they be well covered with ſtones: They are ſcarce ever to be tamed. The *Malabars* eat the fleſh of theſe *Jackalls*. And thus much of the coaſt of *Malabar*. *Jackall.*

After, as I told you, we had ſet ſail the 12th of *March* from *Koulang*, the wind turn'd againſt us the ſame evening, but about eleven *The author purſues his voyage.*

1662. ven a clock at night we set sail again with the land wind. The 13th we kept along the shore with a gentle breeze and very fair weather; but the wind turning soon after to the E. S. E. we were forced to chuse the main sea, but made to the shore again towards evening, and took the benefit of the land-wind. The 14th there being but little wind we advanced no farther than 12 leagues from *Koulang*; and the 15th finding ourselves off of the city of *Tengepatnam*, we gave the signal by a cannon shot for the resident Mr. *Koek* to come aboard us, which he did accordingly; and after I had discoursed with him of what I had in commission to tell him, we continued our voyage, but being towards evening overtaken by a tempest, were forced to come to an anchor. The 16th early in the morning the winds being somewhat laid we set sail again, but by reason of the contrary winds were forced to return towards *Pulon*, near the cape of *Comorin*, where the *Portugueſe* have a small church dedicated to St. *Martin*. The 17th we made this cape, but the winds continuing still against us, it was not till the 18th that we could reach *Toutekoriin*, the chief among the seaports of the coast of *Madure*. Here I tarried for some time to observe the interest of the company, both in respect of their traffick hither, and in the government of the inhabitants, who live under their jurisdiction along the sea-coast, in seven large villages, the chief of which is *Toutekoriin*, the other six are *Manapara*, *Alendale*, *Wiranypatnam*, *Pommekiel*, *Baypaer* or *Vaypaer*, and *Bempaer*. After a stay of six months here, I received orders from Mr. *Van Goens* to return to *Koulang*, and to take once more upon me the government of this city, being very well known to the queen there; accordingly having surrendred my accounts to Mr. *Lawrentz Piil*, in the presence of captain *Van Reede*, I left this place the 19th of *May* 1665, and went by land to *Koulang*. The number of the inhabitants of the before-mentioned seven villages amounted in 1664 to above 20000 souls, *viz.* in *Toutekoriin* about 3000, in *Mannapara* 4000, in *Alendale* 800, in *Wiranpatnam* 900, in *Pommekiel* or *Punikael* 2800, in *Baypaer* 700, and in *Bempaer* 800; besides those inhabiting on the coast of *Comorin*, which amounted to a considerable number: All these villages are adorn'd with stately churches, built by the *Portugueſe*, especially those of *Mannapara* and *Bempaer*, but are now in a decaying condition, since the *Portugueſe* have been chased thence. Some of the *Romiſh* priests now and then come to say mass in the neighbouring villages, whither the people flock in great numbers; tho' to speak truth, they are

Come over against Tengepatnam.

Come to Toutekoriin.

The seven seaports of Madure.

Their inhabitants.

nore heathens than christians. *Toutekoriin* consumes yearly abundance of foreign commodities, by reason of the great numbers of inhabitants living along this coast, who must be provided from abroad with most things they stand in need of; *Toutekoriin*, otherwise *Tutukuriin*, or rather *Tutukury*, or *Tutukuriin*, or *Totokury*, is now, as we told you, the chief of all those seaports, being an open place, but beautified with stately stone buildings. It has three large churches built by the *Portugueſe*, which are to be seen at a great distance at sea, the countrey round about being flat and low. In one of these the reformed exercise their religious worship: Besides which the convent of the *Franciscans* is lately fitted up for the same use.

1662.

The village of Toutekoriin.

The *Dutch East-India* company have a factory here, managed by a merchant as chief governor; by a factor as his deputy; two or three assistants, and a military officer, under whose command are some soldiers, but the *Nayk* of *Madure* will not allow them to erect any fortifications: During my stay here, I begun to erect a brick-wall round the garden, but finding the *Jentives* to look with a jealous eye upon it, I desisted; yet I took care to repair the house of the company, and set their flag on the top of it, which might be seen a good way at sea.

This place was taken by the *Dutch* from the *Portugueſe* 1658, without much resistence. In the road of *Toutekoriin*, is good anchorage at five fathom water in a sandy bottom.

Three small leagues from *Toutekoriin* near the rocks of *Remanekor*, not far from the kingdom of *Narsinga* lies the village of *Punikael*, where the *Portugueſe* formerly had a fort, and a garrison of 40 men. Two leagues from thence there was a *Pagan* temple of the *Brahmans* call'd *Trichanduri*, against which and the priests thereof the *Portugueſe* would frequently utter very injurious words, which so exasperated the inhabitants, that they entred into a league with their neighbours, *viz.* the *Badagas* of *Narsinga*, in order to drive the christians thence: Accordingly, having with a great deal of secresy got together a body of 6000 men, and received certain intelligence that the *Portugueſe* in the fort were but ill provided with gunpowder (the chief terror of these *Barbarians*) they march'd directly to *Punikael*; the *Portugueſe* being not a little surprized at so unexpected a sight, were put to the greatest nonplus that could be, being in want of ammunition, and no great account being to be made upon the *Parvas* (the christian inhabitants) as being not trained up to military affairs, but living

The village Punikael.

War betwixt the inhabitants and the Portugueſe.

1662. upon fiſhing and ſwimming: Theſe being ſenſible of their inability to reſiſt the enemy, no ſooner heard of his approach, but they began to betake themſelves with their moveables to their boats which lay near the ſhore, which the *Badagas* endeavouring to prevent, ſome retired to unpaſſable places, others to the ſea-ſide, whilſt others were expoſed to the mercy of the enemy, and with moſt dreadful outcries implored the aſſiſtance of the *Portugueſe* in the fort.

Bravery of Anthony Kriminalis.

About that time a certain prieſt, named *Anthony Kriminalis*, who was come ſome days before thither to take care of the chriſtians there, ſeeing this miſerable ſpectacle, applied himſelf to *John Ferdinando Korrea*, governor of the fort, remonſtrating to him, that ſince they were not in a condition to oppoſe the enemy, to endeavour to bring things to an accommodation; but the governor anſwer'd, that it was againſt the glory of his king to ſubmit in the leaſt reſpect to thoſe *Barbarians*; *Kriminalis* made what haſte he could to return to his flock, which he met in the church where he had preached the ſame morning, and led them to the ſea-ſhore, endeavouring as much as he could to ſee them embark in their boats, whilſt he refuſed to enter himſelf, being reſolved to ſtay aſhore, and to expect the utmoſt fury of the *Barbarians*, who were advancing apace, and with their arrows had already kill'd ſeveral of the *Portugueſe* and others, among whom was the interpreter of *Kriminalis*, who was ſhot by his ſide, notwithſtanding which he remained immoveable in his reſolution, and wringing his hands up to heaven, fell upon his knees; the firſt troop of the *Bagadas* paſs'd by without doing him the leaſt harm, except that they took his hat, and ſo did the ſecond, but one of the third troops (conſiſting of *Mahometans*) run a lance into his left ſide, whilſt others let fly their arrows at him, and thinking he had been kill'd came to take his cloaths, which he, being yet alive, gave to them, and ſo retreated into the church, with an intention to ſpend the ſmall remainder of his life at the foot of the altar; and being follow'd by the *Bagadas*, he there received a ſecond thruſt, and ſoon after a third, which put a period to his life: They afterwards cut off his head, which together with his bloody cloaths they carried in triumph to their temple of *Trichanduri*; the trunk of the body was afterwards buried by the chriſtians.

Is killed.

Not far from *Punikael* or *Pommekiel*, lieth a great village call'd *Putanam*, and ſo further up the coaſt *Bembar* or *Bempaer*, *Kalekure*, *Beadal*, *Nianankor*, or rather *Romanakoris* and *Kanhameira*; next you ſee *Negapatnam*, the firſt frontier of the coaſt of *Coromandel*, but one of the chiefeſt towns of this coaſt is *Periapatan*, ſituate near the rocks of *Romanankoris* being the capital city of the *Maravas*, who inhabit the mountains, a barbarous generation, living only upon robbing; the jeſuites that formerly belonged to the church of *Periapatan*, did endeavour to reclaim them in ſome meaſure from their barbarity, but moſt of them ſoon return'd to their old way of living. There is another village ſeated on the other ſide of the rocks of *Romanankoris*, directly oppoſite to *Negapatnam*, the inhabitants of which are all chriſtians. All along the ſea-coaſt are about 30 villages, among which, beſides the before-mention'd, are the chiefeſt, *Trichandar* or *Trekandar*, *Kallegrande* and *Cherakalle*. 1676.

Manners and cuſtoms of the inhabitants.

The inhabitants of thoſe places are very black and ſtrong; they are deceitful and cunning, make but little account of their wives, but generally keep two or three harlots, by whom they have ſometimes 16 or 18 children. The men wear nothing but a ſingle piece of callicoe wrap'd about their middle, and another piece about their head, which they call *Romare*. The ordinary women commonly wear painted callicoe, thoſe of faſhion are adorn'd with gold rings and bracelets when they are abroad, but are very naſty at home. They tie their hair up in a truſs behind, like thoſe of *Malabar*, for the reſt they have very good features. They live upon meat and rice, but drink nothing but water, which they are fain to fetch half a league from the ſea-ſhore; they live by pearl fiſhing and catching of fiſh, by weaving and ſhipping, there being ſome who drive a conſiderable trade with the painted callicoes to *Kalpentien*, *Kolomba* and the *Malabar* coaſt. They have abundance of callicoe and linnen weavers here, and great numbers of people are employed in painting of callicoes, which they do very artificially. This trade was in great requeſt whilſt I was here, becauſe I uſed to give all imaginable encouragement to them; the inhabitants are govern'd by judges of their own, who are choſen every year by the chief director of the *Dutch* company there, whom they ſtile the *Captain of the ſeven Sea-ports*. Each village has the privilege to propoſe four, out of which the *Captain* chuſes two, who ſwear fealty to the company; all civil cauſes are tranſacted in their reſpective villages, but criminal matters are decided at *Toutekoriin* in the council of nine, whereof the *Captain* is preſident. The remaining *Portugueſe* pay no taxes to the *Dutch* company, but to the *Nayk* of *Madure*; however, this tax is paid with the approbation of the chief director, who allots

Their clothing.

Way of living.

Government.

1662. lots every one his ſhare according to his ſubſtance; thoſe who are backward in their payment, muſt expect ſpeedy execution, which is done by the ſoldiers of the *Nayk*, and cauſes frequent quarrels betwixt the inhabitants and the ſoldiers, as it happened in my time; when the *Nayk* peremptorily demanded the tax from the *Parvas*, which they were not able to pay, I ſent to him a ſerjeant with ſome ſoldiers, to deſire that he would ſend a commiſſioner with whom they might treat, and obtain ſome time for the payment thereof; upon which the *Nayk* having ſent one of his great officers with a body of horſe, I remonſtrated to him the impoſſibility of the matter, telling him that the ſeven ſeaports were willing to make a preſent of two ſilver diſhes fill'd with ducats to his maſter, which was well accounted of, and the *Nayk*, as a token of his ſatisfaction, ſent me a ſcarf richly embroidered with gold. Theſe ſeven ſeaports were formerly (before the *Portugueſe* fleets appear'd in theſe parts) under the government of the king of *Marten*, a vaſſal of the queen of *Tengauſy*, unto whom they were forc'd to pay many taxes; at which time the *Parvas* lived deeper in the countrey, and uſed to ſerve in the wars to ſuch princes as would pay them beſt.

Wars betwixt the Parvas *and* Moors.

One time a certain *Parvas* happening to fall out with ſome *Moors*, theſe cut off his noſe and ears, which ſo exaſperated the *Parvas*, that they reſolved to take up arms, and to revenge the quarrel of their countreyman. To begin the fray, they took one of the *Mooriſh* merchants priſoners, whoſe noſe and ears they likewiſe cut off, and ſo ſent him home. Hereupon the *Moors* having aſſembled a body of 30000 men, they march'd to, and pitch'd their tents near *Toutekoriin*; on the other hand, the *Parvas* were not above 5000 men, and well arm'd, and truſting more to their bravery than number, fell upon the *Moors* ſo courageouſly, that they made them quit the field, with the ſlaughter of 7000 of their men; a great number of them being forc'd to the ſea-ſhore, ſaved themſelves in boats, but were ſcarce got to ſea, when by a ſtrong tempeſt from the S. W. they were ſo diſpers'd, that no news was ever heard of them ſince. After this victory the *Parvas* having made themſelves maſters of theſe ſeaports, came to a compoſition with the queen, promiſing to pay her the ſame taxes as the *Moors* had done, which being impoſſible for them to perform, this proved the occaſion of unſpeakable miſeries; ſome of them being impriſoned for want of payment, others ſold for ſlaves to that degree, that at laſt they reſolved to ſhake of the yoke, coſt it what it would: The *Portugueſe* who 1490 appear'd firſt thereabouts with their ſhips from *Cochin*, having at that time traded there for 40 years before, and conſequently their ſtrength at ſea, being not unknown to the *Parvas*, they ſent their deputies to *Cochin* to implore their protection, and to promiſe their obedience, and that they were ready to embrace the chriſtian faith. The *Portugueſe*, willing to improve this opportunity, came with their fleet 1533 on that coaſt, and having made themſelves maſters of the ſeaport towns, the *Parvas* received baptiſm all on one day. However they met with great oppoſition afterwards from thoſe on the coaſts of *Coromandel* and *Malabar*, encouraged underhand by the *Parvas*, till at laſt matters were adjuſted thus, that the *Portugueſe* ſhould remain maſters of the coaſt, that the *Parvas* ſhould pay them a certain annual tribute, according to their ability, and that all the chief men of that coaſt ſhould have their ſhare in the pearl fiſhing, which was to be perform'd on a certain day. After all, the *Nayk* of *Madure* having found means to get into the poſſeſſion of this countrey, left the *Portugueſe* in the full poſſeſſion of their juriſdiction over the *Parvas*, and of the free exerciſe of their religion, in which ſtate it continued till the year 1630, when the king of *Portugal* having ſent thither a governor, to clip the wings of the *Romiſh* clergy, who were grown two powerful there, this occaſion'd new troubles; for the *Parvas* being a zealous kind of people, and for the moſt part at the devotion of the prieſts, they were divided into two factions, during which inteſtine commotions the clergy did not forget to improve their authority, and to enrich themſelves at the expence of their flock, but the *Jentyves* or *Pagans* alſo began to encreaſe to ſuch a degree, that being become formidable to the *Parvas*, they often forc'd them to ſhelter themſelves againſt their forces in the neighbouring iſlands. Since that time the *Parvas* acknowledged the juriſdiction of the *Portugueſe* governor; each village has two judges, who are changed every year, they keep courts twice a week, and in conjunction with the *Petangiins* (who are hereditary officers) decide all controverſies of leſs moment; they raiſe the taxes, and are accountable once a year to the people for all their tranſactions; whilſt the *Portugueſe* were maſters here, the *Jentyves* or *Pagans* durſt not exact more taxes from the *Parvas* than was agreed for, unleſs they would ſee them go with wife and children to the neighbouring iſlands, from whence they did not return till they had obtain'd ſome conſiderable

1662.

1662. derable abatement; but of late years the *Parvas* having left off that cuſtom, the *Jentyves* improve it to their advantage, and force them to pay three times as much as they uſed to do formerly.

The kingdom of the Nayk *of* Madure.

The kingdom of the *Nayk* of *Madure*, under whoſe juriſdiction the ſeven before-mention'd ſea-ports are, borders to the weſt upon the kingdom of *Travankor* to the eaſt upon the ſea, and to the north-weſt upon the countrey of the *Nayk* of *Tanjaor* or *Tanjauwer*, betwixt the coaſt of *Malabar* near the cape *Comorin* and *Coromandel*; its whole extent being along the whole eaſtern gulph or coaſt oppoſite to *Ceylon* from the cape *Comorin* (where the coaſt of *Malabar* ends) to the town of *Bempaer* or the river *Ulton*, a tract of 75 leagues in length, and 30 in breadth. The ſea-ſhore, commonly call'd the *Pearl-Coaſt*, from the many pearl-banks that are hereabouts, extends from ſouth to north in length, and in ſome places about half a league deep into the countrey. The capital city and ordinary reſidence of the *Nayk* is *Madure*, five days journey to the north of *Koulang*; being adorn'd with many moſt magnificent *Pagodes*, or pagan temples, which have very high turrets gilt on the top. Along the coaſt of *Madure* neither graſs or herb, or plant is to be ſeen, except thiſtles and houſe-leek; it having been found by experience, that the coco-trees would not thrive here no more than ſeveral other *Indian* trees; notwithſtanding which they are ſufficiently provided with all manner of neceſſaries from the circumjacent countrey, as well as from abroad, by the way of *Toutekoriin*; beſides that, the ſea-ſhore abounds in hares and partridges, the firſt of which reſemble our rabbits, their fleſh being tough, yet in taſte like our hares. The fleſh of the partridges, which have red legs and round bills here, is of an agreeable taſte.

They have here mice as big as cats, which dare not approach them, for if they be purſued, they will ſettle upon a chair or cheſt, and ſitting upright, fight and bite like dogs: They are in colour and ſhape like the *European* mice, except that they are without hair, and have a rough ſkin like an elephant. They will dig underneath the doors, and do conſiderable miſchief to the merchandizes in the warehouſes.

There is alſo here another ſort of mice, red and much leſſer than the firſt, but ſo fierce, that they will make the cats run before them.

This countrey alſo produces ſerpents, and divers other ſorts of venomous creatures. One morning, as I was riſing, I found the ſkin of a ſerpent ſticking to one of the poſts of my bedſtead, which ſhe had caſt there the night before, without being perceived by me or any body elſe. In *October*, *November* and *December*, the weſtern winds blow with ſuch violence, the ſand from the adjacent mountains to the ſhore, that you are not able to open your eyes. Much rain falls deeper in the countrey, and near the cape *Comorin*, but never at *Toutekoriin*, inſtead of which a thaw falls every night, which is very cold, and conſequently, by the ſudden alteration of the weather, very unwholeſome; the winds being ſometimes ſo exceſſive hot here, as if they did blow out of a fiery furnace; as long as theſe winds laſt, the inhabitants dare not go abroad into the fields for fear of being overwhelm'd by the ſand. 1662.

The *Nayk* of the kingdom of *Madure* is maſter of ſeveral conſiderable countries, each of which are govern'd by a peculiar governor; beſides which, there is one governor-general, who has the chief management of the whole kingdom, who ruled all our time the countrey, which was called *Boomalapelles*; beſides the governors, each village has two judges, who are much reſpected by the inhabitants. The *Nayk* to ſecure himſelf of the fidelity of his governors, detains always their wives and children in a certain caſtle call'd *Zwela Baddy*, about ſeven leagues from *Madure*, under the guard of 300 eunuchs; neither are the huſbands permitted to ſee them without peculiar licence from the *Nayk*, and are obliged to depart again in two or three days; ſome to avoid this inconveniency, content themſelves with harlots. Moſt of the inhabitants of the countrey of *Madure* are *Jentyves* or pagans, (by ſome they are call'd *Badagas*) tho' ſome of them have been converted to the *Romiſh* faith by the *Portugueſe*. The *Jentyves* are accounted good ſoldiers, yet much inferior to the *Malabars*, witneſs the wars the *Nayk* of *Tanigos*, tho' much inferior in power, wages againſt them.

There are three *Nayks* in this part of the *Indies*, *viz.* the *Nayk* of *Madure*, the *Nayk* of *Tanjaor*, by the *Dutch* call'd the *Tanjower* and *Tanjouwer*, and ſometimes *Teaver*, and the *Nayk* of *Gingi*, otherwiſe called *Cingie*, or *Chengier*. The word *Nayk*, *Neyk*, or *Najeka*, ſignifies as much as a governor, vaſſal or viceroy, their predeceſſors having in ancient times been only governors of thoſe countries they are now poſſeſſed of under the juriſdiction of the kings of *Vidia Najar* or *Biſnagar*, or *Narſinga*; but having revolted againſt their liege lord, each of them aſſumed the royal power and title. The *Nayk* of *Madure* had been for a conſiderable time in war with the *Nayk* of *Tanjaor*, and taken many

Betwixt pag. 260. 261.

1 Toule Couryn
2 Governers house
3 The Church
4 The House therunto belor
5 S^t Paul
6 A Chappel
7 A Heap of Pearle Oyste
8 Marchants of divers L
9 The Pearle ship men
10 Governers Sacat
11 Tents where all sorts of Provisions are Sold while y^e Pearle Fishery Continues
12 The M^t called y^e Bellegaete or Rasselgate

The PEARLE FISHERY near TOUTE COURYN

1662. places from him: At my time the war was renewed with more vigour than ever; and the *Nayk* of *Tanjaor* having gathered a great army, attack'd the *Nayk* of *Madure* ſo briſkly, that he took from him in a few days all the places he had conquered from him before. The army of the *Nayk* of *Madure* being much diſheartened by the victories of their enemies, the *Madure* ſent to me, to *Koulang*, his chief governor, deſiring aſſiſtance from the company; but as it was not our intereſt to engage on any ſide, I excuſed it as handſomely as I could.

The Pearl-Banks. Betwixt the coaſt of *Madure*, where the ſeven villages are, and the iſle of *Ceylon*, are divers famous pearl banks by the ſea, for which reaſon this tract is called the *Pearl-Fiſhery*. Theſe pearl-banks are properly rocks of white coral ſtone, which ſometimes are covered with ſand; on theſe rocks, the oyſter-ſhells, containing the pearls, are faſtened, but in what manner no body knows. Some of thoſe banks are about 12 or 13 fathoms, and others at 15 fathoms diſtance from the ſhore, ſo that they can ſcarce be ſeen from thence: Some of thoſe banks are five, ſix or ſeven fathom under water. The oyſters live ſix years, after which time the ſhells open and the pearls are loſt; of which I have ſeen ſeveral that were ſhown me by the divers. Theſe pearl-banks are ſearch'd every year to ſee whether the ſhells are come to their full maturity: This is commonly done in *October*, when the weater is calm, and the ſea clear hereabouts. After they are convinced that the ſaid oyſters are come to their full perfection, the time of pearl-fiſhing is appointed and proclaimed throughout the countrey, ſo that the merchants reſort thither from the other part of the *Indies*, nay, from *Arabia* and *Turkey* it ſelf, who ſet up their tents near the ſea-ſide, to buy the pearls.

Pearl-fiſhing how perform'd. They fiſh for pearls, or rather the oyſter-ſhells containing the pearls, in certain boats called *Toniis*, being about 28 foot long, (of theſe you ſhall ſee 3 or 400 at time,) each of which has 7 or 8 ſtones, which ſerve inſtead of anchors, and 5, 6 or 7, nay ſometimes 8 divers, who are to dive one after another. Theſe divers are quite naked, being covered only with a kind of thin waſtecoat; they have each a net hanging down from the neck, and gloves on their hands, wherewith they are to pick the oyſters from the rocks; each of them has alſo a ſtone of about a foot in length, and 50 pound weight, to make him dive the ſwifter: This ſtone has a hole on the top, wherewith it is faſten'd to a rope; when they are going to dive, they ſet their foot into a kind of a ſtirrup, laying hold with their left-hand of the rope, the other end of which is held by one in the boat, ſtopping their noſe with the right-hand to hold in their breath, and ſo go to the bottom; where they are no ſooner come, but they give a ſignal, by pulling the rope, for thoſe in the boat to pull up the ſtone. This done, to work they go, and ſcraping the ſhells from the rocks, fill their nets, and then pull again the rope, when thoſe in the boat draw up the nets firſt, and ſoon after the divers, who are ſucceeded continually by freſh ones. Theſe divers can hold their breath four times as long as other people; they are obliged to dive from 3 fathoms to 15, being not able to hold their breath any longer. Theſe boats commonly go to ſea every morning by break of day, with the land-winds, and return in the afternoon with the ſea-winds. Thoſe who equip thoſe boats, hire both the divers and the reſt of the boat's crew at a certain price *per diem*, like as we do our day-labourers. All the oyſter-ſhells are brought aſhore, and there laid up in a great heap, till the pearl fiſhery is over, which begins immediately after *October*, and continues all the *November* and *December*, which makes the oyſters ſmell very ſtrong, and ſometimes occaſions diſtempers. The pearl-fiſhing being over, a wooden houſe is erected for the company and the *Nayk*, where each receives his ſhare, the boats being obliged to fiſh one day for the *Nayk*, and another for the company; and theſe take care that they be not diſturbed in their fiſhing, the governor and two judges being every day near the ſea-ſhore, to decide ſuch differences as ariſe betwixt them. At laſt the oyſter-ſhells are opened in the before-mention'd houſe, in the preſence of certain commiſſioners; every oyſter-ſhell does not contain pearls, nay, the moſt are either without any, or have at leaſt very ſmall ones: On the other hand, ſome ſhells contain five, ſix, ſeven, nay eight pearls apiece. Some of theſe pearls are found in the liquor, ſome in the fleſh of the oyſters, others, but few, are faſten'd to the ſhells, of which laſt I keep ſeveral by me. The pearls being all taken out of the ſhells, are put into ſifts of different holes, and according to their different ſizes are ſold to the faireſt bidder: The pearl-duſt is bought and ſold by the *Dutch*. They ſtew and eat the fleſh of theſe oyſters, but it is ſomewhat rank and hardy, not comparable in taſte to our *Engliſh* oyſters. They give the pearls a glance by rubbing them with ſalt and powder'd rice. Out of the ſhells they make a very fine mortar.

Pearl-duſt.

They have two ſorts of pearl-duſt, the old and the new: The new pearl duſt is

1662. search'd after daily by the women among the dirt and rubbish of the oysters: The old pearl-dust is dug out upon the very brink of the sea-shore, dirt, sand and all, sometimes six, seven or eight foot deep; this they let dry altogether in the sun, and by degrees the dust being blown away by the wind, the black pearl-dust remains behind, which they bring to those in small parcels, who have given them some money beforehand. This pearl-dust being the worst of the two, and of no great value, these poor wretches can scarce get a half-penny a day for their labour, a wretched gain indeed, but sufficient to keep them from starving in this countrey.

The horns of Siankos.

Besides the pearl-oyster, they also catch on this coast certain horns call'd *Siankos* by the inhabitants, being in shape long, round and thick, and very white; out of these they make bracelets and thumb-rings, which they make use of in drawing their bows, being valued much beyond Ivory. This product of the sea is found at 8 or 12 fathom depth, in a tract of the sea of about 10 leagues in length, from the coast of *Vyraamdes Laam* to *Ilha Doce*. They begin to fish for it in the middle of *December* till the middle of *May*, when the sea hereabouts beginning to be unclear, the divers cannot without great danger go to the bottom. Among these sea-horns they now and then, (tho' scarce once in 100 years) meet with one they call the *King's-Horn*, being not to be distinguish'd from the rest, except by the opening, which is on the contrary side, being red within and green without; they are said to swim before the rest, which follow them like their king; for which reason it is, that the kings of *Golconda*, and several other *Indian* kings are accounted out of one of these horns, which makes them to be in great esteem here, especially among the *Jentyves*, who will sometimes give 800 reals for such a horn. Whilst I was hereabouts, a certain fisherman dream'd that he had taken a king's-horn, which he telling to one of his comrades, they agreed, that they would go immediately to try, and divide the booty; accordingly they did, and he who had dreamed the night before, catch'd a king's-horn, but refusing to give to his comrade his share, they went before the judges, who were obliged to decide in favour of the dreamer, the other having no witnesses to prove his bargain. I bought the same horn afterwards for 170 reals, and was offered 20 reals gain immediately after, by one of the judges. These *Siankos* are sold at a dear rate at *Bengal*, where they have a way of polishing them, that they shine with a most lovely white, much beyond any ivory: They make bracelets and other ornaments of them. 1662.

As the fishing of those horns is one of the main subsistence of the inhabitants on this coast, so they must be carefully look'd after, that under pretence of fishing for them, they don't dive for oysters, for which reason certain people are maintained to watch them. I remember they once brought up a moorish boat belonging to *Kalitpatnam*, which under pretence of fishing for *Siankos*, had been found among the pearl-banks; when they came before me, I found upon a strict examination, that extreme poverty had inforced them thereunto, and so dismissed them for that time. Some are of opinion, that the pearl-dust dug on the sea-shore, has lain there ever since the isle of *Ceylon* and the *Maldive* islands, were torn from the continent, when the pearl-shells were cast up by the floods here, and opening themselves, were consumed by degrees, leaving the pearls under ground. The pearl-dust is gather'd by the men during those intervals, when they can't go a fishing, but when they are abroad at sea their wives and children do it in their stead. Abundance of divers are devoured by the sharks, against which they pretend to defend themselves by certain incantations, notwithstanding they are christians.

The author retires to Koulang.

After I had settled my accounts at *Toutekoriin*, I prepared for my journey to *Koulang* cross the mountains of *Balligate*; and accordingly as I told you, set out the 19th of *May* 1665, under a guard of some soldiers, and with an attendance of some porters to carry my baggage and provisions, there being no inns by the way, and in many places not the least thing to be got for money. We had scarce travell'd a day but were met by a troop of *Malabar* robbers, arm'd with bows and arrows ready to let fly at us: They had already laid hold of two slaves, who were carrying some *Persian* wine, but seeing the soldiers ready to discharge their firelocks among them, they thought it their best way to retire, and finding us continually upon our guard, quite to leave us at last. We pass'd that dreadful ridge of mountains call'd *Balligate*, extending 120 leagues in length, and is cover'd with a very fine red sand, which being as light as dust, is in *October*, *November* and *December* blown by the continual strong west winds as far as the isle of *Ceylon*, a tract of at least 50 leagues; whence it is probable, that these mountains are not so high now as they were in former ages. When the sun casts its rays upon this red land, the reflection thereof appears most dreadful to the eyes in the sky, which seems to be all on fire. This high ridge of mountains

The mountains of Balligate.

1662. mountains does likewiſe occaſion moſt ſurprizing alterations in the ſeaſon; ſo that whilſt on the north ſide of the cape *Comorin*, it is winter during the months of *May*, *June*, *July*, *Auguſt*, and *September*; it is ſummer at the ſame time on the ſouth-ſide of that cape; on one ſide you meet with continual tempeſts, thunder and lightning, whilſt the other enjoys an agreeable and lovely ſeaſon. About that time black clouds are gathering upon theſe mountains by the winds, which break out into very hard and ſudden rains, occaſioning great water floods, by the overflowing of the rivers, which are oftentimes thereby choak'd up with ſand to that degree, that they are rendered unnavigable for a conſiderable time after.

Comes to Koulang. Having at laſt paſſed the mountains I arrived the 25th of *May* at *Koulang*, whereabouts I found all the fields under water. Purſuant to the orders I had received, to draw the city of *Koulang* into a narrower compaſs, and to fortify it on the land-ſide with one wall and two demibaſtions, I ordered all the houſes, churches, trees, and what elſe ſtood in our way to be cut or pull'd down; and 30000 ſtones, each of two foot long and one broad, to be cut out of the quarries; ſo that the firſt foundation of theſe fortifications being laid the 1ſt of *July*, the ſame was continued with all imaginable diligence. In the mean while I went in an inland bark to *Cochin*, by the way of *Kalkolang*, to confer with the governor *Kolſter* how to regulate the factories of *Koulang*, *Kalkolang* and *Karnopoly*, to the beſt advantage of the company.

Goes to Cochin.

After a ſtay of three days at *Cochin*, in my return to *Koulang*, we were ſurprized by ſo violent a tempeſt, that we were forced to leave the bark and to get aſhore, but the next day the violence of the wind being much abated, we proſecuted our journey to *Koulang*, where I arrived the 4th day after I left *Cochin*.

The war among ſome of the *Indian* kings continuing as yet, it was generally reported, that the king of *Travankoor* (who was then at *Manſaſſi*, tho' the queen reſided at the ſame time at *Koulang*) was marching with a conſiderable force to attack the fort of *Kalkolang*, whereupon I ſent our factor with letters from our chief director Mr. *Kolſter* to the king, to know the reaſon of this enterprize: But he was forced to return without any other anſwer from his courtiers, than that the king being employed in his devotions, no body could be admitted into his preſence till that time was expired, which was likely to hold for ſome time; however the army did remain all the time in its former camp, without committing any hoſtilities. In the mean while I had 1662. taken effectual care to provide for the ſecurity of *Koulang*, the walls advancing apace, and being in ſuch forwardneſs, that we hoped in a little time to bring them to perfection; this being the only thing that ſtay'd me at *Koulang*; for as the time of my contract with the company began to come near a period, I began to make preparations for my return into *Holland*. But Mr. *Jacob Huſtart* being gone to *Batavia*, and Mr. *Goens* put in his place, I happened to have ſome difference with him concerning the government of *Toutekoriin*, which roſe to that height, that he ordered me immediately from *Koulang* to the city of *Kolombo* in the iſle of *Ceylon*, leaving captain *Van Reede* governor of *Koulang*.

The author is ſent to Kolombo.

The ſeaſon for ſea-voyages (which muſt be exactly obſerved in theſe parts) being then expired, I was forced to travel for above 60 leagues along the ſea-ſhore, with no ſmall difficulty, there being no ſuch thing as an inn to be met with hereabouts, or any other convenient lodgings, unleſs you meet with ſome charitable popiſh prieſt or other, who will receive you into his houſe, moſt of the inhabitants along this ſhore being *Roman Catholicks*, who have here and there a ſmall church. However, after ſome troubleſome days journey I came ſafely to *Toutekoriin*, where I found the *Mary* yacht ready to tranſport me to *Kolombo*, where I arrived the next day, *viz.* the 18th of *Sept.* 1666, I ſtay'd here above a whole year; when I reſolv'd to go aboard the *Brederoo* yacht bound for *Batavia*, where I landed the 20th of *Auguſt* 1667, without meeting with any thing remarkable at ſea. I continued for three whole years at *Batavia*, without being engaged in the companies ſervice, and in 1670 return'd thence into *Holland*. During thoſe three years, I had ſufficient opportunity to take a full view of the city, both within and without, in which I was ſo curious, as not only to make draughts of all its publick ſtructures, but alſo of ſuch plants and trees as grow in and about that city; tho' to confeſs the truth, the ſame could oftentimes not be undertaken without great hazard, as well from the wild beaſts, as form the barbarous *Javaneſe*, ſo that I durſt not venture far out of the town without a good guard; but before I proceed to give you a deſcription of the living creatures, trees, fruits and plants, and of the city of *Batavia* itſelf, in the iſle of *Java*, it will be requiſite I ſhould give you an account before-hand of the ſituation of this great iſland.

Comes to Kolombo.

The iſle known generally by the name of *Great Java*, to diſtinguiſh it from the *Leſſer Java*, otherwiſe call'd *Bati*, lies ſix degrees

The iſle of Great Java.

1662. degrees to the ſouth of the line, directly oppoſite to the ſouth-point of the iſle of *Sumatra*, from which it is ſeparated only from the ſtreights of *Sunda*, where the ſame is not above four or five leagues over. To the north lies the iſle of *Borneo*, betwixt which and this iſle there is a convenient paſſage for ſmall veſſels; to the eaſt it has the iſle of *Bati*, or the *Leſſer Java*, from which it is divided by the channel of *Balambuam*, and to the ſouth by the main ocean. Its length from the ſtreights of *Sunda* to the channel of *Balambuam*, *viz.* from E. to W. inclining however a little to the S. and N. is about 130 or 140 leagues; its breadth is very different, but the whole circumference is computed at 300 leagues; The north coaſt of *Java* has abundance of very commodious creeks, bays, harbours, and goodly towns, with many little iſlands near the ſhore. In former times the iſle of *Java* had as many petty kings as there were cities, but now adays it is divided into two kingdoms only, the one of which is under the juriſdiction of the emperor of *Mataram*, the other under the king of *Bantam*. The firſt is in the poſſeſſion of the eaſtern and greateſt part of the iſle, the other of the weſtern and leſſer part; for ſince the emperor of *Mataram* (call'd alſo the emperor of *Great Java* by the *Dutch*) had once found means to ſubdue his petty neighbours, he ſoon extended his conqueſts all over the eaſtern parts of this iſle: The emperor who reign'd all the time of my being there, was a young prince named *Souſouhounan Ingelaga*, the ſon of *Sulthan Mahomet*.

Java has two kingdoms.

Unto one or other of theſe two potent princes all the reſt are obliged to pay homage, tho' there be alſo as yet remaining ſome petty ſovereignties along the ſea-coaſts, beſides what belongs to the city of *Batavia*.

Cities of Java.

In the eaſtern parts of *Batavia* are the cities *Balambuam*, *Panarukan*, *Paſſarvan*, *Joartan*, *Surabaaya*, *Brandaon*, *Sydayo*, *Tubaon*, *Kajaon*, *Japare*, *Pati*, *Dauma*, *Samarang* and *Mataram*, the reſidence of the emperor of *Java*. To the weſt, near the ſea are *Taggel*, *Charabaon*, *Dermayaon*, *Manukaon*, *Karavaon* and *Batavia*; of the coaſt of which we intend to give you a ſhort but exact account. About 10 or 12 leagues from *Batavia* is the famous city of *Bantam*, where the *Engliſh* have a factory, and a conſiderable traffick.

Manners and cuſtoms of the Javaneſe.

The *Javaneſe* are a barbarous, proud, and fierce nation, of a brown colour, with flat faces, and thin, ſhort, coal black hair, large eye-brows, and large cheeks. They boaſt themſelves to be deſcended from the ancient *Chineſe*, unto whom they reſemble in ſome reſpects, having very ſmall eyes with large eye-lids. The men are very robuſt and ſtrong limb'd, and wel fitted for the war; the women are but ſmal. The men wear a piece of callicoe wrap'd two or three times round their bodies; people of faſhion have them with gold flowers or ſtreaks. The women wear it from under their arm-pits down to their knees, all the reſt bare. They marry ſometimes two or three wives, and perhaps keep divers concubines beſides, according to their ability. Lying and cheating is a daily practice with them. Thoſe living near the ſea-ſide are for the moſt part *Mahometans*, which was introduced there about 150 years ago. In the inland countries they are generally *Pagans*, abſtaining from feeding upon any living creatures. When they are to conſult about matters of moment it is done in the night time.

1662.

Their clothing.

Religion.

Its fertility.

The iſle of *Java* is very fertile, tho' a great part thereof be not known hitherto; it has very high mountains, reaching to the very clouds, witneſs the pepper mountain on the ſouth-ſide of the iſland; it has likewiſe impaſſable foreſts and wilderneſſes; but to the north, betwixt *Batavia* and *Bantam*, is a very populous countrey, full of rice fields, and all ſorts of tame and wild creatures; hereabouts alſo is ſalt and pepper to be found, but not ſo good as that at *Malabar*, beſides moſt other ſorts of *Indian* fruits, which are ſold in great plenty at *Batavia*. They abound alſo in fiſh, are well ſtor'd with hogs, oxen, ſheep and other tame beaſts, the fleſh whereof is of a very good taſte; fowl both wild tame they have in great plenty; but the woods have alſo large tigers, rhinoceros's and divers other wild beaſts; in the rivers you ſee alſo often *Crocodiles*, call'd *Kaymans* by the *Indians*.

The air and ſeaſons.

The air or climate of *Batavia* is in my opinion as temperate and healthy as any place whatever in the *Indies*; the eaſt and weſt winds blowing all the year long along the ſhore, beſides the ordinary land and ſea winds. The ſeaſons of the year run here in the ſame manner as in *Europe*, except that the ſun paſſes twice a year directly over their heads; the moſt agreeable ſeaſon begins in *May*, which continues with continual breezes from the eaſt, and a very ſerene ſky till *November*; when the winter ſeaſon approaching it rains ſometimes continually for three or four days without intermiſſion, which ſets all the low grounds under water, which however has this convenience, that it kills and waſhes away all inſects, which elſe would prove very noxious to the fruits. This ſeaſon ends about *May*, when the dark clouds beginning

to

V. II.

Betwixt p. 204. 265

The New house of Mr. Bishop

Limekills of Mr. Mey

The Out guard

BATAVIA

Speelenburg

Ansjol fort

Sow-lands

The Hospital for the Sick

The Limekills of Mr. Jacobsen

Five angular fort

Rodenburg

Rice fields

Rice fields

Anke fort

Suger Reeds

Stalmester

Riswick fort

Suger Reads and Rice fields

fort Northerwick

Van Hoorn

Briel

New Plantations

Iacatra fort

Rice fields

Rice Fields

A Mapp of BATAVIA with all its Forts J. N.

A Thousand Rhinland Rods of 12 foot each

1662. to disperse, the sky assumes its former serenity; in *December* the west winds blow so violently, that there is no going by sea here; in *February* it is changeable weather, intermix'd with sudden storms of thunder and lightning; in *March* they begin to sow, and this month produces some fruit; in *June* is the most agreeable time of the year. In *July* the sugar and rice begins to ripen; in *September* it is the best time, and the *October* affords them plenty of all sorts of fruits.

1662. The happy temperature of the climate produces such plenty of all sorts of necessaries, that there are very few countries that can compare with this island; the pleasant river rising in the mountains divides itself into many branches, and waters the circumjacent countrey, and afterwards recollecting its channels, passes thro' the midst of *Batavia*, (which it divides in two parts) and there exonerates into the sea.



Batavia. The city of *Batavia*, which got its name many years ago from the *Dutch* after their first establishment in those parts, was first, and is now by the *Javaneſe* and *Chineſe* call'd *Kalakka*; from the fruit of a palm or cocotree, which grows very plentiful hereabouts; the fruit of which the *Javaneſe* call *Kalakka*. The *Indians* call it *Jacata*, derived likewise from a certain fruit call'd *Jaccas* by the *Indians*, and *Schrookzak* by the *Dutch*. Not long before the *Mahometans* settled in the *Indies*, *Batavia* was no more than an open village, inhabited by *Pagans*; at first it was surrounded only with a row of palladoes of bamboo canes, but as it became more populous, the inhabitants began to wage war against the king of *Bantam*, and some other neighbouring princes, and that with very good success. The city of *Batavia* lies at 5 deg. 50 min. off southern latitude, at the north-side of the isle of *Java*, in a large but fenny plain before it to the south; it is surrounded with abundance of small islands, and to the north or land-side with woods and high mountains. It is divided into two parts by a river, is of a quadrangular figure, fortified with a wall of stone, and 22 bastions; the names whereof are *Amsteldam*, *Middelburgh*, *Delft*, *Rotterdam*, *Hoorn*, *Enkahuissen*, *Vienna*, *Gelderland*, *Katzenelbogden*, *Orange*, the *New-gate*, *Hollandia*, *Dieſt*, *Nassaw*, *Zealand*, *Utrecht*, *Friesland*, *Overyssel*, *Groningen*, *Zewburgh*, *Kuilenburgh*, and the *Middlepoint*. The ditch underneath the wall was in the year 1670, surrounded with a quick-set hedge of thorns; it has four great gates, two whereof are very stately and artificially built by the famous *John Listing*, on the south-side; the first 1630, and the other 1657. The third

1662. gate is on the eaſt-ſide call'd *Rotterdam*, and the fourth call'd *Utrecht* on the weſt-ſide. The city of *Batavia* is ſituate in a bay, extending to the eaſt as far as the cape of *Karovant*, and to the weſt as far as the cape call'd the *Rough Point*, towards *Bantam*, which lies on the ſame ſhore, about twelve leagues from *Batavia*. 1662



The harbour.

Both within and without this bay lie about 17 or 18 iſlands, upon which the violence of the winds and waves being broken and check'd, this renders the road of *Batavia* one of the ſafeſt harbours of the whole world, being able to contain above 1000 veſſels at once; ſmall veſſels and barks lie commonly cloſe under the banks of the river, where they may lie without anchors in a muddy bottom; the river is lined with ſtones on both ſides as far as the boom, which is ſhut up every night at nine a clock, and guarded by a good number of ſoldiers. beſides which, there is cut a channel out of the main river, for the reception of ſmaller veſſels; no veſſel paſſes the boom without paying a certain cuſtom, every veſſel that fetches ſalt pays a real, and thoſe that carry ſtones two reals. The ditch without the wall is very broad and deep, and ſometimes riſes ſo high, that ſome of the lowermoſt ſtreets without the city are laid under water; all the buildings of this city are well contriv'd, moſt even of the private houſes having handſome gardens, well planted with fruit trees and plants and flowers, adorn'd with pearls, ſprings, pumps, *&c.*

Its ſtreets.

All the ſtreets of this city run in a ſtreight line, moſt of them being 30 foot broad; and on both ſides near the houſes paved with bricks; there are eight ſtreets, which are all well built and inhabited, among which the *Princes-Street* is the chiefeſt, beginning at the middle point of the caſtle, and running in a ſtrait line to the town-houſe, having on each ſide a croſs ſtreet. Next to this is the *Lords-ſtreet*, beginning on the north-ſide over-againſt the caſtle, reaching in a direct line to the new gate. The firſt croſs ſtreet on the eaſt-ſide has got the name of *John Tirment*, who built abundance of houſes in this ſtreet. The ſecond is call'd the *Market-Street*, oppoſite to which lies the third call'd the *Petawins-Street*: The fourth is call'd the *Street of the Hoſpital*. As you come out of the caſtle at the firſt entrance into the *Princes-Street* is the *Princes-Lane* on the left-hand. Theſe are on the eaſt-ſide of the river; we will now paſs over to the weſtern ſide; the bank of which is planted with pleaſant trees, and adorn'd with houſes all in a ſtraight line as far as the *Dieſt-Gate*. The firſt ſtreet on this ſide is

The CHURCH
of the CROSS of BATAVIA

Betwixt p. 260. 267.

THE NEW GATE.


The Town House

Bet. pag. 200, 207.

The TYGERS GRAFT of
BATAVIA

1662. call'd the *Gentlemans-Street*, being divided into two ſtreets by a gracht that comes croſs it. The ſecond ſtreet comes croſswiſe thro' this part of the city, beginning at the *Utrecht Baſtion*, from whence it has got the name of the *Utrecht-Street*. But now we muſt look back and take a view of the *Burghwalls* or *Grachts* (being ſtreets with water channels in them) of theſe there are no leſs than 15 among which the *Tygers Gracht* is the moſt ſtately and moſt pleaſant, both for the goodlineſs of its buildings, and the ornament of its ſtreets, which afford a very agreeable ſhadow to thoſe that paſs along the ſtreet; the channel is edged and lined with ſtones from the bottom, over which are four ſtone bridges, ſuſtain'd by as many high ſtone arches, twelve foot broad each; beſide which, there is a wooden bridge at one end. The inward *Gracht* behind the *Carpenters-wharf* (where is alſo the founding-houſe) has three bridges; next to this is the *Kaymans Gracht* with four bridges. The firſt *Gracht* which runs croſſwiſe, is the *city's Inward Burghwall*, having only one bridge: Next to this the *Herb Gracht*, without any bridge at all. The *Seſons Gracht* extending from the *Middle Point* directly to the *Rotterdam-Gate*, with ſix bridges, and the *Inward Gracht* with one bridge only. Theſe are all the *Burghwalls* and *Grachts* on the eaſt-ſide; now we muſt come to thoſe on the weſt-ſide. The firſt is the *Gentlemans Gracht*, with three bridges; the ſecond is call'd the *Rhinoceroſes Gracht*, having likewiſe three bridges; the third is the *City's Inward Gracht*, with three bridges. The firſt *Gracht* running croſſwiſe to the north, is the *City's Inward Gracht*; the ſecond faces the *Carpenters Wharf*, and is called the *Javaneſe Gracht*; and the third is call'd the *Chineſe Gracht*, having only one bridge. The fourth *Gracht* which runs croſſwiſe, begins at the baſtion call'd *Frieſland*, and ends at the new bridge near the *Fiſh-Market*, having three bridges; laſt of all, the *City's Inward Gracht* with one bridge. Theſe are all the *Grachts* and *Burghwalls* within the city, over which are laid 56 bridges, moſt of which are ſuſtain'd by large ſtone arches, not to mention here the wooden draw-bridges which are over the *Gracht* without the walls. At my firſt coming to *Batavia* I lodg'd upon the *Tygers Gracht*, ſo that having ſufficient opportunity to take a draught of it, I thought fit to inſert it here.

The publick buildings of the city.

Among the publick buildings of this city, the church call'd the *Croſs-Church* claims the precedency, being built in 1640, of ſolid ſtone: In the midſt of the church ſtands the ſteeple, being exceedingly beautify'd with iron-work. It has but one bell, which is only rung before church-time; the ſtone edgings in the front of the church are artificially carved, and adorned on the top with *Cherubims*. But time which defaces all things, and the air, which is much ſharper here than in *Europe*, has in a few years wrought a conſiderable change in this magnificent ſtructure. The pulpit and ſeats of the chief men here are very finely wrought and adorned with iron-work and ebony-wood. The veſtry is of the ſame workmanſhip. This ſtructure is very lightſome and lofty, within being adorned with five clear branches of braſs brought thither from *Holland*. In the other part of the city, the foundation of the new church was laid during my ſtay there, and before my departure the brick-work was almoſt finiſhed. In the year 1644, there was alſo a church built in the caſtle, of an octagonal figure, being very light within, and flat on the top; the floor covered with well poliſh'd white and blue ſtones neatly done: The glaſs of the lanthorn on the top was of the beſt kind, and the pews of the church carv'd very artificially and made of the beſt kind of wood the *Indies* afford. 1662.

The croſs-church.

The Town Houſe.

The *Town-Houſe* ſtands very near in the centre of the city, in a ſpacious place, being built of brick in 1652. It is two ſtories high, and you aſcend into the ſecond by a pair of winding ſtairs. The great gate is exactly in the middle of the ſtructure, artificially wrought, of the *Corinthian* order, over which is a balcony or gallery of ſtone, unto which you enter out of the upper-hall. When criminals are to be try'd, a ſcaffold is erected before the *Town-Houſe*. The windows of this building are in proportion very high and lofty, finely glazed, and on the out-ſide guarded with iron-work. In this houſe the courts of juſtice are kept; here is the meeting of the *Shepen* or ſenators, as alſo of the maſters of the hoſpitals, and of the overſeers of other places; as alſo of the court for the direction of military affairs within the city. The inward court is encloſed with a high wall, and a double row of ſtone-pillars; here the officers of juſtice have their habitations, and the priſon-keeper with his attendants on the weſt-end of it. It extends from the *Tygers Gracht* to the *Lords-Street*.

The hoſpital for the ſick.

The hoſpital for the ſick ſtands upon the bank of the great river, which runs through the city, betwixt the *New-Gate* and the *Dieſt-Gate*. Here ſuch as are ſick, and have not wherewithal to provide for themſelves, are entertained and cured, there being ſometimes 200 or 300 to be ſeen here at a time, who are all provided with neat lodgings, beddings and other conveniencies. In

the



1662. the out-houſes are the apartments for the overſeers and their ſervants, for the doctor, apothecary, ſurgeon, miniſter, caſh-keeper, treaſurer and others, who are to keep the houſe clean and look after the ſick; all theſe are plentifully maintain'd by the company. Beſides thoſe before-mention'd, three perſons of note belonging to the company are conſtituted overſeers, who take their turns every week, and ſee that every thing be done as it ought to be, and eſpecially whether any of them are recovered ſo far as to be fit for ſervice. Behind it is a ſquare encloſed with a high wall, and planted with trees, which ſerves for a walking place for thoſe who are upon their recovery; and a door with a wooden bridge reaching a good way into the river, is alſo made for the taking of the freſh air of the river. The miniſter, who is appointed to viſit the ſick, ſays prayers every morning and evening, when a bell is rung; every ſunday there is a ſermon, where all thoſe that are able are obliged to be preſent.

The Spin-Houſe. For the encouraging of virtue, and ſuppreſſing of debauchery in lewd women, a ſpin-houſe has been erected here, having no windows or proſpect but only on the eaſt-ſide towards the *Burghwall*, where certain iron-rails are made in the gate, with wooded ſhutters within, which are ſhut and bolted as often as the overſeer pleaſes. 1662. Here the women are reclaim'd from their lewdneſs by keeping them continually at work, under the tuition of a governeſs, whoſe buſineſs is to look after the Houſe, and to ſet them their taſk, which if they miſs to perform, they are ſure to be ſcourged. For the reſt, there two members of the ſenate conſtituted on purpoſe for the government of this houſe, whoſe buſineſs is to be preſent there every ſunday at the ſermon that is held there, for the reclaiming thoſe lewd creatures from their ill courſe of life. If they commit any miſdemeanor which cannot be corrected by ſcourge, they are puniſh'd by the ordinary court of juſtice.

Slaughter-houſes or fleſh-halls. Upon the very brink of the river are built two ſlaughter-houſes or fleſh-halls, ſuſtain'd by wooden piles, by which means they may with conveniency throw the excrements of the kill'd beaſts into the river. They kill twice a week, each butcher having his peculiar ſtall, where he ſells his meat at ſuch a price as the magiſtrates ſhall think fit to ſet, tho' moſt of them find means to ſell it as dear as they can. Whilſt I was there beef was ſold at the rate of four pence *per* pound, and pork at the ſame rate; but mutton being moſt eſteem'd was ſold dearer. All the beaſts that are to be kill'd


SPINHOUSA

Betwixt p. 268, 269.



1662. must ſtaxed by the farmer of the exciſe upon cattle; according to which the butcher is obliged to pay the tenth-penny exciſe: But if the farmer ſhould be extravagant in his taxation, the butcher who thinks himſelf injur'd, may appeal to the general judgment of all the butchers, who if they do not agree to the price ſet by the farmer, he is obliged to tax it himſelf at his own ſet rate.

The hall for the ſale of ſtuffs.

On the weſt-ſide of that ſpacious place which faces the *Town-Houſe*, is a certain ſtructure, in which are ſold all ſorts of cloaths ready made, as alſo ſtuffs and callicoes, white and painted, beſides divers other commodities expoſed to ſail there, by the *Chineſe*. Theſe have here their peculiar ſhops, for each of which they pay 3 crowns *per* month. The whole building is of wood, being divided into 5 walks or galleries, having ſhops on each ſide; and as many doors from without, which are kept open day and night, becauſe the ſhopkeepers don't put up their commodities till very late at night, and lay them out again early in the morning, with a great deal of curioſity, to invite the buyers to give them a good price, at which the *Chineſe* are very dextrous and quick, ſo that unleſs you be upon guard, you are overreach'd before you are aware of it; however, theſe little ſhops have this conveniency, that you may furniſh your ſelf here at an eaſier rate, and that all at once, with abundance of ſmall things, which you can't buy ſo conveniently at the great ſhops where they will not be ſatisfied with a ſmall gain. 1662.



The city ſtables.

On the eaſt-ſide of the *Town-Houſe* is a goodly ſtructure, fitted up for ſtables for horſes, being all of brick-work without, and provided with racks, mangers, and partitions, and paved with ſtones, ſo that the horſe-dung may be removed and waſh'd away with all imaginable conveniency. The place where they manage their horſes is very airy and well ſituated, having two doors, one whereof leads to the city's *Binne Gracht*, for the conveniency of watering and waſhing the horſes. In this ſtable are kept, beſides the coach and cart-horſes, above 100 ſaddle-horſes, that are managed daily by certain perſons kept for that purpoſe. Their beſt horſes are the *Arabian* and *Perſian* horſes, which they buy here at a high rate, 200 crowns being a common price for an indifferent *Perſian* horſe, the beſt being not to be got for money. It is worth obſervation, that the *Perſians* train up and manage their horſes without blows, whereas our managers are uſed to make uſe of whips and ſpurs, which makes them unfit for the due management of thoſe horſes. Abundance of horſes are alſo brought to *Bata-*

1662. *via* from *Japara* in the iſle of *Java*; but theſe are not comparable to the *Perſian* horſes: Some of theſe however are very tractable, if well handled from the beginning, but many of them are broken mouthed before they come to *Batavia:* The natives being uſed to ride their horſes with a light hunting-bridle, they are apt to toſs up their heads, when they are rid afterwards with a curb-bridle, to prevent which, our managers faſten a leather ſtring to the girt under their belly, the other end of which being buckled to the bridle, makes them keep their heads ſteady. 1662.



The Chineſe *hoſpital for ſick and aged perſons.*

On the *Rhinoceroſes Gracht*, near the ſpinhouſe, is the *Chineſe* hoſpital for ſick and aged perſons, built of brick, and divided into convenient apartments, and a pleaſant court to walk in: It was built in the year 1640. In this houſe ſuch as are ſick and ſuperannuated, and have not wherewithal to ſubſiſt, are received and maintain'd. For the maintenance of which a certain duty is laid upon marriages and burials; as alſo upon actors of plays, farces, and ſuch like ſhews. And as, beſides this, many of the rich *Chineſe*, either by voluntary contributions or legacies, give great encouragement to this houſe; it is provided with a conſiderable revenue. The whole management of this houſe is committed to two *Hollanders*, and as many *Chineſe*, who have a ſecretary to keep their accounts.

The hoſpital for children.

At the extremity of the weſt-end of the *Rhinoceroſes Gracht*, you ſee the hoſpital wherein poor orphans are maintain'd and educated, being of brick, with convenient lodgings for the ſervants of the houſe: It has hitherto no ſettled revenue, being maintain'd by the voluntary contributions of well-diſpoſed people.

The houſe of the artiſans.

In the eaſt-corner is the houſe wherein are lodged all the artiſans belonging to the company, as carpenters, bricklayers, gunfounders, ſtone-cutters, glaſs-makers, turners, ingineers, ſeal-cutters, pewterers, painters, *&c.* all which are diſpoſed into their proper quarters, under the direction of three *Hollanders* appointed by the company. Beſides the ſlaves belonging to the houſe, there is alſo a chirurgeon and a ſchoolmaſter; the laſt of which is obliged to ſay prayers every night; at which all are obliged to be preſent under a certain forfeiture. In this houſe the ſurveyor-general has his lodgings, which are very handſome, and keeps two clerks under him. He overſees the workmen. In this houſe alſo are maintained ſuch criminals as have been condemned to the chains, who are kept here.

Betwixt p. 270. 271.

The Hospitall for Chil
dren of
BATAVIA

1662. here to hard labour, and well guarded. Every night at nine a clock, the doors of the houſe are ſhut up, and a guard of ſlaves is placed to prevent any diſorders which might happen among ſo great a number of people of different callings. I had for ſome time my lodgings in this houſe; and here it was that I firſt made the draught, and afterwards made the deſcription of *Batavia*. The wharf belonging to this houſe is only fitted for the building of ſmall yachts and boats, ſuch as are uſed only in the road for the loading or unloading of ſhips: But ſhips of bulk are built at the iſle of *Ormus*, about a league to the weſt of *Batavia*, where are conſiderable magazines for ropes, and other implements belonging to ſhips, which are defended by certain fortifications. 1662.

The Rope-Alley.

The *Rope-Alley*, where they are employed in twiſting ropes, is likewiſe in one corner of the city, oppoſite to the carpenter's wharf, being planted with large nut-trees, which afford an agreeable ſhade to the rope-makers. A little beyond it to the weſt you ſee the pack-houſes of the company; wherein are laid up pepper, cinnamon, nutmegs, cloves, mace, *&c.* The overſeer has a goodly habitation for his own uſe.



The magazine of rice.

Not far from thence, *viz.* near the baſtion call'd *Amſterdam*, ſtands the company's magazine of rice, a large ſtructure, having a door looking to the water-ſide, where ſhips may be laden and unladen. It was built in my time 1670, of brick-work. There is a ſquare encloſed with a wall at the inward wharf, where the receivers and other ſervants of the company have their habitations.

The *Prawenhouſe*, ſo call'd from the word *Praw*, which in the *Malayan* tongue ſignifies a *boat or ſmall veſſel*, ſtands upon the brink of the river, for conveniency of ſuch ſmall boats as are built or refitted there; here ſeveral ſhipwrights, and a good number of ſeamen have their quarters, the laſt being obliged to be ready upon call, wherever they are ordered to row by the deputy governor, under whoſe tuition they are. On the eaſt-ſide of the little wharf, the overſeer has a ſmall houſe. Having thus given you an account of the publick ſtructures of this city, with ſuch draughts thereof as time and opportunity would permit us to take, we will now proceed to the four great markets of *Batavia*, and begin with the fiſh-market.

The fiſh market.

The fiſh-market is on the weſtern-ſide of the great river, being ſuſtained by ſtrong wooden

1662. wooden piles, and covered on top with pan-tiles. Oppoſite to it is the dwelling place of the *Aſſager* (or *Outroper*) where the fiſher boats are oblig'd to ſtop, and their cargo is ſold immediately by publick ſale, to the faireſt bidder; the fiſhmongers are generally *Chineſe*, each of which has his own ſtall, for which he pays two reals *per* month. The *Outroper* pays ready money to the fiſhermen for what they ſell to theſe *Chineſe*, who allow him twopence in the crown, and are obliged to repay it at a ſet time. Here you may furniſh yourſelf with ſea, river, or ſhell-fiſh, according to your own pleaſure, from 10 a clock in the morning till four in the afternoon; when the fiſhmongers leave their ſtalls here, and ſell the remnants near the river-ſide behind the fleſh-hall.

The rice or corn market. The rice or corn market is adjoining to the former, or rather oppoſite to it at the north-end; being built after the ſame manner, except that it has no ſtalls or banks; here you meet with grains of all ſorts which are ſold here, according to the market price, by a certain ſmall meaſure called *Ganting*, containing about 13 or 14 pounds of rice, which is commonly ſold for ſixpence. He that has the overſight of the market and meaſures, has a houſe at one end; his buſineſs among other things is to ſet the mark upon the meaſures and weights, which is done twice a year; *viz.* in *January* and *July*, at the town-houſe, in the preſence of two *ſhepemen* or aldermen. They pay two-pence for each mark. 1662.

Near the new bridge, as you paſs along the river-ſide to the *Croſs-Church*, is the fowl-market, where the *Mardiikers* and *Topaſſen* (a kind of negroes) ſell all ſorts of fowl in great plenty, ſo that you may buy an ordinary pullet for three-pence, but the *The fowl-market.*



beſt ſort are dearer. In this market you ſee many huts, in which they ſell dried fiſh, eggs and courſe earthen ware.

The fruit market. The fruit-market begins at the new-bridge, extending by the river-ſide to the *Middlepoint*. Here you meet with all ſorts of fruits and herbs, ſold by the *Chineſe* and *Negroes*, who pay the 10th penny exciſe. From four a clock in the afternoon till night, this market is ſo crowded with people, that there is ſcarce any paſſing in it.

The Latin *and* Greek *ſchools.* On the *Tyger*'s-*Gracht* is the *Latin* and *Greek* ſchool, the back-ſide of it reaching to the *Kaymans-Gracht*, with a lofty ſtone-gate. It has a very pleaſant court, where the ſchoolboys may divert themſelves at

GOVERNOURS HOUSE
WITHIN THE CASTLE

FISH MARKE of BATH

1662. certain times. The rector or head ſchool-maſter has a very handſome houſe. Beſides this ſchool, there are divers other ſchools at *Batavia* for the inſtruction of young people in reading and writing; in which ſome of the natives, and eſpecially the *Topaſſes* are ſo ingenious, that they don't give way in that point to any other nation. What books are uſed here are brought out of *Holland*; but in the year 1667, a printing houſe was erected, and ſeveral books have been printed here with good ſucceſs.

The caſtle. The caſtle is a quadrangle, ſituate in a level ground, two baſtions of which, *viz.* the *Diamond* and the *Rabbet* front the city, one facing the *Tyger*'s-*Gracht*, and the other in a ſtrait line thro' the *Lord-ſtreet* to the *Middlepoint* of the new-gate.

On the weſt-ſide the river waſhes the very walls, being encloſed by part of the city, which lies open on that ſide; the two other baſtions call'd the *Pearl* and the *Sapphire* face the ſea; the low grounds toward the weſt are well planted with gardens and orchards; the baſtions, as well as the *Courtins* of the caſtle, are faced with white ſtone from the bottom to the top, and provided with watch-houſes at convenient diſtances; the ditch is very broad and deep, being incloſed 1669, within a quick-ſet hedge, ſerving not only for an ornament, but alſo as an additional ſtrength to the place, from whence they fire with advantage upon an approaching enemy. 1662.

In this caſtle the *Duteh* governor general of the *Indies*, and all the members of the council of the *Indies*, reſiding at *Batavia*, have their places of reſidence; as likewiſe the head factors who keep the accounts, and of what is paid to the ſervants of the company; and the general book-keeper, the ſecretary of the great council, the captain of the armory, the phyſician, chirurgeon, and commander of the ſoldiery; all theſe I ſay, beſides ſeveral others, have their fix'd habitations here. But the houſe or rather palace of the governor-general ſurpaſſes all the reſt in magnificence.



It is built of brick, two ſtories high, yet ſo lofty, that the top of the roof ſurpaſſes in height all the other buildings, and may be ſeen a great way at ſea; eſpecially the lanthorn or turret, which ſtands in the midſt of it, having inſtead of a weather-cock a ſhip of iron, very artificially wrought. The door is juſt in the middle, unto which you aſcend ſeveral broad ſtone ſteps; in this palace is the council-chamber for the great council to meet in, and near it the ſecretaries office and chamber of accompts. The great hall is hung about with bright and well poliſh'd armour, enſigns, ſtandards and

1662. and flags, which have been taken by the *Dutch* in ſeveral ſea and land engagements; in this hall prayers are ſaid every night, and here it is that the governor at certain times gives audience to all ſuch as have occaſion to repreſent their grievances to him. Behind it are pleaſant walks planted with trees, among which a *Tamarind* tree of an exceſſive height, and ſtanding in the center of the garden, affords a moſt agreeable ſight. Out of this garden you paſs thro' a little gate of the *Courtin*, by a ſmall bridge to a ſummer-houſe, built upon piles in the midſt of the water, from whence you have a very pleaſing proſpect, not only of the fortifications of the caſtle, but alſo of the rivers mouth, and the road where the great ſhips ride at anchor. At the eaſtern corner of this ſummer-houſe is a door leading thro' a gallery, to the before-mentioned chamber of accompts, which has a flat roof, convenient offices, and pleaſant walks belonging to it; the floor is covered with a kind of grey-ſtone neatly done. In this apartment moſt of the book-keepers and clerks are boarded at a certain rate by the treaſurer.

The houſes of the members of the great council are on the ſouth-ſide of the caſtle, the land-gate being in the midſt of them.

The armoury is built much after the ſame manner as the chamber of accompts; it extends along the eaſt-ſide of the *Courtin*, having ſeparate apartments for ſword cutlers, gunſmiths, and other artificers of that kind.

The governor of the ſea affairs has his houſe on the north-ſide juſt oppoſite to it, and on the ſame ſide dwell the factors, phyſician, chirurgeon and apothecary. Hereabouts ſtand alſo the magazines of fleſh, bacon, wine, *Brunſwick* mum, *Holland* butter, oil, vinegar, and divers other proviſions; and under ground are made certain vaults for gunpowder and artificial fireworks. The caſtle has four avenues, and as many gates. The firſt and largeſt is call'd the *Landgate*, built 1636, where you ſee a ſtone-bridge, ſupported by 14 arches over the ditch, being 26 rods long, and 10 foot broad, paved with *Dutch* bricks ſet on edge. The *Watergate* faces the north, where is a large watch-houſe for the garriſon, and ſome apartments on both ſides for the overſeers of the magazines and ſtore-houſes.

This was built 1630, according to the inſcription. Beſides theſe, two leſſer gates are in the *Courtins* to the E. and W. which are ſcarce ever made uſe of, unleſs that ſome veſſels laden with ammunition, and ſuch like things, are generally unladen here. There is a ſmall plain before the *Rabbet* baſtion, where the new liſted ſoldiers are exerciſed and taught the uſe of arms, by an officer appointed for that purpoſe. Not many years ago a wooden draw-bridge was built near the baſtion call'd the *Sapphire*, by which means you may walk all round the city to the boom, where you muſt be ferried over. 1662.

Before my departure, a project was on foot of building a tower and ſteeple upon the *Rabbet* baſtion, making ſome additions to the *Rotterdam* and *Utrecht* gates, and to enlarge the cit to the E. and N. as far as to the turning of the great river, ſo that the north-ſide of the caſtle ſhould front the baſtion call'd the *Middlepoint*. Thus far of the city of *Batavia* itſelf, we will now take a view of its outſide.

It is eaſy to be gueſs'd at, what moved the regents of this city to ſurround it with forts at ſuch a diſtance, *viz.* to the E. as far as the river *Antjol*, and to the W. as far as the river *Anke*, along the bay of *Batavia*, and on the landſide to the S. by the forts *Northwiik*, *Riſwick* and *Jacatra*; theſe ſerving the inhabitants of the flat countrey, as a defence againſt the incurſions of the neighbouring barbarians, ſo that they may quietly enjoy the fruits of their labour; the countrey all about this city being well cultivated and ſtored with rice and ſugar-reed fields, gardens and orchards, countrey-houſes, brick and tile wharfs and ſugar-mills, which are of great conſequence to the city. To give all poſſible encouragement for the manuring of the ground, the main channel of the great river was ordered to be ſtop'd up 1659, inſtead of which two branches being made, one leading to *Riſwick*, the other to *Jacatra*, theſe ſerve to lay the ground thereabouts under water upon occaſion. One of theſe branches is to the W. brought into another channel, leading directly to the middle of the city, and being ſtop'd near the ſecond bridge of the new gate by a dike and ſluice. Here you ſee ſeven mills, one whereof is a corn-mill, four gunpowder-mills, one ſaw-mill for wood, and one paper-mill, which are driven by the force of the water; near it the millers have their habitations.

Before the dike, juſt at the entrance of the city is the place where they refine the brimſtone; near this place 1658, a very ſtrong ſluice was built for the conveniency of bringing countrey commodities into the cities with leſs charge, but the ſame was ruin'd in a little time after by the force of the water.

Not many years ago, a certain contagious diſtemper began to rage at *Batavia*, which proving mortal to many, it was reſolved, (to ſtop the infection) to build a



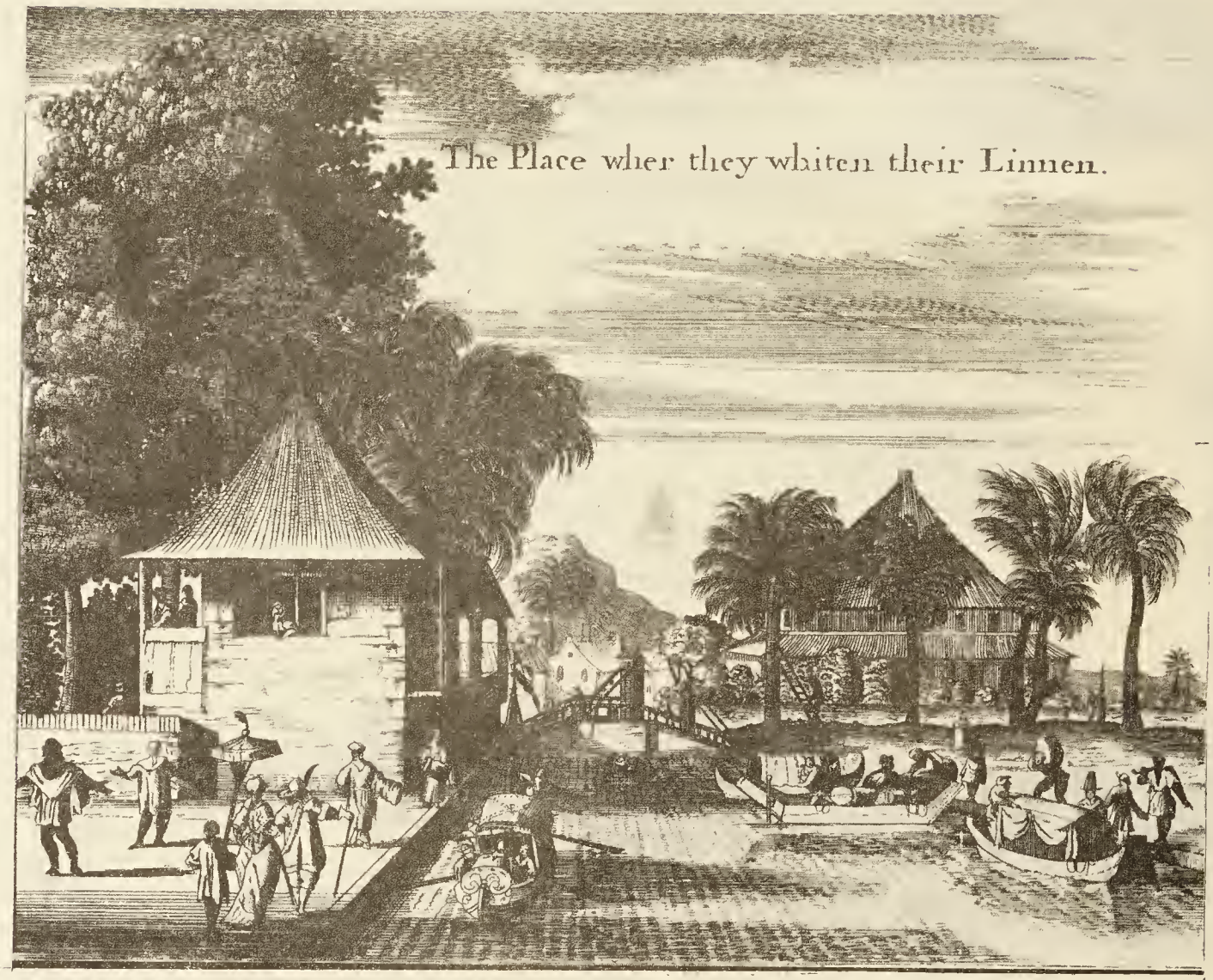
1662. kind of hoſpital or peſt-houſe, where ſuch as were ſeiz'd with this evil, might be provided with lodgings, diet, and ſuitable remedies. This houſe, which has with it the *Deiſt-Gate* near the road to *Arke*, is under the government of ſeveral of the richeſt citizens of *Batavia*.

By the eaſt-ſide of the dike where the mills are, a houſe was built in 1609, for the waſhing and whitening of linen apparel, the latter being carried thither by bamboo canes faſtened together. Without the city are beſides theſe many other houſes erected partly by the company, and partly by the liberality of ſome of the inhabitants, which I will paſs by in ſilence here, and ſay a word or two more of their out-works or forts: All theſe lie in a flat even countrey, made of earth, ſurrounded with ditches and quickſet-hedges, except the quinquangular fort call'd the *Riſwick*, and the fort *Ansjol*, both which are faced with brick-work. They are all well provided with great artillery, and proviſions for nine months, or perhaps for a whole year, as well as the garriſon of the city of *Batavia* it ſelf. There is a certain officer appointed to keep the cannon and other arms neat and clean, the which being under the over-ſight of a captain of the artillery, who commands alſo the fire-workers, and has his habitation upon the baſtion call'd the *Diamond*. The garriſon conſiſts chiefly in foot, there being only a troop of horſe, which ſerves as a guard to the governor-general, who are obliged to be upon the guard in their turns. Theſe enjoy great privileges, are commanded by one of the beſt officers, and are obliged to appear every *Sunday* in their armour well poliſh'd, and with their piſtols, carabines, and broad ſwords. 1662.

Their out-works.

The inhabitants of *Batavia* conſiſt either of the citizens, or ſuch as are ſervants to the company, being of divers nations; among whom the *Dutch* exceed the reſt both in riches and dignity, moſt places of honour and profit being in their hands. *The inhabitants.*

The *Chineſe* drive here a conſiderable traffick, being more induſtrious than any of the other *Indians*; they deal much in fiſh, and cultivate moſt of the rice, reed and corn-fields; ſome alſo maintain themſelves by fiſhing, but the chiefeſt upon merchandizing; they farm the exciſes and cuſtoms; but of late years ſome of the other nations have found ways to imitate them in their thriftineſs and cozenings, at which they are great artiſts, which I know by my own experience. They live here according to the laws and cuſtoms of their own countrey, under the tuition of a *Chineſe* governor, who manages all their affairs Chineſe.



1662. fairs with the company. They are dreſs'd after their own faſhion, in a coat with wide ſleeves, either callicoe or ſilk, according to their abilities. They don't ſhave their heads here according to the *Tartarian* faſhion, as they do now in *China*, but wear their hair long and neatly twiſted. Their habitations are ſettled thro' the whole city, but live for the moſt part on the weſt-ſide, near the great river, and many of them on the eaſt-ſide; their houſes are low, with the roof cover'd over the firſt floor.

The Malayans. The *Malayans* as they are not ſo much addicted to trading as the *Chineſe*, live for the moſt part upon fiſhing; their boats are made after the *Indian* faſhion, with large ſails. They have alſo a governor of their own, who lives in the *Rhinoceroſes Gracht*, whereabouts moſt of them have their dwelling-places. They wear light callicoes or ſilks, tho' ſome of their women of faſhion uſe flower'd and ſtrip'd ſilk; their hair, which is very black, they tie behind in a knot, but the men wear a piece of cloath about their heads. Thoſe few merchants that are among them, are next to the *Chineſe*, accounted the cunningeſt traders; the houſes of the *Malayans* are but very indifferently built there, being covered with leaves, and planted round with coco-trees. They have a cuſtom of chewing the *Bethel* leaves continually, and take tobacco through ſugar-canes lackered over with ſtone ball. 1662.

The Moors. The *Moors* or *Mahometans* here maintain themſelves almoſt in the ſame manner, and live near the *Malayans*; ſome however drive a kind of pedling-trade, and ſell coral and glaſs beads in the ſtreets, ſome have ſmall ſtalls in market-towns. A few of them merchandiſe, eſpecially in free-ſtone, which they fetch in their veſſels from the adjacent iſlands. They are clad after the *Mahometan* faſhion.

Amboyneſe. The *Amboyneſe* inhabit a particular part of the ſuburbs, on the left-hand, as you come from *Jacatra* to the city, near the burying place of the *Chineſe*; near it their governor (who has done great ſervice to the company) has built himſelf a ſtately houſe, after the manner of the *Amboyneſe*. They live for the moſt part upon carpenters work, being extremely dextrous in building of houſes of bamboo-canes, and have a peculiar way of ſplitting and twiſting of canes in divers figures for windows, which afford a free paſſage to the air. The *Amboyneſe* are a courageous nation, of a dreadful aſpect, with long black hair, and much inclined to mutiny; their chief weapons are cymeters, and ſhields of an oval figure, where with they know how to ward a blow



A Melayã Captain.



The habit of a Malayan and his Wife at Batavia.



A Souldier of Amboina

Betwixt pag. 276. 277.



30.

A Negro Pedler with his Wife.



1662. a blow, and to intercept their enemies arrows: The men wear a piece of callicoe wrapt ſeveral times about their heads, both ends hanging down, and adorned with flowers and ſome other ornaments. The women have only a piece of callicoe wrapt about them, and another piece round their ſhoulders, their arms being left bare; their houſes are made of wooden planks, carved with leaves, indifferently high built: Their dreſs is like that of the *Moors*.

Javaneſe. The *Javaneſe* inhabit in houſes of bamboo-canes, on the other ſide of the burying-place of the *Chineſe*, ſome of which are neatly built and cover'd with the twigs of coco-trees. Some maintain themſelves with huſbandry, and eſpecially with planting of rice, others with building of boats, uſed by the inhabitants for the carrying of their commodities to the city; they alſo go abroad a fiſhing, their boats which are turn'd like horns in the figure of a half-moon, being ſo nimble, that they call them the *Flying-Boats*. The *Javaneſe* men go for the moſt part naked, being only covered from the middle to the knees; ſome wear a kind of a ſcarf, whereon they faſten their ſwords; on the head they wear a cap, but go bare-footed. Their houſes excel in neatneſs thoſe of the reſt of the *Indians*.

The *Mardikers* or *Topaſſers* are a mixture of divers *Indian* nations, call'd *Topaſſers*, i. e. *Accommodators*, becauſe they will accommodate themſelves eaſily to the manners, cuſtoms and religion of ſuch as they live among; tho' ſome will have them derive their name from a precious ſtone call'd a *Topaz*. They live both within and without the city, the chiefeſt of which being merchants, who traffick in their own veſſels with the adjacent iſles, live in very ſtately houſes. The reſt live upon huſbandry, graſing and gardening, and have ſome artiſans among them; they have their own captains, who ſit in the council of war, and ſchool-maſters who teach their children to read and to write. Their dreſs approaches near to the *Dutch* faſhion, but their breeches reach down to their ankles, and wear a kind of caps on their heads. Their women are clad like other *Indian* women. Their houſes are better built than thoſe of the other *Indians*, generally of ſtone, and cover'd with tiles, ſtately built and arch'd. Before their houſes they plant coco-trees, and all ſorts of *Indian* fruits and flowers, but the backſide they reſerve for the keeping of pigs, pidgeons, fowl and other ſorts of poultry, which they bring to ſale in the market.

1662. Mardikers *or* Topaſſers.

1662. *The ſoldiers of* Makaſſar.

The chief arms of the ſoldiers of *Makaſſar* are certain poiſon'd arrows of a foot long, pointed at one end with fiſh teeth, and on the other with a kind of hard wood; when they are to go into the wars, they provide a good number of theſe arrows dipt a good while before in a poiſonous liquor which they let dry upon them. This poiſon is the juice iſſuing out of the bark of a certain tree growing in the iſle of *Makaſſar*, and two or three adjacent iſles of the *Bougiſſes*; it is of the height of a clove tree; its leaves reſembling alſo thoſe of that tree; the juice of which, while yet freſh, is mortal, and not to be cured by antidotes. Theſe poiſon'd arrows the ſoldiers of *Makaſſar* don't ſhoot out of their bows, but thro' trunks, as we let fly at the birds in *Europe* with ſmall earthen balls; with theſe they will hit any mark within four rods diſtance. This poiſon is ſo pernicious, and penetrates with that ſwiftneſs thro' the whole maſs of the blood, and ſeizes upon the ſpirits, that the *Makaſſars* themſelves know no remedy againſt it. The moſt approved remedy againſt it is man's dung, which taken immediately after the wound is given, cauſes a vomiting, and hinders the operation of the poiſon: I have known ſeveral of our ſoldiers cured by this remedy, tho' ſome others I have ſeen die not long after they had been wounded, notwithſtanding the uſe of it, and others after two or three days. In the iſle of *Makaſſar* grows a certain root, of a bitteriſh taſte, which is look'd upon as a great antidote againſt this poiſon, and is often uſed as ſuch by the *Dutch*; they chew the root, and lay it about the orifice of the wound.

Timoreſe *ſoldiers.*

The *Timoreſe* ſoldiers or inhabitants of the iſle of *Timoor*, uſe ſwords of ſandel wood, wherewith they can cut a man through the middle at one ſtroke: For in this iſle, and the *Molucca-Iſlands*, and all along to the S. S. E. beyond the *Leſſer-Java*, to the 10th deg. of ſouthern latitude, grow whole woods of white and yellow ſandel wood, call'd *Chandava* by the inhabitants. The *Timoreſe* are very barbarous, but warlike; formerly they were all pagans, but of late years moſt are turn'd mahometans, and ſome *Roman* catholicks.

Bougiſſes.

The *Bokjes* or *Bougiſſes*, who formerly inhabited divers iſles near that of *Makaſſar*, are a warlike people, arm'd with cymeters, arrows, and ſhields, which they handle with great dexterity. They go for the greateſt part naked, having only a piece of ſtuff about the middle down to the knees. The women are clad like the other *Indians*. After the *Dutch* became engaged in a war with the king of *Makaſſar*, theſe *Bougiſſes* fixt their habitations in and about *Batavia*, till the event of the war; their king having his reſidence near the out-guard, betwixt the forts of *Riſwick* and *Northwick*, the queen being permitted to reſide within the city; but after the *Makaſſars* were conquered by the *Dutch*, under the conduct of *Cornelius Spellman*, and a firm peace was ſettled with the neighbouring nations, both the king and queen had a houſe aſſign'd them in the *Lords-Street*. This houſe or palace extends to the brink of the river, with very pleaſant walks, flower-gardens, and a moſt delightful vineyard, which in my time, 1676, bore vaſt branches of grapes. The gate facing the ſtreet is very neatly built, of the *Ionick* order, with a gallery on the top of it, and the apartments ſo ſpacious and well-contrived, that moſt of the *Indian* kings and their retinue might live here. 1662.

Number of foreigners at Batavia.

Among the foreign nations reſiding here, there may, according to computation, be raiſed 6720 fighting men, *viz.* 400 *Topaſſars* or *Mardiiken* under two captains, within the city, beſides 710 without the city, under three captains, making in all 1110; of *Regantiins* 70; *Amboyneſe* 600; *Malayans* 201; *Chineſe* 1200; *Moors* 200; of the *Javaneſe* in their quarter within the *New-Gate* 750; near the burying-place of the *Chineſe* 1500; in their quarter beyond the *New-Fort* 800; and of *Braſilians* beyond the fort 300. That this iſland is ſufficiently fruitful, and able to maintain its inhabitants, is evident from the exportations that are made yearly thence to *Amboyna* and other places: It is true no wheat grows here, but ſuppoſing the ſupplies that are brought of that grain from *Suratte* and *Japan* ſhould be ſtopt, the defect thereof may very well be ſupplied with rice. The chief artiſans here are *Dutch*, moſt of which live very well, and the *Chineſe* have many carpenters and bricklayers among themſelves, who will work as journeymen. Their cabinet-makers have a way of joining the wood of their cabinets, ſo that the jointures are not to be ſeen. Others get a livelyhood by ſelling of ſugar-beer, cookery, and the ſale of *Sury* or coco-liquor, and *Arack* or *Indian* ſtrong-waters, of which they make punch, (as the *Engliſh* call it) a liquor that opens both the hearts and purſes of the inhabitants. But the chief inns and taverns are kept by the *Dutch*, who pay, as well as all the other nations, two reals *per* month for their licenſe, beſides 70 reals exciſe of every pipe of *Spaniſh* wine they ſell. The diſtillers of *Arack* are moſt *Chineſe*, who pay 50 reals exciſe for every chauldron or goſper *per* month.

The

Betwixt pag. 270. 271.



A Marchant of Java.

Betwixt p. 276. 277.



A Javaneſe Man and Wooman.



A Makaßer with his Wife as they are habited at Batavia

Betwixt P. 278. 279.



34.

Tymorian Souldiers.

Delineavit T. 278.274.



35.

A Bougis of Boxjes.



Makaſsar Souldiers who blow poiſon'd darts out of Trunks.



A Tmas or Mardick with his Wife

1662. The government of the city of *Batavia* is ſettled upon the ſame baſis as in the *United Provinces*, being adminiſter'd by ſix peculiar colleges or councils.

The firſt and chief is compoſed of the members of the council of the *Indies*, in which the governor-general of the *Indies* preſides, whoſe name was Mr. *Maetzuiper* at that time. In this council all affairs of ſtate are tranſacted: Their chamber is in the palace of the governor, where audience is given every day to redreſs the grievances of the people.

The ſecond college or council conſiſts of nine perſons, beſides the preſident, who commonly is one of the members of the great council, and is the keeper of the great ſeal, repreſenting a woman placed in a tower, with a balance in one, and a ſword in the other hand, with this inſcription; *The ſeal of the council of juſtice of the caſtle of* Batavia; this college being generally called the *Council of Juſtice*. Here are debated and decided all matters relating to the publick revenue and treaſury. They alſo take cognizance of differences ariſing about cuſtoms. The preſident in conjunction with the council has a voice in the determination of civil cauſes, and has a third part of all the fines; but if they exceed 100 reals, he has only a ſixth part. His chief buſineſs is to take care that no incroachments be made upon the prerogatives of the ſovereignty of the *United Provinces*. The ſecretary is to keep an exact regiſter of all things tranſacted in this aſſembly, without any other reward but his ſalary: He alſo has in his cuſtody the money which comes from the fines, of which he muſt give an account. The door-keeper is to attend whilſt they are ſitting, and to ſummon ſuch perſons as are to appear before them: He wears a ſtick and a ſilver-ſhield on the left-ſide, with the ſeal of the council. The goal-keeper keeps three tables for the priſoners; who are to pay half a real for turning the key. This council aſſembles in the council-chamber of the town-houſe, twice, and ſometimes thrice a week.

The third college or council conſiſts of the aldermen or ſenators, choſen out of the beſt citizens. They aſſemble three times a week, *viz. Mondays*, *Wedneſdays* and *Thurſdays*, from 7 till 11 in the forenoon. At their election they are preſented with 50 rixdollars, and with 100 more every 6 months. In this council are determin'd all the cauſes betwixt the citizens, (from whom however lies an appeal to the council of juſtice;) if any difference ariſes betwixt a ſervant of the company and a citizen, the laſt muſt be ſummoned before this court; and no citizen is obliged to appear before the council of juſtice, but muſt be ſummon'd before this aſſembly firſt, and there anſwer for himſelf. This council iſſue their orders in relation to the publick ſtructures, bridges and ſtreets, yet not without the approbation of the great council. The preſident has the cuſtody of the ſeal, and calls the aſſembly together when he thinks fit: He may peruſe the regiſter, and propoſes all matters to the council: He has a double voice, and is commonly one of the members of the great council. The *Landroſt* or chief judge, has in this aſſembly a deciſive ſentence in criminal cauſes, and is allowed a third part of all the fines. This council conſiſts of nine perſons, among whom are two *Chineſe*. They have alſo a door-keeper, who is called the city meſſenger, having a ſhield with the city's arms in it. 1662.

The government of Batavia.

The fourth council conſiſts of the overſeers of the hoſpital of the orphans, being choſen out of the beſt citizens, except the preſident, who is generally a member of the great council. It conſiſts of five members only, three whereof are citizens, the other two ſervants of the company: Their buſineſs is to provide for the poor-orphans, and to enquire into their condition, and what is left by their parents.

The fifth is the council appointed for the determination of matters of leſs moment; the preſident whereof is a member of the council of juſtice. They are to give licences for marriages, and not to permit men before they are twenty one, and maids before eighteen years of age, to marry; nor mahometans or pagans to marry with chriſtians, nor any *Hollanders* with the natives that don't underſtand *Dutch*. They ſit twice a week in the town-houſe, where cauſes of little moment are pleaded and ſoon decided.

The ſixth council of *Batavia* is the council of war, in which the chief officer of the militia of the city is preſident. Here are determined all matters relating to the militia of leſs moment, which are brought before them by the city major; but matters of conſequence are referr'd to the determination of the judge and court of the ſenators. They alſo meet in the town-houſe once a week.

All theſe courts have each their own ſecretary, clerks and waiters.

The eccleſiaſtical government of *Batavia* is adminiſtred by the miniſters, church-wardens and overſeers of the poor, who aſſemble in the veſtry of the church upon the ſummons of their preſident, who is choſen every month. The miniſters being choſen in, and ſent hither out of *Holland*,

The eccleſiaſtical government.

1662. are confirm'd here, and live in great eſteem among the citizens.

The original and riſe of Batavia.

Batavia, the capital city of all the *Indies* under the *Dutch* juriſdiction, has been frequently attempted by the natives or *Javaneſe*; for no ſooner had the *Hollanders* in 1618. (after the taking of *Jacatra*, unto which they gave the name of *Batavia*) erected a fortreſs here, but the natives being encouraged by the *Engliſh* of *Bantam*, endeavour'd to drive them from thence. To effect which, the *Engliſh* perſuaded them to erect a redoubt or great battery, upon which they planted their great guns, from whence they play'd ſo furiouſly upon the new baſtion of the *Dutch* fort, that they were not able to bring it to perfection. *John Peterſon Koen*, the *Dutch* governor, having thereupon call'd together a council of war, it was reſolved, that to hinder the further progreſs of the enemy, they ſhould make a ſalley the next morning by break of day, in order to attack the redoubt, and the quarters of the *Chineſe* and *Engliſh* at the ſame time. Accordingly our men were divided into three troops, commanded by *Peter Van Broek*, (afterwards governor-general of the *Dutch-Indies*) *Peter Van Dirks*, and *Peter Van Rey*, with theſe they attack'd the before-mentioned poſts at once. The *Javaneſe* fought bravely at firſt; but ſeeing the *Hollanders* perſiſted in the attack, reſolved either to die or overcome, they retreated, leaving their ſtrong hold to the enemy, who deſtroy'd all their work in a few hours. But being ſorely gall'd by the fire of the city, they had not the ſame ſucceſs at the new redoubt erected by the enemy near the river-ſide; ſo, that having endeavoured, but in vain, to make a breach there, they were forced to retire with the loſs of 15 men killed and 10 wounded. Beſides this redoubt, the *Javaneſe* had another battery raiſed in the midſt of the city, which being mounted with heavy cannon taken out of the *Engliſh* ſhips, did alſo conſiderable miſchief to the beſieged, who were day and night at work in raiſing batteries, and putting their fortifications in a ſtate of defence; whereas the enemy being much ſuperior in number, had had time enough to provide themſelves with all things for this enterpriſe. In the mean while the *Hollanders* made a ſecond attempt upon the redoubt near the river-ſide, but were repulſed with the loſs of 7 or 8 of their men, and a lieutenant, whoſe head the *Javaneſe* carried in triumph on the top of a launce. The *Engliſh* then living at *Bantam*, would fain have revenged themſelves upon the *Dutch* inhabitants there, for the damages their countreymen had received at *Batavia*, had they not been prevented therein by the *Pangerang*. Whilſt the *Dutch*, who were not above 240 fighting men ſtrong in the fortreſs, were thus defending themſelves againſt ſome thouſands of the *Javaneſe*, (beſides the *Engliſh*) an *Engliſh* ſquadron of 11 ſhips appeared in the road of *Batavia*, coming from *Bantam*; whereupon the governor of the fort, having recommended the defence thereof to *Peter Van Broek* the deputy governor, he went on board a man of war, with an intention to engage the *Engliſh*, but finding himſelf two weak, left what ammunition he could ſpare, in the caſtle, and ſo ſet ſail for the *Molucca* iſlands, being purſued for ſome days by the *Engliſh*, but to no purpoſe; who after their return, came again to an anchor in the road of *Batavia*. Thus the *Dutch* were attack'd both by ſea and land, yet did not loſe their courage, but defended themſelves with ſo much bravery, that the enemy thought fit to offer a truce, to ſettle, as they pretended, the preliminaries of a peace. 1662.

Hoſtages being exchang'd on both ſides, the *Dommagon* or prime miniſter, the king of *Jacatra*'s brother demanded the ſum of 4000 crowns from the *Hollanders*, which he ſaid they had forfeited according to agreement, for having attack'd the *Engliſh* without the king's leave, and 4000 more for the letting them finiſh the new baſtion, which he ſaid was not comprehended in the ſaid contract; after many debates and conteſts, certain articles were at laſt agreed on, which the *Dutch* (who wanted ammunition) were willing to ſign; but the *Engliſh* finding thoſe conditions againſt their intereſt (the *Dutch* being thereby permitted to remain in the poſſeſſion of their fortreſs and habitations at *Bantam*) found out the following trick to break off the treaty; they ſo far prevail'd, firſt with *Peter vander Broek* the deputy-governor of the fortreſs, that he came out to meet the king of *Jacatra* at an appointed place, but no ſooner appear'd there but he was taken priſoner, with thoſe few that attended him, and laid in irons; being threatned with preſent death, unleſs he would prevail with thoſe in the fortreſs to ſurrender it immediately; but finding the garriſon reſolved to defend the place, the *Engliſh* brought more of their heavy cannon aſhore, in order to batter it with the utmoſt fury; at the ſame time they drag'd the deputy-governor, loaden with irons and a rope about his neck, to the walls of the caſtle, threatning him once more with immediate death upon the ſpot, unleſs the garriſon would prevent it by an immediate ſurrender; the deputy-governor was ſo far from being overcome by the fear of preſent death,

Bravery of the Dutch *governor of* Batavia.

1662. that on the contrary, like a brave and faithful commander, he exhorted them to defend the place to the laſt drop of blood, which ſo exaſperated ſome of the *Javaneſe* and *Engliſh* that ſtood near him, that they threw him backwards by the rope, and ſo drag'd him back to the council, all which he took patiently, and with ſo undaunted a courage, that ſome of the *Engliſh* being aſham'd of ſo barbarous an action, afterwards beg'd his pardon. By this time the *Dutch* having ſpent all their ammunition, and quite tir'd out with continual labour and watching, without any hopes of preſent relief, ſaw themſelves under an indiſpenſable neceſſity to ſurrender the place under condition, that the garriſon and caſtle with all the artillery ſhould be deliver'd to the *Engliſh*, and the merchandizes, money and jewels to the *Javaneſe*; it was ſign'd the firſt of *February* 1619, by *Wydurk Bama*, king of *Jacatra*, and the *Engliſh* chief commander on one ſide, and by thoſe in the fortreſs on the other ſide.

The *Hollanders* being now upon the point of delivering themſelves and the fortreſs up to their enemies, a ſudden accident robb'd the *Javaneſe* and the *Engliſh* of all their hopes; for the *Pangerang* of *Bantam* had no ſooner notice of this capitulation, in which he had no ſhare, but he order'd his *Dommagon* or chief miniſter to march with a body of 4000 men to ſecure the *Dutch* deputy-governor, and the caſtle with all that was found in it for his uſe. Accordingly he march'd with all ſecrecy to *Jacatra*, and meeting with the king in his apartment, put his dagger to his breaſt with theſe words: *King, ſurrender yourſelf priſoner, or expect no quarter*, which ſo terrify'd the king, that he comply'd not only with his demands, but ſoon after retir'd with the queen into the mountains, without ever being heard of ſince. The *Dommagon* of *Bantam* having taken the deputy-governor into his cuſtody, ſummon'd the fortreſs to ſurrender, which thoſe refus'd to do, except upon the before-mention'd conditions, which the *Bantameſe* refuſing to agree to, and the *Engliſh* in the mean while (ſeeing they were like to be diſappointed in aim) beginning to reimbark their cannon, thro' contrivance of the beſieged, theſe finding their enemies at variance about the booty, began to take freſh courage, and having in ſeveral attacks bravely repulſed the *Javaneſe*, were now ſo confident of maintaining the fort, that they gave it the name of *Batavia*; thus matters ſtood, when on the 25th of *March* 1619, their ſo long look'd for relief, conſiſting of 17 men of war, under the command of *John Peterſon Koen*, came from the *Moluque* iſlands in the road of *Batavia*: Within a few days after they landed 1100 men, divided into 12 ſeveral bodies, and edged on with revenge, attack'd the city of *Jacatra* with incredible fury, the *Javaneſe* defended themſelves with great obſtinacy for ſome time, but no longer able to endure our fire, they left their entrenchments, and look'd for their ſafety in an open flight, being cloſely purſued by the *Dutch*, who gave no quarter; this happened the 30th of *March* 1619, which day is yearly celebrated here in memory of this great action. This done, Mr. *Koen* ſail'd with the fleet to *Bantam*, demanding the immediate reſtitution of all the priſoners; the *Pangerang* being at firſt unwilling to grant his demand, he began to thunder with his cannon into the city, which ſoon terrify'd him into a compliance. The *Engliſh* ſeeing themſelves now quite out of all hopes of accompliſhing their deſign, by the coming of the *Dutch* fleet, made the beſt of their way thro' the ſtreight of *Sunda*, and thoſe of *Bantam*, finding themſelves forſaken by their confederates, thought it moſt convenient to give over their project. 1662.

The *Hollanders* having now their hands free, and ſeeing the ſituation of their new fortreſs in ſo fertile a countrey, near a very advantageous bay, capable of containing 1000 ſhips with ſafety, reſolved and gave immediate orders for the building of the city, under the cannon of the fortreſs, the adjacent iſlands furniſhing them with ſufficient ſtone and mortar, and what elſe was requiſite for this undertaking, being purchaſed from the neighbouring confederates. But the *Javaneſe* not being able to brook the riſe and encreaſe of this new city, the *Mataran* (or *Javaneſe* emperor) 1629, laid cloſe ſiege to it with 12000 men, under the conduct of the prince of *Madure*; and being advanc'd with their works within muſket ſhot of the walls, they made ſeveral furious attacks in the night-time, but were as often repulſed by the fire of the beſieged, who beſides this made frequent ſallies, and ruin'd their works, without giving them leiſure to repair them. The *Javaneſe* being reſolv'd to try all means to reduce the place, ſtop'd the current of the great river with piles ram'd into the bottom, behind which they threw all the dead carcaſſes of men and beaſts, which not only infected the water, but alſo the air, which occaſion'd diſtempers among the beſieg'd, who were forced to drink ſalt water for a conſiderable time, till at laſt by continual digging having found ſome ſprings of tolerable good water, they began to refreſh themſelves with leſs danger and more eaſe. The *Javaneſe* finding alſo this de-

1662. sign to prove unſucceſsful, had recourſe again to force, and the 2d of *October* 1629, made a general aſſault on the ſouth-ſide of the city, relieving their troops continually with freſh men, but were repulſed bravely without any conſiderable loſs of the *Dutch*. At the ſame time they aſſaulted a ſmall outwork or tower call'd *Maaſland-Waerberg*, defended only by 15 men, who defended themſelves courageouſly, as that they were attack'd. At laſt, having ſpent all their powder and ball, they went to work with the tiles and bricks of the caſtle within; the *Javaneſe* being ſenſible of their want, advanced to the very foot of the walls, and having found means to bring a great rope round the building, were endeavouring to pull down the tower; but the beſieged ſeeing themſelves in extremity, made a furious ſally upon the *Javaneſe*, who thought not fit to ſtand the ſhock, but ſoon retreated to their entrenchments, except a few that were ſlain upon the ſpot. The firſt of *November* 1629, about ſix hours after ſunſet, the *Javaneſe* ſet fire to their camp in three ſeveral places, and march'd off with all imaginable ſecrecy, after a ſiege of three months and three days. No booty worth mentioning was found there, but 800 men miſerably murthered all on a ſpot; a miſerable ſpectacle! occaſion'd as we learn'd afterwards by the haughty courage of the prince of *Madure*, which happened thus: During the firſt ſiege of the caſtle of *Batavia*, the emperor of *Mataran* having ſent a body of troops under the command of one of his beſt officers to the king of *Jacatra*, and the ſame returning unſucceſsful, the prince of *Madure* ſpoke ſlightly of the matter, telling openly at court, *That if he had been ſent with ſuch troops, he would have carried the caſtle or died in the attempt.* The *Materan* being inform'd thereof, and reſolv'd to try his fortune againſt *Batavia*, gave the ſupreme command of his army to the ſaid prince, who proving unſucceſsful, juſt as he was ready to march off with his troops, was order'd to be ſlain with all his followers, *to verify his own words* (as he ſaid) *that he would either carry the caſtle or periſh in the attempt.*

Batavia *beſieged by the* Javaneſe.

The *Javaneſe* loſt above 30000 men in this unfortunate ſiege, notwithſtanding which, thoſe of *Bantam* in the year 1655, had a mind to try their fortune againſt the *Dutch*; who meeting them in the open field, this occaſioned many ſkirmiſhes, in which the *Javaneſe* commonly had the worſt, ſo that being pretty well tired with the war, and hearing of the approaching ſuccours from the *Molucca* iſlands, under the command of *Arnold Ulaming*, they thought it their beſt way to come to a compoſition with them, ſince which time they have not thought fit to come to any rupture, but maintain a good correſpondence with thoſe they know are able to cope with them; eſpecially ſince they have ſtrengthned their city with divers conſiderable outworks and forts. 1662.

The fort *Ansjol* on the ſea-ſide, the fort *Aake* to the weſt-ſide, and on the *Quinquangular* fort, the *Riſwick*, *Noothwick* and *Jacatra* on the land-ſide. The fort *Aake* is built 1200 rods from *Batavia* to the eaſt, near the ſea-ſide juſt by the lime-kills, and faced with ſtone. The fort *Aake* lies about 500 rods from the city, more towards the land-ſide, being alſo a free quadrangular figure; hereabouts live abundance of farmers along the river, the grounds being very fertile here. Near it is the *Peſt-houſe*. The fort *Jacatra* ſtands upon the bank of the river, not above 500 paces to the north-eaſt of the city; from whence there is a ſtrait and pleaſant walk thither, planted on both ſides with gardens and orchards. The *Chineſe*, *Amboyneſe*, and ſome other foreigners have their habitations hereabouts. The fort of *Northwick* lies to the north of the city near the river, betwixt that of *Jacatra* and *Riſwick*.

The outworks of Batavia.

Without the city many of the citizens have very pleaſant gardens and houſes. Upon the great river without *Batavia* you ſee a houſe belonging to captain *Burghs*, built flat on the top after the *Indian* faſhion, being ſurrounded with all ſorts of *Indian* trees. Upon the brink of the river is a pleaſant ſummer-houſe. Without the city, near the great river, ſtands another houſe belonging to a rich citizen call'd *Strantwich*, belonging formerly to Mr. *John Maetzuicker*, governor-general of the *Dutch Indies*: It is very airy and pleaſantly built, with a very fine front, the gardens being well ſtored with trees and flowers of moſt ſorts.

Without the new gate, in a grove of pleaſant trees, you ſee the tomb of a *Chineſe* governor, named *Sequa*; being no more than a heap of earth raiſed above the ſurface of the ground, and encloſed with brick-work, plaiſtered white all over: In the midſt you ſee a table, and upon it a cup, into which the *Chineſe* put ſometimes money, ſometimes victuals, to appeaſe the manes of the deceaſed.

A Chineſe *tomb.*

The grounds about *Batavia*, and indeed of the whole iſle of *Java*, are extremely fertile in all ſorts of fruits the *Indies* afford; but what is moſt ſurprizing is, that divers plants, which in *Europe* grow on ſmall and tender ſtalks, riſe up here very thick, and with hard ſtalks; whereas

Trees, plants and flowers of Java.

1662. on the other hand, divers ſorts of beans and flowers grow in *Java* upon trees. The ſoil about *Batavia* is ſo rich, that the ſeeds brought hither out of *Holland*, *Perſia*, and from *Suratte*, thrive extremely, and yield plentiful fruits.

Fruits of the earth. *Holland* cabbages, if ſown in due time, and well look'd after, come here to a good perfection, but if neglected they will not cabbage. Provident nature ſeems to have been careful in abundance of aſtringent plants for this climate, where the bloody flux and other diſtempers occaſioned by the gall, are ſo frequent. Of trefoil or clover they have great ſtore here; and in their gardens purſlain, aſparagus, endive, lettice, bekabung, water-creſſes, parſley, radiſhes, red and white beetes, and ſuch like: The radiſhes grow longer and better taſted here than in *Europe*, and there is a certain kind of them ſhorter but thicker than the reſt, which are boil'd like our turnips. The *Chineſe* pickle radiſhes, and uſe them to create an appetite to their victuals. Here alſo is found a certain kind of *Mandragora*, called *Bella Donna* by the *Italians*, in great requeſt among the *Indians* in burning fevers; they pickle it in vinegar, and eat the fruit roaſted in the aſhes as a diſert.

Vines. Vines are very plenty and good here if well cultivated; whether or by whom the vines have been tranſlated hither is uncertain, there being no mention made of it in the journals of the voyages made into thoſe parts ſince the year 1595. They grow very luſciouſly upon the walls of the houſes of *Batavia*, which bear fruit in a manner all the year round, provided they be pruned in due time; for 14 days after they are pruned the buds come out, which in 14 days more ſtand in full bloſſom, and in two months longer produce ripe grapes; ſo that every vine brings forth ripe grapes every three months, and conſequently four times in the year. But they don't thrive ſo well without the city; whether the lands be too low, or not ſufficiently purged from the ſalt-petre, I will leave to the enquiry of others; ſince it is certain, that vineyards would be of prodigious conſequence to the inhabitants, there being vines here which bear grapes, each bunch weighing 16 or more ounces; and there are ſome grapes as big as the *Spaniſh Muſcadine* grape.

Blue beans. All along the roads about *Batavia* grow a certain plant among the woods, with ſmall branches not unlike the hops, which ſpread very plentifully upon the ground, or will riſe up to a good height on ſtalks like our *French* beans, having leaves like our roſe-trees. The flower comes forth out of a bud as large as our ordinary roſes, pointed at the end; they are of a lovely ſky blue colour, and yellow in the middle, but the fruit being rank is not regarded. 1662.

Indian *garden-herbs.* The *Indian* beets grow in the gardens of *Batavia*, their leaves being not unlike our ſorrel leaves, with a pale vein thro' the middle: They bring forth purſley flowers on green ſtalks; ſome are white, others a mixture of purple and green. The leaves and ſtalks when boil'd, are in taſte like the *Indian Bajan:* All ſorts of garden-herbs are in great requeſt among the *Indians* here, becauſe moſt of the *Indian* foreigners that come from *Suratte*, and the coaſt of *Coromandel*, feed for the moſt part upon fruits of the earth; for believing the tranſmigration of the ſoul, they will not eat the fleſh of any living creature; for which reaſon alſo they abſtain from red beans, or herbs of a red colour, as having a reſemblance to blood; and for the ſame reaſon it is, that the *Indians*, tho' otherwiſe very ignorant, yet are very well verſed in the knowledge of plants and trees. The *Malayans* call all pot-herbs or other eatable herbs *Seir*, but medicinal and poiſonous herbs *Oubat*. About *Batavia* are to be found divers ſorts of pot and other garden herbs; as red and white beets, parſley, divers ſorts of lettices, dill, fennel, aſparagus, *&c.* And of fruits of the earth water-melons, pompions, cucumbers, citruls, *&c.* And of pulſe, all ſorts of beans and peas, which grow up to a great height on ſtalks or trees.

Fokky-Fokky. The fruit call'd *Fokky-Fokky* by the *Indians* is ſhaped like a pear, ſometimes near a yard long, and of the thinneſs of a man's arm: It contains abundance of ſmall ſeeds, the rind being thin, but ſo ſmooth and bright, that you may ſee your face in them like as in a looking-glaſs: The leaves are green but rough, and as it were covered with a hairy ſubſtance: They grow up to a good height. This fruit is one of the beſt and moſt eſteem'd of all the *Indies*, being of a delicious taſte, and when boil'd with wine and pepper, not unlike our artichoak bottoms. They are frequently eaten both by the *Dutch* and *Indians*, inſtead of the *European* turnips, being look'd upon as very nouriſhing and eaſy to be digeſted; beſides, that by their diuretick quality they are good againſt the gravel and ſtone. There is another wild kind of *Fokky-Fokky*, the fruits whereof are round, and when ripe turn yellow, but theſe are only food for the hogs.

Jamboes. In the plains of *Java* grows a tree, the fruit whereof the *Malayans* call *Jamboes*, and the *Dutch* ſloes or ſmall plumbs: This tree reſembling in all reſpects our ſloe or wild plumb-tree; the fruits being alſo of an aſtringent but not diſagreeable taſte: The fruit when ripe is yellow, and the juice

1662. juice thereof mix'd with *Champana* and roſe water, is uſed againſt the inflammation of the throat. The juice taken inwardly is good againſt the bloody flux, and other bileous diſtempers. Thus this juice of the *Indian* fruit *Jangomas* is equivalent in its virtue to the *Acacia* of the antients, or to our *European* ſloes.

Cubebes or Kumuk. In the iſle of *Java* only, *viz.* in the woods near the ſhore of the ſtreight of *Sunda*, grows wild a certain fruit called *Cubebes* and *Quabeb* by the *Arabians*, *Kumuk* by the *Javaneſe*, and by the reſt of the *Indians*, except the *Malayans*, *Kubab Sini*, i. e. *Chineſe Kubebe*, not becauſe it grows in *China*, but becauſe it is tranſported thither in great quantities. The tree which bears this fruit is both in leaves and branches not unlike to our apple-tree, but ſomewhat leſſer. The fruit is round, ſmaller than pepper, of a dark brown colour, and if pinch'd with the nails, will emit a certain liquor like unto the cloves. This fruit is in ſo high an eſteem among the *Javaneſe*, that they will not permit them to be tranſported, unleſs they are boil'd before-hand, to prevent their being tranſplanted into another place. They gather ſome of them before they are ripe; theſe are light, with a rough rind, within which is a ſmall ſoft and whitiſh kernel. When they are ripe the rind is ſmooth, have a bigger kernel, and are much heavier than the others. Before they are quite ripe, they have an aromatick, biting, and bitteriſh taſte, and when chew'd offend the brain: But the ripe ones are neither ſo ſharp nor ſo bitter, and don't ſend ſo much of their offenſive vapours up to the head; they are reckoned hot and dry in the third degree; are good to attenuate ſlime in the ſtomach and breaſt, expel wind, and correct the cold ſymptoms of the womb. Chew'd with maſtick, they draw the phlegmatick humours from the head, and ſtrengthen the brains. They are in great requeſt among the *Javaneſe* and other *Indians*, who ſteep them in wine, and take them to raiſe their appetite to venery, and to warm the ſtomach. Three or four chew'd, diſperſe the vapours which occaſion giddineſs in the head, but care muſt be taken to ſpit out both the phelgm and *Cubebes*, and to keep the noſtrils cloſe while you are a chewing, that ſo the ſmell and ſcent of them may penetrate with the more efficacy, and affect more immediately the head.

Aſſafetida. The *Javaneſe*, *Malayans*, and other *Indians*, uſe very frequently for the reliſhing of their ſauces, a certain drug called *Hin*, by the *Arabians Altit*, and by the *Europeans Aſſafetida*, by reaſon of its ill ſcent. This ſhrub, out of the root of which this juice is expreſs'd, grows in *Perſia*, betwixt *Gamron* and *Lara*. It is of two ſorts; the firſt is not unlike our *Oſier*, out of the leaves and ſprigs of which is ſqueezed the *Hin* by a preſs, and the juice afterward coagulated in the ſun: The ſecond ſort is much ſtronger and worſe ſcented, being the juice expreſs'd out of the root of this ſhrub. This juice, and that of *Amſion* or *Opium*, are two of the chiefeſt commodities of the *Dutch* trade in the *Indies*. Our *Eaſt-India* ſhips bound to *Java* and other *Indian* ports, do always carry a conſiderable quantity of this juice from *Perſia*, which they exchange with the *Javaneſe* for ſuch of their countrey commodities as they have occaſion for. 1662.

Both great and ſmall *Cardamome*, (as the *Arabians* call it) called *Malignetus* by the *Indians*, grows likewiſe in the iſle of *Java*. The ſmall *Cardamome* grows on a ſtalk with ſmall joints like reeds, (the leaves being alſo like theirs, and grow in cluſters like them;) but the *Cardamome* ſeldom grows above two or three foot high, and the leaves rub'd betwixt your fingers, emit a very odoriferous ſcent. From the root firſt ſprout forth in ears like the *Spicknard*, the flowers being of a pale colour, not unlike the orange-flowers. After theſe come certain huſks, which contains theſe well-ſcented ſeeds, which are green, but in time turn of a dark vermillion colour. The *Cardamome* is a moſt excellent ſpice of extraordinary virtues, having an agreeable heat conſonant to our nature, without leaving any heat behind it, which is the reaſon that it is chew'd without any addition. It promotes urine, and the monthly terms of the women; opens the obſtructions of the ſpleen and liver, and procures a ſweet breath. The great *Cardamome* grows plentifully in the woods of *Java*; the flowers grow on the ſtalk like the hyacinth; it differs from the ſmall *Cardamome* in divers reſpects: It grows to the height of ſix foot, the leaves are larger, and the ſtalks not knotty like the reeds. The ſmall *Cardamome* ſends forth an ear from the root, and the huſks are ſometimes a finger long. However, the leaves and flowers are of the ſame ſcent in both, but the leaves of the great *Cardamome* are not only much larger, but alſo covered with a *Lanugo* on the under ſide. This ſhrub is very pleaſant to behold, of a light green colour, with white flowers tip'd with purple red at the extremities. Cardamome.

The plant called by the *Malayans Moulit Bebek*, i. e. the *Ducks-Beak*, from its ſhape, grows in the gardens of *Batavia* on a ſomewhat longer ſtalk than the *Cardamome*, being a ſempervirent herb; the leaves alſo differ from thoſe of the *Cardamome*, being carved or edged in the circumference. Moulit. Bebek.

1662. The inhabitants uſe the juice of this herb againſt puſtules and other exulcerations of a bileous nature; and ſteep'd in vinegar, it is a good remedy againſt the St. *Anthony*'s *Fire*; the *Malayan* women lay it upon the heads of their children to corroborate the brains.

Indian *Sorrel.* In the iſle of *Java*, and adjacent iſlands, grows an odd kind of ſorrel, having no reſemblance to the *European* ſorrel, growing up to the height of ſix foot, with a ſtrong, hard, and three corner'd ſtalk not unlike the hemp; the leaves being alſo not unlike thoſe of the hemp, beſet with ſharp ſmall prickles. The flower has but one ſingle leaf of a pale yellow colour, but of a purple colour below. The leaves chew'd have the ſame taſte as our ſorrel, but are more oily: The ſeed is thorny like that of *Carduus*, and of a cooling and drying quality. The *Malayans* eat this herb among their ſallads; they alſo take the leaves, and after they have mix'd them well with the ſawduſt of ſandel-wood upon a marble-ſtone, and a little coco oil and vinegar, make a cataplaſm of it, which they apply to the head to cure the tooth-ach, proceeding from a hot cauſe.

Benzoin *tree.* In the iſle of *Java* grows likewiſe the tree, out of the bark of which, after an inciſion made, flows that well ſcented gum called *Benzoin* or *Benjuin*, being a ſhrub or tree ſpread into many branches, of the thickneſs of a man's arm.

Nardus. About *Batavia* grows a plant in great plenty call'd *Nardus*, moſt in requeſt among the *Javaneſe*, who uſed it in their fiſh and boil'd meat ſauces, to give them a reliſh. They ſteep the *Nardus* in vinegar, and make a ſyrup of it with ſugar, which is eſteem'd a good remedy againſt the coldneſs of the bowels, and opens the obſtructions of the ſpleen and liver. This vinegar and ſyrup cures alſo the ſtings of the ſerpents and ſcorpions, if applied outwardly and taken inwardly at the ſame time.

Amfion, *or* Opium *Amfioen* or *Amfion*, as it is called by the *Indians*, and *Opium* by the *Europeans*, is nothing elſe but the juice of poppies, much uſed by the *Javaneſe* and other *Indians*, eſpecially when they are upon the point of engaging their enemies. The *Amfion* is a very uſeful drug to the *Indians*, without which they would be at a ſtand how to cure many diſtempers in this hot climate, as the bloody flux, burning fevers, and ſuch like diſtempers proceeding from the gall. The poorer ſort of the *Indians* boil the leaves and ſprouts of the *Amfion*, out of which they make a ſlighter ſort of *Opium*, by coagulating the decoction called *Pouſt*.

Pyzang. The fruit called *Pyzang* or *Indian* figs, as alſo *Bachovees* from the *Portugueſe* word *Bakovia*, are called *Pyzang* or *Banana*'s by the *Malayans*, *Gedars* by the *Javaneſe*, *Thio* by the *Chineſe*, by the reſt of the *Indians* *Oucelli*, by the inhabitants of the iſle of *St. Thomas* *Oucella*; and by the *Arabians* *Maus* and *Muza*. The ſtem or trunk of this tree grows up in long oval ſcollops to the height of 20 or 30 foot in ſix months time; its circumference being of four foot, but ſo ſoft, that you may cut it with a knife like a cabbage ſtalk. It ſpreads its branches very loftily, and bears leaves, ſome of which are a foot and a half broad, and five, ſix, or ſeven foot long; green on the uppermoſt ſide, but dark on the other ſide, with a thick vein through the middle. The fruit has an ear, the ſtalk a yellowiſh brown, is very pleaſing to the ſight, and ſhap'd like a cucumber, turning at the extremities towards one another as they hang on the tree: Before they are ripe they are of a parrot green colour, but when come to full perfection, yellow both in and outſide. When the fruit is fit to be gathered the ſtem is cut down to the ground, and the fruit, which is green as yet, taken and hung up in the houſe, where it ripens and turns pale yellow in a few days. The rind is ſo thin, that it may be taken off without a knife. Neither the tree nor fruit produces any ſeed, but a very handſome flower of the bigneſs of an oſtriches egg, which ſprouts forth on the top out of large buds, and opens its leaves by degrees. Whilſt the ſtem has fruit enough to nouriſh, the leaves fall off one after another: Out of the before-mentioned knot or flower comes forth a branch, on which grows the fruit in a cluſter, ſometimes 1 or 200 together, ſo that ſometimes one branch is as much as a man can carry, and each ſtem or trunk brings forth no more than one cluſter. There are divers ſorts of theſe figs, diſtinguiſh'd by the inhabitants by different names, ſhapes and taſtes; and they put them to various uſes; ſome have a way of drying them in the ſun, when they taſte as pleaſantly as the *Portugueſe* figs: Of this kind I taſted at *St. Anthony*, one of the ſalt iſlands.

The *Dutch* fry them with butter and eggs, or with butter alone, and eat it for a dainty; thus dreſs'd they are accounted cooling, nouriſhing and opening. The fruit raw is very aſtringent, and conſequently not to be eaten thus, becauſe they are windy, and will create a nauſeouſneſs in the ſtomach; and ſometimes will produce the bloody flux. However, they being of ſo agreeable a ſcent and taſte, they are ſometimes eaten raw, provided they are cut off the trees a good while before they come to full maturity; when the rind will remain

1662. green, and the pulp by degrees acquires a very agreeable taſte, not unlike our ſugar pears: If you cut the fruit thro' the middle, you will ſee th figure of a croſs within: The leaves of this tree are uſed like as we do our mats, to pack up goods with: And I remember, that in 1660, when I travell'd with Mr. *James Huſtart* to the iſle of *Buro*, the inhabitants ſerved up their victuals in thoſe leaves inſtead of diſhes, and covered their meats with the ſame: They alſo uſed them inſtead of napkins to wipe their hands on: When one of our ſervants offered them a glaſs with liquor, they refuſed to take it; but inſtead thereof brought forth a leaf of a certain tree, which being accommodated for that purpoſe, they drunk out of it, telling us, that their cup needed no waſhing: The *Javaneſe* being of opinion, that the leaves of theſe fig-trees have a great virtue to extinguiſh the fire, they plant them near their houſes, to make uſe of them in caſe of neceſſity. So ſoon as the ſtem or trunk is cut to the root, after the fruit is come to maturity, the root ſends forth new ones, round about the old one, which coming to their full growth in a little time, and producing new fruits, the ſame may be had freſh all the year long. This tree grows without much trouble and in ſuch plenty, that for a penny you may buy a whole bunch; they grow beſt in a fat and mellow ſoil. Some will have this fruit the ſame, which by the ſpies of *Iſrael* were brought out of the *Land of Promiſe* into the camp of the *Iſraelites:* Others are of opinion, that theſe were the leaves wherewith *Adam* and *Eve* covered their nakedneſs: Others again maintain, that *Adam* eat of this fruit, which occaſioned his fall, whence they call them *Paradiſe Apples.*

The Bamboe.

The *Bamboe* grows all over *Batavia*, being ſtrait reeds clove in two at the upper-end, having no root faſtened in the ground, but grows without the leaſt portion of earth from the ſurface of the water, having on the bottom a thick knob, from whence ſprout forth ſmall twigs like threads, which being nouriſhed by the air and thaw, bring forth leaves and flowers. Its flowers are very white, having five long leaves ſomewhat crumpled, not unlike the white lillies; they have alſo a very odoriferous ſcent, and a yellow ſeed within. The leaves ſprout forth at the extremity of the twigs bending downwards, which bear long and narrow leaves. It is very ſurprizing both for its natural growth, and its moſt agreeable ſcent.

Button *flower.*

The flower called by the *Malayans*, *Borago Soeſan*, by the *Javaneſe*, *Bunbang Ungo*, and *Licuhoa* by the *Chineſe*; the *Portugueſe* call *Fule de Botano*, i. e. the *Button Flower*, from its reſemblance to a button. It grows in great plenty in the gardens, by reaſon of its pleaſing purple colour, (which remains even after it is dried) but has no ſcent. It grows like our clover, except that the leaves grow cloſer to one another on thin brown ſtalks; The flower comes forth with green buds betwixt two leaves. 1662.

The white ſweet-briar.

The white ſweet briar, called *Boenga Dadu* by the *Javaneſe* and *Malayans*, and *Tyntſou* by the *Chineſe*, bears leaves and flowers like our roſe-tree, except that the flowers, which are very white, are not altogether ſo large, and have pointed leaves; they ſcent like our roſes, but not altogether ſo ſtrong. They ſay, that this tree was firſt tranſplanted from *Perſia* near *Batavia* by the *Dutch*, when they firſt ſettled here: Out of the leaves of the flowers they diſtil roſe-water, uſed in the ſame manner as our roſe-water, for which reaſon they are very induſtrious to propagate this tree.

Jakkas.

The tree which bears the fruit called *Jakka*, or *Jakkas* by the *Portugueſe*, and *Nanka* by the *Javaneſe*, is one of the largeſt fruit-trees of the *Indies*, which delights in high and dry grounds, where it will grow up to the height of an oak-tree. The leaves are blue on the underſide, but green on the other ſide, round and leſs than the leaves of our cherry-trees. It bears no flowers, the fruit growing out of ſtem and branches, of ſuch a bigneſs, that one of them weighs ſometimes nine or ten pounds, being commonly eight inches thick, and a foot and a half long: They are very pleaſing to look upon, not unlike the pompions or large melons, but on the outſide like the *Ananas* or pine-apples. The fruit is green at firſt, but after it is gathered and ripened, yellow: It has a thick rind, covered with a kind of three cornered thorny *Lanugo*, but don't prick. Within this rind you have certain diviſions like as in a honey comb, which contain certain kernels or cheſnuts larger than dates, encloſed in a yellow pulp, which is eaten. The kernel is generally of the bigneſs of a joint of a man's thumb, and two of them be ſometimes found in one of theſe fruits if it be of the largeſt ſize; ſome are yellow, others white within; the harder the ſweeter they are. The fruit is of an agreeable ſcent, yet of a rough taſte, and if eaten raw create winds, but if roaſted like cheſnuts are well taſted, and a provocative to venery, for which reaſon they are frequently eaten by the common people. If you eat too much of this fruit it inflames the blood, produces looſeneſſes, exulcerations in the bowels and bloody fluxes. In ſhort, this fruit is very unwholeſome by reaſon of its luſciouſneſs,

k up goods with:
in 1660, when I
Huſtart to the iſle
ſerved up their vi-
tead of diſhes, and
n the ſame: They
of napkins to wipe
ne of our ſervants
ch liquor, they re-
ad thereof brought
n tree, which being
urpoſe, they drunk
at their cup needed
aneſe being of opi-
theſe fig-trees have
guiſh the fire, they
ouſes, to make uſe
ity. So ſoon as the
the root, after the
ity, the root ſends
about the old one,
ull growth in a lit-
ng new fruits, the
n all the year long.
t much trouble and
r a penny you may
hey grow beſt in a
Some will have this
y the ſpies of *Iſrael*
he *Land of Promiſe*
raelites: Others are
ere the leaves where-
overed their naked-
ntain, that *Adam* eat
occaſioned his fall,
Paradiſe Apples.
ll over *Batavia*, be-
n two at the upper-
tened in the ground,
eaſt portion of earth
he water, having on
knob, from whence
s like threads, which
air and thaw, bring
ers. Its flowers are
e long leaves ſome-
nlike the white lil-
ery odoriferous ſcent,
n. The leaves ſprout
of the twigs bending
ar long and narrow
prizing both for its
its moſt agreeable

y the *Malayans*, *Bo-*
vaneſe, *Bunbang Un-*
Chineſe; the *Portu-*
ano, i. e. the *Button*

but has no
that the leaves grow cloſer to one ano-
ther on thin brown ſtalks; The flower
comes forth with green buds betwixt two
leaves.

The white ſweet briar, called *Boenga Da-* The white
du by the *Javaneſe* and *Malayans*, and *Tynt-* ſweet-
ſou by the *Chineſe*, bears leaves and flowers briar.
like our roſe-tree, except that the flowers,
which are very white, are not altogether
ſo large, and have pointed leaves; they
ſcent like our roſes, but not altogether ſo
ſtrong. They ſay, that this tree was firſt
tranſplanted from *Perſia* near *Batavia* by
the *Dutch*, when they firſt ſettled here:
Out of the leaves of the flowers they di-
ſtil roſe-water, uſed in the ſame manner
as our roſe-water, for which reaſon they
are very induſtrious to propagate this tree.

The tree which bears the fruit called Jakkas.
Jakka, or *Jakkas* by the *Portugueſe*, and
Nanka by the *Javaneſe*, is one of the lar-
geſt fruit-trees of the *Indies*, which delights
in high and dry grounds, where it will
grow up to the height of an oak-tree. The
leaves are blue on the underſide, but green
on the other ſide, round and leſs than the
leaves of our cherry-trees. It bears no
flowers, the fruit growing out of ſtem and
branches, of ſuch a bigneſs, that one of
them weighs ſometimes nine or ten pounds,
being commonly eight inches thick, and a
foot and a half long: They are very plea-
ſing to look upon, not unlike the pompions
or large melons, but on the outſide like
the *Ananas* or pine-apples. The fruit is
green at firſt, but after it is gathered and
ripened, yellow: It has a thick rind, co-
vered with a kind of three cornered thorny
Lanugo, but don't prick. Within this rind
you have certain diviſions like as in a ho-
ney comb, which contain certain kernels
or cheſnuts larger than dates, encloſed in a
yellow pulp, which is eaten. The kernel
is generally of the bigneſs of a joint of a
man's thumb, and two of them be ſome-
times found in one of theſe fruits if it be
of the largeſt ſize; ſome are yellow, others
white within; the harder the ſweeter they
are. The fruit is of an agreeable ſcent,
yet of a rough taſte, and if eaten raw create
winds, but if roaſted like cheſnuts are well
taſted, and a provocative to venery, for
which reaſon they are frequently eaten by
the common people. If you eat too much
of this fruit it inflames the blood, produces
looſeneſſes, exulcerations in the bowels and
bloody fluxes. In ſhort, this fruit is very
unwholeſome by reaſon of its luſcioufneſs,
and



1662. and is commonly evacuated by ſtool juſt as it is eaten; the pulp about the kernels being ſo tough, that it is ſcarce to be manag'd with the teeth; the kernels are eaten boil'd by the inhabitants with a little ſalt inſtead of rice. Of this fruit there are two ſorts; one is call'd *Barka*, and is the beſt, the other *Papa* or *Giraſol*, which is ſofter than the other; as you may perceive by preſſing it with your fingers. They grow all over the *Indies*, but thoſe of the iſle of *Ceylon*, and the coaſt of *Malabar* are the beſt; I remember that the queen of *Signati* preſented me with one, which was of ſo delicious a taſte, that I could meet with none afterwards like it.

The flower Siampin. This flower is called by ſome the flower of *Camboja*, becauſe it was tranſplanted from thence to *Batavia*, tho' others look for its original as far as *China*, whence it is call'd *Pakjaboa*. It grows all about *Batavia* in the gardens, on knotty trees, which grow ſometimes twelve foot high. It bears no ſeed, but thick oily leaves, white on the extremities, but a pale yellow towards the ſtalk; ſome have red ſpots on the upper ſide. The flower ſprouts far at the ends of the twigs in a broad knot, which produces ſeveral flowers, the ſcent whereof is like our *May* flowers, but ſtronger and not ſo agreeable. The leaves of the ſtem are long, pointed at the end, green and full of veins; the wood is grey, and near the top where the flower buds out, ſurrounded with many young ſprigs.

The flower Katſiepiri. The flower call'd *Katſiepiri* by the *Malayans*, *Korban* by the *Javaneſes*, and *Micuboa* by the *Chineſe*, grows in the gardens of *Batavia*, the tree being not unlike a palm-tree, but ſomewhat higher, and with larger leaves. The flowers ſprout out of pale green buds, are well ſcented with thick, oily and ſnow white leaves, with yellow ſeeds in the middle. This flower is in great requeſt for its pleaſing ſcent, being ſold ſometimes for two-pence a piece.

Arroz *or* rice-flower. The rice-flower is called by the *Portugueſe Fulo di Arroz*, by the *Malayans Boingo ritſia Pria*, and by the *Javaneſe Pella Sidanga*, all in the ſame ſenſe from its ſcent, which is like rice when it comes boiling hot out of the pot. It grows on a kind of vine which ſpreads its branches like our vines, with very fair broad leaves, like thoſe of the quince pear-tree, and are as green as a leek. The branches grow ſo thick that the ſun cannot penetrate them, being ſupported by bamboo ſticks. The flower has ſingle white leaves, ſtreaked with white within, and in the middle a pointed ſprout ſurrounded with ſmall buds.

Jamboa. The apples called *Pompions* by the *Dutch*, *Jamboa* by the *Portugueſe*, and *Yhoe* by the *Chineſe*, grow ſcarce any where elſe in the *Indies* but in the iſle of *Great-Java*, eſpecially in the gardens of *Batavia*. This tree is produced by no other ways than either by laying off of the branches, like as we do our vines, or from the ſeed of the fruit; the firſt bears fruit the ſecond year, but the tree which comes from the kernel or ſeed does not bear till the third or fourth year. The apples are of a gold colour without, and ſome of them red within; their taſte being not unlike our cherries. Some are white and ſomewhat ſweeter; they are very like oranges, both in and out ſide, except that they are five times as big, ſome weighing 10 or 12 pounds, and being 10 or 12 inches in circumference, ſo that one apple is ſufficient for two or three at a time. They grow in cluſters four or five together, on thin twigs ſupported by bamboo-canes, without which they would either break or hang down to the ground. The tree alſo grows like the orange-tree, except that the branches are ſomewhat thicker and cloſer, and the leaves broader. The bloſſoms have white leaves, with a yellow ſeed within, being of the bigneſs of our apple bloſſoms: The fruit continues almoſt all the year round, and after it is gathered will keep four or five months. It delights in a fat ſoil, and the ground muſt be kept clear of weeds near the ſtem. 1662.

Mangaes *or* Manges. Moſt and the beſt of the *Indian* fruits continue throughout the whole year, except few, among which that call'd *Mangas* by the *Javaneſe*, and *Pao Ampelan* by the *Malayans* is one; the trees which bear this fruit are ſometimes as tall, thick and well ſpread as the largeſt oak trees in *Europe*. The flowers which are white, ſprout forth of certain ſmall twigs growing on the branches, which produce ſuch vaſt plenty of fruit, that when they begin to ripen, they are forced to ſupport them with ſticks. Their time of gathering is chiefly in *September* and *October*; tho' leſs or more they continue throughout the year. And moſt of the trees bear fruit but every other year. The fruit is ſomething larger than a plumb; green at firſt, but when ripe of an orange colour; ſome are ſpotted, and being of the ſame colour on the inſide are very pleaſing to the eye, but ſomewhat crabbed in taſte. The inhabitants make divers reliſhing pickles of them; they boil them in a certain pickle, and make them as good in taſte as the beſt *Portugueſe* olives; others are pickled with vinegar and green pepper, and are uſed with roaſted meats like our pickled cucumbers. They are alſo preſerved with ſugar for the uſe of the women; they have another way of taking off the rind and the kernel, the ſpace of which they

1662. they fill up with ſugar, butter and eggs, and ſo make a delicious diſh of them, very pleaſing both to the palate and ſtomach. The fruit, if eaten in any great quantity after it is ripe, is very unwholſome, but moderately uſed, is good againſt the bloody-flux. The tree is produced out of the kernel, and does not bear till ſome years after, neither does it bear fruits for ſeveral years before it dies.

Mangoſtan. The fruit call'd *Mangoſtan* by the *Malayans* and *Manges Tanges* by the *Javaneſe*, carries the bell before all the other *Indian* fruits, for its agreeable taſte. It grows chiefly about *Bantam*, and in ſome places of *Malacca*. The tree which bears this apple, grows no higher than a plumb or mulberry-tree, having a ſtreight ſtem of the bigneſs of a man's calf of his leg; with a rough bark, its branches growing up like thoſe of the clove tree; both the leaves and branches affording a very agreeable ſight. The apples hang at the extremities of the ſmall twigs, each being cover'd with two leaves, of two palms in length, having abundance of veins; they are ſomewhat of a pale green on the outſide, but light green on the inſide. This agreeable fruit comes forth from a pale green bud, which opening produces the bloſſom, and theſe the fruit. On the top of the apple is a kind of a coronet, which opens as ſoon as it begins to ripen. The ſeveral points of this coronet has ſo many marks to direct you how many kernels are contained in the apple; which are ſometimes ſix, ſometimes eight; but thoſe which have the moſt kernels, are generally the beſt. The fruit has a very thick rind, not unlike our granate apples, of a purple colour without and whitiſh on the inſide; Its taſte is ſomewhat crab-like, not unlike the rind of the granate apple, and ſomewhat inclining to bitter; the pulp which is round the inward kernels, is ſometimes white, ſometimes inclining to red, being exceeding pleaſing to the palate, and not unwholſome for the ſtomach, notwithſtanding its cooling quality, it being ſcarce ever known, that any body ſurfeited himſelf by the eating of this fruit, a thing otherwiſe very common to the cooling fruits of the *Indies*. Theſe are accounted very proper even in agues, and have towards the bottom, about the ſtalks, three or four different rinds or ſhells. Theſe are brought in ſuch vaſt quantities from *Bantam* to *Batavia*, that you may buy many of them for ſix-pence, and I have ſeen ſeveral of them in the gardens about *Batavia*, one whereof bore fruit very plentifully, which makes me believe they would thrive very well hereabouts.

Indian *Almond-tree.* As far as I remember, there is ſcarce any kind of fruit tree in the *Indies* which caſts its leaves ſo as to remain bare except this tree, which as well as the fruit is call'd *Katopper*. The tree grows up very tall, with thick branches and leaves, which afford a very plentiful ſhade; it is in all reſpects like an elm-tree, except that its leaves are above a palm in length and very narrow, with yellow veins. The ſtem of this tree is very ſtrait, out of which come forth the branches one above the other in due order. The fruit grows in cluſters on the extremities of the twigs with the bloſſoms, which are ſmall white flowers with a yellow ſeed, and many green buds not open'd yet near them: The fruit is encloſed in a hairy ſubſtance, which turns yellow, and ſhrinks as it ripens; within which is a hard ſhell, which contains commonly one, and ſometimes two kernels. Theſe are as ſweet as almonds, being not unlike them in ſhape, and are eaten and uſed otherwiſe like almonds; the ſhell is ſo hard that you can ſcarce crack them with your teeth. There are divers ſorts of them; ſome having a pale red ſhell, which are bigger, others a yellow one. 160..

The Javaneſe Rottangs. The *Javaneſe Rottangs* grow in thoſe countries wild, and are different in their kind; ſome would have them to be a kind of reed, becauſe they grow ſometimes with knots or joints; whereas otherwiſe they have no reſemblance either in the ſtem or leaves to the cane or reed kind. This grows ſo faſt, and twiſts its ſelf ſometimes ſo cloſely up to the very tops of the higheſt trees, that they die for want of air. They are much uſed in the *Indies*; however the beſt walking canes are brought from *Japan* and *Siam*. They bear alſo a kind of fruit of a brown colour like our earth-nuts, with a very thin rind, containing two kernels, which are white, but of an unpleaſant taſte, and therefore ſcarce ever eaten, except a ſmall portion thereof next to the rinds which is well taſted. The *Chineſe* make divers ſorts of pickles of this fruit, in the nature of the pickled olives, and draw an oil from them, which is very good to heal wounds.

The tree and fruit Anrae. The tree and fruit call'd by the *Portugueſe* and *Dutch Anrae*, is call'd *Sarboroſia* by the *Malayans*. It grows in divers places of the *Indies*, to the height of an ordinary apple-tree, with rough leaves, which are green at firſt, but turn brown as the fruit begins to ripen, and grow directly oppoſite to one another, like thoſe of the tree *Gojovas*, but are not ſo broad. It bears no bloſſom, the fruit coming forth of buds like the *Portugueſe* figs, which has a rough rind, with pale green knots, not unlike the pine-apple; it comes to full maturity in three months time, when it is gathered, and

ſpects like an elm-tree, except that its leaves are above a palm in length and very narrow, with yellow veins. The ſtem of this tree is very ſtrait, out of which come forth the branches one above the other in due order. The fruit grows in cluſters on the extremities of the twigs with the bloſſoms, which are ſmall white flowers with a yellow ſeed, and many green buds not open'd yet near them: The fruit is encloſed in a hairy ſubſtance, which turns yellow, and ſhrinks as it ripens; within which is a hard ſhell, which contains commonly one, and ſometimes two kernels. Theſe are as ſweet as almonds, being not unlike them in ſhape, and are eaten and uſed otherwiſe like almonds; the ſhell is ſo hard that you can ſcarce crack them with your teeth. There are divers ſorts of them; ſome having a pale red ſhell, which are bigger, others a yellow one.

The Javaneſe Rottangs.

The *Javaneſe Rottangs* grow in thoſe countries wild, and are different in their kind; ſome would have them to be a kind of reed, becauſe they grow ſometimes with knots or joints; whereas otherwiſe they have no reſemblance either in the ſtem or leaves to the cane or reed kind. This grows ſo faſt, and twiſts its ſelf ſometimes ſo cloſely up to the very tops of the higheſt trees, that they die for want of air. They are much uſed in the *Indies*; however the beſt walking canes are brought from *Japan* and *Siam*. They bear alſo a kind of fruit of a brown colour like our earth-nuts, with a very thin rind, containing two kernels, which are white, but of an unpleaſant taſte, and therefore ſcarce ever eaten, except a ſmall portion thereof next to the rinds which is well taſted. The *Chineſe* make divers ſorts of pickles of this fruit, in the nature of the pickled olives, and draw an oil from them, which is very good to heal wounds.

The tree and fruit Anrae.

The tree and fruit call'd by the *Portugueſe* and *Dutch Anrae*, is call'd *Sarboroſia* by the *Malayans*. It grows in divers places of the *Indies*, to the height of an ordinary apple-tree, with rough leaves, which are green at firſt, but turn brown as the fruit begins to ripen, and grow directly oppoſite to one another, like thoſe of the tree *Gojovas*, but are not ſo broad. It bears no bloſſom, the fruit coming forth of buds like the *Portugueſe* figs, which has a rough rind, with pale green knots, not unlike the pine-apple; it comes to full maturity in three months time, when it is gathered, and kept



1662. kept till it grows ſoft, that it may be broken with ones hands; within it reſembles a rotten medlar, being full of ſeeds, and the pulp of ſo agreeable a taſte, that one can ſcarce be ſatisfied with it. The inhabitants make many inciſions in the bark, to make the tree bear the better, as we ſay of our walnut-trees, when the twigs are well beaten whilſt they are gathering the fruit. There is another ſort of theſe figs called *Atanoane* by the inhabitants, which are leſſer, as is likewiſe the tree, which reſembles a ſhrub, with narrow leaves, but above a palm in length. The fruit is of the bigneſs of a *China* apple, yellow and ſhadowed with an orange colour, but white within, with brown ſeeds; they are much more luſcious, and when cut open emit a ſcent like roſe-water, being accounted very comfortable to the brains, and therefore held in great eſteem. This fruit likewiſe ſprouts forth out of long green buds, which opening, contain another round nut or bud, which produces the fruit.

Date-tree. The date trees grow in great plenty in *Perſia* near *Gamron*, and delight much in ſandy grounds. Some of theſe trees have of late years been tranſplanted to *Batavia*, of which I ſaw a young one in Mr. *Peter Moleth*'s garden, the draught of which I have inſerted, but whether it will bear fruit time will ſhew. The date trees continue in their full vigour for many years; they have, like the coco-trees, very ſmall roots, and the trunk is thicker near the top, than towards the root. The pith of the three is accounted excellent good to encreaſe ſperm and an appetite to venery, and the *Perſians* about *Gamron* are ſo fond of this fruit, that they eat it at their meals as we do bread, or the *Indian* rice. The dates hang in yellow ſhells on the trees, being of a delicious taſte, eſpecially if eaten green. There is a male and female date-tree, the laſt of which bears fruit only; they differ alſo in this, that the female has a thicker and longer ſtem, but the bloſſom is the ſame in both, and ſhoots forth in a great bunch or cluſter on the top of the tree, of the thickneſs of an arm, which opening after ſome time produces the flowers, and thoſe the fruit. The *Perſians* cut off this knot from the male tree before it opens, which they cut into divers pieces, one of which they put into the knot or cluſter of the female tree, (which they have a way to open) pretending thereby to make the tree bear greater plenty of fruit.

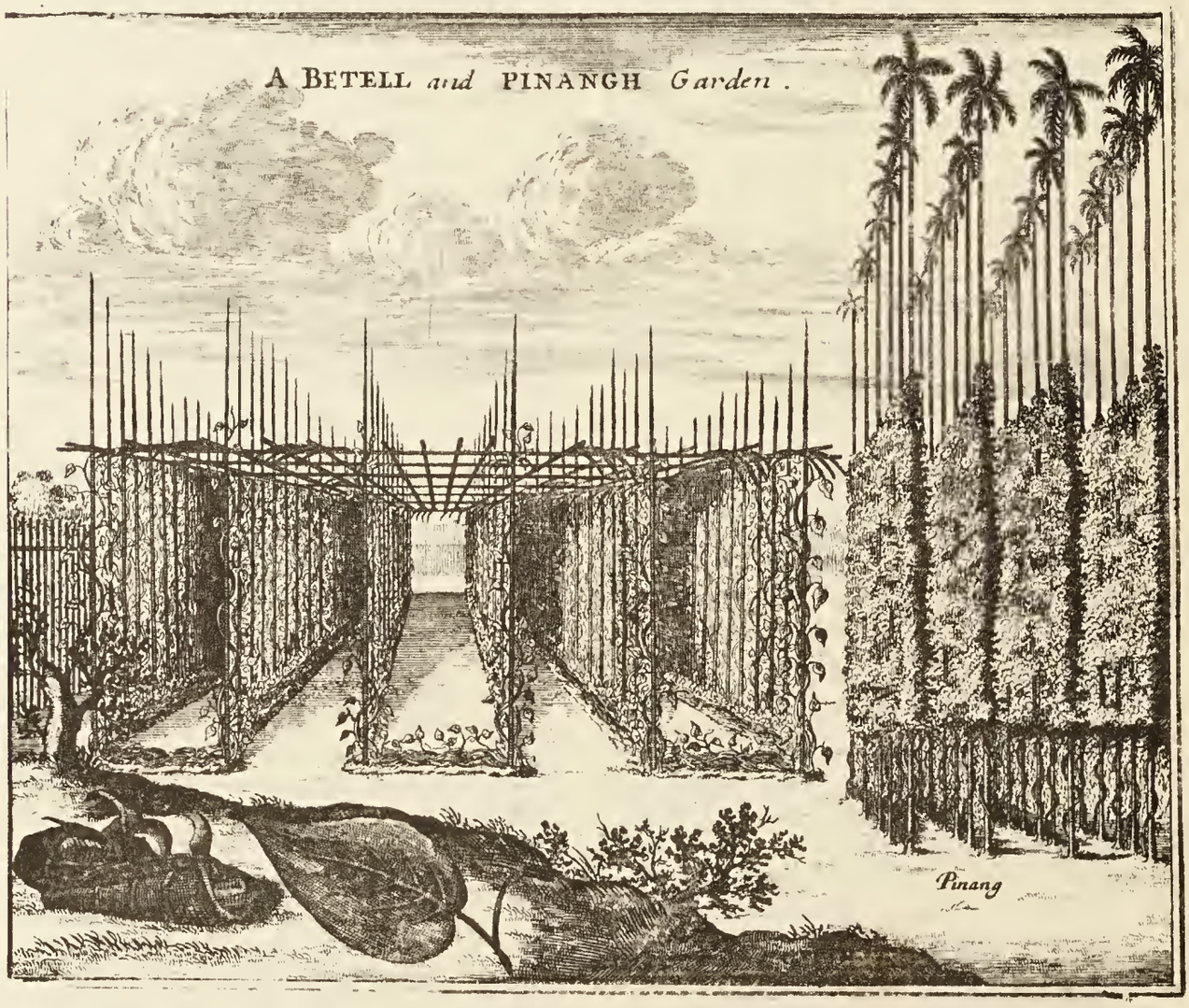
They have many ſtories of the male and female trees, tho' not worth the inſerting here.

Water-melons or Patekas. The water-melons, call'd *Batiek* by the *Indians*, as alſo *Patekas* or *Pateko*, grow almoſt in all the countries betwixt the two tropicks of *Cancer* and *Capricorn*, yet the 1662. nearer to the *Equinoctial* line, the better they are, and continue in vigour all the year round, except in the heighth of the rainy ſeaſon. Some are white without, as at *Batavia*, but the red ones are the beſt; they have a thin green rind, which is ſoft and tender within. The pulp is bright, and ſo tender as to melt in ones mouth like ſugar. The ſeeds are black, not unlike our pompion ſeeds: The plant creeps with its ſtalks and leaves along the ground like the pompions, and at their opening reſemble our cucumbers. The fruit is ſufficient for four perſons to feed upon, and is, among all other fruits that are eaten raw, the moſt pleaſant and harmleſs, tho' you eat ever ſo much of it. However, moderately eaten they are beſt, when they are very refreſhing and acuate the ſtomach; whereas in too great a quantity they are obnoxious, and may occaſion the bloody flux: They grow beſt in ſandy grounds. I have ſeen ſome of them in the gardens of *Holland*, but the fruit has a watery taſte.

Ananas. The fruit called *Ananas*, by the *Portugueſe* and *Dutch*, is called *Nuna* by the *Malayans* and *Javaneſe*, and *Unglay* by the *Chineſe*. The plant which produces this fruit delights to grow in ſhady places and a fat ſoil: Firſt ſhoots forth a ſtalk of an inch thick and a foot long, on which near to the ground grows the fruit, not unlike a melon, with a well colour'd rind, being of a pale red colour mixed with orange colour'd ſtreaks, which towards the extremities are green. The fruit looks yellow within. They are ſometimes five inches in circumference, and nine long, weighing perhaps five or ſix pounds. Below and round about the ſtalk come forth cerrain ſprouts like houſe-leek or aloes, with 15 or 16 carved leaves of the ſame colour as the fruit, green in the middle, and of an orange colour about the edges. The *Ananas*, after it is come to its full perfection, is one of the moſt delicious fruits of all the *Indies*; but before they are well ripe, they contain a corroding poiſonous quality, of which the ripe ones even have ſome remnants, and therefore ought not to be eaten in too great a quantity, unleſs you cut them into ſmall ſlices, and by pouring ſome *Spaniſh* wine upon them draw out the ſharp humour. Some uſe water inſtead of wine, notwithſtanding which they often create a heat in the throat; but as they are diuretick, ſo they are accounted good againſt the gravel: But without being ſteep'd in wine or water, they would exulcerate the palate of the mouth and the tongue, and cauſe a mortal bloody-flux. They have a way of preſerving them with

1662. ſugar, and are thus tranſported frequently from the *Weſt-Indies* into *Europe*. This fruit has ſo fragrant a ſmell, that when it is cut it fills the room with a ſmell like roſe-water: In taſte they approach next to our large ſtrawberries, which being very inviting to the pallate, makes one eat too much, and inflames the bowels, or occaſions burning fevers, for which reaſon they ought to be eaten with caution. Thoſe of the iſle of *Ceylon* exceed the reſt in taſte; thoſe growing near *Batavia*, and in other parts of *Java*, are not ſo fine. The fruits ripen in ſix months; when they are cut from the ſtalks, which remain thus; or elſe they take the ſprouts, and having cut them from the main ſtalk, put them thus without any root in the ground, which afterwards produce new plants. The fruit *Ananas* grows in moſt parts of both the *Indies*, and ſome are of opinion that the firſt plants thereof have been tranſplanted many years ago from *Braſil* unto the *Eaſt-Indies*. 1662.

Among other *Indian* plants, which are beneficial to human kind, is that called *Betel* or *Betele* by the *Indians*, and *Siry* by the *Malayans*, *Sury* by the *Javaneſe*, and *Lauheu* by the *Chineſe*, which is one of the Betel.



moſt inconſiderable ones. It reſembles at a diſtance the black pepper, and runs up with its branches round trees, ſtalks, poſts, or any other thing it meets with, like our hops, to a good height, delighting eſpecially in a well dung'd ſoil, and ſhady places; and growing but ſlowly in the open air: It requires alſo a conſiderable heat, which is the reaſon that it is planted near the ſea-ſide, and after all muſt be defended and covered againſt the cold night blaſts, being ſo tender, that it can't bear the leaſt cold. Both the branches and leaves are in all reſpects like thoſe of the pepper; the leaves being ſometimes ſix inches broad, and as many long, of a dark green colour, having ſeveral veins thro' the length, and 5 or 6 croſſwiſe; the ſtalks are an inch broad. The leaves have a ſpicy taſte, very penetrant and ſomewhat aſtringent. They are ſo generally uſed in the *Indies*, as if the inhabitants could not live without them. They take a ſingle leaf, and a ſmall quantity of lime made of burnt oyſter ſhells, then folding the leaf together, they put into it the lime, and a fourth part of the nut *Areka*, (or *Pinang*) which augments the aſtringent quality of the *Betel*, and draws the ſpittle: After they have chew'd it thus a while, the firſt ſpittle is red, like ſtagnated blood, which being paſs'd, they ſwallow the reſt. The firſt ſpittle taints

1662. the lips with a pleaſing red, as ſoon as it affects the brains, which is chiefly attributed to the *Areka*; and I have ſeen ſome, who, tho' uſed to chew this mixture, were ſeized with ſwooning fits: It never fails to create a giddineſs in the head to ſuch as are not uſed to it, which is ſoon cured by rubbing their gums with a little ſalt. The juice thereof, which is ſwallowed down, has an aſtringent and corroborating quality of the ſtomach, after the firſt ſpittle which contains the lime, is ſpitted out: It cloſes the upper orifice of the ſtomach, diſperſes the vapours ariſing from drunkenneſs, and revives the ſpirits. It corrects a ſtinking breath, cures the tooth-ach and ſcurvy, faſtens the teeth and ſtrengthens the gums, but makes the teeth as black as jet, an ornament much affected by the *Indians*; and if you chew too much of this mixture, it will looſen and corrode the teeth. *Betel* chew'd without lime, produces a green ſpittle, but with lime, makes it red; perſons of quality mix ſome muſk, ambergreece or camphire with it: The uſe of it is ſo frequent here, that no body pays a viſit to another, but a ſmall diſh of *Betel* is brought immediately. Nice people ſpit in pots.

Pynang *tree.* The ancient herbaliſts have placed the *Pynang* tree among the palm-trees, perhaps becauſe its ſtem, leaves and branches, are not unlike the coco-tree. It owes its original to the kernel of the nut like the coco-tree, and grows all over the *Indies*, eſpecially in the iſle of *Ceylon*, where they drive a great traffick with theſe nuts, and tranſport them in prodigious quantities to the coaſt of *Madura* and other places. In a few years after it is planted it bears nuts. From underneath the leaves ſprout forth certain twigs, which grow cloſe together, and are full of ſmall of ſmall white leaves, emitting a moſt fragrant ſcent at a conſiderable diſtance, eſpecially mornings and evenings. After theſe flowers come the nuts, called *Faufel* by the *Arabians*, *Areka* by the *Indians*, and *Pynang* by the *Malayans:* They grow very thick together on both ſides of very ſtrong ſtalks, being green at firſt, but turning yellow by degrees; ſome are of an orange colour. Some of theſe nuts grow not ſo cloſe on tender twigs; others, which are of an orange colour, grow out of certain green huſks, in bunches like grapes; they are covered on the out-ſide with a hairy ſubſtance. This tree equals in heighth the coco-tree, but the ſtem ſeldom exceeds ſix or ſeven inches in thickneſs, neither has it ſo long and many branches as the coco-tree, and the leaves are ſhorter and broader. Theſe trees look very odly at a diſtance, being ſo thin of ſtem and almoſt without branches, 1662. ſo that they are beat by the wind on all ſides, yet never break. The ſtem is ſpongy within, but the bark very hard, of which they make laths for the coverings of their houſes, for which they are very uſeful by reaſon of their ſtraightneſs. The fruit reſembles an acorn, but is four bigger; however, when cleanſed from the hairy threads, the nut ſcarce exceeds the bigneſs of a nutmeg, and looks like it within. The kernels are aſtingent, and good for the ſtomach. They make no other uſe of them but for chewing with the *Betel* leaves and lime, as we told you before. They cleanſe the nuts from the hairy ſtrings with a pair of ſciſſors, and cut the nut if large in four, or elſe in two pieces; and this put into a leaf of *Betel*, and mix'd with a little lime, they chew ſo long as it will draw the ſpittle, and ſpit out what remains; but the old *Pynang* nuts with the *Betel* leaf will diſſolve inſenſibly in the mouth. Such as are not uſed to the chewing of *Pynang*, eſpecially if uſed before it is come to its full maturity, will certainly be ſeiz'd with giddineſs in the head, and will fall down without ſenſe or motion.

Suryboa. *Suryboa* is a certain plant which runs up cloſe round the *Pynang* tree to a great heighth, and being planted in rows, afford ſhady and agreeable walks. The leaves and branches are like thoſe of the *Betel* or of pepper: The fruit is not unlike in ſhape to the *Bengal* pepper, growing on ſmall and green ſtalks of two fingers length: It is green and chequer'd, of the length of a palm, but ſcarce an inch thick, containing a white kernel with ſmall ſeeds. Theſe kernels are uſed with the *Areka* inſtead of *Bethel*, being a pleaſant chew. They cut them throught the middle, and taking one half of the *Pinang* kernel likewiſe cut in the middle, they tie both together wirh a cotton thread, and with the addition of a ſmall quantity of lime made of oyſter-ſhells, uſe it like as they do the *Bethel*; it has the ſame effects, and being not ſo common as the *Betel*, is more eſteem'd among perſons of quality.

Dap-Daf *or* Dap-Dap. *Dap-Daf* or *Dap-Dap*, is a very agreeable fruit both raw and dreſs'd, having a very pleſant taſte, of a mixture of ſweet and ſour, and of a cooling quality. It grows out of the bottom of a ſtem of a tree, having very fine leaves, the flowers or bloſſom conſiſting of ſmall red leaves. The fruit is inclining to red, mix'd with black ſpots of an oval figure, and ragged, bent a little at the end like a cucumber. It contains a white kernel of a delicious taſte, being encloſed in a whitiſh rind. Theſe trees bear fruit all the year long,

1662. long, and grow properly in the *Molucca* islands, from whence they have been transplanted into the gardens of *Batavia*, but do not thrive so well there as in their native soil, being much pester'd with aunts or pismires, which do incredible mischiefs to the fruits there. The tree whereof I took the draught at *Batavia*, was surrounded with rails, within which the ground was paved with stone, and a small cistern in it with water, notwithstanding which the fruit was so covered with pismires as scarce to be discerned.

Takkatak. The fruit call'd *Takkatak*, or *Boa Burun* by the *Malayans*, and *Kannekoeni* by the *Javaneſe*, are by the *Dutch* called *Red-Currants*, from their resemblance to our currants, tho' in their qualifications they are very different. These berries grow on high trees with large leaves, not unlike the chesnut trees, and sprout forth in large buds in clusters, on the twigs of the trees, being of the same bigness as ours, but are of a sour taste; notwithstanding which they are much coveted, and sold and used in great quantities at *Batavia*, in the same manner as we do our red-currants. They grow in the gardens about *Batavia*, and bear fruit every three months, but most in *September*.

Moringo. The tree call'd *Moringo* by the *Portugueſe* and *Dutch*, *Ramongy* by the *Malayans*, and *Kelor* by the *Chineſe*, is found not only in all the gardens, but also before the houses: It has a white blossom, which sprouts forth from white buds, having a yellow seed within. The fruits grow several together, being enclosed in hard husks, not unlike our *French* beans, except that the husks are round and longer. So soon as they are ripe, they are gathered, and the twigs on the top being cut off, others sprout forth in their stead, which bear new fruit. The leaves are very smooth and thick, in taste not unlike the coco leaves in *Holland*, but not so biting and penetrant. They stew these leaves with meat, or eat them alone, as we do our spinage, being well tasted and cooling; the same they do with the husks, whilst they are young, but when old are tough; so that both the usefulness and pleasantness of this tree is a sufficient encouragement to the people to afford it a place in their gardens, especially since it wants no great industry to plant it, as growing out of a sprig of the tree planted only in the ground without any root, which in a few months begins to blossom and to bear fruit.

Torre. The tree called *Torre* by the *Malabars*, *Tary* by the *Portugueſe*, *Rombang Juri* by the *Javaneſe*, and *Husk-Tree* by the *Dutch*, does not rise above the heighth of an ordinary apple-tree: It brings forth certain husks hanging strait down on thin stalks of about a quarter of a yard in length, and the thickness of a little finger. The husks contain 8 or 10 small pease, which are eaten as well as the leaves, which are round and small, growing on small twigs, and the flowers, which are surprising at first sight. They sprout forth out of green buds in the shape of a half-moon, with purple-coloured points, and streaks of the same colour within: From the innermost leaf come forth certain long and thin sprouts like fillets, with yellow hairy points; the stalk is green, but the beginning of the leaves of the flower are white, interspers'd with veins to the extremities, with a parrot-green colour intermix'd with some red, which affords a most agreeable spectacle to the eye: The inhabitants also make use of the leaves as a sovereign remedy against the stings of the serpents, in which case they squeeze them betwixt two stones, and mixing a little salt with them, apply them to the tumor, which give immediate relief. 1662.

Devil's-Plant. The *Portugueſe* have given it the name of *Folio di Inverno*, or *Devil's-Leaf*, or *Helliſh-Leaf*, because it will over-run all places wherever it lights; the *Malayans* call it *Garrak*, and the *Javaneſe Klatte*: It has several physical virtues against divers distempers. There are two sorts, distinguish'd by their different colours, one having green leaves, and growing very fast, the other being brown and red, like the leaves of our red cabbages, and growing up to the heighth of 12 or 14 foot, with carved leaves hanging on very long stalks. On the top sprouts out a bunch of green buds, which opening by degrees, produce yellowish flowers; after which comes the fruit, not unlike a chesnut, containing a bean or kernel, which is very good food.

The broad Nomerado. The plant or herb called the *Broad-Numerado* by the *Portugueſe*, and *Bajan Dierdia* by the *Malayans*. The shape of the leaf which grows on the stalk of this plant chequered with various colours like a tulip, is altogether like our beetes, and used in the same manner, but is preserved for the beauty of its leaves, which are on the top, as an ornament of the gardens. There is another sort resembling in colour our red cabbages, and is frequently planted by the *Chineſe*, who sell it in great quantities in the market of *Batavia*; it is of an agreeable taste, either boil'd with meat or stew'd by it self.

Kappok. The tree which produces the *Javaneſe* cotton, is call'd *Kappok* by the *Malayans*, *Jerondo* by the *Javaneſe*, and *My* by the *Chineſe*, grows up to the heighth of a great mast, spreading its branches directly

1662. ſtraightways on all ſides. The bark of this tree is white, as far as the lowermoſt branches, but from thence to the top green; the flowers which are white come forth out of certain buds growing out of the branches; then come the fruits of the bigneſs of a hen's egg, pointed at the end, being green at firſt, but turn brown like a dried oak-leaf. Theſe fruits hang on the middle and end of the branches, two and two together, ſeldom one alone. They open at laſt near the ſtalks, and produce the cotton-wool, which covers the ſeed, and extends its ſelf when expoſed to the air. The ſeeds are black, not unlike the brown pepper, but ſomewhat ſmoother. The cotton-wool is gathered in the *Indies* in *October* and *November*, wherewith they drive a conſiderable traffick all over the *Indies*, where they are uſed inſtead of feathers, to ſtuff their cuſhions, bolſters and quilts withal, feather-beds being unknown here, but is not long enough for combing, or for weaving: Great care is to be taken that no fire come near it, for if it takes fire it burns with ſuch violence, that ſcarce any water can quench it. This tree grows whereever it is planted.

Jamboes. The tree *Jamboes*, as the *Indians* and *Javaneſe* call it, the *Portugueſe Roſado*, the *Malayans Jamboe Ramus*, and the *Chineſe Ileapont*, affords a very agreeable entertainment to the eye, while it ſtands in full bloſſom. It grows up very regularly, in the ſhape of a pyramid, the branches growing in good order, neither entangled within one another, neither above one another. It riſes to the heighth of a large pear-tree in *Europe*, and takes deep root. The leaves are long and green, at the extremities of the ſmall twigs ſprout out green buds, which produce flowers with leaves as red as blood, containing certain red fillets within: The fruits are of an oval figure, reſembling in bigneſs and ſhape our ſugar-pears, which grow in cluſters 23, 24 or 25 together: Some are red, others white, but both of the ſame taſte, tho' the white ones are reckoned the beſt. They ſmell very ſweet, but are ſomewhat mellow: The ſtone which lies in the middle has a large but bitter kernel, which is never eaten. Abundance of theſe flowers which produce no fruit, fall from the tree upon the ground, which cover the ground underneath, and afford a pleaſant ſight. The ſtalks of the flowers are red, not unlike the ſea-lion's, but not ſo long. Theſe flowers have ſo pleaſing and ſavory a taſte, that they are uſed and eaten as a delicious ſallad. The fruit has a ſweet, yet reliſhing reſt, and allays the exceſſive heat of the ſtomach; if ſtew'd with ſugar, and a little wine, they eat like ſtew'd pears. The beſt I ever met with were in the iſle of *Ceylon*, where they grow in great plenty. Theſe trees are produced from the ſeed, and bear fruit in the 4th year, and three times in a year, ſo that they never are in want of this fruit throughout all the ſeaſons: 'Tis generally believed that this tree, for his ſweet ſcented flowers and well taſted fruit's ſake, was tranſplanted from *Malacca* into other diſtant countries. There is yet another ſort of *Jamboes*, which grow in the iſle of *Amboyna*, on trees no bigger than our cherry-trees, but they are not ſo well taſted; ſo that this tree is cultivated there rather for its bloſſom, which is red alſo, than the goodneſs of the fruit. 1662.

Among many other fruits, which if eaten raw, are crabbed and ſour upon the tongue, we muſt not paſs by in ſilence what the *Portugueſe* call *Nelyka*, the *Malayans* and *Javaneſe Boa Malakka*, the *Chineſe Soaly*, and the *Dutch Wild-Plumbs:* They grow in vaſt numbers on thin twigs, and are greeniſh of colour; the twigs have ſmall green leaves growing cloſe together. The fruit has a ſouriſh taſte, and is very cooling, for which reaſon it is in requeſt by ſome, tho' generally no great account is made of it. They are in their prime in *Auguſt*, and are then to be ſold in the market in *Batavia*. Boa Malakka.

The tree called *Canary* by the *Malayans*, *Javaneſe* and *Chineſe*, is an *Indian* oak-tree, which grows very high with lofty branches and very ſmooth leaves, interwoven with divers veins. The ſtem grows thick, and extends it ſelf into ſeveral protuberances near the root. The rangers of the foreſts keep a watchful eye over theſe trees at convenient diſtances, when the acorns begin to fall, becauſe the wild-boars appearing in great numbers, they ſhoot them; ſo that during that ſeaſon, the wild-boars fleſh is ſold at a cheap rate in the market of *Batavia*. The fruit is nothing elſe but an acorn or nut, produced out of a yellow bloſſom growing on ſmall twigs. The nut or acorn is encloſed in a green ſhell, and next to that another, which is ſo hard, that you muſt break it with a hammer, if you will come at the kernel, which is as white as an almond, and of as good a taſte, being covered by a thin ſkin. Canary tree.

In and near the city of *Batavia*, grows in the gardens a certain flower, both in ſcent and figure not unlike our camomile-flower, but whether it obtains the ſame virtue, is unknown hitherto. The *Topaſſes* call it after the *Portugueſe*, *Fulo di Madre*, i. e. *Mother-Flower*, becauſe its leaves and the flower are ſomewhat like the *Matricaria*, and perhaps of the ſame kind. It Camomil tree or Fulo di Madre.

1662. grows about a foot high, with large carved leaves: The flower which is white, ſprouts forth out of green buds, with double leaves carv'd at the ends.

The flower call'd *Four-Lights* comes forth out of ſmall buds, being not unlike a ſingle gilliflower, but of a bright red colour. It conſiſts of four carved leaves, which have certain pleaſant curls at the ends. The leaves are dark green on the inſide, and pale green without, checquered with ſtreaks which run all along to the point of the leaf, which has the ſhape of an heart. This flower is kept only for ornaments ſake, but is ſoon faded.

Alli or water-flower. There is ſcarce a lake or pool in this countrey, but what produces ſome flower or other; but the flower called *Alli* is found in great plenty all along the ditch or *Gracht* betwixt *Ansjol* and *Jacatra*. It is a pretty ſort of a flower, which may be kept a pretty while in water: It comes forth out of long and large buds, is pale green without, and white within with yellow ſeeds. After it is opened, it is not unlike a tulip or lilly, except that the leaves are green on the out-ſide. Its virtues are unknown as yet, but is kept for ornament's ſake.

White violet or Jarron. The leaves of this flower growing cloſe within one another like our violets, it has got the name of a white violet, ſcarce differing from it in any thing but the ſcent. It grows wild on certain ſhrubs without *Batavia*; when they are planted in the gardens, the ſtalks thereof are cut down cloſe to the ground, when new ſtalks ſprout forth, which bring flowers in great plenty. The inhabitants who call this flower *Jarron*, ſay it was brought hither from the iſle of *Baly*. The *Malayans* call it *Benja Suſun*, the *Javaneſe Malati Rompah*, and the *Chineſe Belehoa*. It much reſembles the *Katſiopiri*, but is not ſo ſtrong of ſcent, tho' it has no ſcent at all, except in the morning, before the ſun-beams have dry'd up the dew from its leaves. The leaves are pale green, in ſhape not unlike peach leaves, but ſomething broader: The flower iſſues out of a pale green turned bud, of the bigneſs of a double daffadil, and is ſnow white.

Cotton of Bengale. There is a certain ſort of cotton which is tranſplanted from *Bengal* to *Batavia*, called by the *Chineſe Algocdan*, but by the *Malayans* and *Javaneſe Kapas* or *Kappas*; the tree bears flowers and fruit throughout the whole year. So ſoon as the flowers are gone, there buds out a knot, containing the cotton or wool: The leaves are carved in three places, being not unlike a certain herb the *Dutch* call *Ducksfoot*. The flower is brown red, having within certain pointed fillets. This cotton is fit for weaving. 1662.

Wild Mangas. The fruit called *Batsjan* by the *Javaneſe Malayans* and *Chineſe*, is a kind of wild *Mangas* of ſo ſtrong a ſcent, that you may ſmell it before all other herbs in the market. The tree which bears this fruit, is very delightful to the eye, and not unlike the *Mangas* tree, but the leaves are ſomewhat bigger than thoſe of the almond-tree, of a dark green colour. The bloſſom is alſo like that of the *Mangas* tree, and yellow. The fruit is green, of the bigneſs and ſhape of a limon, within which grow certain almonds, which are much more taking to the eye than toothſom, tho' the ſmell is much more diſagreeable than the taſte, which is bitteriſh, and ſomewhat nauſeous, and not comparable to the true *Mangas*, which is the reaſon they are not much planted near *Batavia*, but abundance of them are brought to market there from *Bantam*, in *October* and *November*.

Marokko. About *Batavia* and all over the iſle of *Java* grows a certain tree called *Marokko* or *Morukko* by the *Portugueſe*, *Dap-Dap* or *Dadap* by the *Javaneſe*, *Darradap* by the *Malayans*, and *Oyſenſio* by the *Chineſe*. Its leaves are like thoſe of the poplar-tree, but as big again, ſmell very well, and grow on yellow ſtalks. Theſe leaves being interſperſed with many yellow veins, appear at a diſtance as if the tree were cover'd with flowers. The inhabitants lay theſe leaves over their pots, in which they have their boiled rice, the ſteam of which draws out from thence a very agreeable ſcent; but have no other uſe that I know of.

The plant Dutter. The plant call'd *Ratſiobonk* by the *Malayans* and *Javaneſe*, *Bantohoa* by the *Chineſe*, *Datura* by the *Turks* and *Perſians*, *Duroa* by the *Indians*, and in a broken dialect *Dutter* by the *Dutch*, grows wild in the woods, almoſt all over the *Indies*; it ſeldom riſes above the heighth or thickneſs of our red cabbages, the ſtalk being very like the ſame, but the leaves brown, pale, green and carved. It bears divers flowers, which open every morning, and cloſe up again about noon; they are white within, and pale yellow without, ſome being near a palm in length, and of the figure of a bell, others carved at the extremities; after theſe comes the fruit, which has a pale green rind, cover'd with thorny prickles; they ſeldom exceed the bigneſs of our yellow palms, and contain yellowiſh ſeeds. Whether this plant has the virtue of intoxicating to a degree of madneſs for a certain time, as ſome would have it, I am not able to determine; but this I am certain of, that the *Topaſſes* and other negroes, who keep it in their gardens near

Batavia

1662. *Batavia*, look upon it as a fable. It is properly a kind of nightſhade or henbane.

Kananga. The trees call'd *Kananga* by the *Malayans*, *Javaneſe* and *Chineſe*, bear leaves of a parrot green colour, above which comes forth the bloſſom; they are planted near the *Betel*, which winds about them; and growing to a great heighth, their lofty tops are conſpicuous above moſt of the other fruitful trees in the gardens; as far as I know, they have no other uſe. Beſides that, theſe trees are eaſily to be diſcerned from the reſt by their crooked hanging boughs, they commonly ſet a little wind-mill in the tops to frighten the birds out of the garden, eſpecially the great bats here, which keep their rendezvouſes in theſe trees, and are ſeen hanging with their claws to the branches thereof with their heads downwards, and that in ſuch numbers, that you ſee ſometimes more batts than leaves on a tree.

Indian *oak.* The *Indian* oak-tree produces no eatable fruit, yet does its wood make a ſufficient amends for this defect, being the moſt laſting of all, and as good as our *European* oak. This tree grows up to a great heighth, as may be ſeen by the long pieces of timber in many of the churches, and other lofty buildings of *Batavia*. This tree is ſufficiently known by its large branches and broad leaves, which ſprout forth out of the boughs and branches, being intermix'd with green veins of a pale brown colour, and ſomewhat rough, ſomething reſembling the fig-leaves, but are not carv'd; at the extremities of the boughs ſprout forth certain flowers not unlike the hops, which produce acorns, the ſeeds from whence this large tree takes its root; the inhabitants uſe the leaves in the pleuriſy: They take a certain quantity of the liquor contain'd in the coco-nuts, in which they boil ſome of theſe leaves, to the conſumption of half the liquor, and this decoction they give the patient to take inwardly, which appeaſes the pain. I have ſeen pieces of this oak-timber as ſtreight as an arrow, no leſs than forty foot long, and of $2\frac{1}{2}$ foot diameter to the very top in thickneſs; and nothing more common than to meet with boards of this wood of three and more foot broad. The *Malayans* call this tree *Kyati*, from whence they call this oak-wood, *Kiaten-wood*; which is exceeding hard, and has the ſame veins as our oak, being very laſting, and not ſubject to be worm-eaten, being proof, eſpecially againſt the mice, which ſometimes will eat whole pieces of the timber within, tho' the out ſide appear very ſound.

Water-pompions. The fruit call'd water-pompions by the *Dutch* from their ſhape, are call'd *Katolas* by the *Malayans* and *Javaneſe*, and with a broken name *Katilas* by the *Portugueſe*. It is neither a tree, ſhrub, herb nor plant, but ſprouts forth in the nature of ſmall branches, from a ſmall ſeed, and ſpreads to that degree, that it runs over the tops of the houſes with its leaves and flowers. The *Indians* frequently lead them over their ciſterns in which they bathe, being ſuſtain'd by bamboo-canes to keep off the heat of the ſun-beams. They bring fruits the whole years round, but eſpecially in *April* and *Auguſt*. The flowers are like thoſe of our pompions, and fade without producing any fruit. The fruit is of two ſorts, one grows to the bigneſs of our ordinary pompions, but the other which is the beſt, ſcarce exceeds in bulk our cucumbers or melons. They are uſed in the ſame manner for ſalad. There is another ſort of the length of a man's arm. but no thicker than a good walking-cane, the rind being full of ſpots; that of which I took the draught was 13 inches long and $3\frac{1}{2}$ diameter, weighing $3\frac{1}{4}$ pounds. When the gardners have a mind to make this grow longer than their ordinary ſize, they faſten a weight with wire-thread to the extremities of it, which ſtretches it downwards to a prodigious length. The leaves and branches are like thoſe of the pompions; the fruit green inclining to yellow on the rind without, but white within; as are alſo the ſeed. 1662.

Champakka. If we ſhould enter upon giving you an account of all the flowers that grow in the iſle of *Java*, it would require an entire volume; among the chiefeſt and beſt is that flower call'd *Champakka* of *Siampakka* by the *Malayans* and *Indians*, and *Vinhoa* by the *Chineſe*. The tree which produces theſe flowers, grows up to the heighth of our moderate pear-trees or peach-trees, with large wrinkled leaves, intermix'd with many veins. The branches or boughs grow all in a ſtrait line from the tree, and afterward turn upwards; they are generally ſo weak that no body can climb up to the tree, ſo that the flowers which grow on the top, muſt be taken down with bamboo-canes or reeds. Theſe flowers are in great requeſt among the *Indians*, for their odoriferous ſcent, and uſed in garlands: The ſcent is betwixt a roſe and a violet, and ſo ſtrong, that it may be ſmell'd in the houſes, as the flowers are carried by in the ſtreets; they are of two colours, *viz.* of an orange colour and green, not unlike the bloſſom of a *Spaniſh* orange-tree, but reſemble in figure the *Engliſh* ſaffron. This flower is one ingredient of that famous ointment made by the *Indian* women call'd *Borbory*; they alſo adorn their hair among the reſt with this flower. This tree alſo bears fruit, which grows out of the ſprigs like bunches of grapes,

1662. grapes, and are of the ſame colour and bigneſs, but fit for nothing.

The great creeping-beans. The branches which produce the beans, call'd by the *Dutch* the *Large Creeping-Beans*, are call'd *Katsjang Parang* by the *Malayans* and *Javaneſe*, and run up in many ſmall branches to ſuch a heighth, that their curl d ſprigs on the top grow beyond the pinacles of the higheſt buildings. At the bottom they are of the thickneſs of a man's arm, and change their leaves and fruits, without any alteration to themſelves; they bear fine green and thick leaves, intermix'd with ſmall veins; the bloſſoms are of a purple colour, and before they open pointed at the end: The huſks which contain the beans, are green like ours, having a purple colour'd ſtring all round the huſk. They are of divers ſorts, among which theſe following are moſt in requeſt.

Fabas de Moro. The *Moors-Bean* call'd *Fabas de Moro* by the inhabitants, are very large, and run up to a great heighth; they commonly plant them near the *Pynang* trees, which ſerve them for ſupporters. The huſks are about a foot in length, and an inch in breadth; they are chiefly uſed by the *Chineſe* and *Javaneſe*, but neglected by the *Dutch*, by reaſon of their unſavoury taſte.

Gondola. The bean call'd *Gondola* runs up likewiſe to good heighth, affording a very agreeable ſhade; the leaves boil'd or ſtew'd are very cooling; the ranks don't hold above one year, tho' the beans will keep green three or four years; I did plant ſome of the large creeping-beans at *Koulang* about a ſummer-houſe, four or five of which yielded me near ſix buſhels of beans.

Kadjang. *Kadjang* as the *Javaneſe* and *Malayans* call it, and the *Chineſe Petau*, is a kind of peaſe known by all the inhabitants of *Batavia*, which grow in vaſt plenty in the fields about *Batavia*. When they are ripe, they are gather'd and dry'd in the air. Theſe peaſe are of the bigneſs of our vetches, which grow among the winter-corn, and grow with green ſhells at firſt, but turn black afterwards. Betwixt each two leaves ſprouts forth a bud, which produces a flower, and this the pea. Theſe peas are of great advantage to the ſhips in their return home, and when boil'd with bacon and well butter'd, are very good for the ſtomach. If you plant them in a pot, with earth and keep them well water'd, they will come in twice 24 hours, and make a good ſallad aboard a ſhip.

Makandou. The tree, the fruit whereof the *Javaneſe* call *Makandou*, has very broad, thick and fine leaves, the bloſſom is long and white, after which comes the fruit *Makandou*, in all reſpects like a pine-apple, except that it is not pointed at the end, neither ſo hard, but ſoft. Before it is ripe, it is green, but afterwards yellow, and almoſt inſipid. The *Malayans* roaſt it in the aſhes, and take it inwardly againſt the bloody-flux, aſthma and pleuriſy. In the iſle of *Java* grows a certain tree with leaves like thoſe of the aſh-tree, and a knotty ſtem or trunk. It bears a fruit like unto our hazle-nuts, the kernels whereof, after they are taken nut of the ſhells, are of no ill taſte, yet a little aſtringent. The leaves apply'd to wounds and ulcers, cleanſe them and render them fit for healing; a ſpoonful of the juice of the leaves is a good remedy againſt the worms. Out of the ſtem grows a twig, but to no great heighth, which brings forth yellow flowers, like thoſe of the nightſhade; after theſe come the fruits, which before they are ripe are green, but afterwards red, and of a circular figure; if you ſqueeze them betwixt your hands, they ſend forth ſuch an ill ſcent, that no *Aſſa Fœtida* or *Segapenum* is comparable to it; for which reaſon the *Indian* women apply to the noſtrils of ſuch perſons as are afflicted with fits of the mother: The *Indians* look upon them as not fit to be eaten. 1662.

Daulontas. In the woods of *Java* grows a certain ſhrub, call'd *Daulontas*, to the heighth of ſix foot, ſpreading its branches at a good diſtance, like our water-willow in *Holland*; and that in ſuch vaſt quantities, that the *Chineſe* are forced to root them out with fire and ſteel: The leaves are not unlike thoſe of the *Balſamina*, and cover'd likewiſe at the ends. It bears cluſters of flowers like coronets, not unlike thoſe of the elder-tree; after which come certain berries that are very better, both the leaves and flowers ſmell like the camomile-flowers, and contain the ſame virtues: its decoction is excellent good againſt the cough, and nothing provokes the monthly terms of the women beyond this remedy.

Mangam. The fruit *Mangam* is look'd upon by the *Javaneſe* as the greateſt antidone in the world, even beyond *Bezoar*, *Malaive* nuts, *&c.* The tree which bears this fruit grows upon the graves of their kings, and the fruit is of the bigneſs of a coco-nut. Whenever the king of *Bantam* intends to give a mark of his particular favour to any of his particular favour to any of his great men, or ſome foreign miniſter, he firſt puts his drinking-cup upoe this fruit, and then drinks to the perſon he intends to honour.

In the iſle of *Java*, on the banks of rivers, but eſpecially about *Bantam* grows a certain plant, the leave, whereof reſemble altogether the horn of *Alce*, from whence

1662. the *Javaneſe* have given it the name of *Simbar Mangiram*, and the *Malayans* that of *Tanda rouſa*; it has no root, but inſtead thereof a veiny knot or lump, which lies not under ground, but either upon ſtones, or in hollow trees, ſending forth its leaves on all ſides. This plant is ſempervirent and full of juice, and if ſome of the leaves happen to rot by the rains, the next ſunſhine produces others in their ſtead. The *Javaneſe* uſe theſe leaves like as we do the roots and leaves of the white-lillies, *viz.* to make poultices of to apply to tumors; but they are not proficuous in the St. *Anthony*'s fire, which ſhews that this plant is very hot, which its bitteriſh and biting taſte ſeems alſo intimate. Taken inwardly it purges by ſtool, and applied to the navel kills the worms.

Simbar mangiram.

Water-flower. The flower called *Tratty*, or *Tongjong Tratty* by the *Malayans* and *Javaneſe*, *Tienhoa* by the *Chineſe*, and *Fulo de Tranke*, i. e. *The Flower of the Lake*, by the *Portugueſe*, is very large and fair, and grows moſt commonly in pools and ſtanding waters. The ſtalk grows to the heighth of a fathom above the ſurface of the water, and the flower reſembling our tulips, except that it has broader leaves, and is at leaſt as big again. Some are of a purple colour near the points of the leaves, which by degrees turns pale yellow or white towards the ſtalk. Some are quite white, but of the ſame ſhape as the former. At the firſt opening of the buds, theſe flowers emit a moſt fragrant ſcent, and diſcover to us their beauty, which by reaſon of its pleaſant colour attracts the ſight of all that paſs by. They ſprout forth out of a green bud, which burſts open like thoſe of the peony-flowers: Some of the leaves grow upwards like the flowers, being of the breadth of a brim of a hat, and bright green; ſome lie flat and cloſe to the ſurface of the water, being round, out of the midſt of which comes forth a ſtalk with the flower. After the leaves are fallen off come forth round huſks or buds of the bigneſs of a man's hand, of a green colour, containing a pale yellow ſeed, and many ſmall and yellowiſh beans, which lying bare in part, reſemble the *Faba Ægyptiaca* of *Dioſcorides*, *viz.* this huſk being flat on one ſide, is as if it were cut aſunder in the middle with a knife, and diſcovers about 30 beans placed in a circle. As theſe beans grow to their full bigneſs, they are encloſed in a peculiar huſk, and when ripe, reſemble the green huſk of a hazel-nut without the ſhell, and are not unlike it in taſte, being very ſweet, but ſomewhat phlegmatick; they are ſold daily in the market of *Batavia*: It ſeems to me to be a kind of water-lilly, having broad and red leaves, and being the ſame both in the 1662. ſtalk and root, tho' it differs from our *Duteh* water-lillies, which are white or yellow, but are of a purple colour in the *Indies*: It alſo differs from ours in the fruit and huſk. The leaves of this plant are ſteemed cold in the third degree, like our *European* water-lillies; wherefore alſo the *Dutch* here, after the example of the *Malayans*, give the decoction thereof in burning fevers, frenſies, bloody-fluxes and other hot diſeaſes. There is alſo another ſort, with pale purpled flowers; and a third alſo worth ſeeing. There grows alſo in the rivers and pools abundance of what is commonly called ducks-meat, being a food the ducks are mighty fond of, whereof the *Chineſe* keep here great numbers. In the ſtanding pools and rivers grows alſo the *Potamo Geyton*, or fountain-herb, and water-plantine, which if chew'd cauſes great burning in the throat and upon the tongue.

Nothing is more frequent in the *Indies* than to ſee the trees bear fruit all the year round; but the fruit called *Langzap* by the *Malayans*, *Kakaſan* by the *Javaneſe*, and in a broken dialect *Lanſen* by the *Portugueſe* and *Dutch*, is gathered but once a year, *viz.* in *February*. The trees which bear theſe fruits, hanging in bunches like grapes, in vaſt quantities, ſpread in a large circumference, with lofty branches, and pale green leaves like the lawrel leave, or thoſe of the cheſnut-tree, but are not carved. The fruits have a ſoft and yellow rind like our peaches, containing a white and ſharpiſh liquor. They reſemble moſt our yellow plumbs, but are inclining to red and white within, the pulp being divided by certain partitions, is of a ſomewhat aſtringent taſte like our red currants, and ſo luſcious, that one can ſcarce be ſatisfied with them; they are in great requeſt here, being accounted very good to allay the heat of burning fevers: Each has commonly two or three kernels, from which you muſt ſuck the pulp, the kernels and ſkin being both bitter. The fruit ſprouts out of ſmall yellowiſh buds or knots, after the bloſſom. They grow in vaſt plenty in the iſle of *Amboyna*, and eſpecially ar *Gilolo*, where I have ſeen prodigious quantities of them brought to market. The iſle of *Java* produces another ſort of this fruit, called *Boa Rampi* by the *Malayans*, and *Kapandung* by the *Javaneſe*, differing from the former only in the outſide, being for the reſt the ſame in taſte and virtue; for which reaſon they might well be call'd the *Javaneſe Lanſen*: Theſe are ripe in *October*, and are brought out of the countrey to *Batavia*. Langzap.

Theſe purple plumbs are ſo called by the *Dutch* from their colour, but by the *Purple plumbs.*

1662. *Javaneſe Gapak*, and by the *Malayans Boka Gohok:* They grow in great plenty on trees of a moderate ſize; they are of purple colour without, but white within, with red ſtones. They have a ſouriſh taſte.

Jambu-ang. The fruit *Jambulang* is the ſame with our black-cherries, which is the reaſon the *Dutch* call it by that name here, but the *Javaneſe Duat*, and the *Malayans Kriango*; tho' they are of an oval figure, and not of ſo agreeable taſte, approaching to our great ſloes; they ripen in *Autumn*. The tree which bears theſe fruits is alſo much taller than the black-cherry trees, and ſpread their branches at a great diſtance. The leaves are dark green, taper towards the ſtalk, and broader at the ends, being intermix'd with many ſtrings or veins. The flowers have red leaves with ſmall filets within: The fruit is brought to market at *Batavia* by whole large baſkets full in the months of *September* and *October*. It is look'd upon among the inhabitants as a very good remedy againſt the bloody-flux.

Fulo de Sapato, *a ſingle and double ſhoe-flower.* The ſingle ſhoe-flower is call'd by the *Portugueſe Fulo de Sapato*, i. e. *Shoe-flower*, becauſe the flower chew'd affords a juice, which is excellently good for blacking and beautifying of ſhoes. There are two ſorts of it, which may be diſtinguiſh'd as male and female, like our peony-flowers. Out of the flower, which is darken'd, and not unlike our common roſes, ſprouts forth on the top a yellow ſtalk, at the end of which bud out leaves like a coronet, covered with a yellow wool: The leaves are green, and carved at the extremities like our nettles. Theſe produce large buds containing the flower. They are aſtringent of taſte, and conſequently cooling: The water diſtill'd thereof is good in burning-fevers, and applied outwardly to the forehead procures ſleep. There is alſo another kind of theſe flowers, with ſingle leaves, of an iſabella colour, which grow upon ſmall trees like our ſweet-briars: They ſpread their branches at ſuch a diſtance, that they are frequently uſed for arbours; they alſo make baſkets of the twigs. The inhabitants waſh their heads with the decoction of theſe leaves, and when ſteept in vinegar, uſe it againſt the looſeneſs; they alſo apply it to bruiſes. Theſe buſhes or ſmall trees require an exceſſive heat for their growth, which is the reaſon they commonly plant them againſt the eaſt-walls here, as we do in *Europe* againſt the ſouth-walls, for the exerciſe of heat. There is likewiſe a ſhoe-flower with double leaves not differing from the former, except in its leaves, and the coronet in the middle, which are both of a bright red colour like a ruby.

The flower Dukol. The flower called *Dukol* by the *Javaneſe*, *Bale Adap* by the *Malayans*, and *Fulo di Poco*, i. e. *Flower of the Buſh*, by the *Portugueſe*, grows every were in the hedges, to the heighth of 12 or 13 foot; it produces at the top a white leaf growing ſtraight upwards, near unto which the flowers, which are of an orange colour, grow in cluſters. The other leaves are dark green, with white veins running through the middle.

Crab or wild-plumbs. The fruit called *Boenga Tanjong* by the *Malayans*, *Kombang* by the *Javaneſe*, *Kauky* by the *Chineſes*, and *Crab-Plumbs* by the *Dutch*, grows on very high trees with wrinkled leaves. The flowers, which are very ſmall and of an iſabella colour, open every morning, and ſend forth a moſt fragrant ſcent, but cloſe up again againſt ſun-ſet. The fruit is of the bigneſs and ſhape of a hazel-nut, green at firſt, but turns yellow afterwards, and of an orange colour at laſt: The pulp which is of the ſame colour, grows about a brown ſtone, but being of a ſour taſte, this tree is admired and planted chiefly for its flowers ſake.

Karembolas. The fruit called *Karembolas*, and likewiſe *Kamozia*, *Karabelli*, *Chamarah* and *Bolunbach* by the *Indians*, grows in many places of the *Indies* on a tree, with a ſlender ſtem, twig and leaves, which is produced from the ſeed, and growing to the heighth of an ordinary cherry-tree, bears a flower of a pale blue colour, after which comes the fruit, which is green at firſt, but turns yellow, reſembling in ſhape our pompions. Some of theſe trees (which is very ſtrange) produce a fruit of ſo delicious a taſte, that nothing can be beyond it; whilſt others of the ſame kind bear a fruit ſo aſtringent and ſour as can ſcarce be imagined; when they are cut in the middle, they repreſent in the inſide a ſtar. The leaves of the tree are green, not unlike the roſe-tree leaves, but not carved and full of ſmall veins.

Boca Bidara, *or* Maſſam. The tree which produces the fruit called *Boca Bidara* by the *Malayans* and *Javaneſe*, and *Maſſam* by the *Chineſe* and *Portugueſe*, and by the *Dutch Prick-Plumbs* from their thorney prickles, grows up to the heighth of our cherry-trees, with aſh coloured leaves, with a triple vein. Its twigs are covered all over with almoſt inviſible thorns or prickles: It produces fruit all the year round, in ſuch plenty, that the twigs bend to the very ground. The fruit is of the bigneſs of a hazel-nut, of a dark green colour without, but white within, containing a ſtone of an iſabella colour: The flowers are yellow, having no more than five leaves, with as many ſmall ſtalks betwixt them. This fruit being of an agreeable taſte, tho' ſomewhat aſtringent, is eaten raw, and very cooling. The tree

1662. grows wild at ſome diſtance from *Batavia*, but has been of late years cultivated in their gardens.

Javaneſe Turnips. The root called *Gadang* by the *Javaneſe* and *Malayans*, has got the name of a *Javaneſe* turnip among the *Dutch*, becauſe it grows like our potatoes in the earth, and is of the bigneſs of our turnips, tho' it differs much from them both in its ſubſtance and taſte. It bears dark green leaves, with white ſtreaks or veins, betwixt which ſprouts forth a twig with flowers of a purple colour. They are accounted very nouriſhing and wholeſome, if not uſed in too great a quantity.

Muſhrooms. Here grow divers ſorts of muſhrooms or toadſtools, called *Kulet* by the *Malayans*, and *Jamor* by the *Javaneſe*. Some are of a red, others of a pale green colour; they grow without any ſeed out of the moiſture of the earth. Some of them are uſed here like as in *Europe*, and are eaten with wine and ſugar.

Indian Saffron, or Borbori. The plant, the root whereof is called *Borbori* by the *Javaneſe*, *Saffran di Terra*, i. e. *Saffron under Ground* by the *Portugueſe*, *Kurkum* by the *Arabians*, and by the *Latins Radix Curcume* or *Curcumy-root*, has its leaves not unlike thoſe of the white-hellebore, *viz.* thick, long, and broad, ſmooth and interſperſed with many veins. The ſtalk is thick, and grows up to a conſiderable heighth: The flower is of a purple colour, and the root reſembles the gentian-root. After the flower comes the fruit, like a cheſnut, containing a round ſeed not unlike our peas. The root contains a ſaffron yellow tincture, whence it has got the name of *Indian* ſaffron. The *Malayans* boil and eat them both with fiſh and fleſh, and look upon them as the moſt ſovereign remedy in the world, againſt all the obſtructions of the liver, lungs and ſpleen; again the gravel and ſtone, the ſtoppage of the monthly flowers, and other diſeaſes of the womb, but moſt eſpecially againſt the yellow jaundice: This root is one of the main ingredients in that oinment, called *Borbori* by the *Javaneſe*, wherewith they anoint the whole body.

The Indian tree houſleek. The *Indian* tree houſleek, grows in the iſle of *Java*, on the *Mango* trees, and a certain *Indian* oak called *Kyati* by the *Malayans*. The ſhrub has long leaves, in taſte not unlike our ſorrel, but are more juicy, and much thicker, like our common houſeleek. It has long round roots, out of which ſprout forth certain threads, which faſten to the trees and ſtones, and grow thus till they come to their full perfection. It has a ſmall white flower of an aromatick, ſmell approaching to the ſmell of citrons, for which reaſon the *Malayans* look upon it as a great ſtrengthener of the ſinews and brains. The leaves and flowers made up into a conſerve, are good againſt the cramp, and very cordial, like our borage-flowers. After the flower comes the fruit, of the length of a finger, and an inſipid taſte, containing ſeeds as big as our barley. This plant has a certain quality of reſiſting all putrefactions and poiſons; for which reaſon the *Malayan* phyſicians preſcribe it as an infallable remedy againſt poiſon'd wounds occaſion'd by the poiſon'd darts and other weapons of the *Javaneſe*, which they poiſon with the blood of a certain ſerpent called *Gekko* by the *Dutch*. 1662.

Indian Veronica. The fields and woods of *Java* produce a certain herb called *Veronica* by the *Europeans*, with a white flower; the *Malayans* and *Javaneſe* call it *Oribat Matta*, i. e. *a Remedy for the eyes*, becauſe its juice allays the inflammations and defluxions in the eye. The ſame juice or the decoction of the herb, they alſo uſe againſt old coughs and conſumptions: By reaſon of its diuretick quality, they alſo preſcribe it for the gravel and ſtone, and the *Gonorvirulenta*. The leaves bruiſed are alſo apply'd outwardly to ulcers, as having a ſingular drying quality.

Kolkas. The plant call'd *Kolkas* by the *Arabians* and *Moors*, has a very thick root, large broad leaves, and bears a red fruit growing in cluſters, not unlike the *Arum*. It contains a ſlimy poiſonous ſubſtance, for which reaſon the *Javaneſe* cut them in ſlices, and ſteep them three or four days in river water; after which they ſqueeze the remaining juice out by a preſs, and having laid the roots to dry, make a kind of meal or flour of it, of which they make cakes inſtead of rice. The *Malayans* and *Chineſe* prepare them in the ſame manner. The bread made of theſe roots, which the *Javaneſe* of *Materan* were forced to eat 1629, at the ſiege of *Batavia*, for want of rice (their magazine of *Tengel* being deſtroy'd by the *Dutch*) occaſioned a peſtiferous bloody-flux in their camp; the *Chineſe* and *Malayans* alſo boil theſe roots, but throw away the the firſt decoction, and putting on freſh water, boil them again, and afterwards eat them with vinegar, oil of coco and pepper, as we do the red beat-root.

The Indian Betony tree. The *Indian Betony* tree has ſpeckled leaves like our *Pulmonaria*. The flowers ſprout forth like ears, ſometimes a thouſand in one ear, of a pale blue colour, like our roſemary-flowers. The decoction of this plant they account a good remedy againſt ſpiting of blood, the conſumption and coughs, call'd *Sabit Haty*, i. e. *the diſeaſe of the heart*, by the *Malayans*, who comprehend the liver, lungs, and even the ſpleen, under,

1662. der the general name of the heart. The *Indian* women uſe the juice thereof as an antidote againſt the ſting of ſerpents, ſcorpions, and ſuch like venomous creatures.

Indian *graſs.* *Java* produces all ſorts of graſs, and among the reſt, a peculiar kind, which has four ears croſſwiſe on the top of the ſtalk, the leaves being for the reſt like thoſe of common graſs. There alſo grows here another ſort of graſs, of the ſame kind with ſix or eight ears, which contain ſmall ſeeds. The *Malayan* phyſicians preſcribe the root and the graſs it ſelf for the bloody-flux, ſtoppage of urine, exulcerations and pains of the kidneys, and to promote the monthly times in women. *Java* produces likewiſe another kind of graſs differing from the reſt in the roots, which are three or four ſmall knots, which when chew'd have a flavour like cloves, but are not ſo hot in the mouth.

The Indian *primeprint.* The *Indian* primeprint has got its name from its reſemblance to ours, in its leaves as well as flowers; tho' the leaves thereof have a more odoriferous ſcent than our primeprint, and the flowers, tho' the ſame in ſhape, yet differ in their colour from ours, thoſe of the *Indian* primeprint being inclinable to a blue, whereas ours are as white as ſnow, but the berries of both are black. Like unto this is a certain ſhrub called *Alkanna* and *Henne* by the *Arabians*, and *Chinnets* by the *Perſians*, except that its leaves are ſomewhat leſs. The leaves of *Alkanna* are in great requeſt throughout the *Indies*, to give their teeth, lips, but eſpecially their nails, a red tincture, a thing much eſteemed among the *Moors*. They prepare the tincture, by ſteeping the leaves after they have been rubb'd ſmall upon a marble ſtone, in fair water mixt with a ſmall quantity of lime; with this the *Turks* and *Perſians* alſo die their horſes tails. The leaves chew'd leave a piquant taſte upon the tongue, yet without any ſharpneſs. Both theſe ſhrubs are in high eſteem among the *Indian* women, who uſe the decoction of the leaves in all diſeaſes of the womb, and have an opinion that it keeps them young; and to confeſs the truth, they have a peculiar virtue (if boil'd in water) to cure the *Indian* gout or barrenneſs, called *Beribery*; it grows all over the *Indies*, and the *Malayans* call it *Sagondi*.

The Indian *ſage-tree.* The *Indian* ſage-tree grows twelve foot high, whole woods of them being to be ſeen about *Batavia*; and if planted in the gardens, ſpreads its roots to that degree, as not to be eaſily rooted out again. The flowers are white, the leaves very long and of an agreeable ſcent. They cultivate the trees in the gardens by pruning and cuting the roots and ſhoots at certain times, and by this means make it as good and as wholeſome as our garden ſage. The *Malayan* women uſe it againſt the diſtempers of the womb, mixt with the *Sagandi* and the *Daulontas*, wherewith they bathe themſelves. The flowers are preſcribed by the phyſicians to correct the cold humours of the brain and ſinews, and by reaſon of their diuretick quality are very proper in the dropſy. Our garden ſage as well as roſemary, are a kind of rarity here, the exceſſive heat of this climate being as unnatural to them, as the cold is with us in winter. 1662.

The Indian Verbena. The *Indian Verbena* grows alſo in *Java*, being altogether like ours, except that the ears are ſomewhat longer and harder. They apply the flowers bruiſed to exulcerated legs, by reaſon of their drying quality, requiſite in the healing of wounds eſpecially at *Batavia*, where the moiſt and hot climate renders the cure thereof very difficult. A ſpoonful of the juice of the leaves taken inwardly, cures the cholick and bloody-flux; and the *Indian* women attribute to this plant a ſecret virtue againſt witchcraft.

The Indian Eſula. In the woods of *Java* grows a certain kind of *Eſula*, which ſhoots up to a great heighth, with a three corner'd ſtalk, ſometimes of the thickneſs of a man's leg; it has abundance of thorny knobs, which being however not very hard, don't prick: The leaves grow at ſome diſtance from one another, being not unlike thoſe of our houſleek; out of the ſtalk, (after an inciſion made) iſſues a milky yellow juice, of a ſharp taſte. This juice reduced to the conſiſtency of an extract is adminiſtred in the dropſy, lameneſs and other diſtempers proceeding from cold; it purges both by ſtool and urine. This plant differs not either in ſhape or the manner of growing from that, which affords that yellow juice, call'd corruptly by the apothecaries *Gutta Gemou*, and by the *Indians Lonan Cambodia*, becauſe it is of the product of the kingdom of *Kambodia*.

Mitium Solis. In *Java* alſo grows a certain kind of *Mitium Solis*, reſembling ours in its flowers, leaves and the ſtalk; but the fruit is much larger, and as hard as a ſtone, containing a mealy pulp. The *Portugueſe* have given it the name of *Yerva da Roſarios*, the roſary herb, becauſe the *Malayan* women uſe to make their roſaries of the fruit, and wear it about their neck inſtead of necklaces. Both the berb and fruit is proficuous in the diſtempers of the kidnies and bladder.

Boa Kamba *or* Indian *pears.* The fruit called *Boa Kamba* or *Kaman* by the *Javaneſe*, *Boa Binſel* by the *Malayans*,

1662. *ans*, and *Letsise* by the *Chineſe*, is by the *Dutch* called the *Indian* pear, by reaſon of its bigneſs and reſemblance to our pears. When ripe they are of a pale yellow with black ſpots, hollow within, with blue ſeeds, the pulp adhering cloſe to the peel. They are ſcarce ever cultivated in the gardens of *Batavia*, by reaſon of their crabbed taſte, tho' very agreeable to the eye; they are brought in great quantities into the market there, eſpecially in *February*. The tree grows up to a great heighth, having a brittle and coarſe wood and leaves.

Rambuſtan *or* Rampoſtan.

Rambuſtan or *Rampoſtan* as the *Malayans* call it, is one of thoſe fruits, which are produced without flowers, for this comes forth only out of a green bud. They grow in cluſters on very ſmall twigs of a tree, of the heighth of our cherry-trees, are of a purple colour, and reſemble at a diſtance our cheſnuts, whilſt they are hanging on the trees. Within is a ſlender quantity of a pulp, of an acid agreeable taſte, and in this a ſtone. They come to maturity in *February*. There is another kind of *Rambuſtan* growing on ſhorter twigs than the former, and being covered with a hairy ſubſtance; but tho' theſe two fruits are very different in outward appearance, their taſte is much the ſame.

Romani *or* Satarra.

The fruit called *Satarra* by the *Malayans*, *Gandaria* by the *Javaneſe*, and *Romani* by the *Portugueſe*, reſemble our yellow plumbs, but are ſomewhat bigger. The inſide is not unlike the *Mangas*, and in taſte like the *Batſian*, yet not altogether ſo ſour. They are green at firſt, but turn yellow mixt with an orange colour; the pulp is likewiſe yellow. The inhabitants pickle and uſe them like as we do olives; they are of no diſagreeable taſte, but ſomething more hairy than the *Mangas*.

The Javaneſe *flower.*

The *Javaneſe* flower called *Fule de Japan* (in the ſame ſenſe) by the *Portugueſe*, *Benga Japan* by the *Malayans*, and *Quihoa* by the *Chineſe*, delights in ſhady places; the ſtalk is not above a foot high, ſome of which produce white flowers, others of an iſabella and purple colour, ſprouting forth with ſmall knobs between the leaves; and no ſooner do the leaves of the lowermoſt flowers fall off, but others come forth on the top in their ſtead. The ſtalk, after the leaves have been caſt, produces a bud, containing a black ſeed, as ſmall as tobacco ſeed, tho' this plant will grow without it, if you put only a twig of it in the ground. Theſe flowers have no other uſe but to divert the eye.

The tree Patty.

The tree called *Patty* by the *Malayans* and *Javaneſe*, grows in many gardens about *Batavia*, being cheriſh'd by the inhabitants, by reaſon of its ſpacious branches and fine leaves, which afford an agreeable ſhade; it 1662. riſes up to the heighth of an apple-tree, with thin branches, on which you ſee the fruit hanging on the ſtalks, three and three together, of a crabbed taſte, and therefore not regarded; they reſemble the pine-apple on the one ſide, and have a ſeed within. The leaves are of a lively green colour, and grow very cloſe together.

Marygolds.

The flowers called marygolds by our people, have got their name rather from their colour, than any other reſemblance to ours. The leaves are dark green, like thoſe of the apple-tree, but ſomewhat leſs: On the tops of the twigs ſprout forth certain orange colour'd buds, which opening produce the orange colour'd flowers with four leaves, they have no other uſe than to pleaſe the eye-ſight.

The huntſman's tree.

The huntſman's tree is a kind of wild palm-tree, the ſtem whereof is covered with a grey rind or bark, twiſted about as it were with circles. The leaves which are bright green, grow on long yellowiſh ſtalks, the lowermoſt of which turn yellow by degrees, and hang downwards; being for the reſt very agreeable to the eye. The fruit is not near ſo big as the leaſt coco-nuts, and has no other uſe, except that the inhabitants draw from it a certain ſyrup and ſugar, which they ſell to the neighbouring countries. The wood of the ſtem is very durable, provided it be kept from the air, and ſo hard, that they can neither ſaw nor cut it, but are forced to ſplit it by pieces of wood in it; ſome of the *Indians* make their bows of the twigs of this tree; and the *Chineſe* at *Batavia* make of the leaves and tender ſprouts, fans to cool themſelves with. The *Malabars* make uſe of the leaves inſtead paper, which they know how to order with a great deal of dexterity; for the leaves being about three inches broad, and above a yard long, they make holes at one end of them, and ſo tie as many of them together with a ſtring, as they have occaſion for at a time. They write with an iron pencil, wherewith they know how to imprint and cut their characters on the uppermoſt ſurface of theſe leaves, as that they remain indelible. This they perform for the moſt part without keeping their eyes ſo cloſe and earneſtly upon them, as we do. Theſe leaves are alſo very durable and will not eaſily putrefy, even in water; I have ſeveral letters writ to me upon theſe *Olen* or leaves by perſons of great quality among the *Malabars*. This tree alſo yields a juice like the coco-tree, which if boil'd, taſtes very ſweet, and is apt to inebriate, but if not boil'd, turns ſour immediately. But the chief uſe they make

1662. of it is, to boil it into ſugar. This huntſman's tree is none of the loweſt rank among the many kinds of palm-trees of the *Indies*, being much eſteem'd and cultivated for its uſefulneſs, eſpecially in the iſle of *Ceylon* and in *Javapatnam*, where you ſee whole woods of this tree.

The tree and fruit Billingbing *or* Blingbing.

About *Batavia* grows a tree of a moſt delightful aſpect, with moſt pleaſant leaves hanging downwards. The ſtem, which is very thick, and branches ſend forth ſmall ſprouts full of green buds or knobs, which produce red flowers, not unlike a ſmall lilly; after which comes the fruit, growing in cluſters, reſembling both in bigneſs and ſhape our ſmall cucumbers, about the thickneſs of an inch, and a fingers length. They have a green rind, and within it a ſeed, not unlike that of the cucumbers, but ſomewhat more round. The *Malayans* and *Javaneſe* call this fruit *Billingbing* and *Blinbing*. This tree is among the trees what the ſheep are among the beaſts, for they not only rob it of its flowers and fruit, but alſo of its leaves and rind, ſometimes to the very root, as having their peculiar uſe in phyſick; ſo that this tree would make but a very ſlender appearance for the moſt part, were it not that provident nature did almoſt cover its ſtem and branches with odoriferous flowers and well-taſted fruits. The fruit is very juicy and cooling, but ſomewhat aſtringent, for which reaſon it is ſeldom uſed alone, but in ſauces, to give a good reliſh: The fruit is alſo preſerved with ſugar. Our phyſicians there prepare a ſyrup out of the juice, and preſcribe it in the exceſſive heat of the liver and blood; and this ſyrup is alſo mixed with the decoction of the rice, before it is peel'd, called *Pady*, and given in fevers. This juice alſo quenches the thirſt, and has one peculiar quality, that notwithſtanding its aſtringency, it takes away that ſour taſte of divers other fruits which ſets the teeth on edge.

The Indian *dog's-tongue.*

The herb call'd hound's or dog's-tongue, from its reſemblance to ours, which bears the ſame name, is by the *Javaneſe* called *Suroe*, by the *Malayans Sudu-Sudu*, and by the *Chineſe Kautſu*. The ſtalk is thick below, but grows thin towards the top. As you pull off the leaves, you ſee a milky juice drop out of it; of which two or three drops dropt into the ear, cures the ear-ach; as its uſe is only in phyſick, it generally grows wild.

Bitter-green.

The plant called bitter-green by our people, has got its name from its bitter taſte: It grows in the gardens of *Batavia*, and creeps up to the next tree or ſtalk, almoſt like the branches of the cucumbers, but that it leaves are deeper carved, and more pointed. The fruit is alſo not unlike a cucumber, yellow with green ſtreaks and a thick rind, yellow within, with a red kernel. When it comes to its full perfection, it is marbled with an orange colour. The *Dutch* make no account of this fruit, by reaſon of its bitter taſte; but the inhabitants uſe it in their ſawce call'd *Karry*, and put the root and leaves in their ordinary drink, which preſerves it for two or three days, whereas otherwiſe it would turn immediately. They cure the bitterneſs with ſugar. 1662.

Durions.

Among all the garden fruits, there is ſcarce any that exceed the *Durions*; 'tis true the ſcent of it is not unlike that of rotten figs, and conſequently not very inviting to ſearch after the kernel, which makes amends for the ſmell, being of a luſcious taſte. The tree which produces this fruit, grows crooked, with abundance of branches, and very harſh leaves pointed at the ends, of a palms length, ſometimes grey on the outſide, but bright green on the other ſide. They are not inferior in heighth to the talleſt trees of *Europe*. The fruit *Durions* grows in cluſters on the thicke ſtends of the twigs, and ſprouts forth out of a green bud, which growing bigger and bigger by degrees, opens at laſt into an iſabella colour'd flower, ſurrounded on the out-ſide with hard leaves, like a rind: This flower produces a thorny fruit of the bigneſs of a melon, covered with a thorny rind, not unlike the fruit *Jaka*; it is green at firſt, but turns yellow. It has four partitions within, in each of which you ſee a ſtone like a peach-ſtone, of the bigneſs of a cheſnut, containing a delicious ſweet and white kernel. Before they take out the kernels they ſtamp the fruit under foot, to avoid being wounded by the thorney prickles. The *Durions* are always eaten raw, being reckon'd one of the wholeſomeſt fruits in the *Indies*, if uſed moderately, but if in exceſs, inflame the blood, and raiſe pimples in the face. They ſeem to have an antipathy againſt the *Bethel*, becauſe they will not grow near it, but die. They come to maturity in three months time, and chiefly in *October* and *November*, tho' I have ſeen them alſo in the market of *Batavia* in *Auguſt*, for they are to be had all the year round, but not in ſuch plenty. They grow much about *Bantam*, whence they are brought to *Batavia*. The firſt that I ſaw was in the grounds of *Chriſtian Chandellour*, near the great river of *Batavia*; and ſince that I have met with them in divers other places thereabouts; ſo that this fruit thrives as well here as at *Bantam*, but no where better than near *Malacca*, where the *Durions* are of an exceſſive bigneſs.

Sagou Tree

Huntsmans Tree

Blimbing

Dogs Tongue

Pepper Tree

Durions

Sagou Fruit

Pepper Fruit

Blimbing Fruit

1662. The pepper, called *Lada* or *Laden* by the *Malayans*, and *Maritſia* by the *Javaneſe*, grows on tender branches, with abundance of knots, and creeps up along ſtalks or trees like our hops. Sometimes they will climb beyond the pinnacle of the higheſt trees, and afterwards hang downwards. On the ſtalks or twigs of theſe branches the pepper grows in ſuch thick cluſters, that they are ſcarce to be diſcern'd from the leaves. Theſe ſprout forth out of the buds of the branches, being green and interſperſed with veins, not unlike thoſe of the cinnamon-tree, pecked at the extremity, ſometimes of the breath of a hand, and long in proportion, of a bitteriſh taſte, and hot upon the tongue: After the leaves come forth certain twigs or ſtalks not unlike thoſe of the hazel-nut trees, on which hang the berries, like our red-currants, but in larger cluſters; theſe berries turn black as they ripen. The pepper is one of the chiefeſt commodities in the ſpice-trade; the beſt grows along the coaſt of *Malabar*, near *Koulang*, where I uſed to buy great quantities for the company's uſe. The pepper muſt be planted in a rich ſoil, and bears fruit within the year. In *Malabar* it ripens chiefly in *January*, but in other places ſooner or later, according to the difference of the climate. In the iſle of *Java* it ripens in *October*, and is gathered in *November* and *December*, and is then green, but turns black as it is a drying in the ſun; after which it is made up into balls of 80 or 90 pounds. The beſt pepper is white, cloſe and biting within: There is alſo a ſort of long pepper. The *Indians* alſo make a pickle of green pepper. Of the *Sagon* tree, repreſented in the next print, we have treated before.

Wild onions. The *Portugueſe* have given the name of a wild onion, or *Sabollos de Matte*, to a certain flower, becauſe its root reſembles that of an onion, tho' for the reſt it has not leaſt congruity with it. The *Javaneſe* and *Malayans* call it *Hakung*, and the *Chineſe Taukio*. This flower grows in a bunch on the top of a thin ſtalk, but near three foot high. They come forth out of red buds, are of a high red colour, with purple colour'd ſtreaks of a palm in length; are very delightful to the eye, and of no diſagreeable ſmell, eſpecially in the morning before the dew is dry'd up by the ſun-beams, for which reaſon they are much cheriſh'd in the gardens of *Batavia*. The leaves of this plant are above three foot long, and ſpread all round about, being pointed towards the extremities.

Potatoes. The Roots of potatoes, called *Patattes* by the *Portugueſe*, after the *Braſilians*, are called *Ubi Tora* by the *Malayans*, *Ubi* by the *Javaneſe*, and *Hantſoa* by the *Chineſe*. Theſe roots grow in the ground on branches, with leaves not unlike the cucumber leaf; ſome of theſe branches bearing white, others blue flowers, ſhaped like bells. The *Chineſe* cultivate theſe roots in the fields near *Batavia*, which muſt be well dung'd beforehand: They cut the ranks near the extremity, which they put into the ground, and let them grow for ſome time. Then they cover theſe ranks with rich earth, at a foot diſtance perhaps, into which the ranks ſend forth their roots, which come to maturity in a ſhort time, and ſometimes grow to the thickneſs of a man's arm, and a foot long. Some are red on the outſide, and theſe are in greateſt eſteem at *Batavia*, but don't approach in goodneſs to thoſe of *Braſil*, eſpecially near *Rio St. Franciſco*, where theſe roots are red both within and without. This root is frequently boil'd by the *Dutch* both with fiſh and fleſh, excelling in taſte and ſweetneſs much our parſnip-roots or artichokes; they are alſo eaten raw with ſalt, oil and vinegar, like a ſalad, but are not ſo eaſy a digeſtion then: The beſt way is to roaſt them in the aſhes, which makes them taſte like cheſnuts, and are good to ſtop the looſeneſs, a ſymptom very frequent to thoſe that inhabit near the line; for which reaſon this root is in great requeſt here, and cultivated with a great deal of care, which makes them very cheap here; for you may buy as much for a half-penny as will ſuffice for a whole meal. In the iſle of *St. Thomas* they uſe them inſtead of bread. They alſo make a kind of drink of them. They boil a conſiderable quantity of theſe roots in a kettle well cover'd, till they are ſoft or tender; then they ſtamp them well, and put them in a veſſel with water, where they begin to ferment in twice 24 hours, when the veſſel muſt be ſtopp'd up; which done, it turns clear, and as ſtrong as good beer.

1662.

Beſides the potatoes, there grows another root about *Batavia* called *Injames* by the *Portugueſe*, after the *Braſilians*, by the *Javaneſe* and *Malayans Byra*, and *Siatſini* by the *Chineſe*. It has a very fine green leaf, and interſperſed with veins: The root has commonly five or ſix inches diameter, and is one foot and a half long, having a brown rind, but is white within. The flower is of a greeniſh colour. Theſe roots are ſold in the market of *Batavia* by the piece, weighing each 15 *Katty*, or thereabouts, a *Katty* being a pound and a quarter, according to our weight, ſo that 30 perſons may dine upon one root. Its taſte is however not near to good as the potatoes, and being of a hard digeſtion and very dry, they are not much look'd after by the

Injames or Byra.

1662. the *Dutch*, but the natives are very fond of them.

Blue plumbs. The tree which bears a kind of blue plumbs, ſpreads its branches very loftily, not unlike the mulberry-tree, except that its leaves are of a different ſhape. You ſee this tree frequently at one and the ſame time laden with flowers and fruit, both ripe and unripe: The wood is very tough, ſo that you may venture to climb up by the ſmalleſt branches. The flowers are of an agreeable ſcent, eſpecially in the morning before the dew is gone. This fruit is not regarded at *Batavia*, becauſe the markets are over-ſtock'd with them by the country people, who bring them in vaſt quantities thither out of the mountains; tho' for the reſt it is of an agreeble taſte, ſomewhat like the dates. They are rarely to be met with here in the gardens. This plumb comes forth out of certain buds, conſiſting of five white leaves each, and grows on the twigs like our oval plumbs. It is green at firſt, but turns to a dark red, but the pulp is white, within which are three ſtones. The *Malayans* and *Javaneſe* call theſe plumbs *Boa Soa*, or *Sau*, the *Chineſe Theely*, and the *Portugueſe Fruite de Manilha*, i. e. *Fruit of Manilha*. At *Batavia* I never ſaw but one tree, bearing at the ſame time flowers and ripe plumbs.

Oranges. *Java* produces divers ſorts of oranges, among which threee are prefer'd before the reſt, *viz.* the common ones, and thoſe of *Japan* and *China*. The trees are much of the ſame heighth, but different in their leaves; thoſe of *Japan* have broader leaves than the ordinary ones, and theſe again broader than thoſe of *China*. They all are of a different taſte, yet very agreeable. The *Javaneſe* oranges are the biggeſt and moſt juicy, but ſomewhat inclining to a ſour taſte; among the ordinary ones, ſome are exceeding ſweet, others quite crab-like. The *China* oranges have a pleaſant taſte, betwixt ſweet and ſour, being prefer'd here before the reſt, having a very thin rind: They are preſerved with ſugar, like the *Portugueſe* figs, and thus tranſported all over the *Indies*.

Wild Jamboes. Tho' this fruit called the wild *Jamboe* by our people, and *Jamboe* by the *Malayans* and *Javaneſe*, has not the leaſt reſemblance to the *Jamboe* we have given a deſcription of before, in outward appearance, becauſe that grows upon high trees, with a moſt delightful bloſſom; whereas this grows upon a low tree not unlike our mulberries, without any bloſſom, but is produced out of certain green buds, not unlike the figs; yet are they the ſame in taſte, and divers other qualities. Some of them are extremely well taſted, and quench the thirſt. Some are dark red, others white, mix'd with red, and that on the ſame tree, where they grow in cluſters in ſuch prodigious quantities, that they cover the very leaves and twigs, as if they had been ſpread over with a ſcarlet cloth. They are of the bigneſs of a ſugar-pear. In *Amboyna* they grow in ſuch plenty, that you may ſee the ground under the trees covered with them, every one being free to gather them; one reaſon whereof is, that they being uſed there as we do our acorns, for the fattening of hogs, which the *Moors* and *Mahometans* abominate, they are not much regarded. 1662.

Tobacco. The weed call'd *Tobako* by the *Malayans* and *Javaneſe*, after the *Portugueſe*, grows in all parts of the *Indies*; the *Chineſe* call it *Hun*. Tobacco being frequently uſed by the inhabitants, is conſequently in great requeſt, and carefully look'd after: that of *Ternate* being eſteem'd the beſt, is moſt generally made uſe of at *Batavia*. They have a way of tying ſeveral leaves, weighing about two pounds together, with ſmall twiſted canes, each parcel of the beſt being commonly ſold for ſix-pence; but you may buy alſo very good tobacco at *Batavia*, for two pence. In *Amboyna* each family commonly plants as much tobacco in their garden as they have occaſion for, not troubling themſelves with any other plantations. About *Batavia* the plantations of tobacco are chiefly managed by the *Chineſe* and *Javaneſe*, and this weed grows here and thrives extremely well, provided it be planted in a rich ſoil, when it will grow up to the heighth of eight foot, with leaves of 18 inches long and eight broad. The *Indians* don't take tobacco through pipes, but have a way of rowling one or more leaves (according as they are big) together, and lighting the ſame at one end, ſuck in the ſmoke as we do with our pipes. The women commonly take of the worſt ſort, and rowl up their leaves in a piece of dry'd *Pyſang*.

Fula Mogori. Among all the flowers of the *Indies*, that call'd *Fula Mogori* or *Mugri*, i. e. *the Flower Mogori*, by the *Portugueſe*, *Kombans Malati* by the *Javaneſe*, and *Badihoa* by the *Chineſe*, is more eſteemed by the inhabitants, which they plant with ſingular care upon long and well dunged beds, with little walks betwixt them: The ſtalk on which this flower grows, ſeldom exceeds two foot in heighth, and grows like briars: The leaves are ſmooth like the quince-pear tree leaves, the flowers exceeding white, conſiſting of four leaves, which ſeldom open, and imitate in their odoriferous ſcent our white-lillies, but are no bigger than the bloſſom of an apple-tree. The *Javaneſe* of both ſexes wear theſe flowers upon ſtrings on their

Betwixt pag. 304. 305.

A Sea Hogg

Amboina Fish

Stone Bream

The Indian Herring

The Bald peat

The Dung Fish

1662. their feſtival days. I remember that at a certain turnament on horſeback at *Japara*, I ſaw the *Javaneſe* thus adorn'd with theſe flowers, ſome of which had theſe ſtrings tied ſeveral times round above their ears, with the two ends hanging down before upon their breaſts. They alſo diſtil a water out of theſe flowers, which they eſteem a great cordial in fainting-fits eſpecially, much beyond our roſe-water, it being reckoned equal with orange-flower water. They preſcribe it in burning-fevers, and head-achs, proceeding from a hot cauſe. The *Javaneſe* alſo waſh their faces with this water, to make them ſmooth. The leaves bruiſed are a good remedy againſt the rheum or defluxions of the eyes: Theſe flowers grow in vaſt plenty all the year round, and are ſold in the ſtreets by the ſlaves.

The tree called the melancholy-tree, has got its denomination from its opening its flowers not till after ſun-ſet, which continues no longer than the night time. Hence the *Portugueſe* have given it the name of *Arvore da Noyte*, i. e. *the Night-tree*; at *Goa* they call it *Pareavtako*, at *Malacca Singadi*, in the kingdom of *Dekan Pul*, the *Arabians Guart*, the *Perſians* and *Turks Gul*, and the *Malabars Mogli*, i. e. *trees*, for its excellency's ſake; for which reaſon the ſame *Malabars* call the water diſtill'd from the flowers *Mogli-water:* There is another kind of this tree, which begins to bloſſom in the morning, and is bereaved of its leaves by night: Theſe trees grow for the moſt part about *Cochin* and *Malacca*.

Arvore da Noyte *or the melancholy-tree.*

Boenga Mera. The plant called *Boenga Mera* by the *Malayans*, *Kombang Merak* by the *Javaneſe*, and *Konkuſiou* by the *Chineſe*, has very fine green leaves, growing on ſmall ſtalks, cloſe together. The flowers, which are not unlike our gilliflowers, are high red, but yellowiſh at the extremities; they no ſooner open, but drop of, leaving ſmall huſks behind them, which contain a kind of peaſe, but are not eatable.

Katſian. Among ſeveral other ſorts of beans which grow and are eaten at *Batavia*, thoſe called *Katſian Goedi* by the *Malayans*, and *Katſian* only by the *Javaneſe*, but by the *Chineſe Lak Goetuin*, exceed the reſt. They grow in the fields all about *Batavia*, eſpecially in thoſe belonging to the *Chineſe:* The ſtalks and huſks of theſe beans are pale green, and ſomewhat woolly, but the leaves are ſmooth, and reſemble thoſe of our *French* beans, being interſperſed with many veins. The bloſſoms are white, and ſprout forth out of green knobs or buds. Theſe beans grow almoſt all the year round, and conſequently are no ſmall advantage to the inhabitants of *Batavia*, affording very good food to the labouring men; as likewiſe for our ſhips, becauſe they will keep a great while at ſea. 1662.

The *Turkey* wheat, called *Maiz* by a general name among the *Indians*, and *Jangon* by the *Malayans*, *Javaneſe* and *Chineſe*, grows in many places in the *Indies*, and in good plenty about *Batavia*; for they take the corn freſh out of the ears, and put it into the ground, which produces freſh corn in three months time. It is boiled and roaſted with the chaff, and look'd upon as a great dainty; ſome of this corn is white, ſome red. The *Indies* produce alſo rice, ginger, cotton, and ſugar in many places, figs, quince-pears, apples, lemons, beſides many other fruits. Turkey *wheat or* Maiz.

Thus much concerning the trees, fruits and plants of the *Indies*, and of *Java* and *Batavia* in particular; we will now proceed to give ſome account of the living creatures of the *Indies*, and begin with the fiſhes.

The ſea-porpoiſe or hog-fiſh is about 15 or 16 inches long, and and about ſeven in breadth. It has a very thick ſkin, and ſuch cloſe and hard ſcales, that ſcarce any inſtrument will pierce them, but when boil'd the ſcales come off with eaſe, and the ſkin is very ſoft. Their fleſh is very white reſembling the breaſt of a boiled capon; the mouth is but ſmall in proportion of the reſt of the body, but is armed with two rows of white gliſtering teeth, one above, the other below. Upon the back, which is brown, you ſee a ſharp fin of half a finger's length, which the fiſh can erect at pleaſure, and ſuch another is below near the navel; the other fins are not ſo ſtrong, of a pale blue colour. The belly is white, and gliſtering like ſilver, but the ſides are mix'd with yellow, which by degrees, towards the back, turns into an aſh colour. It has large brown ſhining eyes, and when boil'd is of a very pleaſant taſte. *The ſea-porpoiſe or hog-fiſh, ſea-hog.*

The *Amboyneſe* fiſh has got its name becauſe it is found chiefly in the rivers of *Amboyna*, but being very ſcarce, and of a very good taſte, is look'd upon as a dainty here. It is about a ſpan in length, ſomething like our perch both in ſhape and taſte. Its colour is inclining to brown, with blue ſtreaks under the head, the fins below the mouth are likewiſe blue, but thoſe on the ſides are green and ſpeckled. It is both a very wholeſome and toothſome fiſh, eſpecially with good ſauce. Amboyneſe *fiſh.*

The ſtone-bream is a moſt excellent fiſh, ſome of which are four foot long; they reſemble our breams, (which has begot them their name) but are much big- *The ſtone-bream.*

1662. ger. Their eyes are very large, with a large red mouth, as are alſo the fins and extremity of the tail. They are catched at ſea with a hook, being not eaſily to be taken with the net, and are eaten either broil'd or boil'd. There is another kind, but not ſo good as the former, the fleſh of which ſhrinks when they are cut, from whence ſome call them ſhrinkers.

The baldpate. The fiſh called baldpate has got its name from its head and neck, being without ſcales, whereas the reſt of the body is covered with them. It is of a greyiſh colour, its mouth, which is very wide, being ſpotted with red. The eyes are large, yellow and ſtarting out of the head: It is one of the beſt ſorts of fiſh that can be eaten, of a very agreeable taſte: It is taken both in the ſea and rivers.

Among the great variety of fiſh found in the *Indies*, moſt of which turn immediately after they are catch'd; there are however a few that will take ſalt like our herrings; ſuch is the ſea-bleak, a fiſh much of the bigneſs of a herring, but not ſo long and ſomething broader: It is green on the back, but white on the belly, with a forked tail: The head is of a very odd ſhape, with a wide mouth and large eyes. They are catch'd in prodigious quantities, becauſe they ſwim in vaſt ſhoals like the herrings, eſpecially on the coaſt of *Malabar*, where they dung their rice-fields with them. They are of a tolerable good taſte, but not ſo good as our herrings.

The ſea-bleak.

The thurd fiſh. This fiſh is called thurd fiſh, becauſe it delights in naſty places, tho' otherwiſe it is of no ill taſte, but is not regarded. It is very flat, about a ſpan in length, and near of the ſame breadth. The belly is blue, and the body is full of brown ſpots.

The yellow-tail. The fiſh called yellow-tail is in ſhape and bigneſs like a bream, with very ſharp prominent teeth in the fore part of the mouth. The back all along to the tail is inclining to a yellow, and the tail very yellow, whence it has got its name. The belly is blue, inclining to a brown towards the forepart. It has red fins, and is catch'd with hooks at ſea near the rocks: It is both a wholſome and toothſome fiſh.

The Kaelt *fiſh.* The *Kaelt* fiſh, as our people call it, is a kind of pike with a large piked mouth full of teeth, and large bright eyes. The belly and tail is of a purple colour, but the back brown: It is very thick and plump, about a foot and a half long, ſwims very ſwiftly, and of a good taſte, but ſomewhat hard.

Ravens fiſh. The raven fiſh, has got its name from its mouth, like a bill under the head. It is about a ſpan in length, red on the back and tail, but inclining to yellow on the belly, and has two yellow ſtreaks on each ſide, which vaniſh by degrees. It is a very firm fiſh, and very wholeſome to eat, and is taken in ſalt waters. 1662.

The king's fiſh. The king's-fiſh has obtain'd his title from its excellent taſte, being one of the beſt and moſt wholeſome fiſhes of the *Indies*. Some are five foot long, and have long forked tails. The back and ſides are full of brown ſpots, but the belly is white. They can open their mouths very wide, and are very greedy after carrion.

Eels. The rivers and ſtanding pools afford alſo abundance of eels; they are generally black on the back, which turns pale towards the belly, and are full of blackiſh ſpots. It is the general opinion here, that they are a kind of water-ſerpents. There is another ſort of a ruddy colour with yellow ſtreaks, having a ſharp head with very ſmall eyes; ſome of them are a foot and a half long. They are eaten by none but the natives.

The ſea-eel. There is another kind of ſea-eels, or rather water-ſerpents in the *Indies*, of about three foot long, of a brown colour, chequered with black ſpots like the ſkin of a ſerpent. The forepart of the body is ſlender, but is as thick again towards the tail. It has a long head and mouth with ſharp teeth, but ſo ſmall as ſcarce to be diſcerned. It delights in rocky places, and ſerves the natives for a dainty. This fiſh has one peculiar quality, *viz.* That thoſe who kill or exenterate it, are commonly ſeized with a trembling, and ſometimes with fainting, which however continues not long, which ſeems to intimate that this creature contains ſomething of poiſon, which exerts its vigour at the time of its expiration.

The ſea-cock. The ſea-cock is a fiſh of a very odd ſhape, more like a ſea-monſter than a fiſh. Some are about two foot long, very broad and thick; a great part whereof is nothing but head. On the back it has two long fins, but one longer than the other, and below three other very long fins; a forked tail of a brown colour, but is yellow on the belly. The ſkin is gliſtering like ſilver, and the fins on both ſides are red: It is catch'd in ſalt-water.

The white fiſh. The white-fiſh has a thick ſhort head, a brown back, and blue belly inclining to yellow; it is of a tolerable good taſte, and catch'd in prodigious quantities in the ſea near the ſhoar with nets, but is generally not much regarded.

The grunting fiſh. The grunting fiſh has got its name from a certain grumbing noiſe it makes when it is taken; croſs the back run along both ſides two brown and one yellow ſtreak; it is very plump, with little ſcales, not a-

Bermixt pag. 300 &c.

Yallow Tail

The Grunter

Ravens beak

The Sea Cock

A White Fish

The Indian pine

A Sea Eal

The Kings Fish

Betwixt pag. 306.307.

The Sea Hogg

A Sea Lowce

The Great Cock

A Lamprey

An Ealponte

Pen Fish

Elephants Nose

James Everſs

Crooked back

1662. bove a ſpan in length; the head not unlike a pope. It is of an agreeable taſte, and eaten like as we do our popes or ſmall perches.

The ſea-hog. The ſea-hog or ſea-porpoiſe called *Pixoporkas*, in the ſame ſenſe by the *Portugueſe*, is of a different kind from the former, this being not above a ſpan in length, inclining to a green with blackiſh ſcales, the fins and tail of the ſame colour, but the eyes are yellow: It is a freſh-water fiſh, very plump and fat and well taſted.

Another kind of grunting fiſh. There is alſo another kind of grunting-fiſh, ſo call'd for the ſame reaſon with the former; it is almoſt round, with a ſmooth ſkin, but full of knobs and ſpots; it is of a browniſh colour ſtreaked with black. The head is very thick, ſhort, and full of knobs, with a large mouth and red eyes. The tail is alſo very round and ſhort; on each ſide of the body is a red fin, and the fiſh is of a tolerable good taſte.

The ſea-louſe. The ſea-louſe is a ſtrange kind of ſhell-fiſh, of above a foot in length. It appears like a round lump, with a large tail, with many legs on both ſides. Its colour is gray inclining to green. It is catched near *Batavia*, but is ſeldom eaten, unleſs it be by the *Javaneſe* and *Chineſe*.

The lamprey. The *Lamprey* is a kind of an eelpoute, above a foot long, with a ſmooth ſkin, and fat like an eel, but of a different ſhape. It is brown on the belly, with yellow ſpots on the back, and has purple coloured fins under the belly. The head is not unlike that of a ſnail, with horns, and its fins are venomous. It is catch'd in ponds and pools, and eats beſt ſtew'd.

Kabos. *Kabos* is a kind of an eelpoute, but bigger than the laſt; theſe being above two foot long and very fat. The ſkin is likewiſe ſmooth, without ſcales, of a browniſh colour, but the belly is ſomewhat paler, with black ſpots. The head is thick and ſhort, with the eyes in the forehead; they are well taſted.

The pen fiſh. The pen fiſh is alſo a kind of eelpoute, with a ſmooth ſkin without ſcales; of the length of a foot, the back brown, and the belly of a pale blue colour. The fins are brown, very ſharp and venomous, ſo that if the leaſt part of it remains in a wound, it will ſcarce heal; the fiſh is of a good taſte, but unwholeſome if eaten in any quantity. It is likewiſe a freſh-water fiſh, and taken in pools and ponds.

The elephant's-noſe. The fiſh called the elephant's-noſe is of an odd ſhape, its undermoſt jaw being as ſharp as a pin. The body is prettily ſpotted, with a broad ſtreak running croſs the middle. It is a very thick fiſh, which is taken in the ſea, and in bigneſs and taſte is not unlike our large ſmelts.

The fiſh called *Jacob Evertſon*, is above ten foot long, weighing ſometimes 400 pound. It is blue on the belly, and brown on the body, with many dark red ſpots near the head and tail. It has a large white mouth, with a ſhort brown tail, and many fins turning up towards the back. 1662. Jacob Evertſon.

The crooked-back. The fiſh crooked-back has got its name from its ſhape: It has a ſmooth ſkin without ſcales, a white belly, and yellow tail and fins. It is in great requeſt all over the *Indies*, by reaſon of its agreeable taſte; ſome are four foot long.

The horn fiſh. The horn fiſh is about a ſpan in length or ſomething more, with a large head, but a little mouth; half of the body being taken up with the head. The ſkin is very bright, the back bluiſh, the belly white, but the fins and tail yellow. The body repreſents it ſelf in various colours, according to its ſeveral turnings.

Kneſſen. The fiſh called *Kneſſen*, is a baſtard carp, about a ſpan long, and pretty broad with thick ſcales. It is a well taſted freſh-water fiſh.

The flounder. Their flounders are in ſhape and bigneſs like ours, except that they have teeth, wherewith they take hold of all they light on; they alſo are as well taſted as the *Dutch* flounders; they have here alſo turbuts and ſoals, little different from ours both in ſhape and taſte.

The Klip *fiſh.* The *Klip* fiſh is a kind of fiſh with a ſmooth ſkin without ſcales, flat, broad, and of the bigneſs of our plaiſe: It is brown on the back, ſpotted with white, but very white towards the belly, with many ſtreaks of various colours. The mouth and eyes are like thoſe of the bream, and it is a well taſted fiſh.

The cod fiſh. The cod fiſh here is of the ſame ſize and colour with ours, except that it has very ſharp fins on the back and the under part of the mouth jets out beyond the uppermoſt.

The horn fiſh. The horn fiſh has got its name from the horn upon his head, and two more underneath, which being very brittle are alſo very poiſonous, and if part thereof remain in a wound, will ſcarce admit of a cure; and if you happen only to be wounded by it, it will exulcerate immediately.

The flat fiſh. The flat fiſh is about a foot long, with a ſmooth ſkin without ſcales, and a white mouth: It gliſters all over like ſilver; on the back it has a ſmall fin, and one more on each ſide. Underneath the belly, it has only one fin which is inſtead of the tail. It is a freſh-water fiſh, of a very good taſte, but full of ſmall bones, and therefore not much regarded.

1662. The red-fiſh is a kind of a bream, of a dark red colour, as are likewiſe the fins; however the belly is blue, and has two yellow fins; it is very thick of body, and the head is ſharp at the end, with a large mouth and yellow eyes, ſome are four foot long.

The red fiſh.

The bitter fiſh. The bitter fiſh is of the ſhape and bigneſs of a carp, with large ſcales and red fins, and two black ſtreaks round the tail. It is a fine well taſted fiſh, but being full of ſmall bones, is not much in requeſt.

The parrot fiſh. The parrot fiſh has got its name from its mouth, which turns like the bill of a parrot. It is a foot long, and ſometimes bigger. It is of a greeniſh colour, marbled or checquered towards the head with yellow. Both the fins and eyes are of a blue colour; the laſt very large and ſprightly, and ſurrounded with a yellow circle. It has very large ſcales, and two rows of very hard teeth, wherewith they often bite off the hooks. This fiſh is very greedy after muſcles and oyſters, which it cracks to pieces to come at the fiſh. It is a very firm fiſh, and of a good taſte.

Short noſe. The ſhort noſe is a fiſh like our haddock, having a round body; it is yellow on the belly, and the fins are of the ſame colour. The mouth is juſt under the noſe, which is very ſhort; it is a well taſted fiſh.

The bone fiſh. The bone fiſh is of the bigneſs and ſhape of our carps, but flatter, and has another head: It has large ſcales, and a forked tail; its taſte is very good, but being full of ſmall bones, is not much regarded.

The ſand ſmelt. The ſand ſmelt reſembles in colour and bigneſs a ſmall whiting, and is round of body, and inclining to a yellow on the belly: It is a ſea fiſh, and of an excellent taſte.

The pock fiſh. The pock fiſh is generally above a foot long, with a ſmooth ſkin, without ſcales; but being very bright, it varies in colour according to the various poſition of its body, appearing ſometimes blue, then green, and ſoon after of a purple, or ſome other colour. It is a long fiſh, but not broad, not unlike a great ſmelt, with a forked tail, and teeth in its mouth. Tho' it is a well taſted fiſh, yet being full of ſmall bones, is not eaten, except by the natives.

The Chineſe *fiſh.* The *Chineſe* fiſh is round, and about a ſpan long; the head is like an eel, with ſmall eyes, and a long tail. It is green on the back, but white on the belly. It is a freſh water fiſh, and well taſted, but thoſe catch'd in ponds are accounted unwholeſome.

The pit fiſh. The pit fiſh is no bigger than a large ſmelt, with a round body, full of green and yellow ſpots, and without ſcales. The eyes, which they can draw in or out, are ſtarting out of the head. On the back they have ſharp pointed fins; they delight in muddy places, notwithſtanding which they are well taſted; they are very nimble, and will leap a great way. 1662.

The mullet. The mullet is a very fine fiſh, which being catch'd in particular places only, is dry'd in the ſun, and tranſported all over the *Indies*. It is white of colour, chequered with blue and purple; it ſwims with great ſwiftneſs, and is ſo nimble, that it will not only leap over the net, but even over the fiſher-boat. Theſe fiſhes are of a dainty taſte whilſt in ſeaſon, but at certain times they are peſtered with worms, at which time they are neither toothſome nor wholeſome.

The ſea ſnipe. Nothing more common than to give names to fiſhes in foreign countries from what they moſt reſemble; whence it is, that the ſea ſnipe has got its name from tis mouth, which is like the bill of a ſnipe. Some of them are five foot long, with a head like that of a hog, and large bright eyes: On the back are large and ſharp fins, reaching from the head to the tail, and full of ſpots.

The korets. Some korets are ſix or ſeven foot long, have large yellowiſh eyes, and a forked yellow and greyiſh tail, with yellow fins; under the belly, which is blue, inclining to green, and under the tail, are divers fins. They are very bright, and ſhine like ſilver, when they are catch'd at ſea with hooks: They are very well taſted and not unwholeſome, being ſometimes a great refreſhment to thoſe ſhips that come to theſe parts.

The ſea devil. This kind of fiſh has deſervedly got the name of ſea devil, by reaſon of its ugly ſhape; having the eyes on one ſide, and the mouth in the concavity below the head. Its tail is like that of a roach, with two teats on each ſide, pointed towards the end. The ſkin on the head is full of brown ſpots; ſome are near ſeven or eight foot long, but afford very courſe food.

The ſtip fiſh. The ſtip fiſh has a ſkin full of ſpots, is well taſted, and taken generally with hooks near the iſle of St. *Vincent*.

The ſea pidgeon. The ſea pidgeon has got its name from the reſemblance of its head to that of a pidgeon; and of its breaſts protuberating like thoſe creatures. This fiſh is without ſcales, but not without divers ſpots. It is but rarely catch'd, and none of the beſt taſted.

The ſea hedge-hog. The ſea hedge-hog is juſtly ſo called from its ſharp fins about the head and mouth, which is round, and has very large eyes. They can't ſwim very ſwiftly, and conſequently would ſoon fall a prey to other fiſh, were it not that nature has arm'd them with theſe pointed fins againſt any attempt.

Betwixt pag. 308. 309.

Sea snipe

The Sea Corette

Stip Fish

The Sea Devil

The Sea Eagle

The Sucker

The Sea Hedge hogg

The Sucker

The Sea Pigeon

The Schark

A Sea Catt

The Soulders Fish

1662. The ſuckers are repreſented at length in the cut, tho' there are ſome much bigger. They are blue, with bright yellow eyes, a ſmooth ſkin without ſcales: They have no teeth, but broad lips, wherewith they will ſuck, and adhere ſo cloſe to other fiſh, that they will rather be kill'd than let go their hold. They will ſtick ſo cloſe to the ſhark, that they are often catch'd with them. They are eaten ſometimes for want of better food, but are but of an indifferent taſte.

The ſuckers.

The ſhark. Some ſharks are eight, ten, or fourteen foot long: Their ſkin is rough and ſharp, and they have a double row of teeth, and ſome three or four rows, which are covered with the gums. Their eyes lie forward near the mouth. It is a very pernicious fiſh, which oftentimes bites off an arm or a leg of thoſe that divert themſelves with ſwimming. The ſharks bring forth their young ones alive, which follow the ſhe-ſhark wherever ſhe goes, and in bad weather creep into her belly, and come out again after the ſtorm is over. It is obſervable that certain fiſhes of a foot long always ſwim after the ſhark, which are plainly to be ſeen in ſtill weather.

The ſea cat. The ſea cat, (the draught whereof you ſee in the cut) is a very odd creature, both for its colour and ſhape. The eyes are exceeding large in proportion to the body, the back is of a purple colour, and the belly blue, with divers purple ſpots. The tail is in compariſon of the reſt of the body, vaſtly large, and pale red, wherewith it ſwims, it being deſtitute of fins. However, juſt on the front of the head, it has ſeven fins, which ſtand out ſtrait forward like thoſe of the ſhrimps. It affords very good food, eſpecially if dry'd in the ſun.

Souldier-fiſh. The klip-fiſh, or ſoldier-fiſh, is a kind of bream, but ſometimes grows not above to the length of a ſpan: It is flat and of a pale colour: On the back it has ſharp fins like a perch; a ſharp tail, and yellow eyes. It is one of the beſt fiſh in the *Indies*, of a very delicious taſte.

The ſea eagle. The ſea eagle is an odd kind of fiſh: It has a tail like a roach, with large fins like wings, a thick head, and taſtes like a roach.

The ſea cat. The ſea cat is a round fiſh of a ſpan in length, of a very odd ſhape; the hindermoſt part of the body being an oval lump, on which hangs the head. It has long and large eyes, a ſmooth ſkin, inclining to blue, but brown upon the belly. The entrails of this fiſh contain a certain gum, out of which the *Chineſe* make their ink. They dry this fiſh in the ſun, as the *Dutch* do the plaiſe; and they are in great requeſt among the *Indians*, tho' they are of no eaſy digeſtion.

1662. The leaping fiſh is ſo called, becauſe they leap and play continually upon the ſurface of the water. They are of the bigneſs of a herring, and are without fins on the back, from the head to the tail. They have a knotty head, and the body of a greyiſh colour, with black ſpots; but toward the belly they begin to be white. They look very fiercely before they begin to leap. They are ſea fiſhes, and of a very good taſte, eſpecially broiled.

The leaping fiſh.

Pampus. The fiſh *Pampus* is above a foot long, and about a ſpan in breadth; for the reſt in colour and ſhape, not unlike our plaiſe, with a ſmooth ſkin: The eyes ſtand on both ſides, and the mouth ſtrait forward. It is a well taſted fiſh, eſpecially if dry'd and eaten as the *Dutch* do their plaiſe.

Peyxe Kok. *Peyxe Kok*, i. e. the *Fiſh Kok*, ſo called by the *Portugueſe*, becauſe when taken it makes a noiſe or ſound like *Kok*. It is taken near the iſle of *St. Vincent*, and is but an indifferent fiſh.

The blower. The blowers are huge fiſhes which appear now and then in the open ſea. They have got this name from their drawing in of the water, and ſpouting it out again with great force into the air.

The white fiſh. The white fiſh is about the bigneſs of a whiting, with a round hanging belly, a ſtrait back, and turn'd up mouth: Its tail is forked, it has one large fin upon the back, and abundance of ſmall ones betwixt the belly and the tail. It is full of ſtreaks all over the body, and on the mouth it has two long teats: It is of a very good taſte.

Five-finger-fiſh. The five-finger-fiſh has got its name from five black ſpots on each ſide, reſembling the prints of fingers. Its length is about a foot and a half, with a ſmall head, large mouth, and brown pointed fins towards the tail. It is of a ſhining blue colour mix'd with purple, without ſcales. It is of a pretty good taſte, and taken in the ſea all over the *Indies*.

Karappa, or round fiſh. Karappa, or round-fiſh, is not unlike a whiting, of a very good taſte: It has but a ſmall head and tail, but a pretty bulky belly. Below it has ſome ſome fins not unlike thoſe of an eel.

Flying-fiſh. Some of the flying-fiſh are near as big as corette, of a blueiſh colour on the back, but inclining to a brown towards the tail. They have large eyes, and large yellowiſh fins, and reſemble in ſhape our ſmelts: They are of an agreeable taſte, but not eaſy to be catch'd, except when they fly againſt the ſails, which they frequently do, and ſo fall upon the ſhips deck.

The fork-tail. The fork-tail is a long and round fiſh, with a very long forked tail, whence it has got its name. Its head is not unlike

1662. that of a herring, with a long teat on the top of it, and two more below near the mouth, like thoſe of the ſhrimps, but larger; they keep them cloſe to the body when they are ſwimming. They are of the bigneſs of a mackrel, but of no extraordinary good taſte.

Soals. Some ſoals here are a foot long, of the ſame colour as ours, and as well-taſted; but their heads are ſtrangely ſhaped, the mouth turning quite to one ſide, as well as their eyes.

Bonites. The bonites are not unlike the corettes, but with leſſer fins and blue ſtreaks, which vaniſh by degrees towards the tail. The back is of a dark brown, and the belly white, the eyes blue, ſurrounded with a yellow circle. Some are a foot and a half long, and very bright when firſt taken, which is done without much difficulty, becauſe they follow the ſhips, and are very greedy after a bait. They eat beſt if they are ſalted a little before they are broil'd.

The ſword-fiſh. The ſword-fiſh has a very odd head, not unlike that of an owl, with a very wide mouth: The ſkin is hard, the back grey, the belly white without any ſcales. On each ſide of the ſword, which is above five foot long, are 27 teeth: Their whole length, including the ſword, is generally 25 foot long, and ſo thick, that ſcarce two men can graſp them. Near the eyes they have two noſtrils, through which they draw the water in and out.

Siap Siap. The fiſh called *Siap Siap* by the *Javaneſe*, is a river fiſh in great requeſt among the *Javaneſe*, and is taken in conſiderable quantity near *Batavia*.

The pyed-fiſh. The pyed-fiſh has got its name from its colour; its tail and fins being brown, ſpotted with pale blue ſpots: It is about a foot long, and pretty thick, without ſcales. The eyes, which are yellow, are ſurrounded by a blue circle; underneath the throat hangs a crop extending it ſelf to the tail: It has a little mouth, and on each ſide a yellow fin. It is in great eſteem among the inhabitants, and well taſted, but contains a certain venomous matter, which muſt be carefully taken out when it is gutted.

Five-eyes. The five-eyes have got their name from five black eyes, encloſed in yellow circles, which are in the fins near the tail. They are ſmooth and yellow without ſcales, pretty thick with a ſmall head and ſharp noſe, which turns over the mouth, near which they have two red fins; they are catch'd in the rivers and are well-taſted.

Sea-bats. The ſea-bat has got its name from its reſemblance to a bat: It has two yellowiſh wings ſtreak'd with three blue ſtreaks; a long tail, thick head and large mouth. By its taſte it ſeems to be a kind of thornback.

The gudgeons of *Java* are of the length of a finger, but ſcarce an inch thick. They are ſpeckled with pale blue, and other colours without ſcales; they have ſmall forked tails, are catch'd in the rivers and are exceeding well taſted. There is another kind of them taken in the ſea, in ſuch prodigious quantities, that they ſell a whole canoe full for eight or ten pence, and fatten their ducks and geeſe with them. 1662. *The gudgeon.*

Carps. The *Indian* carps are taken in the rivers, being not in the leaſt different from ours either in ſhape or taſte.

The ſea-monſter The ſea-monſter is an odd kind of fiſh, having a knobby ſtar of eight tacks upon the head, and upon that a certain excreſcence reſembling a biſhop's mitre: From the ſides of the head iſſue two fins of the ſame length with the body of the monſter. It has a very dreadful wide mouth, and very broad tail, wherewith it guides it ſelf in ſwimming.

Shrimps and creafiſhes. They have divers ſorts of ſhrimps and creafiſhes in the *Indies*; and of the latter ſort, a certain kind which have teeth like a ſaw on the back; ſome of them are of that bigneſs as to weigh ſix pounds, of a delicious taſte, and very wholſome, being accounted good for ſuch as are troubled with the aſthma, or ſpit-blood. The ſea-ſhrimps are a ſalt-water fiſh, the biggeſt of which are near a ſpan in length, and have ſhells like ours, of a ſallow colour with a red fork'd tail. Out of the head come forth divers fins, on which hang two ſmall thin horns. They are very well taſted, and five or ſix are ſufficient for one man's meal. The river-ſhrimps are about the bigneſs of our ſea-ſhrimps, of a blue colour, with a ſmall head and thick body. Out of the head come two long fins, as fine as a thread. Their ſhell is not ſo hard as the former, neither are they ſo well-taſted. The rivers here afford alſo abundance of creafiſhes, which are taken in holes among the oyſters. They are better taſted than our lobſters.

The ſea-ſtar. The ſea-ſtar is an odd ſhaped fiſh with five branches or tacks like a ſtar: They are of a pale red colour, an inch thick, covered with a knobby ſkin, underneath which are many ſmall bones: They have a hole in the middle, through which they draw their ſuſtenance: They are never to be ſeen at ſea, except in calm weather, and are taken and kept rather for curioſity's ſake than any other uſe.

Sea-crabs or lobſters. The ſea-crabs are of about the bigneſs of a ſpan, of a moſt curious colour, the ſhell being ſpecked with yellow ſpots; beſides which they have three purple ſpots encloſed within white rings. Their claws are yellowiſh towards the body, afterwards white,

The Five Eyes

Betwixt pag 310 311

The Sea Shrimp

Klip Gerneel

A Sea Batt

Land Crabb

Horn Fish

The Sea Catt.

The Pide Fish

Pitt Fish

The Soft Fish

River Shrimp

The Sea Crabb

1662. white, and at the extremities of a high purple colour; their eyes are fixt upon certain ſmall tacks an inch breadth without the head. There is alſo a kind of blue-crabs, ſome of which are a foot and a half long: They are of a purple colour ſpotted with white; the claws are blue, and of a purple colour towards the body; their eyes are fixt upon ſmall tacks like the former, and ſtand a fingers length without the head. They are a ſalt-water fiſh, and very well-taſted.

Lobſters. There is another kind of lobſters not quite ſo big as the former, which run very ſwiftly: Their eyes ſtand likewiſe about two inches breadth without the head, eſpecially whilſt they are running, but otherwiſe can draw them back, and lay them cloſe under two fins. Their bodies are marbled with divers colours, the claws of a purple colour; behind they have two ſmall round and blue ſhells edged with yellow. Some are of a conſiderable bigneſs, and of a very good taſte. There is another ſort of ſea-crabs, of the ſame bigneſs as the blue-lobſters, but eaſily to be diſtinguiſhed from them by their colour, which is inclining to green, with red claws, and by their taſte, which is exceeding delicious, theſe being the beſt ſort throughout the *Indies*. Their eyes ſtand likewiſe an inch's breadth without the head. Some ſea-crabs here are of a prodigious bigneſs, and are, as well as all other ſhell-fiſh, beſt in the encreaſe of the moon. Some crabs here caſt their ſhells, and during a certain ſeaſon of the year abide under ground till they grow again. The *Indian* oyſters are prefer'd before thoſe of *Europe*.

Muſcles and oyſters. The muſcles of the *Indies* are like ours, but ſomewhat bigger; the ſhell is brown both in and outſide. There is another ſort of muſcles called tail muſcles by our people; theſe are of a greeniſh colour; they have on that end where they open, two ſharp horns, and on the other end, a pale yellow tail, wherewith they can faſten themſelves in the mud. They are of the ſame taſte, and uſed like ours, as well as thoſe we commonly call St. *James*'s muſcles. Of oyſters they have alſo ſeveral ſorts, the biggeſt adhere to the rocks, ſome to the roots and tacks of the trees; they are all of a very good taſte; and are either ſtew'd with ſpices, or eaten raw with lemon-juice and pepper.

Purple-ſnails. Abundance of purple-ſnails are found in the iſlands over againſt *Batavia*: The ſcallop or ſhell is of a yellow colour, of the bigneſs of a good citron, with curious windings at one end. Within this ſhell is the *ſnail*, which is round, plump and yellow, ſtreak'd with black. They are boil'd and eaten by the *Chineſe*, who have a way of poliſhing the ſhells, and pick out of the middle of the ſnail a certain purple colour'd ſubſtance, which they uſe in colouring and making of red ink. There is alſo another kind with green ſhells, ſtreak'd with black, white within, and of the bigneſs of a child's head: The ſnail is of the ſame colour, and is not ill taſted. Another ſort has a ſhell pale-red, marbled with white, and curiouſly twiſted, of the bigneſs of an orange: The ſnail is of the ſame colour, and is eaten as we do our perewinkles, but is of a hard digeſtion. 1662.

Quallen. The *Quallen* are a certain product of the ſea, of a mucilaginous ſubſtance, without head or tail, or entrails; they commonly are of the bigneſs of a trencher, and ſometimes leſs. They have purple edges all round them, wherewith they ſwim. In the midſt is a certain white ſpot, (which is ſometimes blueiſh) wherein perhaps their victuals are contained. If they are forced aſhore, they are diſſolved. The *Chineſe* have a way of diſtilling a certain *Arack* or ſtrong-water out of them, which is exceſſive hot, ſharp and unwholeſome, cauſing exulcerations in the body. For if this ſubſtance happen to adhere to the bare ſkin of a man in ſwimming or otherwiſe, it burns with violence, and raiſes bliſters immediately.

The Dorades. The *Dorades*, by ſome called ſea-breams, are a kind of dolphins. They have long and ſharp fins on the back, and a very long tail; underneath the belly they have three fins, the laſt of which extends as far as the tail. Some are 4 or 5 foot long, and rather broad than thick. They eat tolerably well, if ſalted before they are dreſs'd, but are of a hard digeſtion: They are ſometimes taken with the hook, being not eaſily catched with the harpiron, by reaſon of their nimbleneſs, which is ſuch, that they will leap ſometimes five or ſix foot high above the water, after the flying-fiſh.

Scates or thornbacks. The *Indies* afford exceſſive large thornbacks, ſome of which are as big in circumference as a moderate table, and will ſuffice to dine forty people. They have vaſt long tails, but are of the ſame colour with ours, and of the ſame taſte, but are hard of digeſtion, but the young ones are much better. Their fins, which are very large, are of a purple colour. All fiſh with ſcales caſt their ſpawn; but thoſe without ſcales bring forth their young ones alive.

Indian *and* Javaneſe *birds and four leg'd beaſts.*

The bird Emeu. In the iſles of *Sumatra*, *Banda*, and the other adjacent *Molucca* iſlands, is to be found

1662. found a certain bird, called *Emeu* or *Eme* by the inhabitants, and *Caſuaris* by the *Dutch*. He walks conſtantly with his head ſtraight upright, when he is above five foot high, and about three in length from the breaſt to the tail. The head is in proportion of the body, but ſmall, very ſmooth, and of a dark blue colour. Before, on the neck, hang two red teats or bags. The eyes are large and fierce, behind which are the ear-holes, and almoſt at the extremities of the bill two noſtrils; and from the midſt of the bill to the crown of the head, grows a hard yellow ſubſtance, like a cockle-ſhell, eſpecially in the males. They have very long and groſs legs, covered with a yellowiſh rind, their feet are thick, knobby, and without ſpurs, inſtead of which, they have on the forepart three long horny claws, in which they differ from the oſtriches, whoſe feet are cloven both before and behind. They are covered all over with feathers, or rather with plumes of a dark red mix'd with black. Thoſe upon the breaſt and thighs, grow two and two together, but thoſe on the tail are much longer and ſtronger. Underneath the feathers, which grow on both ſides, are hidden certain pens, which ſerve them in running, for theſe birds are ſcarce able to raiſe themſelves from the ground. They are exceeding greedy, devouring every thing 1662.



they meet with, even to iron and burning coals, all which they evacuate backwards without any alteration; nay, they ſometimes throw out what they have eat, not till a year after, without the leaſt ſign of any digeſtion: For the reſt they live upon herbage. Their ſtrength conſiſts in their legs and feet; and run ſo faſt that no man can overtake them, and when exaſperated, kick with their feet backwards and ſideways like a horſe. They lay greeniſh eggs upon the ground among the ſhrubs, ſcarce ſo big as our hen-eggs, ſpeckled with dark green ſpots; the yolks thereof are eaten by the inhabitants. They have neither tongue nor tail.

Flying-cat. Among the ſeveral ſorts of flitter-mice or bats, that which by ſome is called a flying-cat, may well challenge a place; its head, tail, nay the whole body and bulk reſembing to a cat. It differs from the bats in this, that whereas they hang on certain tacks, this hangs on its claws, and hides its ſelf within its wings: The hair brown red, except on the back, where it is black. Betwixt the fore and hindermoſt legs grows two ſkins, a little hairy on the outſide, which ſerves them for wings. There is alſo a ſort of flying-apes, theſe have very ſharp teeth and claws, and very lively eyes.

1662. *The hunter's bird.*

In ſome parts of the *Indies* you meet with a certain bird call'd the hunter's-bird. The breaſt and whole body is black, but the tail grayiſh; the head is dark yellow, but without feathers; below the neck hangs a bag, not unlike thoſe of our turkeys: The bill is diſtinguiſh'd by certain twiſted rings, by which they diſcern their age, every year producing one like our oxes horns. On the top of the bill grows a horny ſubſtance; they are look'd upon as a rarity, and ſold at a dear rate.

Dronte or Dodaers.

In the iſle of *Mauritius* you meet with a certain bird call'd *Dronte* by the inhabitants, and *Dodaers* by the *Dutch*. In bigneſs it is betwixt an oſtrich and a large turkey, and has alſo ſome reſemblance to them in his feathers and tail. His head is very large, not unlike that of a cuckow, but covered all over with a ſkin. The eyes are large and black, the neck crooked and very thick: The bill is very long, thick and pale blue, except towards the extremities, the uppermoſt whereof is blackiſh, and the undermoſt yellowiſh, but both ſharp and bent. He is very thick and round of body, covered with ſoft grey feathers, like thoſe of the oſtrich; the belly and hindermoſt part are ſo thick as to touch almoſt the ground, which is the reaſon he is eaſily catch'd. On both ſides he has certain pens inſtead of wings, of a pale yellow colour, and inſtead of the tail five curl'd plumes of the ſame colour: His legs are ſhort and thick, with four large claws. The meat, eſpecially that of the breaſt, is fat and toothſome enough, and three or four of theſe creatures afford a meal for 100 perſons. In his ſtomach is ſometimes found a certain porous hard ſtone. 1662.



Parraquets.

The parraquets are of a green colour, of the bigneſs of a ſterling; their bills are yellow, the neck red mix'd with green, and the wings yellow at the extremities: They are found in vaſt numbers in the woods, and are eaſily tamed and taught to ſpeak. There are divers ſorts of them of different colours.

The martins.

The martins here are as big as our magpies, of a black colour with a yellow bill, and a yellow tuft upon the head. The midſt of the wings is white, the feet yellow, with large crooked claws. The *Javaneſe* are great admirers of this bird, and teach him to whiſtle and ſpeak, which he does as diſtinctly as a man, but with ſomewhat a rough voice. There is another ſort of them not ſo big as theſe; they are found

1662. all over the *Indies*, and feed upon rice and other fruits of the earth.

Crows. The *Indian* crows are pale blue, in ſhape betwixt a heron and ſtork. The head and neck is ſomewhat of a darker colour, with a curl'd tail and ſharp bill. They live moſt in wilderneſſes, and fly (as they ſay) ſometimes as far as *Europe*, under a certain leader, who flies ſometimes before and ſometimes behind.

The bird Rubus. The bird *Rubus* is of the bigneſs of a ſtarling, with a blue bill and legs, the back and tail red, and white and black wings. The head is green, and in his tail he has two large feathers, like the *Paradiſe* bird.

Bats. In divers parts of the *Indies* are very large *bats*, exceeding in bigneſs our cats. In the iſle of *Java* are ſome of the ordinary ſort, no bigger than a pidgeon; they live in the woods, and are accounted a dainty by the *Javaneſe*. In the night-time they will get ſometimes into the chambers, if the windows be left open, and draw blood from ſuch as are aſleep there.

Gwira. There are two ſorts of the bird called *Gwira*, they are both white, mix'd with ſome brown feathers. One ſort has a red belly, and the other a blue tail, with one very long feather in it.

Poreo. The *Poero* is a long, but ſlender bird, of a ſpan in length, including the bill and tail. The bill is ſomewhat crooked, and the tail like that of the bird *Gwira*. His feathers are blueiſh, mixt with yellow, and his feet very ſmall. He feeds upon piſmires.

Cormorants. In *Java* you meet often with cormorants, not unlike our geeſe, except that they are much bigger; underneath the bill hangs a large bag, which they can extend and draw together at pleaſure, and in it keep ſuch fiſh as they have ſwallow'd. Their feet are like thoſe of the ſwan, and their bills are crooked towards the extremities. They are ſo greedy after prey, that they ruſh out from among the flags with ſuch violence, that they are eaſily taken by that means. They ſwallow oyſters with the ſhells, and keep them in their bags till they open, when they ſpew them out again and pick out the oyſter. They are frequently found in the iſle of *Din Ding*, and ſoon diſcovered by their noiſe.

Ducks. All over the *Indies* you meet with ducks in great numbers, reſembling ours both in bigneſs and taſte. They are generally dark yellow, with a black bill and legs, large bellies, and tufts on their heads. But whereas the *Weſt-India* ducks have hanging bellies, theſe carry them more upright. By reaſon of the exceſſive heat they are not eaſily brought to ſit upon their eggs, which are generally laid under hens, or fomented in horſedung or ovens. Their meat is very wholeſome, provided they are well fed. 1662.

Wide-bill. The wide-bill has got his name from his bill, which reaches up on both ſides to the eyes: He is ſcarce of the bigneſs of a pidgeon, of a pale black colour, with black wings, and underneath the eyes and bill white. They are brought to market in great quantities at *Batavia*, their meat being well taſted.

The ſtrand bird or ox-eye. The ſtrand bird is a kind of ſnipe of the bigneſs of our wood-cocks. Their feathers are green mixed with black, they are ſold in great numbers at *Batavia*, and in taſte are not unlike our wood-ſnipes.

Turtles. The *Indian* turtles are not altogether ſo big as ours, and of a yellowiſh colour mix'd with grey: They have a black feather in each wing, and the tail is black and white; under the neck they are ſomewhat brighter, and the breaſt almoſt red. They are taken in great quantities in the rice-fields, and are fat and well-taſted.

Geeſe. The *Indian* geeſe are much finer and larger than the *European* geeſe, reſembling rather our ſwans, their necks being exceſſive long, of a yellowiſh colour, but their bills black. Along the back, upon the wings and tail they have dark grey feathers mix'd with ſome light ones, but on the belly they are white. They have not ſo ſhrill a voice as our geeſe, but differ not in the leaſt from them either in ſhape or taſte, their feet being likewiſe red. They have both wild and tame ones.

Birds of prey. In divers places of the *Indies* are great quantities of birds of prey, as eagles, hawks, kites, and ſuch like, which do prodigious miſchief both among the wild and tame fowl, and are of ſuch ſtrength, that they carry ſometimes a young pig away and devour it in the woods or among the rocks. There is a certain bird of prey here, which you ſee moving in the air without moving its wings; and another called *Jin* by the *Chineſe*, exceeding all the reſt in nimbleneſs: It is greeniſh on the back, but white on the belly. The eyes are quick and red, and the bill yellow, bent like a hook at the end. Their feet are likewiſe yellow, arm'd with long and very ſharp claws.

Kokoy. The *Kokoy* is a kind of a heron, but much exceeding ours in beauty, being yellow before and green in the hindermoſt part. On the head he has a delicious plume, ſpreading all over the neck. The young ones eat tolerably well, but the old ones are tough and taſte much after fiſh.

Kolibry *Kolibry* is the leaſt of all the birds, being no bigger than a horſe-fly; it has a very ſharp bill, wherewith it ſucks its ſuſtenance out of the flowers, though ſome are

1662. of opinion it feeds upon the dew. It has all the colours of the rain-bow, and its wings are not unlike thoſe of the pidgeons or ducks: It builds a neſt to the ſouth under the branches of orange, limon, or cotton-trees, to defend itſelf againſt the injuries of the north winds: Its eggs are no bigger than peas. There is another which ſings exceeding fine, but is not ſo well colour'd; it weighs not above 24 grains, and is catch'd by throwing hot any thing elſe upon it.

Birds like quails or throſtles. In the woods of *Java* you ſee vaſt numbers of birds not unlike our quails or throſtles, but of the bigneſs of our wild pidgeons; their bills are however ſomewhat longer than thoſe of our quails, and their noiſe is very different. They are of ſo cold a conſtitution, that if expoſed on the cold ground, they are in danger of periſhing by cold; for which reaſon they hide themſelves, cover'd with their wings in the hollowneſs of trees, immediately after ſunſet, and at ſun-riſing come forth again and begin to chirp with a great deal of chearfulneſs.

Quails. The *Indian* quails reſemble thoſe of *Europe*, are brown on the back and blue on the belly: they have a yellow bill and four claws, *viz.* three before, and one behind; they don't make any noiſe, but are very good meat.

Rice-birds. The rice-bird is of the bigneſs of one of our pullets, but ſomething longer leg'd, with brown feathers on the body, a red head, and very large claws; they live among the rice, whence they have got their name, and eat very deliciouſly roaſted.

Pheaſants. In many parts of the *Indies* are alſo pheaſants with long and pointed tails; ſome are white on the breaſt and about the eyes.

Butterflies. They have prodigious numbers of butterflies of various colours; they have long bills, which they can ſtretch out when they ſuck the juice of the flowers, or draw back at pleaſure. Some are of a moſt delicious colour, intermix'd with blue, white and red, beyond what can be expreſs'd. They are generally of the bigneſs of the palm of the hand, when their wings are ſpread; ſome have larger wings than others, and have two ſmall feathers on their heads.

Wood-pidgeons. The *Indian* wood-pidgeons are of the bigneſs of our tame pidgeons, with brown ſpots on their backs; a white belly, purple colour'd breaſt, and red feet; they reſemble entirely our turtle-doves, or common pidgeons; live generally in the woods or in the rice-fields, and are a moſt delicious food; when they are tamed they will breed in our houſes.

The Lory. The *Lory* bird is a bird as big as a parrot, but of a much finer colour, with a lofty round breaſt, cover'd with yellow feathers. The wings are green, the head black and ſhining, with a yellow bill. The *Indians* give ſometimes 30 crowns for ſuch a bird, becauſe they will learn and ſpeak ſeveral languages, and are very tame: There is another with large and long tails, ſometimes three quarters of a yard long, theſe are blue on the back, and yellow under the belly, and commonly call'd *Kakkataws* or *Indian* ravens. Another kind there is, which is white all over, except a yellow tuft on the head, which they ſet upright, when they are vexed. They have alſo ſome reſemblance both in ſhape and bigneſs to our magpies or blackbirds; theſe imitate a man's voice much more diſtinctly than the parrots: They are of a blueiſh colour, mix'd with dark blue ſpots and ſtreaks, they have a yellow tuft on the head, which is black, and as ſmooth as velvet. 1662.

The Yelamber. The *Yelambers* are as big as our larks, with a thick bill and red feet; their feathers are yellow, chequered with grey, they are catch'd in prodigious numbers, and ſold in the markets of *Batavia*, being look'd upon as a dainty.

Rice-ſparrows. The rice-ſparrows are no bigger than our ordinary ſparrows, and of the ſame colour, except that their bills are ſomewhat thick, with a few black feathers near the tail, and ſome white ones underneath on the belly; their feet are blue. They are found in ſuch prodigious quantities, that the inhabitants are ſcarce able to preſerve the rice from being devour'd by them.

Parrokets. Theſe birds properly called parrokets, are no bigger than our larks, but have a very fine green head and wings; the back underneath the wings is of a high red colour, the breaſt light green, and the tail of a moſt agreeable colour: They are found in the woods in great numbers, feed upon rice and fruits, but will not ſpeak, being kept only for their feather's ſake.

Pullets. The *Indian* pullets are generally white, with long red tails, and their feet almoſt cover'd with feathers, and a bright red comb on the head. They are not much bigger than our largeſt tame pidgeons, but very well taſted. They were firſt tranſported to *Batavia* from *Siam*. They have alſo a kind of tame fowl with black feathers, legs and fleſh, which however is not ill taſted, and accounted very wholſome: Another kind there is that have hair inſtead of feathers, others have their feathers turn'd towards the head, in lieu of declining backwards.

Herons. About *Batavia* and many other parts of the *Indies* abundance of herons are to be ſeen in the low grounds; they are in bigneſs

1662. neſs the ſame with our herons, with long gray feathers and black wings; they are generally ſeen near the water-ſide, where they are looking for their prey, but build their neſts in trees; the meat is tough, and taſtes much after fiſh.

The jumpers. The jumpers have got their name from their continual motion from branch to branch: They are of the ſame bigneſs with our blackbirds, and will whiſtle like them; they have a black head, wings and tail, but are white on the breaſt and belly; I have ſeen them kept at *Batavia* with a chain to one leg for diverſion ſake, and they feed them with boil'd rice. They are eaſy to be tamed.

Stock doves. The ſtock-doves are in ſhape and bigneſs like our pidgeons, but of a much finer colour; the neck and breaſt is green, the reſt of the body purple colour'd, and the tail and wings blue with a white edge. They are catch'd in great numbers in the woods near *Batavia*, and eat very well roaſted.

The goldfinch or linnet. The goldfinches here are very agreeable for their fine colour'd feathers, being for the reſt no longer than our linnets or goldfinches; their bill is pale red, the head white, the back and wings blue, the belly red, and the tail dark blue. They are taken in prodigious quantities near *Batavia*, and ſometimes kept in cages: They feed upon rice.

Scorpions. At *Batavia* you ſee often large ſcorpions of a quarter of a yard long; but thoſe of a leſſer ſize are ſo frequent, that you can ſcarce move a ſtool, bench, cheſt, looking-glaſs or picture, without being in danger of being ſtung by them, unleſs you be very careful to avoid them. The ſmall ones are about a fingers length, compoſed of many joints, of the thickneſs of a gooſe-quill. They are yellow, ſpeckled with brown ſtreaks; before they have two claws, with two ſharp pinchers; their tail is long, and lies turn'd upon the back, at the end of which is the ſting, wherewith they poiſon ſuch as they touch. They have eight long legs, not unlike thoſe of a creafiſh. The ſting of a ſcorpion is accounted mortal, unleſs prevented in a little time; tho' ſome are of opinion that the ſcorpions in the *Indies* are not ſo venomous as thoſe of *Italy* and *Spain*. A ſcorpion bruiſed to death, or ſtifled in oil, and apply'd to the wound, draws out the poiſon. They ſay that a radiſh ſliced and laid upon a ſcorpion, kills him in a minute: They have alſo another ſtory, *viz.* that the ſcorpion is ſometimes ſo peſter'd with the piſmires, that he ſtings himſelf to death in the head with his tail, and ſo becomes a prey to the piſmires.

The thouſand-legs are about five or ſix inches long, of the thickneſs of a man's finger, of a ruddy colour, and compoſed of many joints and bones. They have two claws or pinchers, wherewith they wound as dangerouſly as the ſcorpions; occaſioning ſuch violent pain, as is almoſt unſpeakable: The cure is perform'd by ſtifling them in oils like as with the ſcorpions, and they are generally found like them, in holes, and behind old cheſts or benches. 1662. *Thouſand-legs.*

Both the *Eaſt* and *Weſt-Indies* produce ſnakes of divers ſizes and colours: Among others they have a certain ſort in the iſle of *Java*, not exceeding a foot in length, which are frequently met with in the fields among the graſs: They have others with large ſhining ſcales on the back, and their eyes ſo bright, that in a ſun-ſhiny day you ſee them at a great diſtance; others are ſo full of ſpots, that they are terrible to behold. Beſides theſe, they have another kind of ſnakes much leſſer than the field ſnakes; theſe dwell in houſes, and feed upon flies, ants and other inſects. They will ſtick ſo cloſe to a wall or roof, as if they were immoveable, but no ſooner perceive their prey, but they ſhoot down all on a ſudden to catch it. The tail of a ſnake ſeparated from the body, will grow to it again. Theſe ſnakes are not in the leaſt pernicious, and will paſs over the bare faces of perſons ſleeping in their chambers, without doing the leaſt harm.

In the woods of *Java*, as likewiſe in the fens and pools is found a certain ſort of ſnakes, or rather a kind of crocodile call'd *Legoaen* by the *Indians*; it reſembles altogether a crocodile, except that it is leſs, being not above five or ſix foot long, whereas the crocodiles are from 15 to 20 foot: The *Javaneſe* however affirm, that thoſe in the mountains are much larger. They have a knobby green ſkin, but the meat is white, like that of our rabbets, and very well taſted. They have a long head, wide mouth, and a tail as long as the whole body; each leg has four paws arm'd with ſharp and long claws. *Snakes.*

In the woods of *Java* are certain flying-ſnakes, or rather drakes, they have four legs, a long tail, and their ſkin ſpeckled with many ſpots; their wings are not unlike thoſe of the bat, which they move in flying, but otherwiſe keep them almoſt unperceived cloſe to the body. They fly nimbly, but can't hold it long, ſo that they fly from tree to tree at about 20 or 30 paces diſtance. On the outſide of the throat are two bladders, which being extended when they fly, ſerve them inſtead of a ſail; they feed upon flies and other inſects: The *Javaneſe* don't in the leaſt ac- *The flying-ſnake or drake.*

1662. count them poiſonous, but handle them juſt like the common ſnakes, without the leaſt danger.

Frogs. The frogs here are about the ſame bigneſs with ours; of a dark yellow colour, with brown ſpots: They are ſold daily in the markets of *Batavia*, the *Chineſe* accounting them a dainty, but eat only the hindermoſt parts. There is another ſort of frogs in *Java* near as big as a rabbet, but are not eaten. They make a noiſe like the bellowing of an ox.

Fireflies. The fire-flies have got their name, becauſe they appear in the dark ſhining like a light, and are catch'd by means of a fire or candle, through which they will fly till they are taken. They are about an inch broad and long, and ſometimes bigger: The head, which is brown, has two ſmall horns; the neck is red, but their hard wings brown, underneath which they have two ſofter wings, which they make uſe of in flying, and then it is you diſcover that ſhining ſubſtance, which is contained in a black bladder or their backs, which they hide with their wings whilſt they are not a flying. In the rainy ſeaſon they dwell in prodigious numbers among the trees, and draw their chief ſuſtenance from the bloſſom. There are divers ſorts of them.

Horſe-flies. The horſe-flies here are a moſt pernicious inſect, which ſting moſt furiouſly. They are about two inches broad and long, of a brown colour, with a yellow ſtreak along the body. They build their neſts very curiouſly on the roof or rafters, as the waſps do on the ſprigs of trees: In theſe they lay their eggs and hatch their young ones. They feed upon fruits, and emit a moſt nauſeous ſcent after they are kill'd.

Kakkerlakken, *or* Kakalakkas. The *Kakkerlakken* are ſo called by a corrupted name from the *Portugueſe* word *Kakalakkas*, becauſe their eggs are both in colour and ſmoothneſs like to the *Lacca*. They are much of the ſame bigneſs with the horſe-flies, of a brown colour, with two long horns on the head. They both run and fly very nimbly, and are very pernicious, there being no cheſt or trunk ſo ſtrong, but they will gnaw through it. They are alſo to be found in ſhips, tho' newly built, in their way from *Europe*, eſpecially at the time of their paſſing under the line; when the lice die, theſe begin to appear; and in their return, as ſoon as they are paſs'd the line again, and the lice appear, theſe begin to vaniſh by degrees. They are very pernicious to paper, linen, and woollen cloaths.

Jakalat. The *Jakalat* is a miſchievous inſect, but only in the lower parts of the houſes, its delight being in moiſt grounds.

About *Batavia* you find a kind of locuſts of a finger's length, but no thicker than a pen or gooſe-quill, diſtinguiſh'd by divers joints. They walk upon ſix feet, and have two ſmall horns. The locuſts here are however of divers kinds; ſome are yellow on the belly, with brown wings, and two horns on the head; they can leap a great way, and fly together in great numbers. There is another ſort of the ſame ſhape, but green, and of a finger's length. Theſe come ſometimes in ſuch prodigious ſwarms, that they darken the ſky as they paſs by, and devour all in thoſe parts where they ſettle, ſo that the inhabitants are often obliged to change their habitations for want of ſuſtenance, as it has happened frequently in *China* and the iſle of *Tajowak*. 1662. *Locuſts.*

A kind of Spaniſh flies. The bliſter-drawers are ſo called, becauſe when they ſting they raiſe bliſters. They are of divers ſorts, different both in colour and bigneſs, but commonly of the length and breadth of a finger. They have very large eyes, and delight in marſhy places. They are moſt frequent at *Batavia* in *October* and *November*.

Hornets. There is here a kind of hornets that have a certain claw like a pincher on the head, wherewith they pinch to that degree, that they will not let go their hold unleſs you cut off their heads. They are of divers ſorts, bigneſs and ſhape, ſome being above five inches long, of a dark brown colour; they have double wings, the uppermoſt are hard, the undermoſt ſoft; the laſt they make uſe of in flying, the others being only for the defence of the undermoſt ones. They feed upon herbs, and the fruits of certain trees, which they know how to chooſe among all the reſt.

Ants or piſmires. Of ants or piſmires there are in *Java* and throughout all the *Indies* prodigious quantities of divers ſorts; ſome of them are above a finger in length, of a ruddy colour, inclining to black, ſome with, others without wings. They are very pernicious to the fruits of the earth; and even in the houſes ſcarce any thing can be preſerved againſt them without a great deal of care. It is obſervable, that an ant meeting another with ſomething in her mouth, will give way to her, if ſhe be not loaden her ſelf.

Catterpillars. The gardens about *Batavia* are extremely peſtered with catterpillars; they are about 5 Inches long, with long brown horns ſtanding upright on their heads. The head and whole body is yellowiſh, but the wings inclining to a green ſpotted with yellow. They feed upon herbs and leaves like the locuſts.

Schrankels *or Knobs.* This inſect has got its name from the knotty compoſition of its body, which, as well

1662. as the feet is of a pale-green colour. It has two fore legs covered with a hard ſhell like a crab or creafiſh. It ſeems to be a kind of locuſt, and feeds upon greens, but can neither fly nor run very faſt. There is another kind with a monſtrous head and neck, and a thick body, on the hindermoſt part of which are two ſmall pins like thorns. The two fore-feet are encloſed in a hard ſhell and of a very odd ſhape; it has two wings, but can ſcarce fly, by reaſon of the weight of its body. 1662.

Spiders. There are many ſorts of ſpiders in the *Indies*, and of a very different bigneſs; ſome are above four inches long, and have very thick legs; others have eight feet, a thick ſpeckled body, and round head with brown eyes. Theſe have two teeth bent like hooks, wherewith they bite fiercely. I have ſeen toothpicks made of theſe teeth.



The lynx. The lynx is a fierce creature, of the bigneſs of a large dog, and in ſhape ſeems to participate both of that and a cat. He is of a brown colour chequer'd with red, with black ſtreaks; his tail is very ſhort, and the ears very black; he lives upon prey, and is extremely nimble.

Sucotyro *or* Sucotario. The *Sukotyro*, as the *Chineſe* call it, is a very odd ſhaped beaſt; it is of the bigneſs of a large ox, with a ſnout like a hog, two long rough ears, and a thick buſhy tail. The eyes are placed upright in the head, quite different from other beaſts: On the ſide of the head, next to the eyes ſtand two long horns, or rather teeth, not quite ſo thick as thoſe of the elephant: It feeds upon herbage, and is but ſeldom taken. Of the jackal we have given a deſcription before.

Oxen with bunches. On the *Cape of Good-Hope*, but eſpecially in the iſle of *Madagaſcar*, are certain oxen with bunches upon their necks and ſhoulders, which being nothing but fat, is melted and uſed by the inhabitants like butter; but theſe oxen have not ſo great a quantity of ſuet about their kidneys as ours. The cows of this kind frequently bear two or three calves at a time.

The Macaſſar-fox. The macaſſar-fox has got his name from the iſle of *Macaſſar*, where he is moſt found. He has an exceſſive long buſhy tail, which ſtands upright, flat feet, long claws, and ſhort ears, juſt as he is repreſented in the cut.

Apes and monkeys. There are divers ſorts of apes and monkeys diſtinguiſh'd by peculiar names. Some are very ſmall, others middle ſized, and others as big as a boy of eight years of age; ſuch a one I ſaw my ſelf once at *Batavia*. In many parts of the *Indies*, where the inhabitants think it a crime to kill any living creature, they multiply to a prodigious degree, and are very tame:

They

1662. They live for the moſt part in woods, and feed upon fruits. Some are green with a long beard and large eye-brow, like an ancient man: Some, call'd *Cicatic* by the *Indians*, have long buſhy tails, for which reaſon they are reckon'd by ſome among the fox kind. There is another ſort call'd *Saragoſe*, with long tails, which they carry ſtraight upright. Another ſort are called death's heads by the *Dutch*, from their pale faces. The *Suri* monkeys are in bigneſs and ſhape not unlike a ſquirrel, but of a yellow colour; they have ſhort and round ears, large eyes, and a large buſhy tail, wherewith they can cover the whole body: They can leap at a great diſtance from tree to tree, and guide themſelves with the tail ſo exactly, that they ſeem to fly. There is a certain ſort of monkeys or apes that are not in the leaſt miſchievous; they are no bigger than a rat, but have a long tail, which they carry upright. They have a green, ſoft and woolly hair, ſomewhat inclining to a grey about the eyes, and a little white on the feet. They have ſhort ears, a ſharp mouth and brown noſe, the feet being like thoſe of an ape; but theſe are very ſcarce. Thoſe call'd *Sangwyns* are likewiſe of the bigneſs of a rat, and very nimble; their face, hands and ears are black, and the reſt of the body of a cheſnut colour, except that they have ſome dark yellow hair along the back; they have very long tails, feed upon fruits, and are very diverting. 1662.



The piſmire-eater or ants-bear. The piſmire-eater or ants-bear, is ſo call'd, becauſe he feeds chiefly upon ants: There are three ſeveral ſorts of them; the firſt is of the bigneſs of a young hog, the ſecond ſomewhat leſſer, and the third like a cat, but longer. They are all of a ruddy colour like a fox, with a long ſharp mouth, ſmall ears, and a head like that of a pig.

Stags. Abundance of deer or ſtags are found in the foreſts of the *Indies*, they are eaſily to be tamed here, ſo that they will feed among the cattle. They are generally red, ſpeckled with white, and much of the ſame bigneſs as ours. They have large ears, long legs, and are white underneath the belly. The horns of the male are wrought towards the head, and brown and very hard towards the extremities. Their fleſh is very well taſted. With the deer-ſkins a great traffick uſed to be carried on in the iſle of *Tayowan*, whilſt the *Dutch* were maſters of it; for they uſed to take many thouſands of them only for the ſkin's ſake, which were ſold to the *Japoneſe*; and ſcarce to preſerve any part of their

1662. their flesh, except the tongue, which is accounted a dainty here.

The iron-pig or porcupine. About *Batavia*, and in the woods of *Java* are abundance of iron-pigs or porcupines. They grunt like hogs, and are covered with certain painted pens or pegs like iron, whence they got their name: They are of different sizes, some of the bigness of a good large dog, but somewhat longer, and more short leg'd. They are generally brown, with a grey tuft on the head, and a mouth like a hare, with two great teeth both below and above, like a horse, the two fore-feet like those of a deer, and the hindmost like a bear. The pens or pegs are very sharp, a foot long, and checquered with black and white. When they are at rest, they lay them close to the body, but if they are vexed, they can, by contracting themselves, cast them forth with such strength, that they kill man or beast: Thus some years ago, a dead lion was found at the *Cape of Good-Hope* with a porcupine's pen sticking in his body, wherewith he had doubtless been killed. In the winter they retire into holes, where they remain without either eating or drinking. They feed upon herbs and roots, and cast their pens as other creatures do their hair. In the stomachs of some of these animals grows a certain stone, which by reason of its sudorifick quality is accounted very good in pestilential fevers; just as the stone found in the *Vesica Bilearis* or gall-bladder of the wild boars, is reputed the most sovereign remedy in that distemper called *Morderi* by the *Javanese*, and as much dreaded among them as the plague in *Europe*, because it commonly kills in a few hours time.

Tame and wild boars. There are several sorts of hogs in the *Indies*, some with, but the most without any hair; hogs flesh is accounted wholsomer and better than beef or mutton, and is by the *Chinese* prescribed even for sick persons. The wild boars feed upon what roots or fruits they can meet with; and I remember that I saw a considerable number of them swim cross the water in the isle of *Dingding* near *Malacca*, to look after provisions. In the gall-bladder of the *Indian* wild boars, grows a certain porous stone, called thence *Piedra da Puerco*, i. e. hog's stone by the *Portuguese*; it is sudorifick, and expedient in malignant distempers; they steep it in wine for twelve hours, and give the infusion to the patients; or they give the quantity of 25 grains poudered in wine. Women with child must be cautious of it, because it makes them miscarry, it being a general opinion among the *Malayan* women, that they can procure their monthly times, with only holding this stone in their hands. 1662.

Sheep. The *Javanese* sheep are much of the same bigness as ours, some being white, others pyed white and red, with short legs and little or no wool. Their meat is not so good as the *European* mutton, pork being much prefer'd before it here. The sheep have sometimes teats hanging below their throats like some of our hogs, others have such long ears that you may tie them together underneath the throat. Others have tails of 20, 30 or 40 pounds, being one lump of fat, which eats best boil'd. Some have a plain hair like our goats, others a curled wool like our sheep, and are milked like cows.

He and she goats. The goats here are not near so big as the sheep, nor is their flesh so well tasted, tho' the kids in some parts of the *Indies* afford excellent good meat. Some are white, some pyed, and have generally long hair. Others have very long ears, and horns standing upright on the head. In some places they bear three or four young ones at a time: They make cheese of their milk.

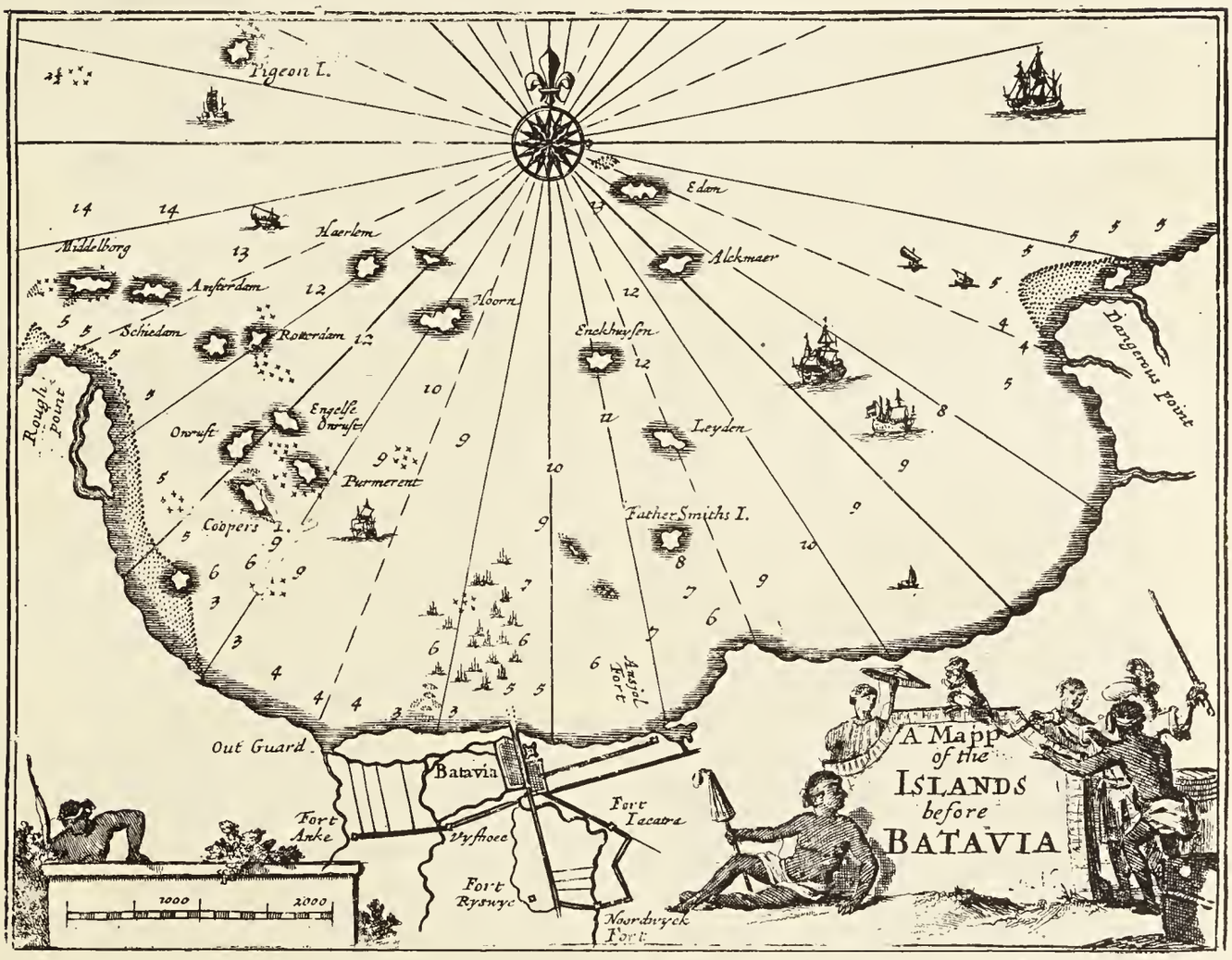
Bouffles. The Bouffles are bulkier and stronger than an ordinary ox; they have no hair, their flesh is very good, but not so juicy nor so digestible as beef, for which reason it is most used among the slaves, and other labouring people. Their horns lie close to the head; some of them are black, and, when polish'd, are very useful for several things to be made out of them. The tame bouffles are used in the sugar-mills, plough and cart: They guide them by means of a chain drawn through their nostrils: Their milk is accounted very wholsome. The wild bouffles that live in the forests are very fierce, and not easy to be taken.

Oxen and cows. Many places of the *Indies* afford oxen and cows, the flesh whereof, as well as the milk and butter, are very good; some are red, others white, others pyed, and of several other colours. Some have horns standing upright on the head, others crooked horns like ours; and others long ears hanging downwards: However, the beef is much better in some places than in others. It is generally eaten fresh, because it will scarce take salt well in this hot climate, and is not to be kept above three or four days. They bring a certain kind of oxen from *Suratte* to *Batavia*, not much bigger than a large dog; they look very fierce, notwithstanding which they are used in small carts to draw children, or any other odd thing.

Horses. The horses here are of different sorts and colours, some black, others of a chest-

1662. nut colour, and others white and grey. The *Javaneſe* horſes are not very tall, but thick and well-ſet, like the *Norwegian* or *Weſtphalian* horſes, very ſtrong and hardy, but are not near ſo high-ſpirited as the *Perſian* horſes that are tranſported from *Suratte* to *Batavia*, and excel all the reſt in ſwiftneſs, courage and beauty. The *Indians* carry on their wars for the moſt part with foot ſoldiers, and preſerve their horſes for the draught and travelling. 1662.

Thus much of the iſle of *Java* and the city of *Batavia:* We will now proceed to give an account of our return into *Holland.*



The author's return into Holland.

Every thing being got ready for our voyage, we weigh'd anchor in the road of *Batavia*, the 17th of *December* 1670, and with the land-wind, paſs'd betwixt the iſles to the ſouth of *Batavia*, ſituate betwixt the *Ruigenhoeck* or *Rough-Point*, and *Karowan*, moſt of which have borrow'd their names from ſome places or other in the *United Provinces*; as the *Coopers-Iſle*, the *Schiedam*, *Amſterdam*, *Middleburgh*, *Purmerent*, *Rotterdam*, the *Pigeon-Iſland*, the *Harlem*, *Hoorn*, *Enckhuyſen*, *Edam*, *Alcmar*, &c. we came the ſame evening to an anchor near the iſle call'd the *Men-eaters Iſland*, near which the ſhip called the *South-Pole* ſtruck upon the ſands, but got off again. Here a general review being taken of all the perſons on board the ſhips, ſuch as were found to be indebted to the company, were ſent back to continue in the ſervice 'till they had diſcharged their debts.

Then we ſet ſail again, and had the 19th the point of *Bantam* to the weſt of us, and *Pulo Paly* to the north; but being becalm'd were forced to come to an anchor at 15 fathom water. The 20th, having received ſome refreſhments by the *Golden-Lion* from *Bantam*, we ſet ſail again, but the calm obliged us to come to an anchor again at 15 fathom. The 21ſt we continued our voyage, and had the 23d the point of *Java*, called *Krakketou* to the eaſt-ſouth-eaſt, at 23 fathom water. The commodore having, by the uſual ſignal of the white flag, ſummon'd all the commanders of ſhips aboard him, to know whether they were provided with what was neceſſary for ſo long a voyage; the *Golden-Lion* was ſent back, and we had the north point of the *Princes Iſle*, weſt to the north; and the 25th the ſouth-point about four leagues from us.

1662. About noon the commodore went aboard and took a view of all the ships under his command, and in the afternoon set sail again: We met with several fierce but short travadoes or storms, at 7 deg. and 41 min. southern latitude. The 31st we had another most violent travado at 9 deg. 54 min. but continued not long.

Isle of Mony. The first of *January* one of our ships crew died, and we got sight of land to the south-east, which we found to be the isle of *Mony*, and that we were 64 leagues to the south-south-west of the *Princes Isle*, being forced thus far to the east by the tide; we were at the latitude of 10 deg. 29 min. The 2d we had the said isle to the south-east, and found its situation to be 52 min. more to the north than it is placed in the maps. The 3d, we were within four leagues of the said island, at 11 deg. 15 min. Hereabouts one of our ships crew was found dead in his cabin. The 6th we were at 13 deg. 40 min. and the 9th at 14 deg. 17 min. The same day Mr. *Dirk Indiik* died of a long and lingering distemper: As he had been factor and fiscal at *Suratte*, and was accounted very rich, his goods were all sealed up in the presence of the commodore and the other commanders. The next following day we made 32 leagues, and so continued our voyage with a prosperous gale till the 19th, when we found our selves at 20 deg. 54 min. of latitude, and at 105 deg. 14 min. longitude. The 26th the commodore having by the usual signal summon'd the chief officers aboard him, to adjust the difference in the compasses, and the same being found only 1 degree 33 minutes, no alteration was made therein.

The 2d of *February* we were at the heighth of 29 deg. overtaken by a most furious tempest, with thunder and lightening from the west, and had frequent travadoes till the 4th, and for many days after had very changeable weather, sometimes good, sometimes bad. The 26th with break of day we found 112 fathom depth, but saw no land: About noon we found our selves at 35 deg. 17 min. steering our course westward, the weather being very fair, we saw divers whale-fish sporting in the water, and some sea-birds, which together with the colour of the water, was a sufficient sign that we were not very far from land. The next day we found seven fathom water without seeing the land.

They discover land. The 28th very early in the morning we discovered land to the north-north-west of us, at 45 fathom depth, and the next day after sun-rising at 38, being then within three leagues of the shore, which appeared hilly and white. About noon we were at 34 deg. 36 min. the weather cold and fair. The first of *March* we found our selves at 35 deg. and steering our course to the south-east in sight of the land, which was very hilly to the north-east, found 65 fathom depth at night, in sight of a mountainous shore. The 4th we still saw land at 48 fathom water, and in the evening at 20. 1662.

Arrive at the Cape of Good-Hope. The 6th before sun-set, we saw the famous point of the *Table-Bay* of the *Cape of Good-Hope*, where we cast anchor before the fort, at eight fathom water. Here we met with three ships, *viz.* the *Crown'd-Peace*, the *Damiata*, and a yacht bound for the *Indies*; and heard the good news that the commodore *Yshrand Gotske* did come to the cape, the last 2d of *February*, and thence continued his voyage with three ships the 24th for *Holland*. Our commodore being then sick, he sent one to the commander in chief of the cape, named Mr. *Hakkius*, to notify his arrival, and the next day went ashore himself.

The marquis de Mondeverguin arrives at the Cape. The 8th the *Mary Yacht* arrived at the cape from the isle of *Madagascar*, having on board the marquis *de Mondeverguin*, a *French* governor of *Madagascar*, and the other adjacent places under the *French* jurisdiction. He was a person of 70 years of age, and of a goodly aspect. He sent word to Mr. *Hakkius*, commander in chief of the cape, that he should be glad to come ashore, provided he might be sure of a reception suitable to his quality: However, he set sail again on a sudden, without coming ashore, perhaps by reason of the rumour that was then already spread abroad of a war betwixt *France* and the *Dutch*.

The same evening the ship called the *Spanbroeck* came into that road from *Ceylon*, with advice, that the *Cingalese* had taken up arms under their king *Radya*, and we were in the mean while not idle to provide our selves with what necessaries we could get for the prosecution of our voyage, till the 17th of *March*, when the commodore summoning all the officers aboard him, told them, that he intended to set sail the next sunday, *viz.* the 22d of *March*, without staying for the two ships we left behind, and a war betwixt us and the *French* being then much talk'd of, he ordered every body to be upon his guard, and to prepare for a vigorous defence in case of an atrack.

The 20th was spent in letting the seamen go ashore in their turn.

The 21st the goods of the before-mention'd Mr. *Indyck*, deceased were exposed to publick sale, and 13 diamonds, besides four more of an extraordinary bigness,

1662. with ſome bezoar-ſtones, being found concealed in a private pocket in his breeches, the ſame were ſealed up, ſeized by the commodore as contraband goods, for the uſe of the company.

They leave the Cape of Good Hope. The 22[d] after dinner, the commodore having given the ſignal to ſail, to the five ſhips, the *Peace*, the *Arms of Veer*, the *Count of Breda*, *South-Pole* and *Spanbroeck*, they weighed their anchors, and after ſunſet were about two leagues and an half from the *Table-Bay*.

The 23[d], a conſultation being held aboard the commodore about regulating the compaſs, and the ſame being fix'd to 3 deg. to the weſt we found our ſelves that evening at 33 deg. and about 18 leagues to the ſouth-eaſt of the *Table-Mountain*.

Sail to St. Helens *iſle.* From hence we ſteer'd our courſe to the iſle of St. *Helens*, of which we got ſight the 12[th] of *April*, at 16 deg. 44 min. without any remarkable accident.

The 13[th] with ſun-riſing we were within five or ſix leagues of the ſaid iſle, when the commodore ſummoned again all the officers aboard him, in order to conſult what courſe they ſhould take towards the *Aſcenſion* iſland.

The 24[th] we were at 4 deg. 32 min. and the 27[th] at 16 min. of ſouthern latitude, ſteering our courſe north-weſt to the weſt with an eaſterly wind and briſk gale.

They paſs the line. The next following day we were at 15 min. of northern latitude; and the 29[th] at 2 deg. 38 min. having been much peſtered with ſudden ſtorms and travadoes.

The 14[th] of *May* the *Breda* gave a ſignal as if they had ſeen land, but it proved only a refraction of the ſun-beams through the clouds. The ſea hereabouts ſeem'd in the night-time all on fire, a thing uſual in hot weather.

See the B. aſil *voyage.* The 24[th], at 25 deg. 29 min. we found our ſelves in the *Kroos* or *Croſs-Sea*, (ſo called from a kind of water-creſſes or ducks-meat that floats in prodigious quantity upon the ſurface of the water) and the 25[th] finding theſe ſort of herbage encreaſe, we judged our ſelves to be more eaſtward than we intended.

The 30[th] at 26 deg. 15 min. our conſtable *Mans Timmer* died, and we were ſtill much peſtered with theſe *Creſſes*, which continued the 1[ſt] and 2[d] of *June*.

We continued the ſame courſe till the 13[th], when it being agreed to fix the compaſs 4 deg. more to the weſt, we took our courſe north to the eaſt, towards the *Dutch* coaſt.

The 15[th] being a foggy day, we diſcharged every hour a muſquet, as a ſignal to the ſhips to prevent their being ſeparated from one another.

About midnight the commodore ſent for me, and in the preſence of the maſter of the ſhip, *Henry Span*, the firſt chirurgeon, and the miniſter, told me, that finding himſelf very ill, he was reſolved to make his laſt will, which he did accordingly, recommending his affairs, and what he had of the companies in his hands, to our care. 1662.

About ſix in the morning he ſent for me again, with an intention to make ſome alterations in his teſtament, but before the clerk could finiſh it, he expired, without ſigning of it. We took care to ſummon immediately the council of war, where every thing being ſettled for the proſecution of our voyage, we diſcovered land the 29[th] to the north-eaſt at 115 fathom water. *The commodore dies.*

The 30[th] we found our ſelves over againſt the iſle of *Fulo*, and underſtood by one of their fiſher-boats, that the peace continued betwixt *France*, *England* and *Holland*, and that 14 days before, 11 ſtout ſhips paſs'd that way. *The iſle of* Fulo.

Having provided our ſelves with ſome cods, which we bought or exchanged at the rate of two pence a piece, we gave the ſignal by a cannon ſhot, to our convoy, which we expected to meet us hereabouts.

The firſt of *July* meeting a boat betwixt *Fulo* and *Hitland*, we charged the maſter thereof with the body of our deceaſed commodore, in order to his burial in *Hitland*: He had ſix crowns given him for his pains and charges, with a promiſe of ſix more, after we had received certain advice, that he had well diſcharged his truſt. About noon our two convoys, the *Middleburgh* and *Leyden* came up with us, and after the uſual ſalute, brought us freſh orders from the company.

The 2[d] and 3[d] of *July*, ſeveral of our ſeamen, and among the reſt, the quartermaſter died of the dropſy, an uſual diſtemper to thoſe that return from the *Eaſt-Indies*, and many more falling ſick daily for want of proviſions; the reſt were hardly put to it, eſpecially in our ſhip, which being leaky, four men were continually employed at the pump.

The 5[th] we advanced bravely with a very cold wind and air.

The 6[th] it was fair weather, and we had 18 fathom water.

The 7[th] it proved cold and rainy, at 16 fathom: The ſame evening the ſhip called the *Arms Vanter Veer* left us, and ſoon got out of ſight.

The 8[th] of *July* we got ſight of the *Dutch* coaſt, and the ſhip *Spanbroeck* having taken its courſe towards the *Spaniards-Gate*, we were forced to lie by till four in the

1662. the afternoon, when with turning of the tide, we made the *Texel*, where we came to an anchor the ſame night.

They arrive in the Texel.

The 9th Mr. *Silvius*, Mr. *Bekker*, and Mr. *Schagen* came aboard us, three directors of the company; who having given the neceſſary orders for the unloading of our veſſels, and taken the diamonds belonging to the company into their cuſtody, diſcharged the ſhips crew from their ſervice; and I embark'd in a boat for *Enkhuyſen*, and arrived at *Amſterdam* the 11th. Count *Maurice* of *Naſſau* happening to paſs at the ſame time through *Amſterdam* in his way over *Zealand* to *Cleves*, he ſent for me; and I having ſhew'd him my obſervations and draughts of *Braſil* and the *Eaſt-Indies*, he engaged me to meet him the next day again at dinner, at the houſe of Dr. *William Piſo*, where I took my leave of the ſaid earl, he being juſt upon his departure. 1662.

Some days after I appeared in the aſſembly of the directors of the company, unto whom having given a ſatisfactory account of all my tranſactions, they return'd me thanks; and as a mark of their ſatisfaction, beſtow'd upon me another factor's place; ſo that accordingly I undertook my third voyage to the *Eaſt-Indies*, in the ſhip called the *Arrow*, before the expiration of the year.

Nieuhoff *gives an account to the company.*

The third ſea and land voyage of Mr. JOHN NIEUHOFF *aboard the* Arrow *to the iſles of* Majotte, *upon the* African *coaſt of* Moſambique, *extracted from his own journals, and brought over and deliver'd by capt.* Reiner Klacſon *to his brother* Henry Nieuhoff.

MR. *John Nieuhoff* having embarked aboard the *Arrow*, they paſs'd by the *French* coaſt the 18th of *December*, and the 1ſt of *Jan.* 1672, at 29 deg. by the *Canary* iſles, about three leagues off of *Teneriff*, where they met with the *Lion* bound for the *Eaſt-Indies*. They continued their voyage with a proſperous gale, without any remarkable accident, and paſſing the 4th of *Feb.* the line, and the 16th the high iſlands of *John Chriſtian de Akonga* at 36 deg. 36 min. ſouthern lat. arriv'd the 8th of *April* within ſight of the *Cape of Good-Hope*, at 33 deg. 30 min. lat. and caſt anchor in the *Table-Bay* the ſame night. Here they met with ſeventeen veſſels, thirteen of which were bound from the *Eaſt-Indies* for *Holland*, and accordingly ſet ſail the twenty forth. The ſhip the *Arrow* had aboard her a large chaloop or boat, which being taken to pieces before they left *Amſterdam*, was now ſet together again, for its more convenient paſſage along the ſhore of *Sofala*, *Moſambique* and the iſland of *Majotte*.

They come to the Cape of Good-Hope.

In this chaloop (unto which they gave the name of the *Bow*) they embark'd, and in company of the *Arrow* and another ſmall veſſel called the *Goldfinch*, bound for the iſle of *St. Maurice*, having aboard Mr. *Huigens*, governor of that iſle, ſet ſail the 30th of *April*. The 6th of *June* being at 36 deg. 3 min. latitude, the *Goldfinch* ſteer'd her courſe towards *St. Maurice*, leaving the *Bow* and *Arrow* to proſecute their voyage towards the iſle of *Madagaſcar*, which they got firſt ſight of the 20th. They kept along the coaſt which was high and rocky, and near a large point of land found 20 fathom water at a league diſtance from the ſhore, and near it a long ſand-bank. They were then at 24 deg. and being, by reaſon of the land wind, obliged to advance ſometimes nearer the ſhore, ſometimes to keep off at ſea; they at laſt caſt anchor at 30 fathom, whereas three leagues from the ſhore, they could find no bottom. The *Bow* afterwards follow'd the *Arrow*, but kept cloſer to the ſhore.

They leave the Cape *of* Good-Hope.

The twenty ſecond they diſcover'd a ſmall iſle not above half a league from the ſhore, where the *Arrow* caſt her anchor at 17 fathom; they went a fiſhing, and brought back along with them two canoes belonging to the inhabitants, loaden with coco-nuts and water-limons. The *Bow* being ſailed before, and come to an anchor in the bay of *St. Auſtin* near a ſmall iſle, the *Arrow* followed her thither, and found at the mouth of the river two white points of land jetting out into the ſea.

1672. *They land at Madagascar.*

The inhabitants brought some fruits aboard us, and Mr. *Hugo* and Mr. *Nieuhoff* went ashore the next day, to see whether they could traffick with them, but could only exchange a few slaves with them; however Mr. *Nieuhoff* catch'd abundance of fish at the mouth of the river.

The second of *July* the *Bow* sail'd within the mouth of the river to refit, having received some damage; they endeavour'd to catch some *Tortoises* but could not take any: About noon the captain of the *Madagascarians* came aboard us to exchange some slaves; and the seventh the *Bow* in which was Mr. *Nieuhoff*, and the *Arrow* separated, the first some leagues to the north, but were to meet again at the island of *Majotte*.

The 14th the *Bow* after 17 leagues sail was at 16 deg. 56 min. latitude within sight of the continent of *Mosambique*, and at 3 leagues distance from the shore; found 100 fathom water near a sand-bank: The next day they came within 1½ league off of the isle of *Paimibris*.

The 18th at 16 deg. 15 min. they saw white downs, and in the evening cast anchor near a sand-bank at 18 fathom, whereas at the stern of the ship there were at least 60 fathoms. The 20th they passed by a large bay, cover'd with a great sand-bank, which at low water has six fathom water. The 22d they pass'd betwixt the southern islands of *Mosambique*, named *St. James* and *St. Joris*, where coming to an anchor at nine fathom, they met here with a stout *Portuguese* ship at anchor behind the fort, having aboard the governor of *Goa* lately come from *Portugal* with three lesser vessels. The *Arrow* coming likewise afterwards to an anchor here, divers *Portuguese* officers came aboard us, to buy certain commodities, and about the same time three other *Portuguese* ships, one of which had the governor of *Mosambique* aboard her, arrived here from *Sofala*. It prov'd a very tempestuous day.

The first of *August* the *Bow* and *Arrow* set sail again, steering their course eastward to the isles of *Madagascar* and *Masyeleyn*. The 10th they got sight of the shore of *Madagascar* at 15 deg. 53 min. and about half a league from a round mountain cast anchor at ten fathom water. The *Bow* entred the river, and discovered two boats with masts, and divers canoes, but could not come up with them. As the wind hereabout turns every 24 hours thro' all the points of the compass, so it is easy sailing along this coast. The 12th Mr. *Nieuhoff* in the *Bow* sail'd towards the isles of *Makandari* and *Magelagie*, taking a *Madagascarian* slave along with him.

The 15th the *Bow* and *Arrow* met again, but had not been able to traffick much: They saw nine boats with four square sails pass in sight of them, and in a small river met with another boat, that furnish'd them with eight pullets, and told them, that farther to the north they might meet with fresh provisions enough. So they set sail again, and after five days came to a large bay, where they cast anchor at seven fathom. Here they were told, that it was a plentiful coast, and that *Magelagie* and the islands of *Makandari* were farther to the east. The 22d they came within a league of an Island, where they cast anchor at 11 fathom. The 24th Mr. *Nieuhoff* sail'd in the *Bow* up the river *Magelagie* and returning the 26th reported, that this was the river upon which *Magelagie* stood, a populous and plentiful place; that he had seen there an *English* ship, that had bought slaves there to be carried to *Barbadoes*, besides several other *Mooriſh* vessels trading in slaves. Hereupon Mr. *Hugo* and Mr. *Nieuhoff* went thither, and return'd the 30th. About two leagues into the country you see a high ridge of land. The 31st Mr. *Nieuhoff* carried certain commodities ashore, but could not agree about the exchange, the inhabitants offering very little, and holding their slaves at sixteen crowns a piece: however the second of *September* Mr. *Hugo* and Mr. *Nieuhoff* went ashore with some cloves, for which the king had offered some money before, but return'd unsuccessful; and the *Madagascarians* (a very malicious generation) having besides this spoil'd the ponds where we used to fetch our fresh water; they set sail again for the river *Marigando*; where they cast anchor the ninth on the east-side of the cape, and met with good fresh water on the west-side of the bay. Mr. *Hugo* and Mr. *Nieuhoff* had the good fortune to exchange some of their commodities with the king of the place, and brought back 22 slaves, 13 cows, some sheep and other provisions, of which they stood in great want. The 22d it being resolved to sail 36 or 40 leagues farther to the *North*; Mr. *Nieuhoff* sail'd before with the *Bow* to discover the lands and rocks, and came into the *Young Man's Bay*, where there is 10, 12 and 15 fathom water. Hence continuing their voyage, they came the 27th about noon to the point or cape of *Parmira* near one of the five islands at 13 deg. 13 min. The 29th they were near the cape of *Konquiso*, where they saw some fisher boats. The middlemost of these islands is a high, steep and unaccessible rock, which may be discovered a great way at sea. Some of the fishermen having shew'd them where their king kept his court, Mr. *Nieuhoff* set sail thither in the *Bow*, leaving the

1672. *Arrow* in the bay, and in company with the ſhips mate, and ſome few ſeamen went aſhore, in hopes to exchange ſome of his commodities; but on the 7th the *Arrow* was much ſurprized to ſee the *Bow* making towards them, and with two cannon ſhot to give the ſignal of diſtreſs. They ſent out their boat to meet them, which returning with the maſter of the *Bow*, gave an account, that Mr. *Nieuhoff* being gone aſhore with ſome of the company in the bay of *Antegoa*, or *Ant Ofy Sambo*, by ſome ſtyled the *Murtherers Bay*, to traffick, was not returned, and that therefore the *Bow*, after a ſtay of three whole days, had weighed her anchors, and ſet ſail again without them. It was concluded on all hands, that the *Bow* ought to return thither, but Mr. *Hugo* alledging that having at firſt no more than ſix months proviſions, they would be in great danger of being ſtarved, if they tarried any longer here, he inſiſted upon returning to the cape firſt, which they did accordingly, and ſet ſail the ſame afternoon at 25 and 30, and again at 20 and 25 fathom water. In the evening they paſs'd near a great ſand-bank ſouth to the weſt, and north to the eaſt, of the biggeſt of the three iſlands near the cape of *Koaquiſo*, about three leagues from the ſaid iſle, and the northern point and the great iſle of *Nauſhy*.

This was the end of Mr. *John Nieuhoff*, who had ſpent ſo many years in viewing the *Weſt* and *Eaſt-Indies*, and conſequently deſerved a better fortune. What *Hugo* alledged, concerning their ſcarcity of proviſions, was indeed true enough; but on the other hand, it is unqueſtionable, they needed not to have beſtow'd much time in looking after him. The *Bow* and *Arrow* proſecuted their voyage, and on the 8th found themſelves at 12 deg. 40 min. latitude, having the weſt cape of *St. Sebaſtian* ſix leagues to the north-eaſt. The next following day they came in ſight of a ſmall iſle full of trees, about three leagues from the cape of *St. Sebaſtian*, near which place being toſs'd to and fro by tempeſts and contrary winds, they were reduced to that extremity, that they were forced to live upon a ſpoonful of rice 24 hours: So that after having endured a great deal of miſery, and loſt many of their men, both the *Bow* and *Arrow* return'd to the *Cape of Good-Hope* the 17th of *December*, where Mr. *Hugo* met but with an indifferent reception, and the maſter of the *Bow* was caſhier'd for having not tarried longer near the place where Mr. *Nieuhoff* went aſhore. The firſt of *Jan.* 1673, the *Bow* and *Arrow* being provided with ſufficient proviſions, ſet ſail again, the firſt for the bay where they had left Mr. *Nieuhoff*, the ſecond for the iſle of *St. Maurice*, whither ſhe was to carry Mr. *Hugo*. After their parting at ſea, no news was heard of the *Bow* for a long time after, till at laſt it was diſcovered that the ſhips crew mutinied and ſold the veſſel to the *French* at *Moſambique*; ſo that it remains uncertain, whether any of them had any intelligence concerning Mr. *Nieuhoff*. At the requeſt of his brother, Mr. *Henry Nieuhoff*, the directors of the chamber of *Amſterdam* diſpatch'd, the 2d of *May* 1676, the yacht called the *Voerhout* from the *Cape of Good-Hope* to the place where Mr. *Nieuhoff* went aſhore; which returning to the ſaid cape the 20th of *September* with 250 ſlaves, brought no farther account than that they had ſeen the king of the place, and that he had declared to them, that he knew nothing of the matter; ſo that it is very probable that Mr. *Nieuhoff* and his company were at their firſt landing maſſacred by the barbarous inhabitants. 1672.

THE

